loue of the faire Griana, and so afterwardes make meanes by the Empresse to demaund her in mariage: all which hee concealed from his Cosin Canamio: who verie gladly did consent to what Tarsius had requested, watching opportunitie to find the Emperour his father at leysure, whome he made his highnesse acquainted with the whole enterprise, of himselfe and his Cousin Tarsius, desiring him that all knightes might haue warning for preparation, against a day the next Maneth appoynted for the purpose. The Emperour was verie well pleased with his Sonnes request, accounting himselfe highly honoured by his demaund: whereupon he caused Heraulds of Armes presently to bee dispatched, to signifie his intended Tournament through all Countries farre and neere. In the meane while Tarsius could not rest day nor night, but still endeuoured to do what he iudged might please the Princesse *Griana*, to whom as yet he had not vttered the effect of his longing desire, albeit, by certeine actions, he rarely made shewe sufficient of his tormenting passions. But it so fell out not long after, that one day in her walking he had sorted her alone from all the other Ladies and Gentlewomen, in a place commodious for a louers discourses, where falling from one argument to another, the furie of his oppressions imboldened him so farre, that at length he brake with her in maner following.

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assemblie, that is appoynted at the feast ensuing, when I hope to receiue the order of Knighthode and if it shall like you to thinke so well of me, as to graunt mee one request, sette enough for you to affoorde me, perswade your selfe that I shall imagine my fortune equall with the happiest knightes that euer liued, in that it may bee the onely meane, whereby I shall enioy the prize and honour of the Triumph. Griana knowing assuredlie that Tarsius, bare her great affection, as I haue before rehearsed, returned him this answere. In sooth Cosin, it would please me marualous well to bee the meane of so good fortune as you promise your selfe. Ne-

nertheleſſe, I haue not learned ſo little modeſtie, as to grant any thing before I know what is deſired. When Tariſius vnderſtood her modeſt excuſe, hée perſwaded himſelfe that he ſhould nowe obtaine that of her, whereof vntill that inſtant he had liued in deſpaire: whereupon, the teares ſtanding in his eyes, he beganne in this manner. I humbly beſeech you good Madame, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: for when I determined to ſmother my griefe in ſecret, the extremities of my affection grew to ſuch a ſurpluſage, as it brake the ſtrings of my thoughts almoſt bowed for euer ſilent, to reueale that to you which my ſelfe dare but reuerently thinke, ſuch is my feare to diſpleaſe you: otherwiſe, I know no meane can warrant me from ſodaine and cruell death: ſo ſetled is the vnſpotted loue I bare you, which when I ſtriue to ouercome, and my ſelfe alſo, the more I ſhould decreaſe it, the more it augmenteth, and that ſo ſtrongly, as while you are in preſence, my ſpirit forſaketh euery part of mée, to liue in you onely. For which cauſe I haue determined (if you thinke good) to requeſt you of the Emperour your father for my Wife: and if hée regarde mee with ſo much honour, the Realme of *Hungaria* may well challenge, and my ſelfe likewiſe, the higheſt roome in earthly felicity, hauing a Miſtreſſe of ſuch vnſpeakable qualitie. In the meane time, if you pleaſe to beſtowe on mee any Jewel of fauour, commaunding mee to weare it as your Knight and Seruant: you ſhall well perceiue howe aduentrous loue will bee in defence of my right, by the aduantage I ſhall recouer in the vertue of a gift ſo acceptable.

Griana, who made but ſlender account of his paſſions, and being not well pleaſed that he held her with ſuch vaine diſcourſes, modeſtly returned him this anſwere. If you had ſuch regarde of me as I well deſerue, you would not attempt me with ſpeeches ſo vnfitting my hearing: for if your deſire bee ſuch as you giue me to vnderſtand, you ought to make it knowen to the Emperour or Empreſſe, who haue

greater

greater authoritie ouer me then I haue my selfe. Therfore I desire you hencefoorth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you knowe howe highlye you offend me: on which condition I am cõtent for this time to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceiue my selfe to bee the onelye cause thereof, graunting you time and leisure thus priuately to assaile me, for which ouersight, I repent mee at the verye heart. With which woordes shee flong away and left him alone, declaring by her countenaunce to be offended with his request, in that shee desired rather to die then accept him for her Husband, or to allowe him the name of her freende. If then Tarisius was driuen into a quandarie, we neede not meruaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatlye whither he went, he entred the Empresse Chamber, where shee and her Son Caniano stoode conferring togither: without saluting the one or other, he satte downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Empresse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had either receiued some great iniurie, or else could not prouide himselfe so sufficientlye as he would for the Triumphe, whereupon she left her Sonne, and calling Tarisius aside, thus began with him. Nephewe, I see you very melancholie, which makes me to iudge, that you want some needefull thing for the Tournament, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which woordes shee beheld Tarisius more wistlye then shee had done before, and perceyued the teares to trickle down his cheekes, which made her more desirous to knowe the cause of his greefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vppe in anguish, as hee could not speake one woord to her. Neuertheless, the Empresse, who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the ende hee disclosed the loue he bare to Griana, and the aunswere likewise which shee made him: whereby I am assured (quoth hee) that nothing but death can cease my torments. The Empresse (who of her selfe did many times determine to make that marri-

age) perceiuing now how fitlie the occaſion offred it ſelfe, began to reſolue on the conſummation thereof: and to content her nephewe, in excuſing the Princeſſe Griana, ſpake as followeth. Do you Nephewe miſlike the anſwere of my Daughter? beléeue me therein ſhee did but her dutie: for ſhe cannot diſpoſe of her ſelfe béing yong and vnder controule, but the Emperour and I, whome you ought firſt to make acquainted with your requeſt. But ſince I perceiue how you are affected, I promiſe you I will conſer with my Lord the Emperour, and hope to preuaile ſo well in the cauſe, as you ſhall ſpéede of that you moſt deſire. As they continued theſe diſcourſes, they were giuen to vnderſtand by a Meſſenger, that the Prince Florendos the Kings ſonne of Macedon was newly arriued, with a braue companie of knightes. But his comming to the Emperour was not as his vaſſale or ſubiecte, becauſe the kingdome of Macedon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to ſée the fayre young Princeſſe Griana, the renowme of whoſe beautie and vertues had ſo peirced his thoughtes, as before he ſawe her, he loued and honoured her, ſo that for this cauſe onely he iourneyed to Conſtantinople, where hee was very honourablie entertained both of the Emperor and his ſonne Caniano, as alſo of the Empreſſe and faire Griana, who oftentimes heard him reckened eſtéemed amongſt the moſt honourable and gracious Princes, that liued at that day.

Chap.

Chap. II.

¶How the *Empresse* conferred with the *Emperour*, as concerning the mariage of theyr Daugheer Griana with Tarisius, sonne to the king of *Hungaria*, whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.

THe empresse was not forgetful of her promise made to her Nephew *Tarisius*, but endeuoured by all meanes possible to finde the Emperor at such leysure, as she might impart the whole to him: and because shée had so hardlie taken the matter vppon her, shée would gladly it should sort to effect, as commonly Women are coueteous of theyr owne desires, therfore no meruaile if shée were earnest in following her intent. Soon after, walking alone with the Emperour, and smoothly couering the baite she was desirous he should swallow, shée desired him to graunt her one request, whereof shée would not willingly be denied. The Emperour neuer before hearing her so importunat, consented at the first to whatsoeuer she demaunded: now perswading her selfe sure to spéed, thus shée began.

My Lord, hauing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter Griana is of yeares and discretion able for a husband, I am the more desirous to sée her honourablie bestowed. And for that the young Prince Tarisius hath béene trained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) some good will appeareth to be betweene them: I should thinke it not amisse to vnite them in mariage togither; for hardlie

lie ſhall we finde (in mine opinion) a Lord of greater blood and birth then he, being heire apparant to the Crowne and kingdoms of Hungaria: beſides, they hauing borne ſo long time conuerſant togither in their young yeeres, will entertaine a more ſpeciall regard of loue betweene them, then can be in any other that may moue the queſtion to her. Madame (aunſwered the Emperour) ſhee is your Child, and I do not thinke but you would her good: therefore I like the motion well, for that indeede I eſteeme ſo well of Tariſius, as of mine owne Sonne, and ſince we haue ſo happily fallen into theſe diſcourſes, we will forthwith certifie the King his Father by our Ambaſſadours, that we may vnderſtand his opinion herein. The Empreſſe gratified her Lord with very heartie thankes, being not a little glad ſhe had ſo well preuayled, wherefore immediatlie ſhee aduertiſed Tariſius. But for Griana, her affection was elſe-where, for ſhee bare a certaine ſecrete good lyking to Florendos ſo ſoone as ſhee beheld him, hearing ſo great report of his Knightly bountie and proweſſe, ſo that beholding them togither, and their eyes deliuering the good conceyte of eache other, one might eaſilye iudge, that Loue hadde ſo mightily maiſtred her thoughts, as (if he conſented) ſhe had ſette downe her reſte for her choiſe, and he on the other ſide was drawne into the ſame compaſſe, notwithſtanding eache of them (for the time) concealed, what they rather deſired ſhould be known betweene them. Yet this hidden fire ſtroue to gaine place of iſſue, for diuers times the Princeſſe Griana being amongſt her Ladies, talking of ſuch Knights as would ſhewe themſelues at the Tournament the Prince Florendos was commonlye firſt ſpoken of, and ſo highly would the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not refraine from changing colour, ſo that the alteration ſhe found in her ſpirite might be euidently perceyued, howbeit none of the Ladies as then noted it: and thus ſhee continued till the feaſte of Saint Maria d' Auguſta, which was the daye appointed for the Tournament, on which daie the Empe-

rour

rour knighted his Sonne Caniano, and Tarisius, Nephew to the Empresse, in honour whereof, he helde a greater and more magnificent Court, then before time hee had done: for he suffered the Ladies to accompanie the knights at the table. Albeit they were not wont to do so often til that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who sate opposite to the Princesse Griana: (during which tyme of Dinner, though many piercing lookes, and smothered sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opinions, yet cunningly they shadowed all from being discouered) and after the Tables wer withdrawne, and each one preparing for the Tourney, Florendos so well behaued himselfe, as hee found the meanes to speake priuately with his newe Friend, and thus he began.

Madame, the Heauens haue not a little fauoured mée, in sorting vs so commodiously togither, that I may shewe before I enter the Lystes royall, the occasion why I left the Realme of Macedon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I sweare to you vpon my knightly faith, that your gracious selfe was the onelie cause of my iourney, and while I line, I shall euermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your fauour and lyking: and the first argument of my happinesse, I should account, if you woulde commaunde me this day to arme my selfe for your knight: otherwise I must bee content to absent my selfe, beeing assured, that, without your regarde, it is vnpossible for me to doe any thing that can returne me estimation or honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any seruice to you, whereby I shoulde deserue to bée accepted: yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, beeing the first I euer desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall do you honour. Now (as you haue heard before) Griana earnestly affected Florendos: neuertheless, as a modest and well aduised Princesse, doubting least hée faigned those speeches of course, dissembling herselfe to bée somewhat displeased, returned this answere.

I did not thinke (my Lorde Florendos) that you would ſo farre forget your ſelfe, to hold mee with ſpeeches not beſeeming the Daughter of ſo great an Emperour as I am: neuertheleſſe, knowing you are a Straunger, and ignorant (it may bee) of the modeſtie which ſhould deſente Knightes, deuiſing with Ladies, I will not vſe ſuch rigour towards you as I ought, yet muſt I tell you that I finde my ſelfe offended. You deſire that as my Knight you may enter the Tourney: for that I graunt ye, to the ende I maye perceiue the effect of the prowelle, which each one ſo much commendeth in you, the reſt, it is my pleaſure that you forbeare. Madame (quoth hee) if I haue vſed any ſuch ſpeeches as agree not with your patience, for Gods ſake (in my excuſe) accuſe my ſmall compaſſe of libertie, which remaineth onelie at your diſpoſition. What (quoth ſhe) thinke you that I will loue any but hee that muſt and ought to be my Huſband? Ah ſweete Ladie (ſaide Florendos) that is it I ſo earneſtlye deſire, and thinke not that I ſollicite you with any other kind of loue, but onely to make you the Miſtreſſe of my ſelfe, and altogither to diſpoſe of me an mine: for prowſe whereof, I will hereafter imploye my ſelfe in the Emperours ſeruice, in ſuch ſort as (if you like it) I hope to purchaſe his conſent. Truelie Sir (quoth ſhe) that onely appertaines to the Emperour and not to mee, to whom you are to make knowen what you intend: for hee hath authoritie to commaunde, and I am bound by duetie to obey. At which wordes the Empreſſe called her away, when Florendos making her courteous reuerence, departed to his chamber to arme himſelfe, for many Knightes were entred the Liſtes, and hee in ſhort ſpace came thither for company: where hee behaued himſelfe with ſuch valour, as he not onely got ỳ honour of the firſt day, but of the foure days following while the Tourney endured, and wonne the prize which Caniano hadde prepared for him that beſt deſerued it, which made him bee greatly eſteemed of the Emperour, and of the whole Court in generall, eſpecially of the fayre Griana, whoſe heart by

little

little and little Loue brought in subiection, to the no small content of Florendos, which doubtlesse hadde the Prince Tarisius beheldc, I imagine hée would haue hardlye liked it. But now during the time of these great Feasts, and Triumphes, Fortune the swórne enimie to all quietnesse, presented the Emperor with other occasions, to cut off these pastimes and courtlie deuises: for after many of ý Knights assembled at his Courte, had taken leaue to returne into their Countries, Gamezio honne to the Soldane of Babilon, who was on the Seas with a mightie Armie, intending to conquer Alexandria, was by extremitie of winds and weather, driuen into the straytes before Constantinople. Which when the Pilots and Marriners perceyued, not one amongst them but greatly reioyced at this good fortune, but chiefly Gamezio, who perswaded himselfe ý his Gods had sent him thither, that the most noble and flourishing Cittie of the world might fall into his handes: whereupon the windes somewhat appeased, and the Seas calmed, he assembled the chiefe and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus began.

My good frendes, I beléeue assuredly, that our great Gods would not suffer vs to arriue in Alexandria, because wée went against them of our owne Lawe and Religion, but rather it liked them better, that we should addresse our selues to this Countrey of Christians, eyther to ruinate it altogither, or at least to bring it vnder our obeysaunce. Therefore I am determined for this time, to deferre the reuenge of the iniurie, which the King Calameno did to the Soldane, and as much as in the lyes imploy my forces in conquest of this Countrey: for which cause, I desire that each of you would particularlie encourage your people, assuring them (if wée can conquer this Cittie) the riches thereof will countervayle their paine and trauaile. The Captaines fayled not to accomplish their charge to the vttermost, summoning euery one presently to Armes: so prouiding their Shippes, their Ensignes and all things else néedful for their defence,

they hoyſed their ſailes, making towards the ſhoare, where with ſuch prouiſion as they had, they toke landing, making ſuch a noyſe with their Drums, Trumpets, and Clamors, as was heard with no ſmal feare in euery part of the Citie. Neuertheleſſe, they were receiued with better reſiſtance then they looked for, as following the diſcourſe of the Hiſtorie, you ſhal at large vnderſtand.

Chap. III.

¶ Of the battaile fought before the Citie of Conſtantinople, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of Gamezio.

IMmediatly was this huge armie on the ſea diſcouered by the Sentinelles of the City, whereupon the rumor arole ſo great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the hauen, where the Moores thought to haue made their firſt entrie. In the mean while, Caniano, Tarifius, and the other principall Knights, with their men of armes, put themſelues in equipage, ordaining their armie in ſuch warlike maner, as now they marchde forth of the Citie, to ſuccour thoſe places where the Moores gaue moſt eager aſſault. The Prince Florendos being left behinde, made no little haſte to gather his companie and as he galloped with them by the Emperours pallace, hee eſpied the Princeſſe Griana ſtanding at her Chamber window, caſting many a ruefull looks towardes the Gates of the Citie, which ſo deeply peirced the gentle Princes heart, as immediatly hee ſaide with himſelfe. By heauen (ſweete Ladie) either will I die this

day

day, or remoue the greefe that seemeth so neere to touche you. And with this resolution he gaue the spurres to his horse, when it was not long before hee got among the thickest of the Moores, where he beheld the enemie so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prooue daungerous and dismall. For the Prince Gamezio, was estæmed one of the best Knightes through all Asia, and that daye he behaued himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retire towards the Cittie.

Which when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the Cittie, he was not a litle greeued to see his men turne their backes on their enimies, & disperse themselues in such fearefull and dismaying sorte. But Florendos, & the Prince Caniano vsed such meanes, as they got them soone in araye againe, and returned on the enemie with a fresh and hardie charge. Tarsius shewed himselfe very valiant, and aduenturous, striuing by all the meanes hee could to equall the Prince Florendos, who that daye gaue testimonie of most rare exploits: so these three noble Gentlemen past from rancke to rancke, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so bloodelie slaughtered on euery side, meeting with Tarsius, would take reuenge on him, deliuering him such a cruell stroke on the head with his sworde as downe he fell to the ground so astonished, as his enemie might euen then haue slaine him: and so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore aduancing himselfe on his Stirrops, to reach a full stroke at Tarsius on the ground, lifted him quite out of his Saddle with his Launce, and bare him so rudelie there with to the earth, as breaking his necke with the fall, he gaue vppe the ghost. When the Moores beheld Gamezio their Generall slaine, and the Christians make such hauocke of them, their hearts failing them to make further resist, fled so fast as they could towards their Ships, when had not the night to soone preuented them, not one had escaped death or taken prisoner,

notwithſtanding, the greateſt parte were put to the ſwoꝛde, diuers making haſte to get away by boates, were dꝛowned in the Sea, and manie of account bꝛought backe pꝛiſoners: thus with victoꝛie returned the Emperoꝛs power to the Citie.

So many of the Moꝛes as eſcaped to their ſhips, béing not a litle glad they were ſo far from their enimies: ſet ſayle and returned towards the Soldane, to whom they declared the ſumme of theyꝛ miſ-foꝛtune, as alſo the death of his ſonne Gamezio, which tidings made him wel-nie mad with rage and anger. But béing old and crazed with ſickneſſe, he could not ge in perſon to reuenge his death, which made him vowe and ſweare, that ſo ſoone as his other ſonne came to yéres to beare armes, he would ſend him with ſuch a puiſſãt ſtrength, as eaſily he ſhould deſtroy the Emperour and his Countrie: in the meane time, he ſent the ranſome to redéeme them that were taken pꝛiſoners: where we will leaue the Soldane, and returne to Caniano and the other Pꝛinces, who béing nowe come againe to the Cittie, the Emperour hauing heard the woꝛthie ſeruice Florendos had donne that ſame day (and how he had receiued ſome fewe daungerous woundes in the battaile) ſent foꝛ him in all haſte that might bee to his Pallace, becauſe his owne Chirurgions and phiſitians ſhoulde haue care of him. So was Florendos bꝛought veꝛy honourablie to the Pallace, and conducted to a Chamber beſéeming his eſtate, where the Empꝛeſſe and Griana came pꝛeſentlye to viſite him: to whome the Pꝛince Caniano recounted, how Tariſius had béene ſlaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos ſtepped betwéene his death and him, but (quoth hée) the Moꝛe excuſed Tariſius, foꝛ in my pꝛeſence he gaue his laſte farewell to this woꝛld, ſo that nowe wée may ſaye the victoꝛie is ours, albeit befoꝛe it hung in harde ſuſpence. While Caniano continued theſe and ſuch like ſpéeches, Griana caſt manya ſwéete loke on the Pꝛince Florendos, and hee aunſwered his obiect with the ſelfe ſame meſſengers of his heart. Thus contented they their ſeuerall paſſions with ſuch

modeſt

modeſt and vertuous regarde, as none preſent could ſuſpect their ſecret meaning. The Empreſſe and her daughter courteouſly taking their leaue, Florendos and his Chirurgions we leaue a while togither, they to apply medicines to his woundes, and he the remembraunce of his Miſtreſſe to his heart. On the morrow the Emperour with his nobilitie rode forth of the Citie, to ſée the ſlaughtered bodies, among whom they found Gamezio, who was eaſily knowne by the richnes of his Armour, which Cariano cauſed to be taken from the dead body, and brought to Florendos, as the deſert of his trauaile: when the Emperour himſelf, (the more to honor him) made preſent thereof to Florendos at his returne, with theſe ſpéeches. My noble cozin, by your valor & knightly proweſſe, haue I had the vpper hand of mine enemies: may I but liue to requite thy good deſarts, I ſhall account my ſelfe happie and fortunate: notwithſtanding, account of me as thy kinſmã and continuall freend, and be there ought in my power ſhall like thée to demaunde, on the faith of a King I vow to giue it thée.

Florendos moſt humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great honour he did him, as alſo for his large and bountifull promiſe, whereon he builded ſo aſſuredlie, as he almoſt accounted fayre Griana for his own: who with the Empreſſe her Mother came daylie to viſit him, by which meanes their mutuall loue encreaſed more and more, and Florendos recouered his health in the ſhorter time, when hee ſolicited the Emperour with this ſute following.

Chap. IIII.

How Florendos intreated the Emperour, to giue him in mariage his Daughter Griana, and what anſwer the Emperour made him.

After ỳ Florendos was throughlie healed of the woundes, which he receiued in fight againſt the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leyſure, & alone in his Chamber, he began to ſalute him as after followeth. My dread and ſouraigne Lord, ſo princely and gracious haue your fauors beene towards me, ſince firſt I entred your royal Court, as the king my father and I ſhal neuer anſwer ſuch exceeding courteſie. And to the end this kindnes may rather increaſe then any way diminiſh, I beſeech your highnes not to deny me one requeſt, which among the infinit number of your princely graces towardes me, I ſhall account it to exceed all other. In briefe, it is the Princeſſe Griana your daughter, whoſe loue & honorable fame, made me forſake ỳ Realme of Macedon, onely to deſire hir in marriage, if either anye deſert in me, or your owne princely good conceyts, might repute me worthy of ſo high a fauour . . And for I would not your highnes ſhoulde any way miſconceiue of mee, as that the motion proceedeth from a youthfull and vnaduiſed head, or that I haue enterpriſed it, without the good liking of the King my Father: I humblie deſire your Maieſtie to reſte ſatiſfied bothe in theſe and all other opinions, in that my Fathers conſent, brought mee with no little ſpeede hither, and the hope of yours during my abode here, hath taught

mee

me to place my loue with discretion, and continue it with honourable vnspotted loyaltie. With this addition (vnder your highnesse correction) that were she mine as I am wholie hers, the faithfull seruice of a thankefull Sonne, would aunswere the gentlenes of so good a Father, and the irrenocable vowes of holie loue, assure Griana of her Florendos. Right deerelye did the Emperour loue the Prince Florendos, as had he beene his owne sonne Caniano: his knightlie valour and manifold other vertues iustlie inuyting him thereto: and gladlie he would haue consented to his request, if his promise made vnto Tarisius did not binde him to the contrary, where vpon he returned him this aunswere. Believe me good Cozin, I am not a little agreeued that I cannot satisfie your gentle request, for that Tarisius, ere the we to the Empresse hath alreadie preuented me: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daylie I expect the Ambassadours comming from Hungaria to finish the marriage, so that I had rather lose the best of my Cities, then it should be said I falsified my word. Notwithstanding, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre higher in my grace and fauour then hee: yet necessitie is without lawe, and the regarde of mine honour must intreate you to holde me excused.

Greatlie abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that hope frustrated, that had maintayned his life since his comming to Constantinople: and so nypt in the heade was he with the Emperours aunswere, as he stode a good whyle in a studie not speaking a worde, at last he began thus. God forbidde that so great a Prince should breake his promise by my occasion: neuertheles, my truth and loyaltie to your highnesse shall not anywaye diminish, but I shall remaine the most forward in duetie, of any that owe seruice and allegaunce to your Maiestie. Nether will I (sayd the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but loue you rather better then I did before. Then entred diuers Noble men and Gentlemen, which made them breake off

off from further speeches, and Florendos taking his leaue, went to his Chamber, so full of griefe and extreame heauinesse, as easily hee could haue beene induced to commit some violence vpon himselfe: but casting himselfe vpon his bed, he thus began to breath forth the furie of his passions, to ease the heauie burthen of his oppressed spirit.

Vnhappie wretch that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou flatter thy selfe withal, seeing ỹ meane that should maintaine the continuance thereof, forbiddes thee (fonde man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet gouerned thy nativitie, that hee to whome thou gauest life, should this day be the cause to ende thine owne. Beleeue me Tarsius, had I made tryall of this inconuenience before, hardlie should I haue put my persone in such daunger among'st the Moores, to shielde thy life: but in defending thy sworde out of thy throate; I haue deserued die thrust it in mine owne, so that by lengthning thy dayes, I haue enpayred mine owne date, and that with a death so miserable and cruell, as no enemie whatsoeuer would wish to another. But were it not that my duetie to the good Emperour counterwaunded mee, thou couldest not with such ease either outdraue mee in my loue, or thus disarme the gracious fauoure of my Mistresse Griana, were affection ballanced with desert, or loue measured by vertue, as it is my opinion. Notwithstanding, to die for her loue I shall account my selfe happie, in that shee cannot but pittie my vnluckie death, and my spirite should passe with greater quiet to his ende, if shee knewe with what content I take my destinie: but fayre Griana, would God I had eyther not seene thee at all, or Fortune had beene fauourable to me in choyse. At which words, the extremitie of his passions tooke away the libertie of his speeche, so that hee coulde not finish what hee would gladlie haue spoken, but falling from his bedde to the grounde in a swoune, amazed one of his Esquires that was in the nexte Chamber, who hearing the fall, ran in immediatelie, where seeing his Maister lying dead (in his iudgement) ranne and called Frenaro, who was Cozin to Florendos, and one that knew

knewe moste his priuate affayres, notwithstanding, hee was ignorant in the cause of this accident, who taking him vppe in his armes, with colde water and vineger caste in his face, at length hee got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his eyes, and seeing his Cozin so busie about him, breathing forth two or three bitter sighes sayde. My deere frends and Cozin, I beseeche you hinder not the ende and issue of my life, for being out of all hope to recouer my Ladie Griana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life. When Frenato heard these wordes, hee doubted that the Prince had receyued some contrary aunswere from the Emperour, as concerning the marriage betweene him and his Daughter, for whose loue onely hee lefte the kingdome of Macedon: wherefore, hee perceiuing that she must be the onely meane to ease his torment, hee began thus roundelie to aunswere the Prince. And what of this? must you therefore dispayre? Alas (saide Florendos,) what would yée haue me do? the Emperour hath long since passe his promise for her to Tarisius, as his highnesse assured mee by his owne wordes. Merie well Sir (aunswered Frenato) but do you know if she haue giuen her consent: I promise you I am perswaded that she loues him not, but that her fauourable regard is much more towardes you then him: and for you saye so much, to morrowe will I sound the bottome of this matter, so that (if I can) I will frustrate the Emperours intent towardes Tarisius. Do you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griefe, and shewe not your selfe mal-content for anye thing that hath beene saide: but be of good cheere, and referre your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeuours. These and such like perswasions Frenato vsed to the Prince, whome hee thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner. All this while the Emperour bethought himselfe on the speeches that had passed betweene him and Florendos, which made him the night following to discourse thereon with the Empresse, perswading her that shee could more willinglie accept of him

for

for his ſonne then Tariſius. But ſhe who highlye fauoured her Nephewe, reproued his opinion with many aunſwers, ſo that by importunate intreaties, teares, and other ſubtill ſetches, which Women are wont to vſe to accompliſh theyr deſires, ſhe ſo farre diſſwaded the Emperour, as hée promiſed her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whome he firſt paſt his word. Of which wordes, the Empreſſe was not a little glad, and therefore all that night ſhée deuiſed, by what meanes ſhe might from that time forwarde ſo much as in her lay, hinder *Florendos* from ſpeaking to her Daughter: whereupon, ſhe daylie kept her Chamber of preſence, and helde a more ſtrict looke on Griana then before ſhée hadde donz: which greatly increaſed the paſſions of *Florendos*, and brought him into ſo weake eſtate, as the learned Phiſitions could not deliuer the cauſe of his ſickneſs, to the no ſmall greefe of the Emperour, but eſpecially of Caniano. Yet for all this would not the Empreſſe at anie time viſite him, becauſe ſhée would hinder the occaſion of her Daughters ſeeing him, remembring what ſpeeches had paſt betweene him and the Emperour. And albeit Griana made no outward ſhewe thereof, yet in her heart ſhée was greatlie diſpleaſed at her Mothers dealings, ſo that one day when her Brother Caniano came to ſée her, to recount vnto her in what extremitie he hadde left his freendly companion, & what greefe it would be to him if he died, as he greatlie doubted: What my Lord (quoth ſhée) it is not ſo I hope: Yea certaine (quoth hée) and I feare he will very hardlie eſcape this daye. At which wordes the water ſtode in her eyes, yet ſo well as ſhée coulde ſhée diſſembled her paſſions: nenertheleſſe, ſhée could not holde it in, but ſaid, I meruaile much that the Empreſſe my Mother makes ſo ſlender account of him, as ſince his ſickneſſe ſhée would not vouchſafe once to viſite him: I feare ſhée hath forgotten what good hée did for vs, that day when hée valiantly ſlewe the Turke Gamezio. Beleeue me (my good Lord and Brother) I am hartily ſorie for his ſickneſſe, for if he die (as God forbiode,

quoth

quoth she secretly, the Emperour my father shall loose more then he thinketh on: the great seruice hee hath done for him already, may giue instance of my words, and he being the sonne of so great a Prince as hee is. By this time hadde such extreame greefe ouerburdened her hart, as she was constrained (feigning to go to the Empresse Chamber) to leaue her brother, that she might alone by her selfe bemoane her friendes hard fortuns.

Chap. V.

How Griana sent a ring to the Prince *Florendos*, by Cardena her maide, desiring him (as he loued her) to comfort himselfe; and of the answere he sent her.

SOone as Griana had left her Brother, shée went into her chamber, where more and more she lamented for the sickneſſe of Florendos, and with her teares shee couples these discourses. May it be that any liuing creature can deserue so greeuous punishment as I doo, that endanger the life of the worthiest knight in the world? Vnhappie that I am, that loue, yea, the loue he beares to mee, should bring so braue a Gentleman to so hard an exigent: but if he die, such iust vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as I will not remaine one houre aliue after him, and let our ghosts séeke their owne quiet in death, that fortune would not afford vs in life. Yet wil I thus farre first aduenture, that before any sléepe enter these eyes of mine, trie if it consist in my power to ease his extremity, that buyes my loue at two deers a price. And in this anguish of minde she called one of her

her Damoſels, the Daughter of her Nurſe named Cardina, whom aboue the reſt ſhe truſted moſt, and to her ſhe began in manner following. Cardina, thou knowſt the loue I alwaies bare thy Mother, and for her ſake how well I haue thought of thee, I haue knowne thee long time a true and faithfull Seruaunt: but now Cardina is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witneſſe thy loyaltie to me, onely as thou art ſure, ſo to bee ſecret, and ſo ſecret as I muſt put my life and honour into thy ſecreſie.

Cardina, who was wiſe, and of good gouernement, hearing Griana vſe ſuch earneſt ſpeeches, imagined that ſhe would commit no common matter to her truſt with ſuch coniuration, whereupon ſhe modeſtlie returned this aunſwere. Madame, rather had I be torne peecemeale in ſunder, then anie thing you commaund for ſecrete, ſhoulde by mee be reuealed without your licence: and ſo aſſure your ſelfe, that while I liue, you ſhall finde me as faithfull in deede, as I promiſe in woord. I neuer hitherto (quoth the Princeſſe) had other opinion of thee, liſten now therefore what I ſhall commaunde thee. I haue vnderſtoode for certaine Cardina, that the greeuous ſickneſſe of the Prince Florendos, is cauſed by verie earneſt loue which he beares to me, and for I account it great pitie to loſe ſo good a Knight, doo ſo much as take the paines to go to him from mee: and ſaye I deſire him to bee of good cheere, and if there bee anye thing in my power may do him good, I will gladlye accompliſh it, as ſhe that loues him as her owne ſelfe, and to aſſure him thereof, ſaye I ſend him this Ring, which I will him to keepe as a pledge of my loue. Madame (aunſwered Cardina) Fortune ſpeede me ſo well, as my paines may giue eaſe to both your paſſions: and might my ſentence like you Madame, I knowe no knight ſo worthy of your loue as Florendos. Go then (ſayde Griana) and returne againe ſo ſoone as thou canſt. So went Cardina ſtraight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entraunce whereof, ſhee mette the Prince Caniano ſo beautie and penſiue as might be, becauſe

he

he perceiued his Frende to consume awaye euerie day more and more. But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept aside, and would not be seene of Caniano: who being gone, shee wente vp to the Chamber, where when shee was readie to enter, she heard the Prince complaine in this sorte. Ah poore wretche, must thou needes die without any hope of remedie? And as he would haue proceeded on, Cardina stepped to him, and after shee had saluted him, said to him secretelye, that the Princesse Griana had sent her to him, to vnderstand of his healthy, and beleeue mee good Prince (quoth shee) I neuer sawe Ladie so sorrowfull for your sickneſſe, as shee is. She commendeth her selfe to your honour most heartilie, and hath sent you this Ring, as an earnest of the loue shee beares you, desiring you to be of good cheere and comfort your selfe, because shee desires to see you, to confer with you of matters that concerne you both nerely. These words so rauished the spirit of Florendos, as a good while he doubted, whither he dreamed, or that he might giue credite to what he hearde: for albeit hee knewe the messenger so well as any in the Courte, yet coulde hee not perswade himselfe that hee was so fortunate. At length (betweene hope and dispayre) hee toke the Ring, which he entertayned with manie deuoute kisses, and imbracing Cardina so well as hee coulde, thus aunswered. Alas my sweete frende, may it bee possible that my Lady hath such regarde of him, who neuer was able to doo her any seruice? Doubt not therefore my Lorde (aunswered Cardina) and if you will declare your loue aunswerable to hers in vertue, you must giue testimonie thereof by comforting your person, that shee may see you so soone as may be. Ah fayre Virgin (quoth he) let my whole life be imployed, in what shall like her diuine nature to commaunde mee: and I assure you, that these tydings hath breathed such newe life into my very soule, as alreadie I finde my selfe wonderfullie chaunged, yea, and that in such sorte, as before three dayes bee past, I shall attend her gracious will with seruiceable diligence. In the meane while, I shal

desire

deſire you faire friend, to let my ſoueraigne miſtreſſe vnderſtand, that I kiſſe her highneſſe hand in humble dutie, and had ere this giuen farewell to this life, had not her ſweete regard called me againe from death. Thus parted Cardina from the prince, taking her way ſpeedily towards Griana, who longed not a little to heare from *Florendos*, whom ſhe had made Lorde of her gentle affections.

Chap. VI.

¶ How Cardina recited to the Princeſſe Griana, what ſpeeches had paſſed between her and *Florendos*: and of the counſell ſhe gaue her Miſtreſſe, to conferre with him in the garden, ſo ſoone as he was recouered.

CArdina thus diſpatched from Florendos, made no little haſte towardes the princeſſe, who remained all this while ſilent in her chamber: and no ſooner perceiued ſhe Cardina to enter, but ſhe demanded if Florendos receiued her token in good part or no. Beleeue me Madame (anſwered Cardina) I thinke you neuer did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine more honour and applauſe, then by that you vouchſafed to doe at this inſtant, for in my iudgement you haue perfourmed a miracle, in giuing him life that was in the very iawes of death. Then from point to point ſhe recounted the talke paſſed betweene them, firſt how ſhe found him in the midſt of his regrets, and laſtly what meſſage he had ſent by her.

Thus while Cardina continued her diſcourſe, euery word tooke hold on the gentle heart of the princeſſe, and wounded

her

her with such pitifull regarde of the Prince his torments: as what she desired inwardlie, shee shadowed with modestie, as lothe to receiue shame in her loue, hauing carried her selfe with such honour all her life, quoth shée to Cardina. How might I (good Seruaunt) ease this waighty oppression? Verie well (said Cardina) when Fortune alloweth opportunitie. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princesse as I am, to bee séene secrete with so braue a Gallant, doth greatlye hazard my life and honour. As for that Madame, (saide Cardina) my Sister can better aduise you then I, or any that I know: by her meanes may you speake with your knight, the bravest Gentleman in the world, and one whom I knowe is so farre deuoted yours, as hee will rather lose his life, then impeache your honour anie way: and otherwise then in loyaltie to make you his Ladie and wife, I am well assured hée loueth not, which loue (Madame) you may well entertaine. Returne then Cardina (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and allure him that so soone as hee is recouered, I will come and speake with him, in such place where hee may well aduenture: and desire him as hee loueth me, that it may bee with all conuenient spéede. Cardina without any further delay, went with this Message to the Prince Florendos: Who hartened himselfe so well vppon these spéeches, as within fiue dayes he found himselfe thoroughlye amended, whereof the Emperour and Canano his Sonne, was not a little glad: but Tarisius was scant well pleased thereat, for he had conceiued a secrete iealousie, because he was so earnest in affection towardes Griana, who by her Mayde Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following hée should come into the Garden, whereinto her Chamber had a secrete entraunce, and there would hee and shée conferre of theyr loue, without suspicion of any. Florendos séeing these affayres forte to so good ende, purposed what euer happened, not to fayle the time and place: which made him thinke this day a yéere in length, so long hee lokes and desired for the night. But now the wished houre is come,

when Florendos with his Cozin Frenato (who was priuie to the Princes ſecrete loue) departed from theyr lodginges, and comming to the Garden, they ſawe the wall was verie high and hard to climbe, notwithſtanding, greater things are poſſible to Louers, cheefely when a cauſe of ſuch waight is in hand, ſo that in ſhort time Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place where Griana ſtayed his comming, who had no body with her but Lerina, Siſter to Cardina, to whom likewiſe ſhe thoroughly bewrayed her ſecrets. He hauing eſpied them, came and fell on his knee before the Princeſſe, but ſhee tooke him vppe in hir armes, embracing him ſo ſweetelie: as Lerina withdrew her ſelfe amongſt the Trees, not with any intent of feare to diſpleaſe them, but with a certaine kinde of greefe which ouercame her, that ſhee wanted a Freende to participate with her in loue, as her Miſtreſſe hadde, before whom Florendos beeing on his knee, ſayd. Madame, by vertue of your commaundement I am thus bolde to enter your preſence, yeelding my whole abilitie to you, as to the diuine Goddeſſe that hath ſheelded mee from death, which grace ſeeing your princelie nature hath affoorded mee, my life for euer hereafter remaines at your ſoueraigne pleaſure: the vnfeigned promiſe whereof, I binde to you by irreuocable vowes, but eſpeciallie by my faith, the onely ornament of a true knight, that I deſire no longer to breath this ayre, then to honoure your name with my continuall ſeruice, for life without your grace and fauour, is more yrkeſome to me then a thouſand deathes. But by your fauour my Lorde (anſwered Griana) howe or from whence hath this hotte loue ſprunge, let me knowe I deſire you: Madame (q he) as I haue heeretofore, ſo at this time I aſſure you, that in my native Countrie of Macedon, I hearde the renowne of your excelling beautie, at which verie inſtant I dedicated my ſelfe onelie yours: and euer ſince continuing in this religious ſeruice, I haue ſo confidentlie ſet downe my reſt, in gracious regard of your ſweete ſelfe, as beeing yours in ſeruice, I liue: if otherwiſe,

I die. In ſoth (ſaid the Princeſſe) I ſée then you haue giuen your ſelfe wholie mine, and ſo I am well contented to accept you. Then Madame (quoth he) to ſeale the aſſuraunce of this diuine fauour you haue done me, let mée intreate to kiſſe thoſe ſweete lippes, that deliuered the ſentence I haue long loked for. Which to grant, though (for modeſties ſake) at firſt ſhée ſéemed daintie, yet at length loue had ſo ſurprized her, as he néeded not ſtriue when no reſiſtaunce was offered. Thus with teares and ſolemne kiſſes, they breathed into each others ſoule the muts arguments of their loue, and fayre Cinthia amiablie fauouring this delicate encounter, added ſuch courage to the minde of this louelie Champion, as breaking his Launce in the face of Venus, hée bequeathed the ſucceſſe of his deuoire to the gracious aſpecte of that Planet. And among a number of ſoft and ſweete loue ſpéeches, he diſcourſed to her his talke with the Emperour her Father, how he had requeſted her in marriage, and how he excuſed his conſent by the promiſe hée had made before to Tariſius, through the daylie and earneſt perſwaſions of the Empreſſe. Notwithſtanding (quoth he) in reſpect you haue not conſented thereto, I hope they ſhall finde themſelues farre beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princeſſe, ſhe neuer knewe that Tariſius had laboured to haue her to his Wife, becauſe ſhe made ſo light account of him, as ſhe would rather die then conſent thereto, whereuppon ſhée returned Florendos this aunſwere. The Emperour my Father hath reaſon to thinke hardlye of my Mother, and great diſcredite will it bée to her, to procure my mariage againſt my will, for neuer ſhall I conſent thereto: and therefore my Lord I deſire your aduiſe, how I may preuent this inſuing daunger. Madame (aunſwered Florendos) my deuiſe is layd alreadie, ſo pleaſe you to accept thereof: I will conuey you hence ſecretlie, and before the Emperour or any one knowe of it, into my Countrie of Macedon, where I and mine ſhall entertaine you with great and reuerend honour, and you ſhall be our gracious Ladie and Princeſſe. Beleeue me (ſayd ſhe)

it is doubtfull in ſuch a iourney what daungers maye happen, notwithſtanding, hauing vowed my ſelfe onelie yours: be it to the lyking or diſlyking of my Father and Mother, I hadde rather breake through the ſtraightes of a greater hazarde, then be forced to marrie him, whome while I liue I cannot like: therefore dee you expecte the aduauntage of the time, and I will aduenture with you whither you pleaſe. Madame (anſwered Florendos) continue you this reſolution, and referre the reſt to my charge, which you ſhall ſee effected ere thrée dayes be paſt: in the meane while I entend to take my leaue of the Emperour your Father, with this excuſe, that the King my Father commaundeth my returne home: for which cauſe I will ſende my trayne before, reſeruing onely but tenne of my beſt Knights to accompanie mée. For that (quoth Griana) doo what you thinke beſt, and without anie further expecting me in this place, certifie mee how things happen, by your Cozin Frenato, or my Maide Cardina. But now you ſée the day beginnes to breake, wherefore let me deſire you to departe, that no ſcandall or ſuſpition ariſe of our méeting. Florendos kiſſed the Princeſſe hande, though longer hée woulde haue ſtayed, humblye toke his leaue, and by the helpe of Lerina, hée got ouer the Wall againe, where Frenato ſtayed his comming, to whome when he was entred his lodging, hee imparted the appointment betweene him and the Princeſſe, deſiring him to diſcharge his trayne, except ten of his beſt approued Knightes, to help him if any hinderance preuented his intent: as for the reſt, they ſhould be going on before, and ſtay his comming at an appointed place, thrée dayes iourney frō Conſtantinople. In the morning he awaited the Emperors comming abroade, to whom he ſaid, that he had receiued Letters from ỹ King his Father, with expreſſe commaundement to make ſpéedie returne home: therefore my good Lorde (ſayd hée) I deſire to depart with your fauourable liking, and in reſpect I may not contrary where I am bounde to obey, I intend to morrow to ſet forward on my iourney, aſſuring your highneſſe,

that

that in what place I shall chaunce to come, I am yours in loyall and faithfull seruice. My good Cozin (aunswered the Emperour) I giue you thankes with all my heart, for the honour you haue done me with your gentle presence: and if you haue occasion to vse mée in ought, you shall perceiue how highlie I loue and estéeme of you. My Lord (said Florendos) I desire to deserue the great kindnesse I haue found alreadie: so taking his leaue, the Emperour embraced him, and as he issued forth to his Chamber, hee met the Prince Caniano, of whome he toke his leaue likewise, who desired him to stay thrée or foure dayes longer. In which time there came to the Courte certaine Ambassadours, which the King of Hungaria had sent to the Emperour, to conclude the mariage betwéene his Sonne Tarisius and the Princesse Griana, the Duke of Gramay béeing chéefe of this Embassage, who was accompanied with many Knightes and Gentlemen of name and account, to whome the Empresse gaue verie gracious welcome, in that shee hadde privately procured this their cõming. As these Ambassadors entred ỹ great Chamber, Caniano and Tarisius who accompanied them, perceiued Griana to withdraw her selfe aside verye sad and melancholie: whereupon Caniano came vnto her (greatlie abashed at her angry countenaunce) and thus he began. Fayre Sister, ãt this time when you ought to shewe the most chéerefull countenaunce, you are more sadde then of long time I haue séene you: me thinkes you haue good occasion to be merrie, séeing the Emperour my Father hath provided you so braue a Husbande, as is my Cozin the Prince Tarisius, who I am sure loues you as his owne life. Ah brother (quoth shée) I knowe not what should moue him so to do, séeing I neuer thought so well of him: and more gladly could I entertaine mine owne death, then bée constrained to loue where I cannot. These words did Tarisius easily vnderstand, notwithstanding he made shewe as though he did not: but going to the Empresse hee desired her to stay there with the Emperour, séeing the Ambassadours were come

from the King his Father, that what was begun as concerning him and Griana, might now be finiſhed according to her promiſe. Vppon this occaſion, the Empreſſe called Griana aſide, and with ſmoothe and ſweete ſpeeches began to breake with her, how for her good ſhee had induced the Emperour, to giue her in marriage to her Cozin Tariſius, and what honourable aduantage ſhee ſhould receiue thereby: wherefore faire Daughter (ſayd ſhee) reſolue your ſelf with childlike obedience, to thinke well of that your Parents haue determined. All theſe perſwaſions could not drawe one pleaſing word from the Princeſſe, but ſhee excuſes her ſelfe ſtill, by the deſire ſhee had to remaine as ſhee was, and rather then to marrie ſhee would take a religious life vpon her: with which words ſhee brake into ſuch teares as the Empreſſe was conſtrained to leaue her alone, not doubting to find her the next time in better tune. Griana then conſidering with her ſelfe, how ſhee ſhould be enforced at length to yelde, whither ſhe would or no, if Florendos did not the ſooner accompliſh his enterpriſe: called Cardina vnto her, and ſent her with this charge to Florendos, that, that preſent night he ſhould not fayle to meete her in the garden, where ſhe would be ready to depart with him: otherwiſe he ſhould neuer gaine the like opportunitie: with which meſſage Cardina departed.

Chap.

Chap. VII.

How Florendos came that night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and Griana had intended, and what happened to them.

FLorendos vnderstanding the will of his Mistresse, with great diligence labored to execute what they had intēded, and taking his leaue at the Court, feigned hee would returne no more, but take his way straight towards Macedō. Tarisius whose iealousie increased euer ye daye more and more, set priuy spies to watch euery night who went in and out at the Princesse Chamber: and albeit of long time his labors were frustrate, yet at length he and his spies perceiued, how he whom he most enuied, mounted the garden Wall where the Princesse lay for Florendos hauing left his company without the Citie, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, he priuily returned again to the Pallace, thinking about mid-night to carie her away, for whose loue hee had thrust himselfe into this daungerous hazard.

Thus hauing left their horses without the citie wᵗ their pages, & being come to the Garden Wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get vppe, Tarisius and his men, who vnhappily lay there in ambush, ran violently vpon him, crying all aloud, kil, kill these villaines that would dishonor the Emperours Pallace. At which words, Florendos and Frenato, seing themselues discouered, presently drew their swordes, and beganne to lay about them very valiantly, Florendos ai-

uing Tariſius ſo cruell a ſtroke on the head, that hee fell downe to the ground as he had beene dead, and two or three of his company with him: which when the reſt beheld, they got ouer the Wall, and running with great clamour into the Cittie, cried, helpe, helpe Tariſius, whom Florendos (ſeeking to rob the Emperours Pallace) hath cruelly murdered. This noyſe was heard by Griana, Lerina, and Cardina, who were in the Garden ſtaying for Florendos: which did ſo amaze the hardieſt of the three, as they knewe not what countenance to ſette on the matter: eſpecially Griana, whome this feare had ſtrooken into a dead traunce, but Lerina andher Sister taking her vp in their armes, conueyed her into her Chamber, and ſone after into her bed, when recouering her ſelfe, in extreame weeping thus ſpake. Alas miſerable wretch ý I am, doth Fortune employ all meanes ſhe can for my deſtruction? well, let her do the vttermoſte ſpight ſhee can, for I am well aſſured before it be long, that death ſhall tryumphe aboue all her diſcourteſies. Cardina ſeeing her ſo weepe and wring her handes, and as it were readie to fall into diſpaire, began to perſwade her in this ſorte. Madame, it is no time now to vſe theſe extremities: for Gods ſake learne to couer your paſſions, to the ende the Emperour may not detect vs, beeing aſſured that as yet wee were not perceiued: and if you can but content your ſelfe, all this tumult will ſone bee ouercome. I pray thee (quoth Griana) leaue me alone, and go ſee (if thou canſt) what is become of Florendos, that I may know whither hee bee taken or ſlaine. So went Cardina, and ſtading among others, as one that knew nothing, beheld all. During this hot tumult, Frenato ſeeing trouble encreaſing more and more, followed the matter with ſuch diligence, as hee got Florendos forth of the throng, and the darkeneſſe of the night was ſuch, as they eaſily compaſſed to get out of the Cittie, where their Pages ſtayed with their Horſes, whereon they mounted and ſet on away. But the Prince Florendos would manie times haue returned backe againe, ſo loth was hee to

leaue

leaue her whom hée loued so déerely: for béeing out of all hope to sée her againe, hée estéemed his life of no value or account. In which impatience, he rent his comely locks of haire, and haled his flesh with great violence, whereupon Frenato thus spake to him. Why how now my Lord: will you in séeking honour, wound your selfe with shame: or in arguing your loue to your Lady, endaunger her life? desire you to lose your selfe, and her also for euer? Beléeue mée Cozin, this very hardly beséemes you, that the subtill dealing of a cowardly Knight, should make you thus to forget your self. No no good Cozin, it is now no time to declare these shewes: let vs therefore make spéede to our companie, and if you thinke good, we will send one secretly backe to the Cittie, to vnderstand the end of this troublesome broyle, and wée in the meane time may set forward towards Macedon. Ah swéete Cozin (quoth *Florendos*) you speake as the man that cannot comprehend my torments: thinke you it is possible for me to liue, leauing that rare creature in such perrill, for whose loue a Hell of gréefes hath martired my soule? By my Knightly faith I sweare, that death is a thousand times more welcome to me, then to be massered by this one conceit, that I should liue an houre out of her gracious seruice. Well well Syr (said Frenato) what you may not do now, referre till better conuenience, and let vs set on before the day-light descry vs: otherwise, in séeking to defend Giana, your selfe shall be witnes of her reproach and condemnation. Florendos perceiuing his Cozin did aduise him for the best, was well contented to be ruled by him: so giuing the spurres to their Horses, stayed not till they ouertooke ỳ rest of their company: when he dispatched an Esquire presentlie backe to the Cittie, commaunding him straightly to direct soone to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of euerie thing that happened in his absence.

But now to returne where before we left, Cardina had not long stayed in this burlye burly, but shée perceiued the Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to

arme

arme themſelues to helpe Taniſius: for by this time had the two knights which eſcaped, aduertiſed in the court, that they tooke Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to go to diſhonour the Princeſſe Griana. At which report the Emperour was ſo moued, as he wēt in great furie to his daughters Chamber, whom he found in her bed, more likelie to die then liue: but neceſſitie (whereof many do often make a vertue) made her couer her weakenes with a faire ſhew of courage, ſo that when ſhe ſee him enter, ſhe wrapped her ſelfe in her night mantle, and came before him, to whom he began in this furious maner. Thou leud Gyrle, dareſt thou conceiue the thought to do mee this diſhonor? By my crowne, for this thy preſumption, I ſhall make thee ſuch an example to all other, as thy head from thy ſhoulders will ſcant quite thy fault.

Griana hearing him ſpeake ſo roughly, anſwered him againe thus mildly. My Lord and Father, I beſeeche you to pardon me, you accuſe me, and I know not wherefor: if I haue done euill, it is in you to chaſtiſe me as you ſhall pleaſe: and if I be innocent, vouchſafe good Father not to condemne mee. Ah varlet (quoth hee) this excuſe ſhall little profite thee. So taking her verie rudelie, he locked her in a ſtrong Tower, whereof he carried the key himſelfe: then went hee to Taniſius his lodging, to ſee how he did, for it was tolde him that he was in daunger of his life: where he found the Empreſſe heauilye weeping, but he cauſed her to go to her Chamber, and commaunded his Chirurgions to looke diligentlie to his Nephewe, and not to ſpare any coſt to purchaſe his health. Nowe becauſe they which ſearched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bruite and rumour was qualified, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the morning, when the Empreſſe hearing ỳ her daughter was in priſon, tooke it very heauily, and kneeling before the Emperour, deſired him that ſhee might fetch her forth: but he was ſo angrye, as her words could doe nothing with him, yet hee graunted that ſhee ſhould go ſee

her,

her, and toke her the Key: when she entring the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubbered with teares, as was lamentable to beholde: but when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reuerence, could not speake, her teares so ouercame her. The Empresse that loued her dearely, seing her in this greeuous estate, had much adoo to dissemble what shee thought, howbeit, after a fewe light wordes passed betweene them, she said. I am sorie daughter, that you haue so lightlie throwne your affection vppon a Straunger, and that you forget your dutie, in following your Fathers councell and mine, who well knewe the loue Tarsius beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his wife. But you (caried away with that lasciuiousnesse, which ill agrees with your credite and calling) haue rather thought best, to graunt Florendos entraunce by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as while you liue, your honour will be hardlie thought on: for two of Tarsius his Knightes, who thought to take the Traytour, are slayne, and my Nephewe himselfe daungerously escaped. Griana hearing him called Traytour, whom shee so highlie loued, and that shee her selfe was accused, by that which ought to excuse her, aunswered. Madame, and my gracious Mother, as yet I am ignorant of the cause, that hath moued the Emperour in such choller against mee: and be it for this you speake of, in sothe I am offered very great iniurie, for I knowe not whither Florendos, or anye other haue entred my Garden: well I am assured hee came not where I was. These are straunge newes to me Madame, I would rather haue thought him on his way towardes Macedon, in respect of the solemne leaue he toke in the Courte. For my part, I would that the Traytour which was the cause heereof, had long since beene buried in the bottome of the Sea, then he should so abuse the honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villanie, wherein I cannot iudge him faultie: but were it he Madame, I am at a point, let him die the death, as he hath well deserued, for my duetie to you my Parents

and hath

hath taught me better nurture, and loue can bée no priuiledge to mée to offend. Then good Mother, twit not mée with impeach of honour in ſo innocent a cauſe, for defence whereof, were the death preſent before mine eyes, I haue ſorrowed as much as I would, and am more readie to embrace it then liue in ſuſpect, ſo ſhall my Father and you bée eaſed of prouiding mée a Huſband. As for the priſon wherin I am, I will not deme his fauour when it ſhall pleaſe him to deliuer me: but I could take it farre more contentedlie, to ſpend the remainder of my following dayes thus ſolitarie, then to liue abroade miſdéemed on by any. Faire Daughter (ſayd the Empreſſe) do not diſcomfort your ſelfe in this ſort, the Emperour hadde ſome reaſon (in regard of the loue hée beares you, and the outragious tumult which happened) to do as he hath done: but I hope in the end all will ſort to the beſt, and that you your ſelfe ſhall remaine contented. Many other ſpæches paſſed betwéene them, till at length ỳ Empreſſe left her and departed, for ſhée thought long till ſhée was with the Emperour, to let him know the talke betwéene her and Griana: which ſhée did without omitting any thing, notwithſtanding hée was more ſeuere to his Daughter euery day after. Then ſent hée for the Ambaſſadours, and thus he began with them. My Lordes, at this time I am aduiſed, that you ſhall returne to your King my Brother, for in reſpect of the accidents which you haue ſéene to happen, I will craue pardon for this time, referring matters ouer till ſome other time, when things ſhall fall in better diſpoſition. The Ambaſſadours vnderſtanding the Emperours pleaſure, the next day toke their leaue toward the King their Maiſter, to whom they declared the whole in generall: whereat hée conceiued ſuch diſpleaſure, as hée preſently ſent for his Sonne Tarſius, who had not as yet recouered his health. But hée was ſo enamored on ỳ young Princeſſe, as he would not obey his Fathers commaund: but ſo ſone as he was indifferentlie amended, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accuſing

ſing his owne men, who vndiſcretelie hadde raiſed this falſe rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanes, the Empreſſe and her Ladies obtayned libertie daylie to accompany Griana: but all the night time he cauſed her to be locked vp as cloſelie as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomeſtra, whom he commaunded on paine of death, not to be a minute of an houre forth of her companie

Chap. VIII.

How Florendos arriuing on the frontiers of Macedon, made manie ſorrowfull cõplaints, for not bringing Griana away, according to his enterpriſe.

NO ſooner had Florendos & Frenato ouertane their companie, but they ridde on in ſuch haſte (fearing to be followed) as at length they got the Frontiers of Macedon. And becauſe Florendos imagined himſelfe without life, not hearing any tidings from his Miſtreſſe Griana, he concluded to reſte at the firſt Towne hee came to, there to expect the returne of the Eſquire hee ſent to Conſtantinople: who returned towards his Maiſter ſooner then he looked for, by reaſon of the little abode he made in the Emperors Court, for hee ſtayed not when hee hearde that Griana was impriſoned, and that Tariſius was not ſlaine as his Maiſter was perſwaded. Theſe newes did wonderfullie afflict the Prince, as well for the harde vſage of his ſweete Frende, as that he had fayled in killing him, by whoſe death hee well hoped to recouer his loſſe: all the

whole

whole daie would be receiue no ſuſtenance, but locked himſelfe cloſe in his Chamber, and tumbled on his bedde as a man halfe deſperate. But Frenato, who would not be long abſent from him, fearing leaſte his furie would cauſe him worke ſome violence on himſelfe, made ſuch meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what time the Prince was thus lamenting. Alas ſweete Madame, was I borne in ſuch an vnhappie houre, that without deſert you muſt indure impriſonmente for mée? What ſatisfaction maye your Florendos liue to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you euer merit to bee ſo hardlie intreated for him? Beléeue me, ceulde you bee diſcharged ſo ſoone as I coulde wiſh it, boltes, locks, nor walles coulde holde you a thoughte while: yet wiſhing is not action, euerie thing is contrarie to me, all helpes refuſe mée, and death likewiſe denies me: but by my ſwords (and therewith he ſtarted vp) in ſpighte of whatſoeuer, I will deliuer you. Frenato ſéeing him riſe in ſuch a furie, came and toke him by the arme, demaunding what he would haue. Death (quoth he) if I could, for it gréeues mée to liue anie longer. You ſpeake verie wiſelie (quoth hée in mockage) is all this for the impriſonment of Griana? is it not better ſhe ſhould be there, then in the cuſtodie of Tariſius? her captiuitie you know cannot long endure, but were ſhe married, ſhée could neuer be recouered. Therefore, let good hope perſwade you, and now ſende an other Meſſenger with ſpéede to Conſtantinople, to know what accidents haue happened ſince, and to practiſe the meane to ſpeake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what is or maye be done in theſe affayres. This Councell liked well Florendos, whereuppon he preſentlie diſpatched a Gentleman of truſt, who with all diligence did execute the commaund of his Maiſter, for in good time he arriued at Conſtantinople, when Griana had libertie to ſpeake with her Gentlewomen: which when he hearde, he was not a little glad: whereupon he ſearched earneſtlie till he hadde founde Cardina, to whom he deliuered his Maiſters minde, as alſo

so in what sad and heauie plight he left him, desiring her with all speede to certifie the Princesse thereof, and what seruice shée would commaunde him to his Maister. Cardina knowing how glad the Princesse would bée, to heare these tydings from Florendos, went to séeke her Sister Lerina, to whom she imparted what you haue heard, and she, well aduised of the time and place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, vnséene, and not suspected of olde Tolomestra. How ioyfull shee was of this message, I cannot vtter, nor you conceiue, but shee was resolued, neuer to haue any Husband but Florendos: and therefore to comforte him, she deuised to write to him, that he might hope as well as shée did: but wel she knewe not how to accomplish her intent, by reason shes wanted pen, inke and paper, and she was forbidden to haue anie. Notwithstanding, shée so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra, (as feigning to write to the Emperour her father) she recouered the meane to execute her desire. Then withdrawing her selfe apart, first she wrote a Letter to the Emperour, and afterwardes one to Florendos, wherein she desired him not to be offended, albeit things fell out not to his lyking: for (with the fauours of Fortune) the end would be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had béene vnhappie to them both: withall, that as he desired to prolong her life, hee shoulde do nothing to the preiudice of his owne person. These two Letters thus written and sealed, she called Tolomestra, and gaue her that she had written to the Emperor, desiring her to carrie it presentlie to his Maiestie: by whose departing, she had opportunitie to conferre with Lerina: in briefe she desired her to go séeke the Esquire, that he might returne to his Maister with the Letter she sent him: which she did effectuallie, and the gentle Esquire made no little haste to his Maister. Who receiuing the Letter from his Mistresse Griana, was not content alone to reade it, but kist and rekist it a hundred times, saying. Ah sweete letter, written with the hand of ỳ only Princesse this day liuing: for her sake wil I kéepe thée, as the best token a true Knight can re-

ceiue

ceiue from his Miſtreſſe.

Chap. IX.

How the Emperour promiſed Tariſius, that he ſhould marry Griana, whither ſhe would or no: and how ſhe was deliuered of a fayre Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but olde Tolomeſtra, who had her in guard.

WHē the Emperour had receiued ẏ letter, which Tolomeſtra preſented him frō his daughter, albeit he found nothing therin might prouoke him to anger, ſauing that ſhe earneſtlie deſired him to pittie her eſtate, beeing innocent of any thing was laide to her charge: yet hee ſhewed himſelfe more diſcontented then before, ſending Tolomeſtra backe with this anſwer,

Say to Griana, that ſeeing ſhe was ſo aduenturous to incur my diſpleaſure, ſhee ſhall well knowe that I will not ſpare to punish her offence: and let her aſſure her ſelfe, that I will neuer looke on her while I liue, if ſhe match not with Tariſius to whome I haue giuen her. All this Tolomeſtra told to Griana: which rather then to obey, ſhee deſired to die. Wherefore when any came to viſite her, ſhee would ſhewe her ſelfe more pleaſant in their companie then ſhee hadde done, in reſpect of vnexpected heauines that ſecretlie touched her, feeling her ſelfe ſo farre conceiued with Childe, as ſhee knewe no meanes to ſaue it and her honour, if it ſhould happen to be perceiued. One onely helpe ſhe hadde in this extreamitie, that beeing ſo weake and ſicklie, the Phiſitions could not diſcerne her diſeaſe: but reputed her likelie to die,

which

which she withall her heart desired, yet doe what iniurie to her selfe she could, she had better health then she desired to haue. In the ende, feeling her selfe so grosse and vnwelde, she durst not leaue her bed, but kept it daylie, till her time drewe verie neere at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunitie of the Empresse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince Tarsius: who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grieuous and daungerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, which he shadowed so well as he could, framing his speeches to her in this sort. Well Daughter, it likes you to contrarie me, in that which concernes your honour and profit, and without any feare (as is thy duetie) thou hast boldly refused the Husband which I haue appointed thee: but (by mine honour) I will cause thee know that thou hast displeased me, for wilt thou or not (before I leaue thee) I will giue thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing Tarsius to come neere, he said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inuiolable, I giue thee heere Griana, from henceforth account of her as thy Wife: And holde thee, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custodie, and hereafter thinke of her as thou findest occasion. Well sawe Griana that perforce she must obey her Fathers will: wherefore with great wisedome couering her secrete thoughts, with extreame teares deliuered this aunswere. Alas my good Lord and father, I neuer thought that your highnesse would vse such crueltie towards me, as to enforce me take a Husband contrarye to my liking, not (my good Lord) but y Tarsius hath much better deserued: but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neere alliaunce in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loue betweene the King his father and you, without any such needelesse seeking of newe writing. And moreouer good Father, his education in your Court with my Brother Caniano and me, since our verye

yongeſt yeares to this preſent, hath beene of ſuch equall and familiar condition: as it ſeemes to mee impoſſible to reuerence him with that intire dutie, which women muſt and ought vſe to their Huſbands. Wherefore my good Lord and Father, I perſwade my ſelfe (vnder your correction) that you ſhould ſupport me in this iuſt requeſt: the rather in reſpect of my preſent eſtate, which may induce you ſomwhat to conceiue, that the obſequies of my buriall is more likely to be ſolemnized, then thoſe holy ceremonies that ſhould be vſed at my marriage. And with theſe words ſhee poured foorth ſuch abounndance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to anſwere: but ouercome with pittie withdrew himſelfe, leauing Tariſius with her: who hoping to haue better words of her ſaide. Madame, I beſeech you not to offend your ſelfe for any thing the Emperour hath ſaide concerning mee, for I will not any thing to your diſcontent, and rather would I ſuffer all my life, then cauſe the leaſt doubt to encurre your diſlike, hoping that in time to come you wil take ſuch pittie on mee, as being perſwaded of the loue I beare you, and the reuerent deſire I haue to do you ſeruice, you will grant that with good will, which the Emperour ſtriues to gaine perforce, aſſuring you that nothing can be more greeuous to me, then the hard dealing which hetherto hath beene vſed towards you. And to the ende you may reſolue your ſelfe of that I ſay, your Father hauing deliuered me the key of your priſon, and the guarde of your perſon, I heere commit both to your gentle pleaſure. So killing the key, ſhe laid it by her, and without expecting anie anſwere, with great reuerence ſhe departed, leauing her with Tolomeſtra, ſo rapt into a ſlumber or traunce, as her keeper would not for pittie trouble her. The Princeſſe in this ſilent paſſion, thought that ſhee ſaw a fierce Lion before her, with open throate to deuour her, and neere at hande ſhee eſpied an armed Knight, to whome ſhe laboured for defence, crying, that for Gods ſake he would ſhield her from the beaſt: but the Knight with ſtearne and

angry

angrie countenance thus answered. I will not defend thée, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Thou hast so much offended the heauenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to deuide thy head from thy shoulders, then to hinder this beast from deuouring thée. Thinkest thou to contrarie their diuine pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with *Florendos*? content thee, and shroude thy shame in regarde of the fruite in thy wombe, whose worthinesse thou shalt know more of hereafter. If thou dooest not, thou diest an euerlasting death, from which thou canst haue no meane to defende thée. The knight did so affright Griana, as shee promised him to accomplish the Emperours commaundement without faile: whereuppon the Knight and the Lion vanished away, leauing her (as she thought) by a faire fountaine, enuironed with Trees and diuersitie of flowers, the sweete sent whereof was so pleasant and odoriferous, as made the chéerefull bloud to reuiue againe in the Princesse, and with breathing forth a vehement sigh shée awaked, inuocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit she could hardly forget Florendos so soone. Within two or thrée dayes after, the Prince Tarisius came to visit her, to whom she shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were deuising together in amorous talke, she said. Beleeue me sir Tarisius, you haue vsed such honest and gentle courtesie towards mee, as henceforth I giue my selfe wholly yours: therefore being sorie for my long disobedience to my Parents and you, triumph nowe Tarisius in the honour of my loue. If these words pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubted: for ioy whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made him acquainted with these happie tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemne oathes to the Princesse, not only to accept her as his spouse and wife, but as his soueraigne Lady and Mistresse, he brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing

the reſolution of his daughter, imbraced her and toke her into as good conceit as euer he did.

Notwithſtanding, Tolomeſtra was commanded to attend on her ſtill, wherefore Griana knowing her time to drawe neere, and hardlye could ſhe conceale her fortune: after manie difficult doubts and feares debated in her thoughts, at laſt ſhe imparted the whole to Tolomeſtra. The old Gentlewoman after manie motherly rebukes, for the fault committed as the daunger imminent, thought better yet to couer this miſaduenture, then to publiſh that which would diſpleaſe manie, and profite none: ſo leauing to reprehend, when care and comfort was more required, at that inſtant, the Princeſſe was deliuered of a goodlie man childe. Thus in the ninth Moneth, after the returne of Florendos towardes Macedon, on Sundaye at night about eight of the clocke, the Princeſſe had her houre of deliueraunce: When Tolomeſtra receiuing the Childe, ſawe it ſo beautifull and well fourmed, as it greeued her meruailouſly to think what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not bee defended, but by the price of the infants life: wherfore hauing wrapped it in ſwadling clothes which the Princeſſe hadde prepared of ſome valewe, ſhee brought it to the ſorrowfull Mother, ſaying. Truſt mee Madame, it much diſpleaſeth me that wee muſt thus loſe this louely Child, whome I could haue eſteemed happy and the Mother likewiſe, if it might liue without diſpleaſure: but hee ſweete babe muſt ſuffer the puniſhment for the offence, whereof hee is not anie way culpable.

Alas (ſaid the Princeſſe) what ſhall wee doe? would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, and waſhing his face with flooddes of teares, after manie ſweete kiſſes, thus ſaid. Ah my little deintie, and muſt I needs leaue thee? muſt the ſafetie of thy life remaine in the mercie of a ſtraunge womanne, who not knowing thy Parents, may deale with thee diſcourteouſlye? well, if thou die, thy Mother will not be long after thee. And as ſhee thus mourned

ouer

ouer her infant, shee perceiued on his right cheeke a little marke in likenesse of a Crosse: which made her call her vision to remembraunce, and the words of the knight, that promised good fortune to the Child: which made her conceiue a comfortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a fayre Crucifixe of gold. Now was the night very farre spent, and Tolomestra feared they should be preuented, wherefore (quoth she) madam it is time to determine of some thing, leaue muzing I pray you any longer on the Child, and let me go carry it to Cardina to be borne forth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing she counselled for the best, for her last adewe sealed many sweete kisses on the face of the infant, and so in great greefe deliuered it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom she gaue it, and she without any tarriance mounted on horsebacke, & not knowing what way she toke, rode on which way Fortune guided her. Very doubtfull was she how to be discharged of her carriage, for shee feared to let any woman in the neighbour Villages haue it, leaste so the Princesse might be discouered: for that it was commonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was imprisoned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day beganne to appeare, when she perceiued her selfe on a high Mountaine, which was verie thicke sette with Palme and Olme trees: then she alighted from her horse, and made a little bed of sweete Herbes, wherein she laid the Child, hoping some body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it. So committing the tender infant to the protection of ỹ powers aboue, she returned to the Cittie in very good time.

Chap. X.

How Gerrard paſſing where Cardina hadde left the Child, heard it cry, and ſo brought it home with him to his wife to nouriſh it.

THe Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princeſſe yong ſon, was about a daies iourney from Conſtantinople, and was commõly called the Mount of Olives, where néere at hand dwelt a welthie Farmer, who hauing the occupation of the ground grew very rich by gathering the fruites of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other Trées, and like a good Husband he daily followed his affayres, béeing named Gerrard. His Wife the ſame morning likewiſe was deliuered of a Male Child, which being dead borne, cauſed this good man to walke forth into his grounds in great heauineſſe, for hée hadde but one Daughter aged three yéeres, and his Sonne would haue béene a great comfort to him. In theſe melancholique paſſions, as hée went néere the Trée, where Cardina hadde left the ſéelie infant, hée heard it cry: whereat he greatly meruailing, approched nérer, and ſaw the ſweete Babie pitifully mourning, wanting the nouriture that ſhuld cõfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, & séeing it ſo ſweete and louely, was perſwaded that God had ſent it him, in recompence of his owne that was deade borne: and ſo ioyfullie went home with it to his Wife, who was named Marcella, and to her he beginneth in this manner. Behold ſweete Wife, in the place of your young dead Sonne, God hath this

day

day sent vs an other, which I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine vnder an Olliue Tree: and therefore (quoth he) I pray thee nourish it in stedde of thine owne, for a goodlier Childe did I neuer behold. The good woman toke it, and vnwrapping the swadling clothes, saw they were rich and of good valewe, but cheefely the Crucifixe which hung about his necke: whereupon she iudged it of some noble house, and moued with pittie, thus said. I beleeue sweete infant, that thy Mother is in no small greefe for the losse of thee, but seeing thy fortune hath brought thee to me, I will foster thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forward she vsed it so louingly, as euery one thought it to be Gerrards owne Child: and bringing it to baptisme, because hee found it so among the Palme Trees, hee caused the Childe to bee named Palmerin, who grewe on in yeares, both in comely feature and gentle behauiour. Not long after Marcella brought her husband an other son, whose name was Colmelio, and him did Palmerin loue as his own brother and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large vnderstand: but heere I will craue leaue to pause for a while, and following the intent of this Historie, you shall vnderstand how Griana gouerned her selfe, after she had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Griana sent for her, to knowe what shee had done with the infant: to whom shee discoursed in what sort shee hadde left it: which greeued her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily she had escaped shame and disgrace, from thence forwarde shee dissembled her passions better, and shewed her selfe so well reclaimed, as the Empresse much reioyced thereat, hoping now to ende the matter for her Nephewe Tarisus: whereupon one day finding her Daughter alone, shee toke occasion to conferre with her thus. Daughter, will you reuoke from that, which your Father and I haue long beene in pur-

nate for, I pray you holde of no longer, leaſte you driue him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefite. When Griana heard her Mother ſpeake ſo gently, & knowing well, that (whither hee would or no) it muſt forte to that concluſion, ſhe aunſwered. Madame, you haue thought good (will I nill I) that I ſhoulde match with your Nephewe Tariſius. I muſt then by force doo that which willingly I cannot, nor while I liue ſhall I conceiue better opinion: if then (Mother) hereafter our fortunes fall out ſo contrary, that any miſaduenture happen by this your wilfulneſſe, you need not complaine but of your ſelfe, being the inuenter and procurer thereof. All theſe ſpeeches of Griana could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any daunger, ſhee went preſentlie to the Emperour, deſiring him (ſeeing Griana was recouered) to ende the marriage betweene her Nephewe and her: whereto he gaue ſuch ſuddaine conſent, as before a ſeauen night was finiſhed, Tariſius and ſhe were married togither, to her great greefe, as her countenaunce declared, for [illegible] neuerie one were at their feaſting, daunсing, and other delights, the woful Princeſſe thought on the great iniurie ſhe had done to Florendos, accounting her ſelfe the moſt vnhappie on the earth, and to her ſelfe thus forrowed. Ah my deere frende, what wilt thou ſaye when thou heareſt theſe tydings, that I am become ſo falſe and diſloyall to thee? What excuſe may plead for me to thee? By good reaſon may I for euer bee excluded from theyr companie, who haue kept theyr faith inuiolable to theyr frendes, and continue in profeſſion of theyr vnchangeable affections, for neuer did Woman commit ſuch treaſon as this that I haue done: and yet (my Lord) altogither againſt my will, as my wofull heart may giue euident witneſſe, which ſhalbe thine while it remaines in this miſerable bodie, which Tariſius muſt now haue, though in iuſtice it be thine. And in this ſort continued her dolorous complaints till night approched, when ſhee muſt yeelde that honor to Tariſius, which with better will ſhe could haue affoorded Florendos.

After

After the feastes and triumphes of the marriage were finished, Griana desirous to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembraunce of Florendos passions was to greuous to her: desired Tarsius to make short his state, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to bee so honourably conueyed, as beseemed the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leaue among the Ladies, the Empresse came to her sorrowfully weeping: which when Griana beheld, she said. Madame, I am abashed to see what teares you shew for the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue beene so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished for euer from you and your Countrie: why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her vnfortunate while she liues? I heartely desire the heauens to pardon you, and that the first newes hereafter you shall heare of mee, may be the true report of my death. This said, she mounted on horseback, and without any semblaunce to take her leaue of her Father: so being honourably accompanied, in short time shee arriued in Hungaria with Tarsius, whose loue to her so vehemently increased, as he reputed himself the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the paragon among all Ladies. Soone after the aged King died, by which meanes Tarsius came to the Crowne. Griana highly esteeming such as shee brought with her from Constantinople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especially Tolomestra, to whom shee very often imparted the whole secrets of her mind, leading so strict and constant a life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of conscience, which dayly touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in deuout orisons, that the heauens would forget her haineous offence.

Chap.

Chap. XI.

How Florendos vnderſtood by the *Eſquire* hee ſent to Conſtantinople, the marriage of Griana and Tariſius: whereat he conceiued ſuch inward greefe, as he would haue died with extreame ſorrow.

ALl this while cõtinued *Florendos* on the frontiers betweene Conſtantinople and Macedon, til at length he heard ꝑ Griana was releaſed of her impriſonmẽt: whereof he was ſo glad, as now he thought to deale more ſurely thẽ he did before: whereupon he diſpatched Lyomenus one of his Eſquires towards her, with a Letter of earneſt and intire affection, wherein he deſired to know, if hee might compaſſe the meane to come and ſee her, and hee doubted not to bring her ſo ſecretlye on her iourney, and with ſo good prouiſion, as before they ſhould bee againe diſcouered, they would bee ſafelye arriued in Macedon. But this hope was ſoone frustrate, for Lyomenus being come to Conſtantinople, found the marriage betweene Tariſius and Griana conſummated: which hee tooke ſo diſpleaſantlie, as without giuing the Letter, or ſpeaking to the Princeſſe, he returned haſtilie againe to his Lorde and Maiſter. Who being aduertiſed of his comming, ſent for him immediatly vp into his Chamber, at whoſe entrance, the Prince diſcerned the newes by his countenance: whereupon he demaunded, if Griana were ſicke, or how ſhee fared? My Lord (q he) happie had ſhee beene, if ſhe had dyed ſeuen yeares ſince: for I doubt (vnleſſe you arme your ſelfe with

with wonderfull patience) that what is done will highlye endaunger your person. Why (quoth Florendos) what is happened? Trust me my Lord (q̄ he) the derie worst that can be for you, Tarisius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe cruellie against the ground, saying. O my God take pittie on my soule, for my body must nedes suffer misfortune. At which wordes hee fell in a sounde, when Lyomenus thinking him dead, ran hastily and called Frenato: who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all meanes he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he vsed, in foure and twentie houres hee could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit nere at hand, whom Florendos made derie much account of: who being come, and applying diuers soueraigne hearbes to his temples, whereof the olde Father knewe well the vertue, at length Florendos recouered his sences, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with derie feeble voice he said. Ah good Father pray for me, for I feele mine ende nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, sayde the Hermit, what? are you so vnprouided of diuine perswasion, as you will lose both bodie and soule for a matter of so meane consequence? hast thou liued so long, and yet ignoraunt of the inconstancie of Women, which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana? knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the Shippe is subiecte to all windes, so are their affections to continuall mutabilitie? and knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddainly dissuaded from? My Sonne, beleeue my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folly, as with extreame paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) neuer seeke in this sort to perswade me, being assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus in tearmes disgrace my Ladie: for shee is mine, and Tarisius hath no

right

right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her perforce, els would ſhe neuer haue broken her faith to me: and while I liue Father, none but ſhe can bee called the Wife of Florendos, Sonne to the mighty King of Macedon. The wiſe old Father ſeeing him in choller, and being loth likewiſe to offend the Prince, would no longer croſſe him in ſpeeches, but fearing to moue him too much, mildly thus ſpake. May be (my Sonne) ſhe hath beene deere to you, and I would your conſent in loue had aunſwered your liking: but thus to diſpaire, and indaunger your owne life, truſt mee it is not wel done, therefore I deſire you to perſwade your ſelfe, and by your conſtancie condemne her lightneſſe, taking patiently what hath happened. Theſe and ſuch like good words vſed the old Hermit, but Florendos would take no ſuſtenance, neither be remoued from this opinion, for fiue days while the old man ſtayed with him: neither would hee looke cheerefully as he was wont, but continued euermore ſad and melancholique, nor could the King his Father cauſe him like of any Wife, but onely Griana, for whom continually he neuer left mourning

Chap. XII.

How young Palmerin ſleeping, had a ſtrange viſion, which prouoked him to know whoſe Son he was: and of the talke which paſſed betweene him and Dyoſena, the daughter of Gerrard.

PAlmerin being now come to the age of fifteene yeeres, nouriſhed in the Mountaine as the Child of Gerrard his ſuppoſed Father, well beloued of him & Marcella his wife as their own Son: grewe in ſtature ſo tall, comely and well nurtured,

he be knowne of noble parentage. For albeit he compared with Gerrards Children, who vsed him after their rusticall capacities: yet hee desired more to passe the Mountaynes with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Boares thorowe thicke and thinne, and to keepe Hawkes and Dogges, rather then Sheepe and Cattell as the other Children did. In these sports he hadde such wonderfull delight, as oftentimes he would come home very late and sore wearied: but one time among the rest, he came home so ouerlabeured, as he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner fallen a sleepe, but he was solicited with a meruailous vision, the effect whereof thus followeth. Hee thought (as hee was pursuing a goodly Harte thorowe a Forrest) hee mette with the fayrest Ladie that euer eye beheld, who sat on the side of a goodlie Fountaine, and called him vnto her, saying.

Be not abashed Palmerin, though I am come from the furthest parts to find thee in this Country, for I am well assured, that ere manie days be past, thy boutie & prowesse shal make thee renowmed through the world, for one of the hardiest knights that euer liued. Leaue therefore this obscure & rustical kind of life, and henceforth lift thy mind to high occasions which are offered thee: and hereof beleeue me, as shee that loueth thee as her own life, being deuoted onely thine at all times. as nature may witnes who hath marked me with thy like Charracter. Then shewing her arme, she said, Behold in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfsame marke, as thou broughtest on thy face from thy Mothers wombe. To which words Palmerin would haue answered, but the ladie vanished away so sodainly, as he could not perceiue what was become of her. Whereupon raising him selfe, and meruailing from whence this occasion should proceed, he admired the beautie of the Lady he saw in his sleepe, which was so liuelie in his remembrance, as he iudged her present before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such apparitions happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no ef-

fect

ſect: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night following, the ſame Lady that appeared to him in the Foreſt, preſented her ſelfe to him againe, holding in her hands a ſumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus ſpake. See here (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being giuen me onelye for the loue of you.

In this ſort continued this viſion for fourteene or fifteene days following, til at length the Lady ſhewed her ſelfe very angrie, ſaying. I am aſhamed Palmerin, that you deferre ſo long to ſeeke me out: do you think the promiſes I haue made you are friuolous? No, no, the time and trauaile thou taketh (if thou giueſt credit to my words) ſhal make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey ſwaine that hath foſtered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beautie haue found place in thy heart, ſeeke then to conquer me, that thou maiſt be the Lord and poſſeſſor of mee. Thus departed the Ladie, leauing a deſire (more then accuſtomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of ſo high matters, for the Paſtorall life hee led with Gerrard and his familie, ſeemed the moſt happieſt to him in all the worlde, not hauing ſeene any perſon of greater calling then he. But now newe affections ſo eleuated his mind, as he intended to go ſeeke her, whom in ſlepe he had beheld ſo often: For (quoth he) if ſhee aſſure mee to diſcend of a royall linage, I may well preſume ſhe knowes mee better then my Father Gerrard, elſe would ſhee not ſo often induce me to follow my fortune, and the good that is prouided for mee: well might I be accounted a fole, if I would not aduenture on ſo eſpeciall an occaſion, therefore happen what will, I meane to ſearch thorow the whole world till I haue founde her, and none but ſhee ſhall euer be my Miſtreſſe. But how can it be that I am diſcended from ſo high a place ſeeing my Father is ſuch a ſimple Countryman? hath my Mother beene forgetfull of her reputation, that ſome Prince or great Lord hath ſo become my Father? Well, I will knowe of her (if I can)

before

before I depart, and if she will not tell mée, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his visions, as from that time he became meruailous pensiue and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might knowe of his Mother Marcella the end of his desire, whereof Dyosena (who loued him dearely) partly auertised him.

You haue heard héeretofore, how when Gerrard founde Palmerin among the Oliue Trées, hée had a Daughter three yéeres olde, named Dyosena, indifferent fayre, who as shée increased in yéeres, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissemble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard locked vppe her lippes, that shée durst not speake what she gladlie would, but séeing Palmerin in like sadnesse as he was, she imagined that one sickenesse had stroken them both, wherfore casting many doubts as she lay in her bed, in the same Chamber her Parentes did, she heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not séene Palmerin (quoth he) how heauy and sadde hée hath béene a long time? Yea truelie haue I (quoth shee) it may bée that some haue told him hée is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into an other, Dyosena heard them report the maner how they found him, which she desirous to let Palmerin vnderstand, arose early the next morning, and comming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you knew so much as I do, peraduenture you would be not a litle abasshed.

Why good sister (quoth he) I pray you let me vnderstād the matter. In sooth (quoth she) I euer thought til this time, that you had bin mine owne naturall Brother, but by chaunce hearing some talk betwéene my father & mother this last night, I am no other then your frend, and she y loues you dearelie: which I haue euermore hetherto feared to let you knowe, doubting y néerenes of our cōsanguinitie, which I now perceiue cannot hinder our marriage, if you will request me of my Father, who I am sure will not denie you. And so she

rehearsed

ſhe rehearſed the manner of his finding, which ſo well liked Palmerin, as he gaue the more credit to the viſions he hadde ſeene, neuertheleſſe, he thus talked with Dyoſena. It may be Sister, you miſunderſtood our Parents, my ſelfe will demaund the truth of our mother, if ſhe aſſure me as you haue done, then will I talke with them concerning our marriage. So ſhall you doo well (ſayd Dyoſena) to bee thoroughly aſſured, yet neede you not report mee to haue informed you, leaſt thereby you bring me into my Parents diſpleaſure. Palmerin thus leauing Dyoſena, chanced to find his mother Marcella alone, to whom he ſaid. Mother, I beſeeche you grant me one requeſt that I ſhall demande of you. That will I my Sonne (quoth ſhee) if it be in my power to doo. Vnderſtand then good mother (quoth he) that I haue oftentimes dreamed how I am not your ſon, ſo that I know not what to ſay, vnleſſe you pleaſe to aſſure me better. When Marcella heard theſe woordes, ſhe was ſtroken in a ſtudie: but Palmerin was ſtill ſo importunate, as at laſt ſhe thus anſwered. In good faith (ſayre freende) I neuer knew thine owne naturall parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou were mine owne Sonne: and ſo what woordes Dyoſena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her chamber, where ſhee ſhewed him the coſtlie ſwadling clothes that he was fonnd in, and the Crucifixe likewiſe that hung about his necke, which he intreated her to beſtowe on him, to the end (quoth he) that for your ſake I may keepe it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his requeſt, but put it about his necke her ſelfe.

From which time forward, Palmerin ſhewed himſelfe of more cheerefull diſpoſition, deuiſing how he might compaſſe the meane to go ſeeke his Fortune, whereto his ſundrye apparitions had ſo often incited him. And as none can ſhunne what is ordeyned him by diuine prouidence, not manye dayes after, as he was walking alone vppon the Mountain, he heard a voice cry verye pitifullie for helpe and ſuccour: whereupon Palmerin ranne that way which he hearde

the

the voyce, where hee beheld a Lion greedily deuouring a Horse, Palmerin hauing no weapon to defend himselfe withall but a staffe; very hardily set vpon the beast, giuing him such a stroake betweene the eyes, as hee fell downe dead to the ground, then comming to him hee heard complaine, said: I haue my friend in some parte reuenged thy wrong. Alas Sir (quoth hee) and had you not beene, my life had perished, for as I trauailed on my iourney, this Lion furiously set vppon me to deuour mee: which the rest of my companie perceiuing, tooke themselues to flight, leauing me as you founde mee. The best is (saide Palmerin) that you haue escaped with life: and if you please to go with mee not farre hence where I haue beene nourished, you shall haue the best entertainement that I can make you. My friend (quoth the stranger) you haue already done so much for mee, as if you will go with mee into the Countrey where I dwell, I haue wherewithall to reward your trauaile richly. Is it farre hence Sir, saide Palmerin? In the Citie of *Hermida* (quoth hee) in the Realme of Macedon I dwell, from whence I departed a moneth since with my merchandise, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence returning homeward, this vnlooked for mischance befell me, which had made an end of mee without your resistance. As they were thus conferring together, one of the strangers seruants came to looke him, and finding him so happily escaped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that hee had left his companions not far off. Returne then said the maister, and will them to come to mee to the next village, where I meane to haue my wounds dressed, which the seruant performed immediatly, and all this while stood Palmerin in debating with himselfe if hee should thus leaue his Father Gerrard or not: at length [after many opinions] fearing if hee returned home againe not to finde the like opportunitie, concluded to departe with the stranger. So was hee set on a very good palfray, and setting forward to Macedon, y night they were entertained in a very good lodging, where the stran-

ger cauſed his woundes to be ſearched, reporting to euery one how by the aide of *Palmerin* his life was preſerued, for which cauſe he accounted of him as his owne Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this miſhap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and ſeeing he came not as he was wont, both he and his wife the next day ſearched the Mountaines, but they could not finde him, which made Gerrard to queſtion in himſelf, what euill he had offered him, that ſhould make him thus depart. Now durſt not his Wife Marcella tell him, the talke betweene her and *Palmerin*, but accompanied her husband in ſorrow for their loſſe: eſpecially Dyoſena and her Brother Colmelio were moſt ſory, Dyoſena for loſſe (as ſhe thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his ſuppoſed Brother, whoſe abſence went ſo neere his heart, as he intended neuer to giue ouer ſearch till he had found him.

Chap. XIII.

How Palmerin went with this Merchant named Eſtebon to the Cittie of Hermida, who afterward gaue him Horſe and Armour to be made Knight.

Eſtebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arriued at the Cittie of Hermida, where he was louingly welcomed home by his Wife, both young and beautifull as any in that Countrey, to whome he reported his dangerous aſſault by the Lion, and without Palmerins help he had bin deuoured:

but

but (quoth hée) good fortune sent him at the very instant that slew him, for which I shal be beholding to him while I haue a day to liue, therefore good Wife entertaine him in the best sort you can deuise, for he hath well deserued it. This speech had the Merchant with his faire Wife, who embracing Palmerin, saide: that nature had omitted nothing in her workmanship, making him so amiable and full of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beautifull a woman, hauing before spent his time among shéepeheardes, Swineheards, and lowtish Swaines of the Countrey, with modestie beganne to blush, and was so well stored with ciuilitie to make her this answere. I desire mistresse that my behauiour may be such, as may continue my maisters good liking and yours towards me. So from that time hée followed Merchandise, & profited so well in the course of traffique, as Estebon committed all his affaires to Palmerins trust: who rather gaue his minde to martiall exercises, and followed Knightly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the nobleneſſe of his mind, for hée delighted to manage great horses, to fight at all manner of weapons, to vse dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of armes and honourable exploits, and in briefe, to exercise all the braueries of a noble courtier.

Whereat Estebon meruailed so much, as falling in talke with him, hée said. Mée thinks it is strange *Palmerin*, that thou being the sonne of a drudge, and nourished on the Mountains of Oliues (as thy selfe hath often told mée) disdainest the life of a Merchant, frequenting the companie of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take launce and sheeld to enter the combate. Syr (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father bée such as I haue told you, but I wot well my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to heare Palmerin in these termes, because hée perceiued that his Wife fauoured him greatly, whereat he became a little iealous, and gladly would remoue the occa-

on, wherefore hée ſaid. Séeing it is ſo Palmerin, that thou haſt no mind to follow mine affaires, I am wel content thou ſhalt exercíſe chiualrie, being the thing thou naturally affecteſt, and whereby thou maiſt attaine credit and account. For mine owne parte, becauſe I will not hinder ſo good forwardnes, thou ſhalt haue of me money, horſe and Armour, that thou maiſt go to *Macedon* to the king, where if thou requeſt it of the Prince *Florendos* his Sonne, hée will not refuſe to giue thée thy order. Palmerin returned him very hearty thanks, and hauing prouided all things expedient for his iourney, tooke his leaue of the Merchant Eſtebon and his wife, hoping to ſpéede well in his aduenturous enterprize.

Chap. X IIII.

¶ How Palmerin arriued at the Court of Macedon, hoping to receiue the order of knighthood at the hand of the prince Florendos, ſonne to the aged king Primaleon, by the fauor of the Lady Ariſmena.

Uch ſpéede made *Palmerin* being departed from the Merchant, as on the fourth day following, riding by a riuer ſide, hée found a Dwarfe ſitting heauily weeping, of whom hee demaunded the cauſe of his mourning. Alas ſir (ſaid the dwarfe) as I was riding by the commandement of my maiſter, to a Lady whom hee deerely loueth, a Knight euen nowe tooke my horſe from mee, and very villainouſly offered mee outrage, which yet doth not ſo much greeue mee, as (beeing thus on foote) I know

know not how to get ouer the riuer. Mount vppe behinde mée (saide Palmerin) and at the first Towne wée come to, I will prouide thée of another Horse. Then mounted the Dwarfe vp behind him, and hauing past the riuer, desired to know of Palmerin whether hée trauailed: for (quoth hée) I neuer saw man whom I had greater desire to serue then you. Dwarfe (sayde Palmerin) I nowe iourney towarde the court of Macedon to the King, where I hope to finde the Prince Florendos, who is accounted one of the worthiest Knights in the world, and by his hand I desire to bée knighted, if I may. And after you haue receiued your order (sayd the Dwarfe) I hope you will not be so vnwise to hazard the aduenture wherein so many haue sayled and lost theyr liues. What aduenture is that quoth Palmerin? To go to the Mountaine Artifœria (saide the Dwarfe) in hope to kill the serpent, which hath bœne the death of so many valiant knights. And what occasion sayd Palmerin, moued them to fight with the Serpent? That I wil tell you answered the Dwarfe. The King Primaleon Father to Prince Florendos whom you séeke, thrée yeares since fell into a very strange disease, for which no remedye can yet be founde, notwithstanding, the diligent endeuours of the Quéene and Lady Arismena her Daughter, one of the fairest and most vertuous princesses that euer was heard of, who séeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath often assembled the best Physitions in the whole world, who haue practised all possible meanes to recouer his health: yet hitherto all hath bœne to no purpose. Whereuppon she sent to an ancient Knight, the most skilfullest in the art of Nigromancie this day liuing, who returned this answere: that hee should neuer be healed, except hee be first washed with the water of a Fountaine, which standeth on the top of the Mountaine Artifœria, whether foure times a yeare resort three sisters, Magitians of the Isle Carderia, to gather vertuous Herbes which there they wash, and where of they frame all theyr enchauntments. This place is de-

ſended by the Monſter whereof I told you, that no man as yet durſt approch it. Which newes when the Princeſſe Ariſmena vnderſtood, hoping by ſtrength of men to recouer the water and vanquiſh the beaſt, leauied a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no ſooner entred the Mountaine, but the Serpent came furiouſly forth of his Den, throwing fire and ſmoake out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with ſuch terror, as the very hardieſt durſt paſſe no further, but were all glad to take themſelues to flight, yet could they not depart with ſuch expedition, but the greater part of them paide their liues for their bold attempt, the Mountaine was ſo ſtored with Lions, Beares, Wolues, Harts, Tygers, Dunces, and other wilde rauenous Beaſts that deuoured them.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themſelues in this aduenture, thinking by their proweſſe to performe more then the other: but all the worſe, for not one of them returned backe aliue. And why goes not the Prince *Florendos* himſelfe, ſaid Palmerin, that is eſteemed the moſt valiant knight thorow all Greece? Alas Sir, ſaid the Dwarfe, ſome other matter hath ſo drowned his minde in melancholie, as he liues like one that deſpiſeth himſelfe. While the dwarfe continued his diſcourſe, the deſire of honour and renowne did ſo liuely touch the ſpirit of Palmerin, as hee ſaide to himſelfe. It may bee that Ariſmena was the Lady which in my ſleeping thoughts viſited mee ſo often, if the Deſtinies haue bowed her mine why ſhould I feare the Serpent, or all the other beaſts wherewith this Dwarfe doth ſo terrifie mee? Haue not I ſlaine a Lion already with a ſtaffe? Tuſh, the more danger is in the place, the more honor depends vppon the victory. If I leaue my life there, I am not the firſt: if I returne with conqueſt, I ſhall be beyond any yet in fortune: therefore fall out as it will, no perill ſhall diſmay mee from giuing the aduenture, whereupon hee ſaid to the Dwarfe. But tell mee my friend, for that brings the water from the mountaine to the King, what aduan-

tage shall hee deserue? My Lord, (quoth hée) it hath béene manie times published, that his reward shall bee the best Cittie in all this Realme. Bee then Dwarffe sayd Palmerin, one man more will hazard his life in this enterprize, albeit I should receiue but thankes for my trauaile, will thou go with mée? That will I (aunswered the Dwarffe) if you please, and euer will I forsake you while breath is in my body. Thus sette they on till they came to the great Cittie of Macedon, at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in such beautie, as he seemed a man of another world, being accompanied with many Knights, and his fayre Sister the Ladie Arismena, to whome Palmerin boldlye addressed himselfe: and as though hee hadde béene a Courtier all his life time, with séemelie modestie he set his knée to the ground before her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beseeche you to vouchsafe mée one request, which well you may not deny mee, in that I am a Straunger, as also in respect of the desire I haue to doo you seruice. And truste me Sir (quoth shée) you shall not bée refused, what is it you would haue mée doe for you? That at your request (sayd Palmerin) the Prince Florendos your Brother, will giue me my Knighthode. Arismena séeing Palmerin so amiable and well disposed of bodie, meruailed of whence he was, and sayd. In good sooth Sir, such matter nothing appertaineth vnto me, for (as I iudge) such a motion should proceede from your selfe: yet taking him by the hande, shée presented him to her Brother, saying. I pray you my Lord graunt to this young Gentleman as yet not knighted, the thing he hath desired mée to demaund. Florendos hauing not as yet beheld him, looked vppon him, when an exceeding passion, presenting ỳ Princesse Griana to his thoughts, suddainly touched him, and being rapt into more conceite of ioy then hee had béene accustomed, demanded of Palmerin if he would be made Knight. With right good will my Lord quoth he, if it shall like you to doo me so much honour, for aboue all things else it is my onelie desire. My friend,

ſaid Florendos, it is neceſſarie I ſhould firſt know, whither you be noble borne or no. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, as yet I neuer knewe my Father or Mother, nor any of my kinred: notwithſtanding, mine owne heart makes me iudge no leſſe of my ſelfe, and more gladlie would I die, then do any thing that were not vertuous, and well worthie the name of a Gentleman. And truſt me, ſaid Florendos, I am of the ſame opinion: this night therefore you muſt obſerue the religious watch as is accuſtomed, and to morrowe will I giue you your order, and put the ſpurre on your heele my ſelfe. Palmerin on his knee humblye kiſſed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke togither, Florendos toke a great delight in beholding him, ſo that he demaunded his name and Countrey. My Lord, quoth he, they which found me amongſt the Palme Trees, on the Mountain of Olives, not farre from Conſtantinople, haue giuen me the name of Palmerin. By mine honour ſayd Florendos, I ought well to know the Cittie whereof you ſpeake, as the place wherein my deereſt affections toke their firſt life, and not long ſince, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the houre to bee diſcharged of the burden.

Thus hauing in his company his vnknowne Sonne, begotten by him on the Princeſſe Giana, knew little that his loue had forced to ſuch effect: neuertheleſſe, nature prouoked him to like ſo well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented him more then he. And longer would they haue continued their talke, but that fayre Ariſmena interrupted them, aſking Palmerin if he would diſcharge her of the requeſt he demaunded. That do I Madame (quoth he) and in requitall thereof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious ſeruice: and to begin my deuoire on your behalfe, ſo ſoone as I haue receiued my Knighthode, I will take my iourney towards the Serpent, in hope to bring the water that muſt recouer the King your Fathers health. Alas good Sir, ſaid ſhee, God forbid that you ſhould fall in ſuch daunger by my meanes. I know well, anſwered Palmerin,

merin that I can die but once, and if it be nowe, then am I dispatched, and if I escape, I shall do that whereof many other haue failed, and this is my resolution faire Madame. Beleeue me, said *Florendos*, me thinks you are as yet too yong, to finish an action wherein consists a great daunger, I pray you therefore referre it vnto such, as haue had more experience in Armes then as yet you haue. My Lord, saide *Palmerin*, in other matters I shall obey when you commãd, but this I must desire you not to dissuade mee from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will needes haue it so, I am content, you shall in the meane while keepe me companie: as for sword and armour, trouble not your selfe to prouide any, because my selfe will furnish you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, demaunding of him what things he had seene in Constantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked him what Esquire he had to attend on him. Then he shewed his dwarfe named Vrbanillo, such a deformed and euil fauoured fellow, as euery one that saw him laughed heartily: whereuppon Palmerin said to *Florendos*, By my fauth my Lorde, as vnseemely as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I should be displeased if hee were any way iniuried. Assure your selfe, said Florendos, that hee will stand you in great steade when you haue no need of him, and loke that you leaue nothing behind you, that you neede to fight against the Serpent, and truste it in his discretion to bring after you. When Vrbanillo perceiued euery one iest so with him, hee was halfe angry, and in some choler thus sayd to the Prince. I can no way, my Lord, better my shape or proportion, but if I liue, this little deformed body of mine shall giue you to vnderstande that I beare so good a minde, that where my maister leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can doo him no other seruice, hee shall be assured of my truth and loyaltie. Be not offended (Dwarfe my good freend) sayd Florendos, for I thinke well of thee and of thy behauiour. And so because the Tables were couered for Sup-

per,

per, they brake of talke, Palmerin preparing himſelfe to his watchfull deuoire in the Chappell

Chap. XV.

How Florendos gaue to Palmerin the Armour and ſword of Gamezio, whom he ſlew before Conſtantinop'e, and afterward Knighted him: and howe a Damoſell came to the Court, who preſented him with a Helmet & a rich ſheeld.

THe time being come, that Palmerin ſhould performe his deuout watch in the Chappel, before he receiued his knighthood, according to the aunciente cuſtome; Florendos gaue commaundemente that the Armour of Gamezio ſhould be brought him, which the Emperour had giuen him, after his conqueſt of the Soldane of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and theſe be ſhewed to Palmerin, ſaying. My friend, this Armour ſometimes belonged to the beſt knight of his time, whome (neuertheleſſe) I conquered, being then more pleaſant, ioyfull, and at better content, then I ſhalbe while I haue a daye to liue. And becauſe I haue ſome ſpeciall opinion of your prowelle, and that theſe ornaments of defence you will better imploy, then any other on whom I ſhall beſtowe them: I pray you henceforth to weare them for my ſake.

My Lorde, ſaide Palmerin, my deſire is, that my ſeruice towardes your honour, maye be witneſſed in my good imploying of this gentle gift. Then Frenato and diuers o-

ther

her Knights did helpe to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night he spent in solemne orisons, that God would endue him w̃ strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might againe receiue his health.

At the breake of daye, as Florendos went to the Chappell to giue him his order, there entred among them on the suddaine a comelie Damosell, bearing a Helmet and a sheild of Azier, the goodliest and most beautifull that euer was seene, vppon the Sheilde being portraied a Ladies arme, hauing her hande fast closed togither: the Damosell comming before the Prince Florendos, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with Palmerin. Florendos was greatlie amazed at this accident, in that hee had neuer seene the Damosell before: notwithstanding he returned this aunswere. Faire Damosell and my Frend, good leaue haue you to say what yẽ please. The comming to Palmerin, and falling on her knees before him, she saide. Sir Palmerin, a knight that hath authoritie to commaund me, and whom as yet you do not knowe, hath sent you by me this Helmet and Sheilde, wherein you shall find the very secrets of your hart. And if you desire to knowe whence this honour proceedeth, it commeth from him who hath proued the effect hereof, and that knowes more of your neerest affaires then you do your selfe, albeit as yet he hath neuer seene you. Damosell, saide Palmerin, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured mee, whom I may remunerate with my cheefest indeuours hereafter? You cannot as yet knowe him, said the Damosell. I pray you faire Virgin, quoth Palmerin, that you will aunswere on my behalfe, how in ame place I shall come heere after, I remaine ready to do what likes him to commaunde me. It sufficeth (quoth she) I make that hereafter you remember your promise. Then comming to the Prince Florendos, she said. My Lord, the same Swan from whom I haue [illegible] Palmerin, gaue me in charge to say to you, that you

 should

ſhould not feare or doubt to rubbe him knight: but to perſwade your ſelfe, that both by father and mother hée is ſo noble as hée doth well deſerue it, and him hereafter you will loue beyonde all other, for by him you ſhall enioy the thing you moſt eſteeme and deſire. Thus hauing no longer licence to ſtay with you. I humbly deſire you to excuſe my departure. Sweete maide, ſaide Florendos, may your words ſort to ſo good ende, as you haue promiſed. So departed the Damoſell, leauing Palmerin on his knees before the Prince, who taking the ſword that ſometimes belonged to Gamezio, knighted him ſaying: And mayſt thou proue as famous and fortunate, as my hope perſwades mée thou wilt. Then was hée honourably conueyed to the Pallace, where the faire Ariſmena vnarmed him, and couered him with a rich mantle of white Satten, imbroadered all ouer with ſumptuous flowers of gold: beſide, no one in the troupe but highly reuerenced him, for the worthie report the Damoſell made of him. And albeit the Princeſſe Ariſmena diſſwaded him ſo well as ſhee could, that he ſhuld not endanger himſelfe againſt the Serpent, becauſe by him her Brother ſhould ouercome his melancholy, and fearing his loſſe without hope of recouerie: yet néedes would he be gone the ſame day, but that her importunate intreatie perſwaded him to ſtay eight dayes longer. Palmerin béeing ſome after alone by himſelfe, hée remembred the words of the Damoſell, who promiſed him to finde the ſecrets of his heart in his ſhield: whereupon he well aduiſed himſelfe, and ſawe that the bande portrayed in his ſhield, had the ſame marke which the Lady hadde, that appeared to him in his ſléepe, whereat not a little marualling, he ſayd within himſelfe: It muſt needes be without all doubt, that hée which ſent me this preſent, knoweth full wel the ſcope of my fortune, for I am well aſſured that the Lady which ſpake to mée in my ſléepe, when I abode in the houſe of my Father Gerrard, ſhewed me her hand with the ſelfe ſame marke I ſee heere pictured: by which I may perſwade my ſelfe, that ſhee will

not

not ceasse to follow and finde me out, vntill such time as I may speake with her. Whereuppon hee found himselfe so suddainly inueigled with her loue, as hee thus complained. Ah Palmerin, well maist thou see that long thou canst not resist this impression, but whence should this honour proceede? to loue her thou neuer sawest, nor knowest where is her abiding? If it fall out that thou diest in the pursuite, these passions shall so haue a finall ende, and I gaine ye greatest felicitie that I can desire. By this time had he spent the eight daies, which he promised Ariana for Florendos company, when as well to begin the search of her he loued so well, as to ende the aduenture he intended of the Serpent, he prepared to depart, prouiding himself a great huge Mace of Iron, which did him good seruice, as you shall reade hereafter.

Chap. XVI.

How Palmerin fought with the horrible Serpent on the mountaine Arrasseria, and slewe him, bringing the glasse filled with the water of the Fountaine, whereby King Primaleon of Macedon recouered his health.

EIght daies had Palmerin stayed with Florendos, and in company of the fayre Princesse Arismena, who fearing that he would neuer returne from the Mountaine Artifaria, was very pensiue and sad: and oftentimes shee intreated him, not to hazard himselfe against those cruel, rauenous and supernaturall Monsters, but rather to witnesse his

his valour againſt Knights of account like himſelfe, but all her ſpeeches profited not, for he was reſolued to depart. I ſhall yet deſire you, ſaid the Damſelle, that for my ſake you will take with you three Eſquires which I will giue you, which may lend you ſuccour if any inconuenience ſhould befall you. Then ſhee called the Eſquires, and preſented them vnto him, with the glaſſe that he ſhould bring the water in from the fountaine, if fortune ſtood with him to finiſh the aduenture. Palmerin mounting on horſebacke, and Florendos accompanying him halfe a dayes iourney on the way, left him on his iourney towards the Mountaine Artiſæna, where he arriued on the laſt day of Aprill. Then he commanded the Eſquires and his Dwarfe Vrbanillo, to expect his returne at the foote of the Mountaine, for hee would ſuffer none of them to go vppe with him: ſo aſcended he the Hill by a little trackt footepath, with his yron Mace on his necke, and the Glaſſe for the water faſtened to his girdle. Hauing thus trauailed vp till about midday he found the paſſage ſo thicke ſet with trées and brakes, as he was conſtrained to alight from his Horſe, whome hee vnbridled and left there féeding: and much further had hée not gone, but the night ouertake him, yet did the Moone ſhine bright and cléere, which made him ſtill trauaile onward, till he beheld the Rocke, where the water was, and the Serpents Denne, who was come ſomewhat lower to recreate himſelfe among the gréene Herbs, where he had cloſely couched himſelfe. But when he heard Palmerin comming he began to hiſſe well, and with his taile together very ſtrangely: all which could not diſmay this aduenturous Knight, but commending himſelfe to God, ſette vpon his Glaſſe, and with his Mace marched ſtoutly againſt his enemie ſaying. Why Palmerin didſt thou ſo often requeſt of Florendos and the Damſelle his ſiſter, to try thy ſtrength againſt this Deuill, and nowe thou art come in ſight of him wilt thou faynt? Doth it not beſéeme thée better to dye with honour, then to liue with ſhame? let the one encou-

rage

rage thée to follow thy enterprise, and the other kill thée when thou offerest to retire. And with these words hée aduanced him to the Serpent, and the Serpent fiercely began to assaile him, and with his taile hée smote him downe, but that hée nimbly preuented the stroake, deliuering the Serpent so sore a blow on the head with his Mace, as made him réele and stagger, and crie so terribly, as the whole Mountaine resounded with a marueilous Eccho, and to reuenge himselfe, with his tallants hée got hold on Palmerins Armour, which hée rent violently in fiue or three places, wounding his body very dangerously. When Palmerin perceiued in what hard plight he was, he tooke heart afresh, and watching his aduantage, stroke the Serpent with his Mace so strongly on the necke, as hée fell to the ground in a manner dead, and Palmerin plyed him with so many stroakes one after another, as hée left him not whyle any life was in him. After this happy victory, for which deuoutly he praysed God, binding vppe his woundes as well as he could, with extreame wearynesse he layd him downe & slept: when he séemed to sée the three Sisters whereof we haue spoken before, who were the Daughters of a Knight, Lord of the Isle Carderia, to whome none might bee compared for knowledge in the Magicall science, and so well had she instructed his Daughters, as after his death they alone excelled in this arte, so that the men of the Countrey commonly called them the Goddesses of destiny, because they could diuine before what should follow after. And if any one did happen to iniury them, they would reuenge themselues by their euill inuiments, so that they were greatly feared and held in reuerence. They died diuers times this Mountaine Artifaria, as well to gather Greatbe as for they necessary vse, as also for the Water of the Fountayne, for the defence whereof they hadde left this Serpent, who was in time growen so huge and monstrous, as hee rather seemed a Deuill then a naturall Beast. Notwithstanding, howe hideous soeuer hee was, Palmerin as you haue

heard

heard, ouercame and slewe him, finding the three Sisters in the maner as I haue told you; who were not greatly discontented with him, but esteemed so well of him, as in his sleepe the eldest of them thus spake to him. Beleeue me Palmerin, thy beginning is so honourable, as great pittie it were to let thee die heere, chiefly for the want that all Greece shall haue of thee in time to come, the whole Empire whereof is predestinated thine: and therefore will I heale the woundes thou hast at this time receiued. I will then do somewhat more for him, said the second Sister. I will enchaunt him so well for his auaile, as hereafter no coniuration or witchcraft shall haue any power to hurt him. True he said the third Sister, for my part, I will giue him such fortune, as the first time he shal see his lasie Polinarda, (who so many times saluted him in his Dreames) she shall loue him so intirely, as no dolor or torment shall make her forget while she liues, the happines she shall receiue by his occasions. Then the eldest Sister toke a Golden Cup, and filled it with the water of the fountaine and wringing the iuyce of certaine hearbes into it, washed therewith Palmerins woundes, so that they were immediatly healed.

Now felt he very well all they did, but his slumber toke away the libertie of his speech, vntill such time as they were departed, but first the eldest of them thus spake. Since this knight hath had so good a beginning, and that his strength hath deprined our guard of our fountaine, I pray you let vs suffer him to haue a glasse of our water, that by his meanes the king of Macedon may be healed, which a number of other knights haue failed of heeretofore. Whereto they all consented, and so it came to passe: then gathering their hearbes as they were woont, and washing them, they tooke their way to the Ile Carderia.

Chap.

Chap. XVII.

How Palmerin discended frō the Mountaine, with his glasse full of the water of the enchaũted Fountaine, and how ioyfull Vrbanillo & the other Esquires were, seeing their maister returne with so good fortune.

When these three Sisters were departed, Palmerin awaked and arose, not a little mervailing at that he had heard & sene: but most of all when he felt his wounds healed, and saw his glasse full of the water he came for: so rendering thankes to heauen for his good successe, he went vp higher on the Mountain, thinking to see the Fountaine, but he could not: wherefore without any longer stay he discended downe againe, thus saying to himselfe. How happie may I count my selfe, to finde so good fortune in this desolate Mountaine? for now I know her name that is destenied to be mine, henceforth shall she not conceale her selfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth: and this I vow by him that made me, that I will not cease to seeke her through the world, till I heare some tidings of her: and were it not for the promise I haue made the Princesse Arismena, to bring her this water to recouer the King her Father, this day would I begin this religious enterprise, in hope (if the Ladies spake truth that appeared to me in my sleepe) hereafter to bee one of the happiest Knightes in the world. So walked he on til he came where he left his horse, whereon he mounted, and came to Vrbanillo and his other Esquires, who hauing heard the cry of the Serpent, when

Palmerin gaue him his firſt ſtroke, perſwaded themſelues that their Maiſter was ſlaine: but when they ſawe him cõming, Vrbanillo aboue all the reſt was moſt ioyful, and ran apace to mæte him, deſiring to knowe how he had ſped. Merie well I thank God, ſaid Palmerin, who gaue me ſtrength to kill the Monſter, and to bring ſufficient of the Water I hope, to win the King Primaleon his health. Then haue I the thing I moſt deſire, ſaid Vrbanillo, albeit I greatlye feared that you had accompanied all the other Knightes in death, that aduentured before you, and could not ſpæde ſo well. So mounted they all on horſebacke, and made ſo good iournetes as they arriued at Macedon: whereof Florendos and fayre Ariſmena were not a little ioyfull, eſpecially when they were aſſured, that Palmerin had brought with him the Kings health, by meanes whereof it is not to be demanded, if he were highly honoured and receiued at the Court.

Chap. XVIII.

How foure Knightes would haue taken the Glaſſe of fatal water from Vrbanillo, before Palmerin arriued at Macedon, and of the Combat betweene them.

YOu muſt here vnderſtand, that the ſame day, Palmerin, in cõpany of his Eſquires, departed from the Mountaine, hee ſent Vrbanillo the Dwarfe before towards Macedon, with the Glaſſe of water: whẽ it ſo fortuned that foure Knights mette with him, one of them ſaluting him in theſe hard tearmes. Deformed villaine, giue me that Glaſſe, or I ſhall take thy head from thy ſhoulders. Palmerin, who came

came not farre behinde, seeing the knightes offer iniurie to his Dwarffe, gaue spurs to his horse, and thus aunswered. How now Gentlemen? are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my seruaunt? trust me I neither can nor will so put it vp: and so couching his Launce, he encountred one of the so roughlie, as hee fell from his horse deade to the grounde. When the other three saw their companion thus foyled, they all togither set vpon Palmerin: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soone vanquished, and the third toke himselfe to flight, very hardly escaping. Palmerin made no account of following him, but leauing them rode on his way, his Dwarffe thus comming to him: Beleeue mee my Lord (quoth he) hee is to be accounted ouer foolish hardie, that at the weapons point seekes to offend you: I dare boldlie affirme my wordes, by euideuce of the fortune of these foure knights.

In that, said Palmerin, thou maist be deceiued, but God is alwaies frend to iustice and equitie, and enemie to such as go against them. But because you shall knowe the occasion why these foure knights would haue taken the Glasse from Arbanillo, you must note that they were all Sonnes to a great Lord of a Castle, which was a daies iourney off the Mountaine Artifæria, who hauing intelligence by Shepeheards and other peasants, what good fortune had befallen Palmerin, to kill the Serpent, and bring away the fatall water, repined greatly thereat: for the Lorde did highe malice the King of Macedon, because he had enforced him to surrender a Manour, which he against all right, held frō one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King should recouer his health, hee sent his foure Sonnes to take it from Palmerin, whose successe in their attempt, fell out as you haue heard. Now Palmerin by this time is come to Macedon to the King, whome with great reuerence hee saluted on his knee: when the king embracing him so well as he could, said. Trust me my good Frende, next God I must needes esteeme you dearest, for

that as hee by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre, though weake and ſickly: by diuine prouidence hee hath ſent you to reſtore me my bodily health, from henceforth therefore I ſhall intreate you to commaund mee and mine at your pleaſure. My gratious Lord, ſayde Palmerin, the heauens giue me ſucceſſe to doo you ſeruice, for I know no Prince liuing this day, for whom I would more gladly aduenture my life. I thank you good Sir, quoth the King, but the greefe I haue ſuſtained for the ſorrow of my Sonne Florendos, brought me into ſuch a long and lingering extremitie, as well may I bleſſe the time, that by your good ſucceſſe am ſo happily deliuered: let me therefore entertaine you as my ſecond Sonne, and perſwade your ſelfe of ſuch a Father, who will loue you as if you were his owne naturall Child, in that I and the greater part of my Kingdome ſhal be at your diſpoſition. Worthie Sir, ſaid Palmerin, worthily might I be reputed amongſt the worſt in the world, refuſing the honour you pleaſe to offer mee, eſpecially in ſuch an extraordinary kinde of fauour: for the reſt, (being thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue ſufficient, being furniſhed with Horſe and Armour to doo mee ſeruice. With theſe words the King embraced him, and meere ioy cauſed the teares to trickle downe his cheekes: ſo that Palmerin ſtayed longer with him then he made account to doo, till the Duke of Duraco ſent for him, as you ſhall reade in the diſcourſe following.

Chap.

Chap. XIX.

How Duke Aſtor of Durace ſent to the king of Macedon, deſiring him to ſend him the knight, that had ſlaine the Serpent on the Mountaine Artifæria, to ayde him againſt the Counte Paſſaco of Mecæna, who laid ſtraight ſiege to one of his Cities.

SO farre was ſpread the fame of this victorie, which Palmerin had againſt the Serpent, on the Mountaine Artifæria, as at length the Duke Aſtor of Durace heard thereof, againſt whom the Count Paſſaco of *Mecæna* waged battaile, and ſeeing himſelfe vnable to reſiſt his enemie, minded to ſend to the king of Macedon, requiring ayd of the knight ẏ ſlew the Serpent at the enchaunted Fountaine: and hereuppon hee diſpatched one of his Gentlemen towardes the King, who made good haſte till he came thither: when doing his reuerence, and deliuering his Letters of credit to the King, he ſaide. Dreade Lord, the Duke of Durace my maiſter moſt humbly ſaluteth your Maieſtie by me. The King hauing read the Letters, and noting the contents, bad the Meſſenger diſcharge the reſt of his meſſage. It is ſo Sir, ſaid the Gentleman, that of long time my Lord and maiſter hath beene aſſaulted by the Counte Paſſaco, who in ſuch cruell ſorte hath warred on him, as he hath well neere deſtroyed his whole Countrey, for he hath taken the Cittie of *Mizzara*, and againſt all right doth challenge it for his owne. After this, the Duke my maiſter raiſing his ſiege to bid him battaile, Fortune

hath bene ſo contrary to my Lorde, as his noble Sonnes are ſlaine, and ỳ greater part of his worthieſt Gentlemen. Yet not contented with all this, the Counte purſues him ſtill to his very Cittie of *Durace*, which he hath begirt with ſiege ſo ſtrongly, as he is doubtfull of a further daunger. But within theſe eight dayes he vnderſtood that your highneſſe hath here a Knight, that ſlewe the Serpent on the enchaunted Mountaine, in whoſe valour my Lorde repoſeth ſuch confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come thither, my Lorde will accompany him with ſo many hardie men at Armes, as he doubts not to enforce the Counte to leaue his Countrie: and for that the matter requireth expedition, he deſires your aſſiſtance with all poſſible ſpeede. I am ſorrie, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is in ſuch extremitie, and I promiſe you I did not thinke as yet to part with Palmerin: but ſeeing the neceſſitie is ſo vrgent, I will intreate him to go with you, and ſo manie approued Knights with him, as the Count ſhall perceiue: I am not well pleaſed with his hard dealing towardes my Nephew. Now was Palmerin preſent when the Gentleman deliuered his meſſage, which pleaſed him not a little, becauſe he would gladlie leaue the King to followe his fortune, and was thus held from his deſire by importunate requeſtes: but ſeeing the King had graunted to ſende him to the Duke, he fell on his knees, vſing theſe ſpeeches. In reſpect my good Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath vrgent occaſion to imploy me, and in that his ſute is onely for me, without any other of your people, I beſeech you ſuffer me, to go alone to him, for my hope is ſo good, in a cauſe of truth and right, that wee ſhall bee ſufficient there to ende the controuerſie. Not ſo my good freend Palmerin, ſayde the King, you ſhall not hazarde your ſelfe alone, but take ſuch company as I ſhall ſend with you. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, he demaundes me without any other companye, and therefore let mee perſwade you to ſatiſfie your requeſt: ſo turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to ſet forward,

word, for he was readie. Worthie Sir, aunswered the Messenger, with what expedition you please, for neuer was Knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you are. This suddaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Florendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. I see then my deere Frende, you will needes bee gone, albeit your companie hath giuen mee greater solace & delight, then any thing else since I lost mine onelye content: yet is my regarde of your honour such, ỳ I feare more to heare your misfortune, then I pittie ỳ necessitie of my Cozin the Duke of Durace. Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitye you neede not doubt off. My Lorde (quoth Palmerin) the King and you haue so highlie honoured mee, as whereseuer I shall come hereafter, I rest yours in my verie vttermost endeuours.

These words did Ptolome heare, the Sonne of Frenato, whom Florendos had kept since ỳ time he was his page, and was now old enough to receyue the Knighthood: which made him desirous to purchase honour by some meanes, especiallye if the King would moue Palmerin to take him with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not be denyed, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I might receiue my order of Knighthode, before Palmerin departed from your Court, I am assured he would not disdaine me for his companion, especially if your Maiestie did moue the question on my behalfe. Beleeue me, quoth the King, so good a motion shall not be hindered by me, & therefore to morrow will I giue you your order, and such Armor as shall well beseeme a Knight, prepare you in meane time to performe your watch. Highly contented was Ptolome at these speeches, and gaue order for his prouision of needfull occasions, till euening came, when he entred the Chappell, where he spent the night in deuout orizons, that heauen

would ſo further ꝯ whole courſe of his time, as might ſtand with the aduauncement of iuſtice and his owne honor. Earlie in the morning, the King accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other Knightes, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knées, hee gaue him his Knighthode, wiſhing his fortune to proue ſuch, as might make him famous where euer he came: afterward he deſired Palmerin, that this newe Knight might beare him companie in his trauailes, whereto Palmerin willingly conſented, accepting ſo well of Ptolomes behauiour, as he purpoſed thence forward not to forſake ſo good a companion. Then they both toke theyr leaue of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towardes the Duke of Durace, making ſuch good expedition in theyr iourney, as hauing croſt the Seas with a proſperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now becauſe the Cittie was beſieged on all ſides, they were doubtfull how to gette in vnſeene of the enemie: which the Gentlemanne their guide, performed ſo well, as by priuie ſignes made to the Sentinell, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tydings of their arriual, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, whome he entertained with great honour, ſpending the moſt part of the night in familiar conference with him, till hauing brought him to his Chamber, he left them both to their good reſte, till the next morning, when he came againe to viſite them, thus ſaluting Palmerin.

Your arriuall, Sir knight, doth arme me with ſuch aſſured hope, as by the helpe I ſhall receiue at your hande, mine enemie (I truſt) ſhal not outbrane me as he hath done hitherto: and therefore you with your worthie companion, are both ſo welcome as you can deſire. My Lorde, (quoth Palmerin) the King that ſent me to you, hath bounde me to him by ſo manie courteſies, as for the loue of him and Florendos his Sonne, you may aſſure your ſelfe of my vttermoſt ſeruice, ſo long as I ſhall be able to holde my Sworde.

The

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchesse there expected the comming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly embracings, the Tables being couered, they sate downe to Dinner: al which time, Palmerins eyes were fixing on the Duchesse Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins that euer he sawe, and so buried was his thoughts in beholding her, as he gaue small regard to the Dukes words, who reported what shamefull iniuryes the Counte had offered him from time to time, and how many skirmishes had passed betweene them since the beginning of the wars. Thus spent they the Dinner time, till the Tables being withdrawen, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very neere allied to the Duke: and so with discoursing of nouels of Macedon, also the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they passed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chamber, Palmerin could take no rest, the beautie of the Duchesse Daughter so troubled his thoughts, which made him desirous to know her name, if this were shee the three Sisters spake of on the Mountaine, and was beside promised him in his sleeping visions. Palmerin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the yong Lady became as amorous of him: but fortune would not permit their loue, as you shall heare more hereafter. The Count hauing al this while maintained very straight siege, intending now to loose or gaine al, gaue fierce assault vpon the Cittie, first calling all the cheefest Lordes and Captaines of his Armie, moving them with earnest and Souldier-like perswasions, to foresee the aduantages, and to encounter their enemies with magnanimous and resolute courage. When hee had thus imboldened his men to the fight, with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions, they had the Cittie battaile: then might they beholde how they bestirred themselues with Fagots to fill the Ditches,

and

and Trenches, ſet ſcaling ladders to the walles, howe the one ſide aſſaulted and the other defended, that many loſt their liues or departed maimed: ſuch hauocke did Palmerin and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on their enemies, notwithſtanding they were in number farre beyond them, and marualous well prouided of all neceſſaries. But then Palmerin remembred a ſodaine policie to preuent a miſchiefe, for as the enemie retired to prepare for the ſecond aſſault, hee called the moſt parte of the beſt Knights that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himſelfe to his horſe and follow him, leauing the reſt well appointed for defence of the wals. The Countes power ſounding the alarme and comming roughly againe vppon the Citie, Palmerin with his companie priuily iſſued forth at the Poſterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue ſuch a braue enſet, as they were enforced to forſake their ſcaling Ladders to reſiſt this encounter. There were many ſtroakes deliuered on either ſide, the Counte and moſt parte of his Knights being on horſebacke, which made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithſtanding, the Counte ſeeing ſuch a hardy attempt giuen on a ſodaine, and doubting freſh ſupplie would come from the Citie, with feare beganne to retire, and with one of his Brethren laboured to reſiſt this ſharpe aſſault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them ſmall time to reſt, laying on loade with marualous fiercenelle, whereat the Counte was ſo offended, as comming to Palmerin, hee gaue him ſuch a cruell ſtroake on the Helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did he quickly recouer himſelfe againe, and requited the Counte with ſo ſound a ſalutation, as he made him tumble from his ſaddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other ſide Ptolome had ſo canuazed the Counts brother, as he ſealed him a requittance with his ſworde for his life. Then began the Counts Souldiours to diſpaire for their ſucceſſe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them ſo cloſely, as they were glad to take themſelues to flight, leauing they

Walker

maister ouerthrowne in the Armie, where he was troden to death with the trampling of the horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemies scattering in flight glad to saue their liues, whome Palmerin commanded to follow no further, least gathering themselues together againe, and espying aduantage, they might so endanger them: for oftentimes the vanquished too narrowly pursued, recouer courage and daunt the pride of the conquerers. For this cause he returned with his men into the Citie: the Duke vnderstanding the foyle of his enemie, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom imbracing he thus entertained. Ah good Knights, by you is my estate recouered, and the death of my Sonnes reuenged on the murderer, therefore dispose of mee and mine what you thinke best: to which words Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heauen haue the honour of our victory: as for me, I haue done, and will hereafter what I can, for the great kindnesse of the King of Macedon your vnckle, who hath honoured mee in sending me to you, and other recompence I neuer did or will seeke. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceiues by the blood on Palmerins Armour, that he was wounded in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are sore wounded, let vs make haste to our Pallace, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well seene in chirurgerie, shall giue attendance on you till you are recouered. So mounting on horsebacke they rode to the Pallace, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter holpe to vnarme him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, perswading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Vrbanillo the Dwarfe, saying to him. My friend, desire thy Maister to make bold of any thing hee wants, and that for my sake he will despaire of nothing. Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, you haue good reason to wish my maister well, as well for

the

the good aſſiſtance hée gaue the Duke your father, as alſo in reſpect of his deſerts, which are as honourable as any that euer came in this court. These words Palmerin very well heard, hauing his eye continually on her: wherefore when ſhe and all the other were departed, he called Vrbanilo, demaunding what talke he had with the Princeſſe, which he reported and his anſwere alſo. Gramercies, ſayd Palmerin, I pray thée finde the meanes to let her know that I am her ſeruant and knight, ready to accompliſh any thing that ſhee ſhall commaund me. Referre this matter to mée Syr, quoth the Dwarfe, I knowe what Saint muſt patronize theſe affaires, and what offering muſt bée layde on his Altar.

Chap. XX.

How Palmerin became highly enamored with the beautie of the Princeſſe Laurana, thinking her to be the Lady that ſolicited him in his viſions.

VRbanillo the Dwarfe not forgetfull of his Maiſters commandement, the next day when Laurana came with hir mother to viſit Palmerin, ſhe tooke the Dwarfe aſide, demanding what reſt his maiſter tooke the night paſt. Madame (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God and you, for in you two conſiſts the diſpoſition of my Maiſters health. As howe, quoth ſhée? Thus Madame, ſayd Vrbanillo: the firſt day that hée beheld you, he gaue the whole poſſeſſion of himſelfe ſo firmely to you, as day and night he meditates on your diuine perfections, doubting

ting in requitall of his seruice to my Lord your father and his Countrey, whose liues and yours he hath defended, himselfe shall be repaied with sodaine and cruell death: for, had he not come for your safetie, well had he escaped this dangerous extremitie. Then seeing (saye Madame) that his valour hath béene the meane of your deliuerance, doo not so degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gaue you life. Why my friend (quoth she) what wouldest thou haue me doe? To loue him swéete Madame, quoth he, as he doth you. Alas sayd shée, thou maist assure thy selfe, that none can wish thy maister better then I doe, béeing my duetie and his desert: with which wordes shée changed colour with such modest bashfulnesse, as it might be perceiued she could hardly maister her affections. Which when the Dwarfe beheld, as one not to learne his lesson in this art, perswaded himselfe by the very lookes of Laurana, that his Maysters loue would sort to happie ende, and thereupon hée followed the matter thus. I thinke Madame, that you wish my maister as well as any, but that is not inough, vnlesse your wish agrée with his in this poynt, that you graunt your selfe his onely Lady and mistresse, as hée hath vowed himselfe your Knight and Seruant. If it may please you to wish this good to my maister, vouchsafe this fauour as a president of your liking: that so soone as hée shall finde himselfe better in health, you will but consent to speake with him alone, in some such conuenient and vnsuspected place, as hée may haue libertie to acquaint you with the secrets of his thoughts. Alas (quoth shée) how should I doo so, without offering too much impeach to mine owne honour? Madame, said the Dwarfe, the night giues fauour to loues swéete enterprises. By this time the Duchesse was ready to departe, which Laurana perceiuing, said to the Dwarfe: Assure thy master from me, that I am more his then mine owne, and I will do for his welfare what I may with modestie. By reason of their departure, the Dwarfe could not make her answere, but shadowing the matter as hée

had

had done before, went about his maiſters buſines, till hée came and found him alone, when he diſcouered all that had paſſed betweene the Princeſſe and him: which ſo well contented Palmerin, as nothing could more: because hee perſwaded himſelfe, as I haue ſaide already, that this was ſhée which the three ſiſters promiſed him, by whome he ſhould receiue the honour that deſtinie allowed him. For this cauſe thence forwarde hee was very deſirous to knowe her name, commanding Vrbanillo very ſtraightly to enquire it, which he did, informing his maiſter that her name was Laurana: whereupon he well ſawe that hee was deceiued, in that the ſiſters had named his miſtreſſe Polinarda, and therefore hée reſolued to withdrawe his affection, and to depart thence ſo ſoone as hée could be able to beare Armour. But it may be eaſily preſumed, that when one hath ſo farre ventured in loue, that he perceiues himſelfe beloued, as the Dwarfe perſwaded his maiſter, hardly can hée giue ouer ſo faire a beginning: yet heere it fell out contrarie, as you ſhall well perceiue, that the end was more ſodaine then the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princeſſe name, beganne to vſe other countenance to her then hée was accuſtomed, but ſhée good Lady (in his excuſe) conceiued better opinion then ſhée had cauſe: yet as it euermore falleth out in loue, that when Ladyes ſée themſelues but ſlenderly courted by their friendes, they growe importunate in their amorous deſires: ſo came it to paſſe with Laurana, who perceiuing her ſelf ſolicited by Palmerin as ſhe was wont, one night ſomewhat late ſhée called the Dwarfe, and thus beganne. How comes it to paſſe (my good Friend) that thy maiſter is not of ſo pleaſant diſpoſition, as heretofore hée hath beene? it may be thou haſt not let him vnderſtand my laſt ſalutation, or elſe feare withholds him from following his determination: I pray thée doo the meſſage of my earneſt good will to him, and tell him that I long to impart our affections together, to the full reſolution of our deſired thoughts, which I haue found the way vnſuſpected

to

to accomplish, so please him to come to my Chamber to morrow at night, where I shall not faile to expect his presence. When the Dwarfe heard Laurana vse these words, thinking his Maister was still in his former cogitations, thus answered. Trust me faire Madame, within these fewe dayes my maister is become so melancholike, as I haue many times feared his death, and I am sure hee hath no other cause to torment him so, but onely the furie of the extreame loue hee beares you: yet seeing you haue promised him such great fauour, let mee alone to change this vnpleasant humour. Faile not then (quoth shee) to let him know my minde. I go presently, sayde the Dwarfe, to acquaint him with these long desired tydings. So taking his leaue he went to his Maisters Chamber, whome he found fast asleepe, when not daring to awake him, let stay his message till the next morning, and so layde him towne to rest: at what time sleepe had thoroughly possessed him, he began to crie and complaine so loude, as his maister hearing him arose, and demaunded of him the cause of his lament. Alas my Lorde (quoth he) neuer in all my life was I so affrighted, mee thought that one of the faireſt Ladyes that euer eye looked on, helde a naked sword against my throate, saying. Vile and villanous creature as thou art, dareſt thou presume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lorde and maister amorous of Lady Laurana, and to forsake mee? iustly dost thou deserue to dye on this weapon for thy pallardise: and if hereafter thou carrie any message to preiudice my right, assure thy selfe that I will chastise thee in such sort, as all deformed villaines shall receiue example by thee. I tell thee Traytour, Palmerin his fortunes climbe higher then the name of Laurana, and where hee is more loued for the royaltie of his linage, then for his base and passorall education. With which words she gaue mee such a stroake on the head with her Sword, as I (fearefull of my life) cryed so loude as you say you heard me. This motion made Palmerin easily perceiue, that Polinarda hadde made this

threat-

threatning to the Dwarfe for Laurana: which concealing to himſelfe, he ſayd in laughter, I thinke thou didſt forget to drinke when thou cammeſt to bed, and ſo thy heart being drie, conceiued this viſion: I pray thee ſleepe, and trouble me no more with ſuch idle paſſions. The Dwarfe betooke him to reſt, but Palmerins thoughts were all night hammering on this Dreame, ſo that he reſolued to depart thence the next morning, and ſeeke elſe where his aduentures, ſeeing hee was admoniſhed by ſo many admoniſhments. So at the day ryſing hee called the Dwarfe, and commaunded him to prepare his Armour, for hee intended to take his leaue of the Duke. Ptolome hearing this, and hauing noted beſide all the Dwarfe told his maiſter in the night; diſſembling the matter, as was his manner, hee came and bad Palmerin good morrow, who anſwered Ptolome in this manner. My deere friend, I haue concealed none of mine affaires from thee, ſince the time we receiued our knighthood, and parted together from the Court of Macedon: now therefore ſhall I impart to thee what I haue determined.

It is ſo, that vrgent occaſions conſtraines me preſently to leaue this country, and hencefoorth to frame my courſe which way fortune will direct me, by which occaſion I ſee wee muſt be enforced to leaue each other: notwithſtanding, let me intreate that our abſence may no way impayre our friendſhip, not doubting but in good time we ſhall meete together againe. In meane ſpace, if you ſee the King or Prince Florendos, forgette not the humble dutie of their bowed Seruant, I beſeech you, who dedicates his life and honour in all attempts to their gracious fauours. By God, ſaid Ptolome, let who will doo the meſſage for me, for neither death nor daunger ſhall ſeparate me from you: but I will beare you companie while life and ſoule hold together. If you be ſo reſolued ſaid Palmerin, ſhame were it for mee to refuſe you. Set forwarde then when you pleaſe (quoth Ptolome) for wee neither muſt nor will depart, thats flat.

So

So being both armed they came to the Duke, who marualed much to see them so prepared, and therefore demaunded whether they went. My good Lord answered Palmerin, in that your country is nowe quited, wee must intreate you for our departure, because waighty affaires in other places do so commaund vs. How happens it sayes Friendes, said the Duke, that you will so soone leaue mee? My Lord (quoth Palmerin) we are so enforced, and therefore we humbly intreate you not to bee offended. If your affaires be such, said the Duke, loth am I to hinder you, commaund of mee and mine what you please, for all remaineth at your disposition. Most humble thanks did Palmerin and Ptolome returne the Duke, and ere they went to horseback, they came to take their leaue of the Duchesse Laurana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope deceiued, for shee expected the night comming, when shee and Palmerin should conferre together of their loue: but seeing him nowe departing, shee was out of all hope to see him againe, the extreame greefe whereof so ouercame her, as giuing a great shrike shee fell in a swoune. The Ladyes and Gentlewomen in great amazement came about her, ignorant of her euill, but onely Palmerin and his Dwarfe, which hee likewise would not reueale to any, for the reason you heard discouered before: and rather would she entertaine her own death, then make knowen a secret of such importance: wherefore hauing somewhat recouered her selfe, and not able to conceale her anguish, with an extreame sigh shee thus breathed forth her sorrow. Ah Palmerin, easily hast thou kindled the fire, which with great shame thou leauest consuming vnquenched. Who would heue thought such treason could harbour, where faire conditions and honourable valour shined so brightly? Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed resembling so excellent. Beleeue me Knight, thou hast done mee great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where euer thou commest, be thou named the most vngratefull Knight that euer drew

ſword, ſeeking her death ſo cruelly, who loues thée dearer then her owne life. Theſe complaints made the ſorrowfull Laurana before the Dutcheſſe, not ſparing to diſcharge the whole burthen of her oppreſſed heart, her Mother not daring to gainesay her, but expected when ſhe ſhould departe this life: wherefore perſwading her ſelfe from deſpaire, ſhée ſweetely promiſed to worke ſo with Palmerin, as hée ſhould ſtay and enioy her to his wife. But all was in vaine, for hée mounted on horſebacke, and accompanied with Ptolome and Vrbanillo, left the Citie of Durace, no one knowing which way they were ridden: Palmerin conuerted into ſuch heauineſſe, as nothing could torment him more, ſo earneſt was his deſire to ſée her, whom fate and fortune had appointed for him.

Chap. XXI.

¶ How Palmerin and Ptolome met with a Damoſell, who made great mone for a Casket which two knights had forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.

BEing thus departed from Durace, theſe knights rode along, thinking in what beauineſſe they had left the Dukes Daughter: when Palmerin accuſing himſelfe as guiltie of this miſchance, within himſelfe thus ſadly diſcourſed. Vnhappie man that euer thou camest into this Countrey, where thou haſt left ſo hard an opinion of thy ſelfe, as while thou liueſt thou ſhalt be the worſe eſteemed: and well worthie, for iuſtly maiſt thou be accuſed of diſloyaltie, in making meanes to obtaine the loue

of

of the faire Princesse Laurana, and hauing conquered where thou desiredst, to make so light account of her as thou hast done. Had death preuented thee before, shee had beene satisfied, thine honour defended, and thy vnknowne Polinarda no way iniuried: which speaches made the teares tumble downe his cheekes: when Ptolome looking aside espied him, and gessing the cause of his sadnesse, said. Verily I neuer thought to see such womanish behauiour in you, nor that any greefe or misfortune should haue teares so soone at commaundement. How will you hereafter withstande so many casualties, hard aduentures, and dangerous stratagems, with many and sundrie narrow brunts that you must passe thorow, when I see you vnable to ouercome your owne selfe, beeing surprized by her teares, to whom you haue done honour to affoord a good countenance? If you hadde receiued of her the swetes of loue, reason might then plead in your excuse: but hauing no way misprised her honour, or offered offence to modest chastitie, what iniurie may shee say that you haue doone her? Forget I pray you these vnseemely fashions, hardily agreeing with a Knight of such report as you are, let vs finde some thing else to talke on, and tel me which way you intende to iourney. By my life (quoth Palmerin) I knowe not, but let vs take which way Fortune shall please to conduct vs. I thinke it best then, sayde Ptolome, that we shape our course toward Rome, where we shall finde people of all Nations, by whom we may bee instructed as concerning aduentures, worthy our trauaile, and guiuing to honour. On then cheerely (quoth Palmerin) and so they trauailed right dayes together, not meeting with any aduenture worthie to bee spoken off, till at length they met a Damosell heauily mourning, who said. Alas, what will shee say whose truste was onely in mee, hauing lost the thing wherin consisted her hope, to recouer the highest of her noble desires? Palmerin hearing these words, and moued with compassion, rode to her, and demanded the cause of her mourning. Faire Knight (quoth shee) I was sent

by a Lady with a Caſkette, wherein was one of the beſt ſwords in the whole world, which is ſo enchaunted, as none can draw it out of the ſcabbard, but he that is eſteemed the worthieſt knight liuing: but before any be admitted to make proofe of this aduenture, hée muſt grant a requeſt that I am to aſke him. With this ſword haue I trauailed many ſtrange Countreyes, as Fraunce, Italie, Sclauonye, and diuers others, whereof many haue tryed, but no one yet could finiſh the aduenture: whereupon I was this day trauailing towarde the Emperours Court of Greece, and héere by I mette with two Knights, who hauing heard the cauſe of my long trauaile, made proofe of their fortune one after another, and both fayled, whereat they were ſo offended, as they tooke the Caſket from me perforce, and are gone therewith I knowe not whither: which doth ſo grieue me in reſpect of her loſſe towards whom I am, as death would be more welcome to mee then life. Faire Virgin, ſaide *Palmerin*, do not diſcomfort your ſelfe, but ſhewe mee which way they rode that dealt with you ſo diſcourteouſly. Gentle knight (quoth ſhée) if your pay be to reſtore my loſſe againe, you do the moſt gracious act that euer Knight did for a diſtreſſed Damoſell. Theſe Traytors to honour (whereof the one is in Crimſon Armour, bearing in his ſhéild three Lions heades) tooke this way by the wood, and as yet I am ſure they cannot be farre hence. Then Palmerin claſped his Helmet and taking his ſword and Launce, deſired Ptolome to guarde the Damoſell and follow him, galloping that way which ſhe had ſhewed him: and by the time he had rid two miles, he eſpied them he looked for, talking with another Knight they had mette, and they three together were aſſaying to open the Caſket, to whom Palmerin cryed. Trecherous villaines, that cannot méete with Ladyes on the way, but muſt offer them iniurie, deliuer the Caſket, or yee die. One of the two turned preſently, and ſéeing him that thus threatened them to be alone, not mouing a lot beganne to laugh, and ſcornefully

returned

returned this answere. Softly, softly good Syr, God pardon their soules whome you kill so easily: but for all his words, Palmerin ran against them, and they at him, so that he receiued a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence whereof, he gaue one of them a passport into another world, and laid so lustily on the other, as hee set him quickly beside his saddle. When the third saw his companions at so hard a reckoning, he said to himselfe. By my faith hee spake not vnaduisedly that said: A safe escape is better then a bad tarrying. And allowing this sentence for currant in his owne opinion, gaue the spurres to his Horse, making haste away with the Casket so fast as he could: but Palmerin being somewhat better mounted, got such aduantage of this runaway, as with his sword he parted his right arme from his body, whereupon hee fell to the grounde and the Casket with him. Then Palmerin alighted and tooke it vp, and leauing the knight there, returned which way he came, when opening the Casket hee tooke great pleasure in beholding the sword, which was maruailous costly: yet would he not presume to draw it forth, because hee knew not her pleasure to whom it appertained. At length hee espyed Ptolome comming, who came a pace (if néede had béene) to assist him: but when he knew how he had ouercome the knights, and recouered the thing was so desired, no man could bée better contented, especially the Damosel, who leaping from her Palfray, came and kissed Palmerins féete, saying. And may all happinesse repay this gentle déede, fayre knight, for but by you my death had beene best welcome to me. Damosell (quoth hée) sée héere the Casket according as I founde it, I know not whether they that tooke it from you haue abused it or no. No, no, sayd she, they could no way wrong it, the sword being héere that belongs to the best knight. I pray you (quoth Ptolome) let mee make tryall of my strength, albeit I know my selfe no such man as you speake of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damosell desired him to forbeare, for (quoth shée) you must first

grant me one requeſt. What ere it be, ſaid Ptolome, I grant it: and ſo ſet all his might to his intent, but could not accompliſh it, wherefore quoth he to the Damoſell. Beléeue me Lady, hee that wrought this enchauntment, did more by his art, then I can by my cunning, and in my opinion you may trauaile long inough, before you finde him that ſhall quit your expectation. The more will be my trouble, quoth the Damoſell, being tyed by neceſſitie to ſuch a Knights fortune. When Palmerin ſaw that his companion had failed, he doubted whether he ſhould take it in hand or no: yet ſéeing hée could ſpéede no worſe then other had doone, he ſaid to the Damoſell, will you any thing with me before I aduenture my ſelfe, for my friende ſhall not bée mal content for a fellow. Gentle knight (quoth ſhe) I will nothing, but that you make me the like promiſe your friend did. Of that doubt you not, ſayd Palmerin: ſo laying hande valiantly on the Sword, without any great labour he drew it forth, béeing the richeſt and goodlieſt Sworde that euer was ſéene. Ah good knight, ſaid the Damoſell, happie bée the day of thy natiuitie, for thou haſt deliuered me from incredible labour. The ſword is yours, but by your promiſe you ſtand bound to go with me where I ſhall conduct you, to do that ſhall pleaſe my Lady to commaund you. Leade the way Damoſell (quoth Palmerin) and be ſure wée will not leaue thy company. So mounted the damoſel on her palfray, and toke the way towardes Rome, where ſhe that deliuered her the Caſket remained in deuotion, and with ſuch ſpéede they diſpatched their trauaile, as they arriued at the Gate of a ſtrong Caſtle, where the Damoſell alighted, deſiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her returne awhile. The Gate being opened, ſhe went ſtraight to her Miſtreſſe and her ſiſter, who being glad of her comming, demaunded if ſhée had founde the man ſhe went to ſéeke. Ladies (quoth ſhe) I haue, and hither he is come with me, but this I dare aſſure you before hand, that a more goodly and valiant Gentleman liues not this day: for in my preſence hée van-

quiſhed

quished three knights, who perforce tooke the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easily, as it hadde béene that he beareth by his side. Go, said the Lady, and cause him come néere, and come sister let vs go to the gate to entertaine him. Then was the draw bridge let downe, when Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reuerence, and each Ladie leading a knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be vnarmed.

Chap. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to Palmerin, what moued the Giant Darmaco to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon Palmerin promised to enter Combate with the Giant: as much for pittie, as to acquite his promise made to the Damosell that brought the Casket and the enchaunted sword.

THe two knights being thus entred the Castle & vnarmed, the Ladyes brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damaske, imbrodered with gold and pearle, to couer them, and so came with them into the Hall to meate, where wanted no choise of daintie delicates: so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other speeches passed betweene them, the Ladye thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir knight, as nowe I am a poore and disinherited Gentlewoman, that sometime was Wife to one of the wel-

chiefe knights in this Countrey, with whom I long time remained not hauing any Childe, till at length it pleaſed God to ſend me a Daughter, ſo faire a creature as euer nature framed, who at my huſbands death was left with mée but fiue yeares aged. My Lorde and huſband learned in the arte Magicke, and for his ſkill renowmed in this countrey, the day before his death hee called me to him, vſing theſe ſpéeches. Déere wife, let it ſuffice thée that I knowe what ſhall happen to thée after my death, and that one ſhall take perforce from thée not onely ſuch goods as I leaue thée, but alſo thy faire daughter: to helpe which extreamitie, I haue ſomewhat prouided for thée before my departure.

Thou ſhalt finde in my Cabinet a Sword, which I my ſelfe haue enclоſed in a Caſket, and haue ſette ſo many inchaunted ſpels on that ſword, as no man ſhall be able to draw it out of the ſcabbard, vnleſſe he be the beſt approued Knight in the world, and hee it is that muſt giue thée ſuccour, and helpe to recouer againe thy loſſe. Too true fell out my Huſbands ſpéeches, for ſoone after Darmaco the Giant came hither, and as his cuſtome was to abuſe whome hee liſted, ſo tooke he from me the beſt of my Caſtles, and in deſpight of me tooke my Daughter from mée, ſaying, that he would giue her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villain farre more vicious then his father, and ſo deformed, as nature ſtands aſhamed at her owne workmanſhip. Now in reſpect I would not conſent to this vnſéemely marriage, ſuch goods as was left me he violently tooke from me, this Sword onely excepted which you haue worthily conquered, and that had gone with them too, but that my ſiſter hid it very ſecretly. Now worthy knight, if euer pittie tooke place in thy gentle heart, reuenge me on this villaine, that hath thus robbed me of my goods and my daughter, whoſe youth (being as yet but ten yeares olde) is the cauſe that the Giant hath not conſummated ỳ marriage. And if it ſhal like you to do thus much for me, you ſhall not onely fulfill your promiſe to the Damoſell that brought you hither, but you

ſhall

shall doo a déede acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfortable to my poore Childe, and honorable for euer vnto your owne selfe. Madame (aunswered Palmerin) it is no mervaile if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants do take a habit in trecherous dealings: wherefore did not my promise binde me to your Damosel, I would not passe so lightlie out of this Countrey, ere I compelled him somewhat to recompence this iniurie, and this shall I (God willing) doo to morrowe, so please you I may bée conducted to him. Ah gentle knight, sayd the Ladie, what I am not able, Heauen will no doubt repay thée: And because it was now somewhat late, after they had spent a little more time togither in conference, these Ladies accompanied him and Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leaue, committed the knights to their good rest for that night, which they passed with quiet repose, and on the next morning after they were armed, they demaunded their guide of the ladie, that should direct them the way towardes the Giant. Then she called the Damosell that carried the Casket, and two knights of her owne, whome shée commaunded to go with Palmerin: so committing him to God and good successe, they toke their way straight to the Castle of Darmaco, where they arriued in the euening, when they espied a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to keepe the watch, to whome Palmerin saide. My friend, I pray thée if Darmaco bé within, cause him to come forth, for I would speake with him. And what would you with him aunswered the Squire? I would intreate him, saide Palmerin, to vse himselfe more courteously then hee hath done heretofore, and that hé would doo right to a good Ladie whome he hath disinherited, namely to send her her goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreatie maye not preuaile with him, bidde him if hee dare come to the Combats, wherein I will make him confesse vnder my sword, that his actions haue beene villainous, traytorous, and disloyall. In good soth Sir, aunswered the Squire in derision,

derision, you may ſéeme to haue reaſon, and they that ſent you likewiſe, but your iourney I feare me will not amount to ſo much: therefore, if you will be ruled by me, get you going, vnleſſe you are willing to leaue your heade for a ſigne to our Gates. My head, ſaid Palmerin, my Sworde holdes too good an edge, and mine arme too ſound ſtrength, to leaue a Iewell of ſuch price ſo eaſily: go therefore when I bidde thée, thou wert beſt, otherwiſe aſſure thy ſelfe if I vanquiſh thy Maiſter, that thou with the reſt ſhalt ſurelye dye the death. Too ſoone, ſaid the Squire, ſhall I doo your meſſage: and if any harme happen to you, ſaye my good Frende you were councelled before: but as for my Maiſter Darmaco, hée hath not béene within for this houre and more, yet is his Sonne Mordano héere, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in ſhort time Mordano the Giants Sonne came vppon the walles, demaunding of Palmerin what hée ſought for? I told thy Squire, anſwered Palmerin: but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that deliteſt in offering villanie to Ladies? and how then, ſaid Mordano, what if I am? I praye thée, ſaid Palmerin, bid thy Father that without anye further quarrell he deliuer the Ladie that he detaines violentlie, otherwiſe I ſhall cauſe him to doo it whither hée will or no. I ſhall make thée anſwer, ſaid Mordano, if thou dareſt tarrie but till I arme my ſelfe: and ſo preſently departing, in ſhort time he came forth verie well appointed, with a meruailous ſtrong Launce in his hand, and mounted on a verie luſtie Courſer, ſo prauncing towards Palmerin, hée ſaid. Wretch, art thou come to ſéeke thine owne death? I pittie thée: yet if thou wilt yéelde thy ſelfe to my mercie, I will ſpare thy life, and ſuffer thée to waſte thy time in one of the baſe Dungeons in this Caſtle. From lodging there, God ſhéelde me, quoth Palmerin: and béeing moued with theſe rough wordes of his enemie, he encountred Mordano with ſuch courage, as their Launces béeing broken, both of them were diſmounted, Palmerin not hurt, but Mordano

was

was wounded on the right side, the stumpion of Palmerins Launce béeing left in his body. Notwithstanding hee recouered himselfe quickly, and came furiously towardes Palmerin, and gaue him such a cruell stroke on the head, as the blood beganne to trickle downe his face: which when hee perceiued, and howe it stode him in hande now to be venturous, he requited Mordano with so sounde a gréeting, as he parted one of his armes quite from his bodie, and astonied him likewise that hée fell to the ground: but recouering himselfe, hée ran towardes the Castle and Palmerin after him. The seruaunts of the Castle, séeing theyr Lordes sonne in such danger, with Iauelins and other weapons came against Palmerin, whome they had murdered, if Ptolome and the two Knightes that were sent with him, had not speedily come from their close ambushe to defende him: and so manfully did they behaue themselues, as they droue them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Ptolomes féete, who deferring no time, presently with his sworde toke his heade from his shoulders. The seruants this séeing, dispearsed themselues & ran into corners, so that Palmerin and his companie had no bodye left to resist them, some lying there wounded to the death, and other escaping forth at a backe Gate, which they made fast after them, least they should be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things fall out so effectually, hee called for the Damosell and the Knightes that came with him, who béeing not a little glad of this great good fortune, desired first to séeke for Esmerinda theyr Ladies Daughter, for they were well assured that shée was in the Castle. Searche in euery place, quoth hée: and because the night drewe on, the Gates were made fast, and there they determined to lodge for that night. In meane while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and nére the Giants Chamber shée found Esmerinda, who immediatlie knowing her, came running and caught her louingly about the necke: for before, (not knowing that her companie had conquered the Castle) shée and thrée other Women, that

kept

kept her companie, were greatlie feared, but now the Damoſell gaue her perfect aſſuraunce, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onelie Knight for proweſſe in the worlde, whome her Ladie Mother had thus ſente thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whome the young Gentlewoman Eſmerinda humbled her ſelfe on her knees: but he taking her vp, embraced her with theſe ſpeeches. Prettie ſoule, your Ladye mother hath great deſire to ſee you, will not you go with vs to her? Syr knight quoth ſhe, I neuer in my life deſired any thing more, then to ſee my Mother: but I greatlie doubt that the falſe Darmaco will méete vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Siſters, and it will bée to morrowe before his returne, when if hée hap to méete vs, wée are but dead. Let me deale for that good Ladie, ſayde Palmerin: I haue learned alreadie to kill the Sonne, I doubt not but this ſmall practiſe will make me do as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Ptolome thus deuiſed with Eſmerinda, the Damoſell and Vrbanillo had prouided Supper, which béeing ended they went to reſt, expecting the morning, when they prepared the women to horſeback: and hauing taken what them beſt liked out of the Caſtle, they ſette fire on the reſt, and ſo take their way towardes the ſorrowfull Widdowe: who expecting good tydings, continued in earneſt and deuoute oriſons, that ỹ good Knight might ouercome her bloud-thirſtie enimie, and returne with victory, and her Daughter Eſmerinda.

Chap.

Chap. XXIII.

How Palmerin returning with his companie to the Ladies Caſtle, happened to meete with the Giant Darmaco, who loſt his life in Combat with Palmerin.

THus rode Palmerin and his company verie ioyfull of theyr good fortune, eſpecially Eſmerinda, aboue all the reſt: but this pleaſant humour laſted not long, for ſhe had eſpied Darmaco comming forth of a wode, hauing with him his wife and ten well appointed knights: whereat the young Ladye was ſo affrighted, as ſhe cryed out, ſaying: O God, now are we all caſt away. At which words the other women beganne to diſcourage themſelues, and ſeeing the Giant ſo nere, knewe not whither they were beſt to go forward or backe againe: whereupon Palmerin ſayde to Ptolome. I pray thee good Frende, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and theſe two knights deale with the reſt: in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Dwarfe Vrbanillo conney theſe Ladies into the thickeſt of the wode. He had no ſoner thus ſaid, but they beheld the Giant make apace towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet ſeeing fayre Eſmerinda ſo deliuered, in wonderfull rage, not taking eyther Sword or Shelde with him, he prauncd towardes Palmerin, who entertained him ſo ſoundly on the head with his Fauchion, as this Giant tumbled forth of his Saddle, hanging in his ſtirrop by the left foote, and was no way able to recouer himſelfe.

The

The Horſe ſéeling his Maiſter from his backe, and his burthen to weighe ouer heauie on his ſide, the Giants ſote likewiſe tickling him in the flaancke, began to courſe about, and to beate his Maiſter with his féete euery way he could reach him, when Palmerin on the other ſide laid him on ſuch ſtrokes, as at length he ſent his ſoule to the diuels, the patrons of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no more to doo, but go helpe his companions againſt the other Knights, wherein he was deceiued, for the Giantelle to reuenge her Huſbands death, gaue ſo cruell a ſtroke at *Palmerin* with her Huſbands Mace, as had he not ſhrunke aſide ſhe had ſlaine him, and ſo continued more like a Lyon then a Woman, redoubling ſtroke after ſtroke: which forced *Palmerin* for ſafegarde of himſelfe, ſéeing no meanes or perſwaſions could preuaile with her, to ſende her packing after her Huſband. *Ptolome* and his Knightes had dealte ſo well with the reſt, as on the comming of *Palmerin* they had diſpatched them all, if freſh ſupply had not come to them, as you ſhall heare more anon.

The Ladye of the Caſtle Mother to Eſmerinda, ſo ſoone as *Palmerin* departed thence towardes the Giant, ſent to ſeeke a young Gentleman named *Criſpino*, to whome ſhe promiſed her Daughter in marriage, if ſo be ſhe could recouer her againe out of the Giants power: who ſtaying not long after this meſſage, made haſte to the Caſtle, the Lady entertaining him in this manner. Not long ſince, my good Frende, there departed hence a Knight, who intendes to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and becauſe I knowe not to what ende this enterprize will ſorte, I pray you Arme you, and take tenne of your hardieſt men with you, to helpe the good Knight if he ſhould be diſtreſſed. Criſpino ſoone conſented to this motion, & in his way towardes the Caſtle, it was his chaunce to méete with the Dwarfe and the Ladies that fledde into the woode. It is not to demaunde how pleaſing this ſight was to him, beholding Eſmerinda whome he loued as himſelfe: of whom he demaun-

ded

ded where their company was, and shée reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Wherepon hée commaunded fiue of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was nére at hande, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin Ptolome, and the Ladies two Knightes encountred with the freshe supplye that came to Darmacos men. Ye was no sooner arriued, but he behelde Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies Knightes slaine among the rest, which moued him & his men to bestir themselues: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the ende, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how hee had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cozins house not farre off, whither if it pleased him to walke, he should receiue what courtesie could bee perfourmed on so suddaine warning, in respect of the happie fortune the whole Countrey shoulde finde by him, béeing thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonne, but aboue all, for the safetie of his best beloued Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cozin made them verie gracious welcome, reioycing greatlie at this happie victorie: and afterward they set forwarde to the good Widdowe, Crispino by the waye reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised him her in marriage desiring him to assist the matter that it might bée finished: which he promised to do, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady sawe her Daughter, and hearde howe her cheefest enemies were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her cheerefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle Knight, how might I be able while I liue to recompence this inestimable fauour? the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule haue you brought me, may neuer harmes befall so good a Knight. Ladie, quoth he, giue the praise to God, as for me, iudge if I haue béene as good as my promise to your Damoselle or no;

and

and if there be any thing elſe to doo, Ladye I am ready now to perfourme it. You haue done ſo much for me, ſayde ſhée, as nothing remaineth more to be deſired, vnleſſe of your bountie you will cauſe me to receiue what the Giant toke from me by force: for ſéeing he is deade, they that withholde it from me, will now willingly reſtore it againe. That ſhall be likewiſe accompliſhed, quoth *Palmerin*: but becauſe he and Ptolome were ſore wounded, as you heard, they ſtayed to be cured, and ſent Criſpino with his Cozin and a good ſufficient traine, to demaunde the Ladies Caſtle and her goods. They that held it of the Giant, vnderſtanding his death, made preſent deliuerance thereof, and committed themſelues to the Ladies mercie: whither ſhée ſent her Daughter, ſo ſoone as *Palmerin* and Ptolome were healed, to whome the Subiects vowed their faith and allegeaunce, and with great Triumphes honoured the marriage of Criſpino and Eſmerinda. On the morrowe, as the knight ſate at meate, there entred the Hall a Squire, who ſayd to *Palmerin*, that a Damoſell ſtayed without to ſpeake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and ſay her pleaſure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, ſhée fell on her knées before Palmerin, ſaying. Sir Knight, doo you not knowe mee? No in good ſoth, anſwered Palmerin. Beléeue mée (quoth the Damoſell) then hath my ſeruice béene euil imployed which ſometime I did you, and whereof I am ſure you haue heard good account. Then Palmerin knewe her (ſhe bringing the Shéelde and the Helmet when *Florendos* Knighted him) whereuppon hée roſe from the Table, and embracing her, ſaid. Fayre Damoſell and my Frende, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time ſince I firſt ſawe you, did quite exempt you from my remembraunce: pleaſeth it you to commaunde mée anie ſeruice? Sir knight, ſayd the Damoſel, when I preſented you the Helmet and Shéelde, wherewith you toke your order of Knighthoode, you promiſed mée (if you remember) that you would vſe it with right good will, in anye affaires the Knight had that ſent it you, and when

he

he should require such perfo3maunce : now is the time to confirme your de3de with your wo3de, fo3 hee hath sent mée to you with humble intreatie, that without anie staye you go where I shall conduct you, other wise you are the onelye cause of his death. God shéld me from such misfo3tune saide Palmerin, rather wo'lde I go with you p3esentlye from the Table. So do I p3ay you, (quoth she) fo3 I haue haste. Then he called fo3 his Armour, and the table withd3awne, he went into his Chamber to arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they take they3 leaue of the Ladies and mounted on ho3sebacke, the whole companie bée ing so so3rie fo3 they3 departure, as Esmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I p3omise you Damosell, you haue done vs w3ong in mins opinion, to hinder vs of the p3esence of so good a Knight. Ladie, aunswered the Damosell, thinke you he was bo3ne fo3 you onelie? content your selfe with the good you haue receiued by him, and suffer such as haue néd of his p3owesse, to receiue his assistaunce as you haue done. And good reason saide Esmerinda, if it bee to so good an ende, that no resistaunce bee offered when helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with the Damosell which waye she guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to bee with the Knight that sent to séeke him: because hée wo'lde gladlie knowe, of whence hee was that wished him so wel, as his message declared by the Damosell the same daye hee was Knighted.

The famous Hiſtorie

Chap. XXIIII.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Court of the king of Bohemia, where they entred Combate againſt the Counte of Ormeque and his two Coozins, who accuſed the Knight and his Son of treaſon, that ſent to ſeeke Palmerin.

Anie miles had theſe Knightes rid with the Damoſel, when Palmerin at length deſired her to tell him, what hee was that ſent him the helmet and the ſheild: wherto ſhe anſwered, that ſeing he was ſo deſirous to knowe, liſten, quoth ſhe, and I ſhall repoꝛt the whole vnto you. The Knight we ſpeake off, is deſcended of verye royall blood, beeing Vncle to the King of Bohemia that raignes at this pꝛeſent, as alſo to the Empꝛeſſe of Allemaigne, the verie beſt ſcene in Nigromancie this day liuing. This noble man is named Pꝛince Adrian, who neuer liked to liue in the Court of the King his Bꝛother, but contented with what patrimonie his Father left him, at length maꝛried with a verie beautifull Ladie, of whome in time he begat a Sonne named Dyardo, which Sonne his Bꝛother the King of Bohemia, nouriſhed vppe in his Court with his owne Sonne. So mutuallie in loue agrées theſe two young Pꝛinces, as after the death of the aged King, the yong Dyardo ſhoulde ioyntlie rule with his Coꝛzin the King: who toke to wife the Daughter to the Duke of Lorayne, bꝛinging her with him into this Countrey, in companie of her Sister, a pꝛinceſſe ſo wiſe and vertuous as euer liued. It

so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lords most noble Sonne, framing his thoughts to the inspirations of loue, affected so highlie the other Sister, as he determined neuer to haue anie other to his Wife, if hee might compasse what he intended. For her good Ladie, he could not be deceiued in his amorous desires, he found her loue so equall with his, yet did they shadowe their affections so discretlie, as none could perceiue them, but Domarto the traiterous Counte of Ormeque, one of the best knights in all that Country, were he as familiar with vertue and honestie, as hee is with malice and disloyaltie. This Traytour enterprised to match with the Queenes Sister, beloued as you haue heard by my Lordes worthy Sonne, and thereuppon after manye sollicitings, made knowne his intent vnto her, whereof she made so slender account, as shée forbad him anye more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lorde Dyardo his onelye hinderaunce in loue, intended a malicious villanie: and on a suddaine accused the Prince, that he intended to poyson the king, so to obtaine the Crowne, as descended of a nearer consanguinitie. And as it often falleth out in such cases, when one séekes to crosse an others fortune, there is no time slacked in following such drifts: euen so this Traytor, finding the young king alone, began this matter in this colourable sort. My gratious Lord, the faith and alleageaunce I owe to your highnesse, bindes me to make your princelie eares acquainted with such newes, as, God is my witnesse, sayd the Traytour (lifting his eyes and hands to heauen) mine own death were more welcome to me, such is the loue I beare them whome it concernes, being all so neere allied to you in birth, as sorie am I they should bee detected: but in your regarde my gracious Lorde, the action touching you in such sort as it doth, let me die rather then spare anye liuing creature, no not mine owne Sonne, had nature giuen mee anie. This nedeless exordium haue I made so soule an occasion, albeit truth néedes no colours or eloquent figures: and therefore in brefe my Lord, this is the summe. I am

credible enformed, that your highneſſe Cozin the Prince Dyardo, and Madame Cardonia Siſter of the Quéene, haue laide the platforme to poyſon your Maieſtie, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Vncle, who pretends that the Crowne of Bohemia is his. I knowe not whither it be for want of diſcretion or no: but howſoeuer it bée my Lorde, you ſhould not leaue ſuch a villaine vnpuniſhed. The King began greatlye to meruaile at theſe newes, and knew not well what to thinke: whereupon he aunſwered the Counte, that hée could not beléeue this accuſation. But the Traytour ſet ſo smoothe a countenaunce on the matter, and did auerre it ſtill with ſuch ſtout proteſtations, as hee induced the King to beléeue him: ſo that a daye or two after, the King béeing walking in his garden, ſéeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Quéenes chamber windowe, ſecretlie conferring of their amorous affections, commaunded them both to be carried to priſon. The Counte glad thereof, prouoked the King ſtill with ſuch anger againſt them, as immediatlie he would haue them both done to death: but that the Quéene and the Lordes of his Counſell, found meanes to qualifie his diſpleaſure, declaring what diſcredit his highnes ſhould receiue, if he did not ſuffer them to be openlie conuicted of their offences. All this while good Princes, were they ignorannt of this detection, till at length the King diſcourſed the whole matter to them, and likewiſe who was their accuſer: nor did the Counte fayle to maintaine his wordes openlie, offering to make it good in fight, againſt any that durſt ſay the contrary: and becauſe hée had two Cozins, hardie and valiant Knights, conſpirators likewiſe in this faction, there could be none founde that would enter the Combat againſt them. Which when the noble Prince Adrian vnderſtode, very greéfe had wel néere ſlaine him, in reſpect hée had no Child but this Dyardo, as alſo for that he was accuſed with ý hee neuer thought. Hereupon he went preſently to the King his Nephew, and preuailed ſo well with him, as he obtained the ſpace of ſixe

Monethes,

Mone thes, to bring with him one or two that might maintaine the innocencie of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the Princesse Cardonia, against the Traytour Domanio and his Cozins. And this is the cause he sent mee to seeke you forth, in hope that you are as much his Frend as hee is yours, which you may somewhat perceiue, by the frendly presents hee sent you by mee to Macedon. So helpe mee God, saide Palmerin, you haue reported a most strange discourse, and neuer did I thinke, that such treason could enter the thoughts of anie knight, or other inferior person. If this is true, quoth the Damosel, and it is appointed the Prince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed Father, shall defend their owne causes, without seeking helpe of anie other: but he neuer as yet receiued the order of Knighthode, and therefore is constrained to desire your assistaunce. And that shall I do with all my heart, said Palmerin, would God we were there where hee expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see him, as also to vnderstand what he knowes of my following fortunes. Those matters are hid from mee, quoth she, yet this haue I heard him say diuers times, being in talke of you, that hee accounted you the most honorable Knight in the worlde: and that if he euer chaunced to see you, he would aduise you to go to the Emperour of Allemaignes Courte, to be the Knightlie Seruaunt to the Princesse Polinarda. When Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, hee remembred that it was her name, whome hee had so many times seene in his traunces, for which cause he asked of the Damosell, what the Lady was of whome shee spake? My Lord quoth shee, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and Niece vnto my Lorde Adrian, the most beautifull Princesse that euer eye beheld. By my faith, said Palmerin the more easily may I be induced to graunt her my seruice, and thither intend I to trauaile, when I haue finished your Lords busines. So rode they with much more haste then before, till at length they came to the Cittie of Almedya, where the King remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins

comming: which when hee heard, hée came to méete him eache embracing other with meruailous courteſie, and the good olde man with the teares in his eyes thus ſaide. Ah good knight, what maye counteruaile this your exceéding paines, to maintaine the right of my Sonne and mée, who are falſelie accuſed of ſuch villanous treaſon, as (on the perill of my ſoule) we neuer did imagine? Thereof am I certainlie perſwaded, anſwered Palmerin, and therefore am I come to enter the Combate with him, that dare affirme otherwiſe. Mine olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuſe mee henceforth from bearing Armes, but béeing vnable to endure ſo vile a ſlaunder, ſo long as life and ſoule will holde togither, ſhall I doo my deuoire: ſo pleaſe your companion to make the ſecond, as olde as I am I will be the third, for the trayterous Count hath tyde of his Cozins that take part with him. And if my fortune ſo fall out as I die in this tryall, I ſhall receiue my lot very contentedlye, if mine eyes might firſt beholde mine iniurie reuenged. I pray you ſaid Palmerin, go preſentlye to the king, to the ende that his highneſſe may graunt vs the fielde, for my Frænde and I thinke long till we haue made your accuſer knowe his trecherie. Adrian immediatlie went to the king, and on his knées thus began. My Lorde, you knowe that the Counte of Ormeque hath accuſed mée, my Sonne Dyardo, and Madame Cardonya, of the crime of Leſæ Maieſtatis, and in that we all are innocent, I am readie to maintaine, that he hath falſelie and maliciouſlie belyed vs, which I my ſelfe will approue vpon him, or two more with me, againſt him and his Cozins, if they dare enter the fielde with him in this quarrell, where wée will either make knowne their villanie, or receiue the reward belongs to diſloyall Traitors. As for the wrong which you (my Lord) haue done mee, béeing your Vncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Cozin germaine, that I referre to God to recompence, and to the better knowledge you ſhall receiue of me hereafter, béeing nowe too olde to bée a Traytour, and my Sonne too louing

ta

to proue disloyall. The King was abashed to heare his Vncle speake so audaciously, doubting nowe whither he should giue credite to what had beene reported, especially against him, so neere his highnes in blood, who so liberally offered to enter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and aged body made him vnfit for such actions, wherefore hee thus aunswered. Good Uncle, impute not mee any thing faultie in your accusation, and that the proofe shall manifest that must be made. The Counte being present, was stroken in a quandarye at these woords, and gladly he would haue denied this former slaunder, but he could finde no waye cleanely to dow it: wherefore seeing of force hee must needes enter the Combat, he boldlie fel on his knées before the king with these woordes. My Lorde, what I haue saide is verie certaine, and most true it is, that by the counsell of Prince Adrian heere present, his Sonne practised with Ladie Cardonia, to poyson you, that hee might bee King: which to make good, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my Cozins. Thou lieſt Traytour in thy throate, said olde Adrian, I take thine offer: and as hee would haue gone on with further speeches, Palmerin stept before the King, saying. Worthy Lorde, seeing the effect of the woordes must be put in execution, which haue beene heere spoken on both sides before your Maiestie: may it please you the Prince Dyardo and Ladye Cardonia may bee sent for, to take with vs theyr oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane time lette eache one go put himselfe in equipage for the Combat. Good reason sayd the King, and presently hee commaunded the Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin demaunded where they were that toke part with the Counte: whereuppon hee presented his Cozins, the one named Edron, proude and arrogant, and the other Edward, of like same qualitie. These two tooke their oathes with the Counte, that the Princes accused, conspired the Knightes death, in such sorte as hath beene before declared: and olde Adrian, Dyardo, and Ladye Cardonia sware the contrarie. But it

is true, and I will not denie it(ſaid the Prince Dyardo)that I haue and do loue Ladie Cardonia, as much or rather more then mine owne ſelfe, yet neuer did I carry any other intent, but to requeſt her in holie wedlocke, ſo pleaſed the King and Quéene to like ſo well thereof as wée could. But that euer I intended treaſon or villanye, it is moſt falſe, and Counte thou lieſt in thy throate, and thy copartners that haue ſworne with thée. It is ſufficient, ſaide Palmerin: but my good Lord, quoth he to the king, if we be conquerers, the accuſed ſhall be deliuered, & the accuſers hanged? What ſaye you Counte, ſaide the King? Good reaſon Syr, the like do we requeſt if we be victors. Will you (ſaide Palmerin) that eache ſhall helpe his fellowe as he findes it conuenient? What elſe? ſaide the Counte, that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron regarded ſo well Palmerin, that hee eſpied the Sworde which the Damoſell carried in the Caſket, and brought to that Courte as ſhee did to others, which ſhewing the Counte, hée ſaid out aloude. Where did the deuils finde this Knight to giue him this Sworde? Belike they gaue him ſtrength to drawe it out, elſe he might haue failed as manie other did: the Damoſel was vnwiſe to beſtowe it in ſuch bad ſorte. At which wordes Palmerin béeing angry, returned Edron this rounde anſwere. I ſee (Knight) there is in thée more brauerie and ſolliſh glorye then manlie action, thou blameſt mée before thou knoweſt mee, but ere you and I part, Ile finde better reaſon to beſtowe on you, and beate better gouernmente into your pate with this ſword that likes you not. This cauſed euery one wiſhlie to beholde Palmerin, the King remembring that he had ſéene the Sworde, which none in his Courte coulde deſerue to conquere: whereupon he eſteemed ſo well of Palmerin, as he commaunded Edron to ſilence, and all to go arme themſelues, becauſe hée intended that day to ſée the Combat fought.

CHAP.

Chap. XXV.

How Palmerin, Adrian, and Ptolome entred the Combat, againſt the Counte of Ormeque and his Couzins, whome they honourably vanquiſhed.

After the king had commaunded the knights to go arme themſelues, he gaue charge to foure of his ancienteſt knights to ſée the fielde prouided, and there to place the Iudges, according to the wonted cuſtome in Bohemia: the knights being careful of the kings commandement had ſoone prepared all things in readineſſe, wherefore the king, his Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to ſée the iſſue of this valiant enterprize. Then was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherein they ſhould be burned, if the count conquered. Soone after came ỳ ſix Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one againſt the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Iudges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: ſo the iudges being placed, the Marſhall ſummoned the fielde, and the Heraldes bid the Champions do their endeuour.

Palmerin had good regard to Edron, whoſe woordes ſticking on his ſtomache, called now for reuenge, wherefore couching his Launce, he encountred him with ſuch a full carrire, as his Launce paſſed through his body, and Edron tumbled dead to the ground. In the meane while the count and Prince Adrian hadde vnhorſed each other, Adrian

to

ſo ſore wounded, as he could hardly helpe himſelfe: as for Ptolome and Edward, they had aſtonied each other with falles from their Horſes, but they recouered themſelues quickly, and with sharpe ſtrokes beganne to charge each other valiantly. Greatly aſhamed was the Counte to bee vnhorſed, and therefore to recouer his honour, he came with great furie towardes his enemie: which Palmerin perceiuing, ſtept betweene them, ſaying. To me Counte, to mee, who will bid more for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him ſuch a ſure ſtroke on the head, as made the fire flie forth of his eyes: notwithſtanding, as a man of good courage he ſtept aſide, and thruſting his ſword into Palmerins Horſe throate, enforced him quickly to take him to his feete, but all the worſe for him as it fell out afterwards, for Palmerin hauing beaten him out of breath, hee flong away his weapon and caught him about the middle, where they tugged ſo long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knee on his belly, with his ſword ſoone toke his head from his ſhoulders. All this while Ptolome hadde good play with his enemie, and after many dangerous wounds receiued on either ſide, at length hee had the better of the day by killing his aduerſarie. Then he and Palmerin went to the Iudges, who giuing them ſentence of honorable victorie, they toke of their Helmets, and came to ſee in what eſtate the Prince Adrian was. Euill inough (quoth he) my noble good friends, but the leſſe account do I make of my life, in that mine eyes haue ſeene due vengeance on mine enemies. Then was he nobly borne forth of the fielde, the King commaunding to lodge him in his owne Pallace, and the Chirurgions ſearching his woundes, found them mortall, which newes did greeue the whole Court in generall: the good olde Prince yet being of ſome courage, was ioyfull to ſee in ſo good ſorte, hauing defended his owne honour and his Sonnes, whom hee ſent for, and in the preſence of all the Standers by, ſaid: My ſonne, ſeeing it hath pleaſed God thus to ſend for me, good reaſon

is

is that his will be fulfilled, but ere I depart, this I commaund thée, that (next God) thou truely serue and loue my Lord and King, bearing towards him a heart so faithfull, as I haue done to the houre of my death: and conceiue no offence at what hath passed against thée and mée, hauing come to passe (as I iudge) more by euill counsell, then any setled perswasion against vs. For the rest, to thy vttermost remember the good thou hast this day receiued by that noble knight who is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, hee said. Syr Palmerin, death hath seized so surely on me, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you very neerely: I counsel you therefore to trauaile to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, where you shal heare tidings of that you séeke so earnestly: with which words he deliuered vppe his Ghost. And because it seemeth good ere I passe any further, to let you know how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, thus it is. I haue heretofore reported, that hee was a notable cabalist or Magitian, by meanes whereof fewe secrets were concealed from him: so casting his Calender of most honourable birthes, he happened on Palmerin, and perceiuing the high fortune he was borne to, chéefely that he should proone a most notable knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe, he was desirous to contract a marriage betwéene him and his Niece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his visions, as hath beene declared. He thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Vncles hard fortune, caused him to be buried in most sumptuous manner, making him a Tombe in forme of a Piramides, the most excellent and stately that euer was in Bohemia, and ouer against it were hanged the bodyes of the Countand of his two Cousins, for his Trophe. Thus euery thing quieted, and the funerals of the Prince Adrin solēnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed towardas Allemaigne: but Ptolomes woundes were so dangerous, as he was constrained to stay longer then he intended. In the meane space the King did them all the honour could bee deuised,

deuiſed, in hope to ſtay them ſtill in his court, but it was impoſſible, for Palmerin told him he muſt néedes go to the Emperour, about affaires of very great importance. I know your meaning well inough, ſayde the king, you intend to go combate with the enchaunted knight: and in ſo doing, you ſhall looſe both your paines and your life, as many other haue doone before you. What enchaunted knight is it ſaid Palmerin? on my faith my Lord, I neuer heard any one talke of him but you. Then will I tell yée, (quoth the king) ſince I haue begun the matter. Not long ſince in the Countrey of the Emperour my Vncle, in the Citie of Ymanes dwelled a welthie knight, who hadde a faire Daughter amorous of a Gentleman, and their loue kept ſo ſecret as none knewe it but themſelues. It ſo fell out that her father married her to another Gentleman in his houſe, but for any good acceptation, or chéerefull countenance of the Gentlewoman, the bridegrome could haue none, ſo highly eſtéemed ſhée her firſt loue: and continued in opinion towards him ſo firme, as ſhe granted him enteraunce into her Chamber at an appointed time, where hée murdered her Huſbande, and carryed the Lady with him whether he pleaſed. The bruite héereof was ſo ſoone ſpread abroade, as the mother of the murdered Gentleman heard thereof, whereupon ſhée made her complaint to the Emperour, who immediatly ſent to ſummon the other before him: but they refuſing to come, and hauing taken themſelues to a very ſtrong Caſtle, were in the end ſo ſtraightly beſieged, as the Lady with her louer at length were taken, & hauing confeſſed the truth of their offence, ſentence was giuen on them that they ſhould be burned. The father to this knight offender ſo grieued héereat, as hee went to one of his Siſters, intending neuer to ſée the Emperour and his Court againe. His Siſter ſéeing him in this extreamitie, (as no maillice or bad inuention is comparable to a Womans) deuiſed to enchaunt one of her ſonnes, a good & hardy knight in ſuch ſort as he ſhould neuer be ouercome infight but

with

with an enchauntment of greater force. Beside, she gaue him a bow, and a great company of impoysoned arrowes, wherewith he should kill the Emperour and his Children, or any other whom himselfe pleased: which hee hadde not failed to haue done, but mine Vncle Adrian vnderstanding thereof, did take such regard to the matter, as hee could not hurt them, but many of his people, so that the countrey is wonderfully perplexed. For hee is mounted on a Horse enchaunted as himselfe is, the swiftest in pace that euer was séene, wherewith he flies into many out places of the Empire, committing a thousand harmes, and cannot be stayed, for whosoeuer comes to him armed, Knight or pesant, all dies the death and none escapes him. And that which is worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Vncle will not giue him his eldest Sonne Trineus and faire Polinarda his Daughter, to doo with them what shall like his humour, hee will neuer depart the Countrey, till he haue thoroughly ruinated it. By my sword (my Lorde) sayde Palmerin, in all my life I neuer heard so strange a tale, were I sure to die a thousand deathes, I will fight with this deuill, and deliuer the Countrey if my strength will compasse it. Alas my good friend, sayd the King, it would much displease me that you should hazard your selfe in such danger, for where such deuillish enchauntments are, the strength of man (how great soeuer it bee) doth not auayle: and therefore for my sake I pray you to forbeare. Let come what please God (said Palmerin) for if I die nowe, I shall be excused for euer hereafter. Well sawe the King that hee could not change him, therefore hee left off any further to entreate him: and too long he thought he tarryed for Ptolomes health, so desirous was he to be with the Emperour, hoping that his Combate with the enchanted knight, would grant him meanes to sée and talke with faire Polinarda. Wherefore when his companion had gotten a little strength, they take their leaue of the King and the Ladyes, cheefely of the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonia: who after they depar-

departure had such successe in their loue, as with the kings consent the marriage was finished. Now are Palmerin and Ptolome on their way to Gaunt, where the Emperor made his continuall aboade: the enchaunted knight so persecuting him, as he durst at no time come foorth of his Castle.

Chap. XXVI.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arriued at the Citie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne kept his Court, and of the Combate betweene Palmerin and the enchaunted Knight.

GOod expedition made these knights in their iourney, till at length they arriued at the Citie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne then sojourned, not knowing how to depart thence, because the enchaunted knight watched him at al houres: our knights being thus come thether, lodged in the house of a wealthie Burgesse, where they were entertained in very honourable manner. They were no sooner dismounted from their horses, but the whole Citie was on a suddaine vproare, and the people ranne on heapes from one place to another: which made him remember what the king of Bohemia had told him, and presently he imagined what after followed, for his Host in great feare came running to him saying.

Alas Sir, we all are vndone, the enchaunted knight hath gotten the Gates of our Citie, and in despight of the guarde he is entred: wonderfull is the harme that hee will nowe

no, if the Prince Trineus and fayre Polinarda be not reskewed. God defend such hard fortune, said Palmerin, rather will I fight with him, and if I dye I shall accompanie many other in vnfortunate succesle. With these words hee tooke his Launce and galloped that way where hee heard the tumult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the enchaunted knight was shooting his arrowes at the windowes hee espied open. Joyfull was Palmerin to finde him in such a place, where the Lady Polinarda might giue iudgement of his valour, which opinion did so renewe his courage, as presently he marched towards his enemie, who held in his hand a Persian bow, with an arrow in it readie to shoote, having a great sort moze at his backe in his Quiuer: he was of vnreasonable stature, yet with a countenance sterne and couragious, all which could not dismay Palmerin, but called to him in this manner. Proude knight, that by the ayde of deuils and euill spirits, hast committed monstrous cruelties: it is nowe time that hee whome thou seruest should haue his pray, which is thy soule into endlesse perdition. And so without staying for any answere, he ranne valiantly against him: but the enchaunted knight taking his aduantage, shot an arrow at him so violently as it pierced thorow his Armour to the bare flesh. Palmerin hauing broken his Launce, with an Iron Mace he had, he reached such a stroake to the knight, as he brake his bowe in two peeces, and the blow falling on the head of his Horse, made him therewithall fall dead to the grounde. The knight hauing recouered himselfe, tooke a Mace that hung at his saddle bow, and came against Palmerin, who was nowe on foote likewise: so layde they on loade terribly with their Maces, that the Emperour and his Lordes and Ladyes hearing the strokes, came to the windowes to see the combate, little thinking that any one durst presume to meddle with his enemie: yet all this while the knights neuer breathed, though their Shieldes and Armour were very much mangled, and their bodyes wounded in many places.

And

And becauſe Palmerin ſawe the fight endure ſo long with the Mace, he threw it downe and tooke him to his Sworde, wherewith he did ſo bumbaſte him about the head, as he could ſcant tell where to ſtrike againe: but the knight one ſodaine lifting vp his Mace, gaue Palmerin ſuch a ſtroake betweene the head and the ſhoulders, as made him reele to and fro amazedly: yet comming to himſelfe, and ſeeing the knight faint with his great expence of blood, cloſed with him, and caſting his legge behinde him, threw him to the grounde, when ſetting his foote on his breſt to keepe him downe, with his ſworde he parted his head from his bodie. What queſtion were it whether the Emperour reioyſed hereat or no: who for his whole Empire would not he were aliue againe, being ſo well deliuered from his onely enemie in the world, that could ſo moleſt him and his countrey with ſuch crueltie. And to ſay ſooth, the enchaunted knight was all together inuincible, nor could Palmerin haue thus prevailed againſt his wonderfull enchauntments, but that the three Magicall ſiſters of the mountaine Artiſæria highly fauoured him, as you heard before what promiſes they made him.

The Combate being thus ended, and the enchaunted knight dead, the Emperour (giuing thanks to God for this victorie) let open the gates of the Caſtle and came forth himſelfe to welcome Palmerin, who kneeling on his knee before the Emperour thus ſpake. Mightie Prince, ſuch renowne haue I heard through the world of your exceeding honour and bountie, as I haue trauailed many ſtrange Countries to come offer you my ſeruice, deſiring your highneſſe, (if my ſute may ſeeme reaſonable) to accept me hencefoorth amongſt your knightly Seruants. Ah faire Knight, anſwered the Emperour, it is for me to know of you, how I may remunerate this vnſpeakeable courteſie, for but by you mine enemie had triumphed in my ſpoyle: ſo much then is my ſelfe, my children and Countrey bounde to you, as no ſatisfaction is ſufficient to regratiate. So taking him by

the

the hand, and perceiuing his body wounded in many places, he conducted him into one of the fairest Chambers in his Castle, where he was disarmed, commaunding his Chirurgions to take diligent care of him, because in truth they much doubted his life. Wherefore getting him into his bed, all needefull things for his health were applyed to him, and no cost was spared to saue his life that preserued the whole Countrey.

Chap. XXVII.

How the Empresse came to visite Palmerin, who kept his Chamber, because he had receiued such dangerous wounds in the Combate with the enchaunted knight, and of the speech he had with the faire Princesse Polinarda.

THe Empresse with her faire Daughter Polinarda, gladde of the death of the enchaunted knight, came to Palmerins chamber to visite him, who hearing of their comming, cast a night mantle about him, which the Emperour hadde sent him, and came with great reuerence to welcome them: so desirous was hee to see her, for whome he had trauailed so many strange Regions. In this place it is necessarie that you remember, what gracious gifts the three fatal sisters bestowed on him, in the Mountaine Artisæria, one of them granting him this speciall fauour, that he should bee highly esteemed of her to whom hee was destenyed, so soone as she beheld him, which came to passe as heere shall be declared. Palmerin espying

the entrance of the Empreſſe and her daughter in his cham-
b-r, méeting them at the doꝛe, falling on his knée, did with
great humilitie kiſſe their handes: but the Empreſſe ta-
king him vppe in her armes, ſaluted him with theſe ſpée-
ches. Gentle Knight, right happy may we count our ſelues
by your comming hither, the Realme being moꝛe deſolate
then it hath béene ſéene héretofoꝛe, and not without cauſe,
in reſpect of the great iniurie the Knight did vs, whome you
haue ſlaine, he hauing ſwoꝛne the death of my childꝛen that
neuer offended him: but God bee thanked the lot hath fal-
len on himſelfe, which he determined to inflict on other: foꝛ
which great grace they ſtand ſo déepelie bounde to you as to
their Father that firſt gaue them life, which by your pꝛo-
weſſe you haue happilie pꝛeſerued: this ſecond gift being of
no leſſe account then the firſt, woꝛthilie may you bee called
their ſecond Father. Palmerin giuing eare to the Empreſſe
ſalutations, had his minde moꝛe buſied in beholding Poli-
narda, whoſe daintie regard ſo maiſtered his opinions, as
heade, heart, thoughts and all were nowe ſet to woꝛke: yet
couertly he ſhaped this anſwere to the Empreſſe. Madame,
what I haue done foꝛ you and yours, is nothing in reſpecte
of my great good will: foꝛ ſince the time I firſt hadde know-
ledge of my ſelfe, and befoꝛe I receiued the oꝛder of Knight-
hoode, underſtanding of my Loꝛd the Emperour, and what
honourable entertainment was in his Court, I dedicated
my ſeruice to him onely, and foꝛ this cauſe Madame came
I hither. But how is it poſſible Sir, ſaid ſhe, that you can
content your ſelfe to be one of his knights, your deſerts bee-
ing ſo great? Very Well Madame, quoth hée, and yours to,
ſo pleaſe your highnes to affoꝛd me ſuch fauour. With all
my heart Sir, ſaide ſhe, ſhall I entertaine you towardes the
Emperour, and on mine owne behalfe will pꝛouide better
foꝛ you then I will ſpeake of: and did it like you, I would
accept you foꝛ a Virgins Knight héere, and none other.
Whereupon ſhée called her Daughter Polinarda, ſaying.
Faꝛre Daughter, this Knight as yet hath little acquain-

tance

taines in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be good, because his desire is to make stay with vs, and for your owne part, take that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your seruaunt, and he shall be your Knight. And are you both agreed Ladies, said Palmerin? Heauen forsake me if I refuse honour of so high account. And as they would haue proceeded on, the Emperor came in and brake of their talke, and comming to the Empresse said, Madame, I beseech you haue good regarde to the health of this Knight, and let your Chirurgions not trifle the time with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchaunted Knight with his inuenomed arrowes, hath wounded him with great daunger and perill, and hath besides sore bruised his body with the weight of his Mace. But Palmerin hauing Polinarda so neere him, neither minded his woundes, or what the Emperour had spoken, his obiect more delighted, then his woundes grieued him, then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said. I pray you my deere Friend to be of good comfort, dispayre not for any thing I beseech you, and be aduised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed he and the Empresse, with their Daughter Polinarda, whome loue had already so inueigled, that shee (being yet but tender of yeeres) found her selfe so restrained of her libertie, as shee scant knewe how to dissemble this suddeine affection: and from that time forward she became so sadde and pensiue, as one of her Ladies, the most fauoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daughter to the Duke of Saxon, well perceiued it, yet durst shee not presume to demaunde, whence proceeded this strange alteration, but so circumspectly did shee regarde the Princesse, as she well noted the ground of her greefes. Whereuppon it happened, that one time amongst other, they two being alone togither, Brionella iudging that her Ladie delighted to heare speeche of Palmerin, how to hit the nayle on the head, she thus began. What say you Ma-

dame, (by your fauour) of the newe come knight? did you euer ſée a brauer and more accompliſht gentleman? Vpon my faith Madam, in mine opinion I thinke that nature hath wrought all her perfections in him, and fauoured him aboue all other knights in manhood and Chiualrie. Ah Brionella, anſwered the Princeſſe, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I euer thought as much though I kept it in ſilence: would God I had as great authoritie ouer him, as hee already hath gotten ouer me. Is the matter ſo with you, ſaide Brionella? truſt me ſeeing you are in loue with him then. To tell thée the truth Brionella (quoth ſhée) I am, and did I not doubt ſomewhat hath preuented mée, I would aduenture to winne him. In good ſooth madam, ſayd Brionella, you being vnited together in one reciprocall league of loue, how well might it bee reported the moſt honourable match, one of the two nobleſt young Princes through the whole worlde: and ſeeing you haue made a choyſe ſo worthie, diſmay not good Madame, but proceede in your determination. Thus counſeled the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no leſſe in affliction for the loue of Polinarda, whome hee had ſearched with ſo great paine and trauaile, and had now found with ſo high good fortune. If loue was ſo earneſt with him before in his ſléeping viſions hauing not ſéene her, much more behement was the impreſſion nowe hauing her in preſence. Whereupon the day following hee called for his garments, and as he was making himſelfe readie, the Emperour by one of his Gentlemen ſent him the good morrow, deſirous to vnderſtand in what plight he felt himſelfe. Good boy, anſwered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beſéech you doo my humble dutie to the Emperour for this great courteſie, and you may thus aſſure him, that (heauen be praiſed) I feele my ſelfe in ſo good eſtate as euer I did. Which the Emperour hearing was highly contented, and ſent to deſire his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (neuer before ſo thoroughly touched with the forcible aſſaults of loue) glanced ſo many

manie sweete lookes on the Princesse Polinarda, and breathed so manie sighes, the secret Ambassadours of his hearte, as it was a heauen to him to be in these passions. The Emperour and all the traine returned from the Chappell, they went to meate, and Palmerin being placed right against Polinarda, was in such fits as hee knewe not what countenaunce to vse: for his colour went and came in such manner, as the Princesse might easilie iudge the cause of his dolour, whereupon she presentlie presumed, that she had more interest in his thoughts then ere shee looked for. The like opinion conceiued he of her, yet was no other testimony deliuered on either side, then sad countenances, the reuealers of a tormented spirite. Thus continued these two louers, till the Tables were withdrawne, and then the Lords and Ladies fell to dauncing, in which delight and diuers other, the whole day was spent, till the Empresse and her Ladies departing to their Chambers, the good night on all sides was reuerentlie giuen: when Palmerin went to his lodging in such an agonie, as more likelie to dye then liue, he threwe himselfe on his bedde, where hauing sighed and sorrowed long time grieuouslie, at length he brake forth into these tearmes. Ah Palmerin, vnhappie, wretched and most miserable, now art thou entred into such a Labyrinth, as impossible is it for thee to get out againe with life, but what shoulde moue thee to so high an enterprise, being no way able to equall her that is second to none? Alas nowe do I plainlye see the small credite is to bee reposed in Dreames, and that the visions I sawe in my Father Gerrards house, on the Mountaine Artisæria and else-where, are friuolous illusions, and of no account: with them may I ioyne the promise made mee by olde Adrian, who boasted to knowe so much of my fortunes, for loue is not of such power on my behalfe, that fayre Polinarda eyther can or will make anie reckoning of me. Then Palmerin resolue thy selfe soddainlie to die, that this inuisible and consuming fire, which by little and little melts thee away, may bee extinguished, and

thy ſelfe eaſed. With theſe wordes he breathed forth ſuch an extreame ſighe, as Vrbanillo the Dwarfe (beeing neere) hearde him, who doubting leaſt any newe miſchaunce had happened, by the priuie woundes the enchaunted Archer gaue him, made haſt to know the cauſe of this euill. Ah Vrbanillo, quoth Palmerin, I finde my ſelfe farre worſe then dead. What my Lord, ſaid the Dwarfe, now you ought to be of beſt diſpoſition, will you deceiue vs with this alteration? The Emperour neuer gaue you bad countenaunce ſince your comming, whence then ſhoulde proceede this ſtraunge conceite? No no Vrbanillo, quoth hee, it is not the Emperour, but a Lord of greater power then his Maieſtie. It is Loue my Lad, the ſtricte commaunder of the ſtouteſt mindes, he hath conquered mee, and well I knowe I ſhall die, if thou doo not finde the meane to helpe mee. By my faith my Lorde (quoth the Dwarfe) ſo pleaſe you to tell mee how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thouſande deathes if I do it not. Underſtand then my good Vrbanillo, ſayd Palmerin, that this ſtrange alteration, proceeds from the diuine lookes of my peereleſſe miſtreſſe Polinarda, whoſe fiery beames haue ſearched ſo narowly euery corner of my thoughts, as I muſt die becauſe I loue too deerlie. But couldeſt thou make knowne to her the leaſt parte of my inſupportable vexations, may bee ſhee woulde haue ſome pittifull remorſe of my martirdome: for well may it be iudged, that a Ladie accompliſhed with ſo many vertuous perfections, muſt needes be ſtored with ſweetneſſe, fauour and pittie. Not vnlike my good Lord, ſayd Vrbanillo, but do you not remember how I was puniſhed, when in the like caſe I ventured to ſollicite your loue to Laurana, Daughter to the Duke of Durace? by my faith my Lorde, I ſhall not forget it while I haue a daye to liue, and am afrayde to fall againe into the like daunger. And this ſpake Vrbanillo with ſuch a grace, as Palmerin coulde not but laugh, noting withall feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth, whereupon he ſaid. Thou needeſt not be diſmaid,

if thee that smote thée in thy slæpe bée that Polinarda, for whose loue I am thus tormented, & for whom I was borne, as many haue enformed mée: I pray thée therefore speake to her, and dreade no colours. It is good, saide Vrbanillo, that you would haue me more hardie then you are your self: speake to her your selfe if you dare, for I dare not aduenture it for feare of my life. If thou dost it not (quoth Palmerin) assure thy selfe thou shalt neuer henceforth serue me. May then (quoth the Dwarfe) I wil rather put my selfe in ieoperdie, to be better beaten then I was ỳ last time, before I will lose so good a Maister. I pray thée do, said Palmerin, in respect thou seest the earnestnes of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the dwarfe) albeit you were a great deale more fit to breake the matter then I: but I will gage my life to gaine you the Ladie, and hereupon they rested till the next morning.

Chap. XXVIII.

How Polinarda desired Palmerin to giue her his dwarfe, and of the speech which she and Vrbanillo had afterward together.

EArlye the next morning Palmerin arose, and hauing walked abroade to contemplate his desires, returned into the chãber of presence, where he found Trineus the Emperors Sonne conferring with the Ladies: at which verye instant the Dwarffe entred, whose badde shaped body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that Trineus came to his sister Polinarda, saying. Sister, did you euer behold a more proper Page to attend

serue on Ladies, then this gaunt Squire that serues my Lorde Palmerin? In good soth Brother, quoth shée, hée is farre vnlike his noble maister, yet would I like wel enough if he were mine. I beséech you Sir Palmerin, saide Trineus, bestowe your seruaunt on my Sister Polinarda. Madame, quoth Palmerin, were he better, he is yours, and his Maister like wise. Then called hée Vrbanillo, who kneeling to vnderstande his Maisters pleasure, hée saide: Vrbanillo, I haue giuen you to my Ladie Polinarda as her man, will you not serue her honourablie and truelie aboue all other? Yea my Lorde, quoth hée, next after you, but you will I not leaue while I liue, although you woulde disdaine my seruice. Good reason hast thou, saide the Princesse, and well am I pleased it should be so: yet during ỳ time of his stay hére, you shal forsake him and abide with mée. For that Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, I am well contended. Then looke you faile not, saide the Princesse, hencefoorth to giue your attendaunce. These spéeches were thus vsed as it were for pastime, that she might thereby deceiue the iudgements of other: but her whole intent was, to knowe of Vrbanillo, if his Maister were affected to anye other Ladie, by whose meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you haue heard, a little before that loue had brought her vnder such obeysaunce, as did not the regarde of honour with-holde her, her selfe would first breake the Isle of her vexations, rather then staye too long and not be solicited. Manie other deuises had the Ladies with Vrbanillo, who knewe so well how to behaue himselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiar amongst them: as hee would enter their Chambers when himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendaunce on the Princesse Polinarda, from time to time to moue his Maisters messages. But at length shée preuented him in this sort, for béeing alone at a window in the presence Chamber, shee called the Dwarfe, and making her entraunce by other occasions, she asked him whose sonne Palmerin was. God knowes Madame, quoth hee, for I am not, nor himselfe neither

neither: but of this I can assure you, that neuer was Knightlie Chiualrie better imployed by any then by him, for since the time of my knowledge, hée hath done such noble acts, as it is not remembred that euer Knight in this age did the like. And then from point to point he discoursed, all that Palmerin had done since he came to him: and can you thinke then Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe) that hée is not discended of noble linage? Trust mée Ladie, I haue my self heard by manie learned Magicians and other, that their diuinations were no lesse then I say. When Polinarda heard the Dwarfe thus speake on his Maisters behalfe, if before his loue had kindled her liking, no meruaile if heart and spirit were nowe enflamed: so that now shée could not longer conceale what shée had hitherto couered, and therefore sayde to the Dwarfe, I beséeche thée Vrbanillo, by the faith and dutie thou beares to thy Maister, tell me one thing that I desire to knowe of him, which shall be nothing but to his honour and aduantage. You haue so conjured mée, sayde Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, as death shall not make me hide what you please to commaund, if it lye in me to resolue you. Knowe then Vrbanillo, said the Princesse, that I loue thy Maister as well as my Brother Trineus, and am desirous to knowe of thée, what Ladie it is hee estéemes aboue all other, because when I knowe her, I may loue her the better for his sake: withall, that I may commend the Ladies happines, whose fortune is to be loued of so braue a Gallant. Well perceiued the Dwarfe, that nowe or neuer was the time to bestirre himselfe, according to the promise he made his Maister: wherefore hée answered the Princesse in this manner. Beléeue me Madame, were it to any other, I would not reueale such secrets of my Lorde as you desire to knowe: but to you that are his Lady and Mistresse, I am content to bewray the whole. Suffiseth then madame, that he loueth in such sorte, as if the heauens finde him not remedie the sooner, impossible is it that his life should long endure: for I see him so far beside himselfe, and tormented

with

with ſo manie paſſions, as euerie houre his death is expected. What will ye Ladie that I ſaye? ſhée complaines, ſhé ſighes, and daye by daye is in ſuch diſpaire for his Ladyes loue: as happie might I haue counted him, had ſhé neuer ſéene her, or that his daies were as ſhort as his deſires. If then Polinarda were in doubt (not iudging her ſelfe to bee ſhée) it may eaſily bée imagined, and preſently was ſhée brought into ſuch perplexitie, as the vermillion colour in her cheékes began to change, ſuch ſuddain feares poſſeſſed her, and ſo manie ſundry opinions thwarted her conceite, as faine ſhée would haue ſpoken, but could not of long time, whereby the Dwarfe diſcerned the cauſe of her alteration, yet hée diſſembled what he ſawe, and thus continued on his diſcourſe. Now conſidering (ſayde Madame) the high deſerts of my Lorde, may ſhée be eſtéemed happie (as you ſay) that ſhall cauſe the loſſe of the beſt Knight liuing this daye? Ah Miſtreſſe, if he die (as God forbid) farwell the flower of all nobleneſſe, and the moſt aſſured Frende to diſtreſſed Ladies. Wherefore I beſéeche you pardon mée, if I ſhall name her vnto you, and let mée intreate you to deale with her ſo farre, that the courteſie wherein ſhée is indebted to ſo good a Knight as my Maiſter is, may be ſhewed effectually, as that ſhe would loue and fauour him, as he doth and hath verie well deſerued. Truſt me Vrbanillo, anſwered the Princeſſe, when I knowe the Ladie, I will, and beſide, if ſhe do not regarde his paſſions as ſhe ought, I will intreate her at my requeſt to be more pittifull. Theſe wordes procured a ſuddaine iealouſie in her, that ſhée ſhoulde promiſe to another what ſhée deſired her ſelfe: yet earneſt to be reſolued, ſhe vowed to fulfill her promiſe, and therefore deſired him to tell her name. So you will giue mee your worde Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, not to take in ill parte what I ſhall ſay, I will ſatiſfie your requeſt preſently. Beléeue me, ſaide the Princeſſe, I will not, rather perſwade thy ſelfe, that héere in thou doſt me great pleaſure. Ah faire Princeſſe, quoth the Dwarfe, it is for you and no other that

my

my Lorde is thus tormented, it is for you that hée liues and dies a hundred times a daye: sweete Ladie haue pittie on him, and take not the losse of so good a Knight, who loues you dearer then his owne life. At which aunswer shée was surprised with incredible pleasure, yet feigning the contrarie, shée said: Is it I? and how long I praye you? By my faith Madame, quoth he, that can I not well tell you, but I haue heard him say of long time, more then foure yéeres before he was Knighted, he vowed himselfe yours: since which time, all his honourable actions hath hée onely dedicated to your praise. So that to find you, he left the King of Macedon, and his Sonne Florendos, of whome hée was estéemed as no man the like, yet that honour hée forsoke to do you service: and for your loue he yéelded himselfe as vassale to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe your Knight if you deigne to accept him. When Polinarda had well heard the Dwarfe (albeit her hearte floted in ioyes) yet could she so well commaunde her thoughts, as shée séemed to make small account of his words: notwithstanding, shée returned him this aunswer. I promise thée Vrbanillo, not to conceiue ill of ought thou shouldest tell me, nor do I: yet would I haue thée to regard my calling, being daughter to so great a Prince as is the Emperour, But if it bee so, that Palmerin thy Lorde beares mée such speciall affection, I must let him knowe by thée, that it would haue beene farre more séemelie, himselfe to haue told me, then to make thée Ambassadour in such secrete affaires: neuertheless, I mislike not his honourable loue and good will, whereof I shall thinke better, when I knowe the effecte is conformable to thy protestations. Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) so you would please to vouchsafe him time and place, hée will acquaint you with strange matter concerning both your destinies: which courtesie can no way impeache your honour. Why tell him, said the Princesse, hée shall haue mée daylie héere in the Chamber of presence, where hée may say his pleasure with safetie: in meane space, I accept him as

my

my knight, charging him, that he do not depart the Courte without my licence, if hee deſire to do mee pleaſure. The Dwarfe well pleaſed with ſo good an anſwere, on his knee kiſſing the Princeſſe hande, toke leaue of her to returne towardes Palmerin: who meeting him by the way, in place conuenient, ſaide. Howe now Vrbanillo? what newes haſt thou brought me? life or death? So good newes Maiſter anſwered the Dwarfe, as you haue good occaſion to repute your ſelfe the moſt fortunate Knight that euer bare Armes. Then Palmerin embracing him, ſaid. Ah tell me what they are, haſt thou ſpoken with diuine Polinarda? takes ſhee any pittie on my conſuming cares? That doth ſhée my Lorde, quoth the Dwarfe, and commaundes you by me, (if you be ſo bowed hers as I haue perſwaded) ỹ henceforth you departe not the Emperours Courte without her leaue. Then recited he the whole talke betweéne them, and laſtlie the pleaſure ſhe conceiued in ſo good tidings, ſo that ſhe accepted him onelie for her Knight. While the Dwarfe continued this diſcourſe, Palmerin was raniſhed with ſuch inwarde ioy, as with a great ſigh, he ſaid. Oh heauens, how do you fauour me? now ſée I well, that my ſeuerall apparitions on the Mounts of Oliues and Artifæria, are predeſtinations ordeyned to me by your gratious preſcience: I beſeeche you therefore humblye, that what you haue promiſed, may ſoone come to effect, for the regard of incomparable Polinarda. Then demaunded hée, by what meanes hée might attaine to ſpeake with the Princeſſe? She ſaith, quoth hée, that you ſhall daylie haue her in the preſence, or in the Empreſſe Chamber, and there may you ſafelie impart your whole minde vnto her. But I haue other newes to tel you, for I vnderſtand certainlye, that the Emperour intendes a matter greatlie for your aduauntage: he minds to morrow to viſite one of his Caſtles néere at hande, and there, to paſſe the time, in honour of the Ladies will haue a Tourney. There (better then any where elſe) may you and Polinarda conferre togither: therefore courage your ſelfe, and

go

go kéepe companie with my Lorde the Emperour, it maye bee himselfe will acquaint you with this enterprise. Now credite mée Vrbanillo, saide Palmerin, thou hast done so much for mee, as I shall neuer recompence thée while I liue: but I pray thée tell mée, did shee not at the first take my message strangely? That did she (quoth the Dwarfe) when I perswaded her that you loued a Ladye in such sorte, as hardly coulde you liue without her fauourable regarde: then she thinking it was some other and not her selfe, changed colour meruailous passionatlie, but let that suffise you, that she is as déepe in loue as you are or can be. So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, saide. My noble Frende, I shall make knowne to you what hath béene concluded in your absence, the Ladies of our Courte haue béene so long lockt in, for feare of the enchaunted Knight whome you haue slaine, as they haue desired to procure a little: for which cause, and to pleasure them, I am thus determined. Two leagues hence haue I a goodlye Castle, enuironed with woods and pleasant Peddowes, there maye wée hunte the wilde Harte and Boare with other pastimes: but now haue I caused Scaffolds and other prouision to be made there for a Tourney, and fortie Knightes will I appoint in this action, tenne against tenne, and the first conquerers shall kéepe the fielde against tenne other, that shall reuenge the tenne vanquished, so hauing all iousted, they shall fight at Barriers with rebated swordes, and the brauest Champion shall haue a rich Jewell, which the Empresse hath prouided for the purpose. Nowe woulde I haue you one of the ten challengers, and my Nephew Garneno on the Defendants side, for him do I estéeme one of the best Knightes in my Courte: will you not do thus much at my requeste? God forbid, saide Palmerin, that I shoulde refuse any thing you please to commaunde. These newes were immediatlye published through the Courte, which made euerie Knight speedilie to prepare himselfe, in hope to be of the number of the fortie, that should performe

the

the Tourney: and thus they priuily imparted to their Ladies, how they would breake both Swoꝛd and Launce foꝛ their loue. Among whom Ptolome was not the laſt, foꝛ he ſo affected the young Princeſſe Brionella, as he had made her ſole Miſtreſſe of his heart, yet could he not find the meanes to acquaint her therewith: but the next day, as ſhe rode among the Ladies, they had good leyſure to conferre together, and beforе they arriued at the Caſtle, they diſcouered thoꝛowlie to eache other theyꝛ affections, promiſing mutuallie ſuch a iuſt conſent in loue, as the one ſhould bragge of the others happines. While they continued theyꝛ amoꝛous diſcourſes, Palmerin, who had nowlie preſented himſelfe to Polinarda, was greatly diſcontented, becauſe ſo ſoone as he came to her, the Empreſſe called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from hoꝛſeback: notwithſtanding beforе night, he gayned recompence foꝛ that diſaduantage: foꝛ after Supper, the Emperoꝛ and the Ladies went a walking by a goodlie Riuers ſide, there to diſpoꝛte themſelues in the coole of the euening. now was it the merrie Maye moneth, when the fieldes were richlie decked with Natures Tapiſtrie, and Cupid gaue opoꝛtunitie to his Subiects, to contemplate theyꝛ ſweete and affable deſires, and well came it to paſſe foꝛ Palmerin, while Trineus and Ptolome were conuerſing with the Empreſſe, that hee taking his Miſtreſſe by the arme, walked with her amongſt the fayre flowers, and ſeeing the time and place ſerue him ſo well, trembling (as ſurpꝛiſed with a behement paſſion) thus began. Madame, your gracious nature will not count it ſtraunge, but rather take it in good part, that I a Knight errant, and as yet vnknowne among courtlie aſſemblies, ſhould preſume to make knowne a ſecrete to you, which my ſelfe dare not imagine without reuerence, & death can cauſe me declare to none: noꝛ may I proceede without ſome aſſurance of my vncertaine hope, by her diuine pittie that giues me life. And although the woꝛdes of my Dwarfe haue acquainted me with your pꝛincely fauour, ſufficiẽt, to expel all

feare,

feare and ſuſpition of repꝛoſe: yet ſuch is the height whereto I aſpire, as the greateſt Monarche in the woꝛlde can ſcantly deſerue, then well may I eſtéeme my ſelfe vnwoꝛthie. But doubting whither your woꝛdes were ſuch, oꝛ that my Dwarfe (as ſuch as he often may doe) hath repoꝛted moꝛe then he had in charge: I am deſirous, (truſting on your benignitie and ſpeciall fauour aboue all other) to vnderſtand, if your pleaſure bee ſo highlye to honour mee, as henceforth to accept me foꝛ your Knight and Seruaunt. And if ſuch vndeſerued grace may fall to my lot: I ſhall not onely acknowledge, that Foꝛtune hath directed my courſe to the onely place of honour, but ſhall haue good occaſion beſide, to make knowne by my knighthoode, that I am the fauoured of the moſt fayꝛe Pꝛinceſſe. Herein good Madame, you ſhall not diſſent from reaſon, if I hauing loſt my libertie by béeing onelie yours, want the modeſtie that ſhoulde ſhérde mée in your high regarde: theꝛefoꝛe may you ſweete Ladie in mine excuſe, accuſe loue and your celeſtiall beauty, both ſtronger to commande then I to gainſay. My Dwarfe hath let you knowe (as he tolde me) part of the paine I endure foꝛ your ſake, which you cannot but thinke well off, in that my deſtenie ſo commaunded méé, long time befoꝛe I ſawe oꝛ knewe you, not alone in viſions, but by manifeſt ſollicitings, ſo that in ſearch of you, I haue ſuffered ſuch trauaile, as meruaile it is that nature coulde make me able to ſuſtaine. Notwithſtanding, I account all right happily beſtowed, if I may gaine fauour in your gracious eyes, without which it is vnpoſſible foꝛ me to liue: foꝛ there is no part poſſeſſing life oꝛ ſpirite in me, that is not vowed to your onelie ſeruice. Theſe woꝛds were dipt in teares, and deliuered with manie a bitter ſigh, which moued Polinarda to ſuch compaſſion, as taking him by the right hand, ſhe began to playe with his fingers, her trembling teſtifying her ſecrete affections: and bꝛeaking off Palmerins diſcourſe, as he thought to haue continued longer, thus aunſwered. Sir Knight, it ſéemes by your countenaunce that you diſpaire

of

of ſomething, or elſe haue more fortitude then I can conceiue. Eſteeme you mee of ſimple iudgmente, that knowing your valour and knightlie perfections, I ſhould not account my ſelfe happie to haue ſo braue a Champion? Let it ſuffice you, that what Vrbanillo tolde you, is true, and in regarde of the paine you ſuffer for my loue, and fancying mée ſo firmelie as you doe: beléeue mée good Knight, you feele no greéfe, but it is as familiar with me, ſo that what thought you haue of mée, the like haue I of you, as time and the diſpotres loue I beare you ſhall witneſſe: in meane time promiſe me, not to depart my Fathers Courte without my conſent. And becauſe I ſée the Ladies approching, referre we the reſt till ſome other time, when we ſhall haue more leyſure to conferre togither, and tell mee nowe if you bée determined to tourk to morrowe? That will I Madame, quoth hee, if it pleaſe you to commaunde me. In ſoth ſaid ſhe, I wil not hinder you, becauſe I knowe the honour of the Tourney will bée yours: for my ſake therefore ſhall you weare this Bracelet, as a ſigne of my fauour and pledge of my loue. So taking off her Bracelet, ſhe gaue it to Palmerin, who receiued it with no little content: and ſo concluding their talke, becauſe manie Knights and Ladies came about them, they walked where the Emperour and the Empreſſe were deuiſing with Ptolome and Trineus. Now becauſe darke night drew on, and the euening dew was dangerous, they returned to the Caſtle, entending the next daye after dinner to begin the Tournament.

Chap.

Chap. XXIX.

¶How Palmerin gained the honour of the Tourney, and of that which happened afterward.

After the order of the Tourney was set downe by the Emperour, as you haue heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre to go to it, not doubting to performe such chiualrie, as his Ladies fauour should be worthily honoured: wherefore hauing prepared all his necessaries ready, immediatly after Dinner, accompanied with nine other Knights brauely armed, whereof Ptolome was one, he entred the lists royall. And espying his mistresse Polinarda in the window with the Empresse, after he had done her humble reuerence, he began to manage his horse with such braue carriere, as euerie one delighted to behold him, but specially the Princesse, whose heart loue had thoroughly conquered, so that shee gloried to be beloued of a knight so worthy and commendable, as that her eye was neuer from the obiect of her sweete desires. And marking his sheeld, she beheld in a field of sable, a siluer hand fast closed, the impost whereof caused her to marualle, in respect what hadde passed betweene them before, and gladly would she haue knowen the meaning, but the place would afford no such conuenience: wherefore perswading her selfe for the time, she was content in seeing her Bracelet, which her Knight wore vppon his right arme. And after many courses and lustie poynts doone by Palmerin and other Knights before their Ladyes,

among whom Prolome ſhewed ſo correſpondent, as the preſence of his Lady Brionella highly prouoked him. Then entred the Prince Ganareno, Nephew to the Emperour, a knight of no ſmall reckoning amongſt the Allemaignes, and with him nine other, in moſt ſumptuous armour: and their braueries likewiſe enued to their Ladyes (yet nothing comparable to Palmerin and his companions) they went to their tent, and while the Trumpets and Clarions ſummoned the fielde, euery knight prepared himſelfe in readines. Palmerin, not ſo much to winne common applauſe, as her loue who had the ſoueraigne power ouer him, ſeeing Ganareno ordering himſelf to run firſt, tooke a ſtrong launce, and encountred him with ſuch puiſſance, as horſe and man were both ouerthrowne and very ſore bruſed: notwithſtanding, hee was ſoone recouered by his companions, and in a Chaire carried forth of the field. One of his knights would needes reuenge his miſfortune, and was himſelfe in like ſort ſerued: in briefe, the other eight had all one payment, not one of them being able to moue Palmerin from his ſaddle. Palmerin ioyfull of his good ſucceſſe, was departing away with his company, when one of them thus ſpake vnto him. Sir Palmerin, you haue ſaued our labour, and got the honor that was deſired. The time will come (quoth Palmerin) when you may doo as much for me: but for this time (if you pleaſe) you may excuſe me. All that were preſent, as well Lords as Ladies, marueiled at the valour of Palmerin, and among the reſt the Emperour, who ſaide aloude, that he neuer knewe a more valiant Gentleman. Polinarda being ſo neere as ſhe heard her Fathers words, and had her ſelfe beheld his high good fortune, was ſpeacly ſollicited with ſuch affectionate pleaſure, as forgetting her ſelf, and where ſhe was, ſhe thus ſpake to Brionella indifferent loude. What ſay you faire friende? doth not Palmerin worthily deſerue to be loued? By my faith Madame, anſwered ſhee, I neuer ſawe knight giue ſuch rough encounters with the Launce, as hee did to Ganareno and the reſt,

of

of his companions. Polinarda would haue proceeded further, but there entred tenne other knights, the formost hauing Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that hee ranne not at the first: and then entred tenne knights more, of whome the formost was Cormedes an Allemaigne Knight. They ranging themselues in order, Ptolome and Cormedes brauely encountred, but neither were vnhorsed: which greeued Ptolome to do no better in presence of his Ladye: wherefore taking another Launce, at the second course Cormedes was cast quite out of his saddle, and three more of his fellowes after him for companie. Which when the Duke of Lorraynes Brother perceiued, a Knight well accounted of in the Countrey, desirous to recouer the honour his foregoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It seemes that these Grecian Knights are come to rob vs of the honor that is ours by inheritance, in vnhappie houre were the Allemaignes borne if they suffer it: and so couching his Launce, met Ptolome with so full a carriere, as losing saddle and stirrops he fell to the ground, and foure more of his Knights after him had like entertainement, but a hardy Knight of the Emperors named Menadus, met the Dukes brother so rudely, as downe hee fell to the grounde with his saddle betweene his legges. There were many braue encounters with the Launce, to vanquish one another, and all for the loue of their Ladyes, who delighted to see theyr knights so brauely behaue themselues. The Iouste finished, eache one alighted, and with their blunt Swordes fell to the Barriers, and so cruelly, they laid on each other, as they would not suffer one another to take breath: especially Ptolome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraynes Brother, to winne the honor he lost in the Iousting. And new a fresh entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whome Loue and Fortune were fauourable, raunged among the thickest, and with his sworde made way among them valiantly: at length he came to the Duke of Lorraynes Brother, and so cannonzed him about the pate with his blunt

Fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly aſtonied, chaſing him to ſpake no more in diſgrace of Grecian knights. All the ſport ended, the knights withdrew themſelues into their Chambers to be vnarmed, and each knight wrapping himſelfe in his Mantle, Palmerin was in his Ladies liuery, for ſhe had ſent him a very rich one, and ſo comming into the Chamber of preſence, the Emperour welcomes him in this manner. Welcome my Lorde, I account the Prince happie that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious ſoueraigne, anſwered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient ſeruant during life, readie to accompliſh what ſhall pleaſe you to commaund me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and preſently came the Empreſſe, one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloke, and couered with pearles and ſtones of great value, which ſhe preſented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour hee had woonne in the Tourney, and ſayde to Polinarda. Faire Daughter, I am ſure you will beſtow ſome gift on ſweet Palmerin, in that hee hath ſo worthily deſerued. Theſe words rayſed a ſweete bluſhing in the Princeſſe countenance, not a little reioycing that he whome ſhe loued, had carried away the prize from all the other knights: ſo with a prettie modeſt ſmile, ſhe tooke a chaine of Gold from about her necke, ſaying. Sir here my Palmerin what I giue you, this gift is to tie and chaine you in ſuch ſort, as you may neuer depart from the Emperours ſeruice. Palmerin with exceeding contentment receiued the chaine, and on his knee humbly thanked the Empreſſe and the Princeſſe, to whome he ſpake as followeth. Madame, I am well contented to abide in ſuch a priſon, and neuer will I deſire any other libertie, but ſtill will bee his vaſſaile that hath power to commaunde me. This anſwere pleaſed the Emperour exceedingly, in that hee deſired to haue Palmerin ſtil abide in his Court. Wherefore hee ſayde to Polinarda, you haue woone well Daughter thus to binde Palmerin, for now he cannot eſcape away when hee liſteth. The Ladies being departed, the Emperor

and

and all the knights of the Tourney sate downe to meate, where much talke was spent as concerning the successe on al sides, but Palmerin and Polinarda had inough to do to viewe each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betweene them the message of their passions, yet so discretly shadowed as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the knights and Ladyes went to dauncing, and afterwards to their chambers, because the Emperour had commanded the next day another Tournament: a breefe report whereof may very well serue, in that you can imagine there wanted no braue chiualrie. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vain to tell, because the former day makes knowne his worthines, and Ptolome behaued himselfe in so good sort, that Brionella was as proude of him as the Princesse of her knight, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his desert and hir loue. Thus while the Iousts endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiaritie with Palmerin, because he had deliuered his sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormeque. All pastimes thus finished, the emperor returned to Gaunt, where Palmerin intreated his Mistris to appoint him time and place, where they might more priuatly discourse on their loue, the which she promised, and awaited opportunitie.

Chap. XXX.

How Polinarda discoursed her secrets to Brionella, and of the talke she had with Palmerin

POlinarda not forgetting the promise shee made her friend, to meete him in some place where they might argue on their loue, determined to discouer her affections to Bryonel'a, the beloued of *Ptolome*: well perceiuing, that without her helpe, shee could not attaine the end of her

fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly astonied, charging him to spake no more in disgrace of Grecian knights. All the sport ended, the knights withdrew themselues into their Chambers to be vnarmed, and each Knight wrapping himselfe in his Mantle, Palmerin was in his Ladies liuery, for she had sent him a very rich one, and so comming into the Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this manner. Beléeue me my Lorde, I account the Prince happie that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious soueraigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient seruant during life, readye to accomplish what shall please you to commaund me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and presently came the Empresse, one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloke, and couered with pearles and stones of great value, which shée presented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour hee had woonne in the Tourney, and sayde to Polinarda. Faire Daughter, I am sure you will bestow some gift on Sir Palmerin, in that hée hath so worthily deserued. These wordes raysed a sweete blushing in the Princesse countenance, not a little reioycing that he whome shée loued, had carried away the prize from all the other knights: so with a prettie modest smile, shée tooke a chaine of Gold from about her necke, saying. Shée héere Sir Palmerin what I giue you, this gift is to tie and chaine you in such sort, as you may neuer depart from the Emperours seruice. Palmerin with exceeding contentment receiued the chaine, and on his knée humbly thanked the Empresse and the Princesse, to whome he spake as followeth. Madame, I am well contented to abide in such a prison, and neuer will I desire any other libertie, but still will bee his vassaile that hath power to commaunde mée. This answere pleased the Emperour exceedingly, in that hée desired to haue Palmerin still abide in his Court. Wherfore hée sayde to Polinarda, you haue doone well Daughter thus to binde Palmerin, for nowe hée cannot escape away when hee list. So the Tables being couered, the Emperor

and

and all the knights of the Tourney ſate downe to meate, where much talke was ſpent as concerning the ſucceſſe on al ſides, but Palmerin and *Polinarda* had inough to do to vievv each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betvvéne them the meſſage of their paſſions, yet ſo diſcreetly ſhadovved as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the knights and Ladyes vvent to dauncing, and aftervvarde to their chambers, becauſe the Emperour had commanded the next day another Tournament: a vvreſe repoꝛt vvhereof may very vvell ſerue, in that you can imagine there vvanted no braue chiualrie. What Palmerin did that day, it vvere in vain to tell, becauſe the foꝛmer day makes knovvne his voꝛthines, and Ptolome behaued himſelfe in ſo good ſoꝛt, that Brionella vvas as pꝛoude of him as the Pꝛinceſſe of her knight, and therefoꝛe pꝛeſented him vvith a very rich Diamond, as a token of his deſert and hir loue. Thus vvhile the Ioults endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiaritie vvith Palmerin, becauſe he had deliuered his Siſter Cardonya, from the falſe treaſon of the Count of Ormeque. All paſtimes thus finiſhed, the empeꝛoꝛ returned to Gaunt, vvhere Palmerin intreated his Siſtris to appoint him time and place, vvhere they might moꝛe pꝛiuatly diſcourſe on their loue, the vvhich ſhe pꝛomiſed, and avvaited opoꝛtunitie.

Chap. XXX.

How Polinarda diſcourſed her ſecrets to Brionella, and of the talke ſhe had with Palmerin

POlinarda not foꝛgetting the pꝛomiſe ſhee made her friend, to meete him in ſome place vvhere they might argue on their loue, determined to diſcouer her affections to Bryonel'a, the beloued of *Ptolome*: vvell perceiuing, that vvithout her helpe, ſhee could not attaine the end of her

her deſires, wherefore without any longer ſtay, ſhe thus began with her. My choſen friend, I would make knowne one thing vnto thée, which death can compell me diſcouer to no other, wherefore thou muſt haue care to kéepe ſecret my ſpéeches, in reſpect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any paine thou takeſt for me. Faire Princeſſe, ſaid Brionella, in that you do me ſuch honour, as to impart your thoughts to me, rather will I die then fayle one iot of your commaundement, and therefore aſſure your ſelfe, that what you declare ſhall neuer be diſcouered. Then Polinarda reuealed to her the loue ſhe bare Palmerin, what paſſions had tormented her, and in what extremitie her deſires hadde driuen her: and therefore ſwéete friend (quoth ſhe with a déepe ſigh) find thou the meane that I may priuatly talke with him. Brionella admiring the earneſt loue of the Princeſſe, knewe not readily what to anſwere, but ſéeing that by this meanes ſhée might more eaſily conferre with *Ptolome*, whome ſhée likewiſe intirely loued, thus ſpake. It is no wonder Madame, you béeing ſo incomparable, as I know no Prince liuing of whom you are not worthie, if you haue reſolued your loue on noble Palmerin, in that there is no knight in the world better deſerues you, his rare chiualrie being ſuch, as it cannot other wiſe bée, but that he is diſcended of royall linage, béeing accompliſhed with ſo many ſpeciall perfections. Therefore Madam, ſo like you, I haue deuiſed well for your purpoſe, as thus. You knowe my chamber windowe ſtands ſo commodious, as you may with ſafety confer with him at pleaſure, which you may let him vnderſtand by his Dwarfe, and appoynt him time as you ſhall thinke conuenient. This counſell did not a little content the princeſſe, becauſe ſhe longed to chat with her louer, and therefore concluded at his departure to appoint Palmerin his time. Nowe was the Chamber of Brionella ioyning to the Cittie wall, and had a goodly proſpect into the fields, and Palmerins lodging was néere vnto it, facing the wall as the other did, ſo that one might

eaſily

easily passe betweene the lodgings, nothing being betwixt them but a little garden, brauely decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trées. The time appoynted, Polinarda called the Dwarfe to her, saying. Vrbanillo, thou shalt go to thy maister from mee, and after thou hast saluted him with my manifolde well wishings, will him this night to come secretly to my Lady Brionellas chamber, where at the windowe wée may safely talke together: and bid him not misdoubt my Lady Brionella, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe maist conduct him to the place, come, and I will presently shewe it thée. So went the Dwarfe with Polinarda. to Brionellas chamber, where hauing séene the windowe, and glad to carrie such tydings to his maister, béeing well assured howe they would content him: he departed, and tarried not long on his message, because Palmerin thought each houre a yéere to heare from his mistresse: wherefore hée beholding the Dwarfe comming, tooke him in his armes, and demaunded what newes he had brought him? The Dwarfe with a chéerefull countenance thus answered. My Lord, Fortune spéede you as luckie, as the newes that I bring you doo well deserue. By this beginning, Palmerin perceiued that he brought such tydings as he long looked for, which was now hee might speake with the Princesse: wherefore embracing him againe, he commanded him to make report of that his swéete mistresse had giuen him charge. Then the Dwarfe deliuered how the Princesse had great desire to sée him, and where shée did intend to speake with him. Which when Palmerin heard, filled with vnspeakable ioyes, he recorded the wordes to himselfe with many iterations, and the more often hée spake the words, the more his delights increased. But tell mée (quoth he to the Dwarfe) didst thou marke the place well where I must talke with my goddesse? Thereof doubt you not my Lorde, sayde the Dwarfe, for I shall not faile to bring you sure thither, if it be your pleasure I shal go with you, because the Princesse

her ſelfe, in companie of Lady Brionella ſhewed it me. How am I beholding to her, ſaide Palmerin, for this high favour, which elſe were my death if I ſhould be denyed? Upon this he called *Ptolome*, to whom he imparted euery circumſtance, which *Ptolome* reputed for his great auaile: this offering the meane for him to viſit Brionella, and therefore they concluded to go together the night enſuing, to the place appointed for this louing encounter. The houre of reſt being come, and euery one in their Chambers as beſéemed, Palmerin, *Ptolome* and the Dwarfe, remayned together, and ſéeing the time ready to countenance their enterpriſe, tooke each of them a rich Mantle, and with their Swords vnder their armes, went out at a windowe vppon the walles: and albeit the paſſage was ſomewhat dangerous, yet loue had ſo encouraged them, as without regard of danger or fortune, they came to the windowe which the Dwarfe had ſhewed them, not ſéene by any. *Polinarda* who was moſt attentiue, hearing the trampling of their féete, ſaide to Brionella. Is not this Palmerin? So opening the Caſements, ſhée ſaw Palmerin and *Ptolome* attending like diligent Seruants. If then both parties were pleaſed, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the worlde more contenting them then the ſight of each other. And truely *Palmerin* and the Princeſſe had great reaſon, for beſide that their fatall deſtenie did ſo prouoke them, their equall natures were ſo commendable and correſpondent, as though they had neuer ſéene, yet were they borne to loue together. Howe was Polinarda very brauely accouſtred in a glorious night mantle, and ſuch ſoft white ſilkes, as ſhe ſhewed brighter then the morning Starre, her fierie pointed lookes ſo wounding Palmerin, as rapt vppe as it were into a ſecond heauen, he remained ſilent a long time, not able to ſpeake a word. The Princeſſe was likewiſe in the ſelfe ſame conceit, and ſo ouercome with regarde of her Paramour, as ſhe continued mute, and was loth to giue the onſet. *Palmerin* aſhamed to accompanie his Lady with

such silence, beganne thus mildlie to courte his Mistresse. I did neuer thinke, sayde Madame, that Fortune would honour mee with such extraordinarie fauour, directing my course to your noble Fathers Courte, to be thus entertayned into your gracious seruice, hauing no deserts in mee to induce you to your choyse: but it may be in respect of some good report by such, to whome I account my selfe highlie beholding, hauing thus founde the place where I was predoordained to loue, my Starre hath appointed it, and withall, to make me the happiest man liuing. And it may be Madame, that such as enuie not my happinesse, haue acquainted you with some of my exteriour actions, which God [not I] hath brought to passe: but they ignorannt of the intire and feruent loue I beare you, could make no iust report thereof to you, being a secret so speciall, and not to be comprehended, beside, the depth and wonderfull nature thereof not to bee measured, therefore to be buried in your heauenlie opinion, which how ample so euer you please to graunt me, the more am I bounde both in ductie and affection, which in despight of enuye and his confederates, shall remaine immoueable, and pleade the continuall loyaltie of your Knight and Seruaunt. And if I should repor te howe manie times your diuine personne hath bene presented mée in slepe, I shoulde there withall discourse infinite passions, which I endured seeing my selfe frustrate of that I now behold. How many Countries and Citties? what perrils and daungers haue I past to finde you, prouoked on still with neuer chaunging loue? If this then were sufficient to make me run through a worlde of daungers, I leaue it to your iudgment (sweete Madame) what it may bee nowe, seeing with myne eyes what I dreamed on before, and may with safetie saye, incomparable beautie. Heere hence proceedeth, that my extreame affections haue ouercome all other partes in me, not able to imagine howe manie reuerende opinions I vse of you: which must intreate you on my behalfe, that your accustomed clemencie will pardon my prejudicate conceite, be-

cause

cauſe béeing not mine owne but yours onelie, I may eaſily offend. Theſe ſpæches moiſtened with the teares of his eyes and luke-warme bloud of his heart, deliuered manifeſt euidence how trulie hée loued the Princeſſe, who bearing him companie in all arguments of loue, thus anſwered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but the loue you beare mée is exceéding great, noting your earneſt affections, and the great trauaile you haue ſuſtained in ſearche of mée, and no other certaintie do I requeſt to be perſwaded by, béeing as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to mée: for proofe whereof, this attempt may ſuffiſe, that againſt my duetie I ſhould be ſéene thus ſecretlie, in a place ſo ſuſpicious, and time ſo vnneceſſarie. But if I haue offended hérein, accuſe thoſe ſæmelie perfections which I haue regarded in you, and the confidence I repoſe in your good conceit, coupled with the honourable eſtimation that is generally reputed in your vertues. Pardon me (ſwéete Ladie) ſayd Palmerin, if by my longing deſire to ſpeake with you, I haue in anye thing diſpleaſed, for earneſt good will to do you ſeruice, conſtrayned me to be thus importunate. The matter is far from anie deſert of offence, quoth the Princeſſe, for hither are you come by my commaundement, to the ende that wé might ſée one another, and talke of ſuch things as néereſt concerne vs: and therefore reſolue your ſelfe good Knight, that I eſtéeme you aboue all other, and promiſe you by the faith of a Princeſſe and loyall Frænde, to die rather then anie other ſhall be Lorde of me. Which verie words, ſo raviſhed his ſences, as verie hardlie he could ſuſtaine himſelf: whereuppon Polinarda put her hande out at the windowe, which he in often kiſſing well marking, beheld the Character thereon as you haue heard before. Ah Madame, quoth hee, this is the token that makes me the happieſt man liuing. As how I pray you? ſaide ſhe, what know you héereof? Then Palmerin diſcourſed all his dreames and viſions, and briefely ranne thorow repetition of his whole life, how the Wiſe Adrian had ſent him the Shæld of Sable, where-

in

in was figured a hand fast closed togither, signifying the same hand I hold at this present, because this hath the same marke the other hap in figure. In truth said the Princesse, I was desirous to knowe the meaning of that Sheild, wherin I salwe a Siluer hand closed, which you bare the first day of the Tournament, beeing now not a little glad that you haue so satisfied me. Afterwarde Palmerin made knowne to her, the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likelihoode. O God (quoth shée) happie be the time of this méeting, blame me not my Lorde to bee thus surprised with your loue, seeing our fatall destenies haue so appointed: this will cause mée to liue in more hope of good successe, then before I did, and that our amitie will sorte to such ende, as our two hearts shall bee combined in one, yet let mée sée I beseeche you the marke on your face, how néere it resembles this on my hand. Shee fetching a Taper which burned in the Chamber, lifted vp his comely locks of hayre, and sawe them both shaped in one forme, wherefore suddainly setting awaye the light shee embraced Palmerins heade in her armes, and sealed manie sweete kisses on his amiable Character. The like loving salutation passed betweene Ptolome and Brionella, at another Casement of the Windowe, with solemne vowes and protestations neuer to fayle in theyr loue, and this to be the place for conuersing on theyr desires, till fortune affoorded them better opportunitie: and longer would they haue there continued, but that the Dwarfe came to his Maister in this manner. My Lorde, I thinke you can neuer finde time to make an ende, will you haue the day light preuent you, and so discredite you all? in soth it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was lothe to departe from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the dwarfes words and continued on in amorous deuises: but the Princesse a little more fearefull then hee, séeing the Dwarfe sayd true, and lothe to bée seene suspitiously, said My Lord, it is time to breake off, but I pray you fayle not of your promise, let vs

visite

viſite one another, now you knowe the way and place. So Palmerin and Ptolome toke leaue of their Ladies, and paſſed to theyr Chambers without ſuſpition: the ſucceſſe of theyr loue you ſhall vnderſtand hereafter, as time and place ſhall fitte for the purpoſe: but now to ſatiſfie you with choyſe of delights, we will returne a while to another diſcourſe.

Chap. XXXI.

How the king of France kept a royal and magnificent Court: and how his Son Lewes became enamored of the Ducheſſe of Burgundie.

DUring the time that the Emperour of Allemaigne liued in this happineſſe accõpanied (as you haue heard) with manie hardie knights: there raigned in Fraunce a mightie Prince named Agariel, valiant, wiſe and vertuous, hauing three Sonnes, whereof the ſecond was the hardieſt Knight at Armes, being named Lewes. This King Agariell, the more to honour his Knightes and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keepe open Court for all commers, as none of his predeceſſors euer did the like before him: and therfore ſent abroad his heralds, Gentlemen of his eſcuirie and others, to ſummon his Lords and Barrons of France, that on a day appointed they would all meete at the Court.

And becauſe none ſhould be ignorannt what he intended, he requeſted that all Gentlemen profeſſing Armes, at the feaſt of Eaſter following, ſhould repaire to *Paris*, being the

the heade and chéefe Cittie of the Realme. The Quéene likewise aduertised all Ladies and Gentlewomen, at whose commaunde euerie one obeyed, so that in fewe dayes the Courte was furnished with Lordes and Ladies: nothing nowe intended but delights and Courtlie pastimes, which made the duke of Burgundie likewise repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good prouidence, and a tryed knight, hauing matched in marriage with the King of Denmarks Sister, a yong beautifull Ladie, and of vertuous education, the Duke hoping to haue issue by her, because by his first Wife hée could not haue anie. The king aduertised of the Dukes comming, commanded his Sonne Lewes with an honourable traine to go entertaine him, which hee did, so that manie solemne reuerences passed betweene the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whome as he welcomed with manie salutations, so did he earnestlie contemplat her excellent beautie, reputing her fairer then the fayrest, and on a suddaine became amorous of her, such a violent breach made loue into his heart at the verie first sight of her. In this great and vnlooked for vexation, hee conducted her to the lodging was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as hée coulde his newe desire: but so vehement was his affection, as without returning againe to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes béeing thus alone by himselfe, alone not a little tryumphing of his newe prey, tormented his thoughts with so manie conceits, as all the night he spent in sighes and dolorous lamentes, his mind still trauailing by what meanes hee might compasse his entent. Sometimes he thought it impossible in respect of the Duke, then againe as easie because of his age, a contrarie to yeksome in his eyes for the sweete flourishing youth of the Duchesse: all which imaginations wrought so diuerslie in him, as his spirit forsaking councell and reason, made him breake forth into these exclaimes. Ah heauens, haue you fourmed beautie with such excellencie, as to cause me endure a torment more then mortall? Ah mine eyes, too lauish were you

viſite one another, now you knowe the way and place. So Palmerin and Ptolome toke leaue of their Ladies, and paſſed to their Chambers without ſuſpition: the ſucceſſe of their loue you ſhall vnderſtand hereafter, as time and place ſhall fitte for the purpoſe: but now to ſatiſfie you with choyſe of delights, we will returne a while to another diſcourſe.

Chap. XXXI.

How the king of France kept a royal and magnificent Court: and how his Son Lewes became enamored of the Ducheſſe of Burgundie.

DUring the time that the Emperour of Allemaigne liued in this happineſſe accõpanied (as you haue heard) with manie hardie knights: there raigned in Fraunce a mightie Prince named Agariel, valiant, wiſe and vertuous, hauing three Sonnes, whereof the ſecond was the hardieſt Knight at Armes, being named Lewes. This King Agariell, the more to honour his Knightes and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keepe open Court for all commers, as none of his predeceſſors euer did the like before him: and therfore ſent abroad his heralds, Gentlemen of his eſcuirie and others, to ſummon his Lords and Barrons of France, that on a day appointed they would all meete at the Court.

And becauſe none ſhould be ignorannt what he intended, he requeſted that all Gentlemen profeſſing Armes, at the feaſt of Eaſter following, ſhould repaire to *Paris*, being the

the heade and cheefest Cittie of the Realme. The Quéene likewise aduertised all Ladies and Gentlewomen, at whose commaunde euerie one obeyed, so that in fewe dayes the Courte was furnished with Lordes and Ladies: nothing nowe intended but delights and Courtlie pastimes, which made the duke of Burgundie likewise repaire thither. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good prouidence, and a tryed knight, hauing matched in marriage with the King of Denmarks Sister, a yong beautifull Ladie, and of vertuous education, the Duke hoping to haue issue by her, because by his first Wife hée could not haue anie. The king aduertised of the Dukes comming, commanded his Sonne Lewes with an honourable traine to go entertaine him, which hee did, so that manie solemne reuerences passed betwéene the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whome as he welcomed with manie salutations, so did he earnestlie contemplat her excellent beautie, repputing her fairer then the fayrest, and on a suddaine became amorous of her, such a violent breach made loue into his heart at the verie first sight of her. In this great and vnlooked for vexation, hée conducted her to the lodging was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as hée coulde his newe desire: but so vehement was his oppression, as without returning againe to the King, he went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes béeing thus alone by himselfe, Loue not a little tryumphing of his new pray, tormented his thoughts with so manie conceits, as all the night he spent in sighes and dolorous laments, his mind still trauailing by what meanes hee might compasse his entent. Sometimes he thought it vnpossible in respect of the Duke, then againe as easie because of his age, a contrarie to yrksome in his eyes for the swéete florishing youth of the Duchesse: all which imaginations wrought so diuerslie in him, as his spirit forsaking councell and reason, made him breake forth into these exclaimes. Ah heauens, haue you fourmed beautie with such excellencie, as to cause me endure a torment more then mortall: Ah mine eyes, to lauish were

you

you in beholding her, who cannot chuſe but vtterly diſdaine thée, thou haſt no acquaintance with her, and therefore let thy death chaſtiſe thy boldneſſe. Yet maiſt thou bée deceyued in thine opinion ſolish man, perhappes in offering her thy ſeruice ſhe may accept it, for the Duke is olde, and likelye to die, how happy were it for thée to be his executor for his Ladie? Diſpayre not then man, for things thought impoſſible are eaſieſt oftentimes in performance. In theſe and ſuch like tearmes hée ſpent the night, and ſéeing the fayre morning ſalute him at his Chamber windowe, he aroſe, intending that daye to bewray his paſſions to the Ducheſſe: and knowing that the Duke would go viſite the Quéene, accompanied with manie Knights, he came to bid him good morrow: which the Duke taking very kindlie, requited him with many thankes, ignorant that for the fayre Wife, he was ſo courteous to the olde Huſband. The Duke hauing taken his way to the Quéene, Lewes kept company with the Ducheſſe very mannerly, wayting opportunitie to diſcouer his affections, and reuiewing her beautie ſo perfecte and rare, not able longer to hold, beganne thus. It is merualle Madame, if fayre beautie ſhould be ſo bitter, as a man cannot ſurfette but hée muſt néedes die. The Ducheſſe not knowing of whom the Prince ſpake, nor as yet regarding that hée was in loue, anſwered. In ſooth my Lord, the Ladie hath ſmall reaſon, that ſhée would vſe you ſo hardlie, if you meane it by your ſelfe. In déede Madame, quoth he, it is you haue wounded me, and none but you can eaſe my afflictions: if then (ſweéte Lady) you retaine ſuch pittie, as all your other excellencies ſhewe you to haue, you will not diſdaine to giue me remedie, which if you doe, for euer I remaine your Knight and loyall Frende. And in mine opinion Madame, you cannot well refuſe me, ſéeing Fortune hath béene ſuch an enemie to you in marriage, the Duke béeing olde and full of melancholie, you yong, tender and daintie as may be: hée more méete to kéepe companie with Atropos the mortall Goddeſſe, then liue with a Saint of

ſo

so rare perfections. But had my lucke béene such, before you were espoused to haue knowne you, I would with valours haue hindered your biding so, or Fortune should haue onely denied me: for such is my religion in loue, as better death then discontent, and had I béene Lord of Europe, you had béene Ladie. Notwithstanding Madame, so like it you, I may be your Frende and knightlie Seruaunt: for Loue wants no wiles to compasse desire, and my suite is modest, if you count it not vnsémely. The Duchesse, whom swéete loue could easilie intice to folly, hardlie might resist a present conquest: wherefore chaunging countenaunce, and not daring to reueale what she gladly would, said Trust mee my Lorde, your spéeches are not comelie, to violate chaste wedlocke is so monstrous, as you can haue no priuiledge to aske, nor I to graunt, and therefore content you. This aunswer, albeit it was sharpe, and scant pleasing to ỳ Prince, yet loue so perswaded him, that the Duchesse had another meaning then shee bewrayed: for noting her countenaunce so full of change, he gessed that some sparkes had fallen among her affections, wherefore he began againe. I beséech you Madame accuse Loue, if I haue spoken to your disliking, yet hope I to sée the time, when I shall make knowne howe great my affection is to do you seruice: and continuing this talke he brought her to the Quéenes lodging, Loue following them both so narrowlie at the héeles, as the Duchesse was no lesse affectionate then Lewes was passionate. Which when he got some light off, in hope to purchase his desire, hee sollicited her in more secrete manner then hee was wont: so that béeing one day in place where they might familiarlie talke, Lewes persevering in his enterprise, declared what torments hée suffered for her loue, whereupon the Duchesse, not onely by the Princes reasons which were perswasiue, but as well to mittigate her owne oppressions, thus aunswered. Great is the force of your perswasions my Lord, but greater is that of loue, which hath made me yours: so that what you request, I cannot denie, and though it

stand

ſt nd not with mine honour, yet ſuch is my ſortune. Let me intreate you therefore to conceale this loue ſo diſcreetlie, as none may know of it, eſpecially e my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that ſhall yeelde you content and make mee happy. This aunſwere ſo highly liked the Prince, as neuer man thought himſelfe in greater felicitie, and rendering her manifold thankes, ſayd. I ſweare to you Madame, by the diuine force of loue that gouerns vs both, to bee for euer your Knight, and neuer ſhall any other deſire abide in me, then you ſhall like and well allowe off, for otherwiſe I were not worthy this ſpeciall fauour. The Ducheſſe thanking him, departed, and thenceforth ſo ſecretly ſhadowed their loue, as none ſuſpected that the Prince loued the Ducheſſe.

Chap. XXXII.

Of the enterpriſe of Lewes the Prince of Fraunce, for the loue of the Ducheſſe of Burgundie.

LOng continued the King of Fraunce this ſtate in all magnificence, there meeting many noble perſonages, as wel ſtrãgers as of the Realm, that it was meruailous to behold, as alſo the Ladies and Damoſels that accompanied the Queene: who on a day in the preſence Chamber among many Knights, conferred of the bountie and proweſſe of the flouriſhing braue young Courtiers, among whom the Prince Lewes making one, each one ſpake in behalfe of his Ladies beautie, yet concealing their names to themſelues till better occaſions might cauſe thẽ reſeruedly to be known. All this talke the Prince w ll marking, who for the Ducheſſe

loue

loue was depriued of libertie, threw many sweete glaunces at the Mistresse of his affections, perswading himselfe, that nature neuer made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, burst her molde, whereupon he sayd. Lordes and Ladies, who with such aduantage haue chatted on beautie, vnderstand that such as you haue yet spoken of, or seuerally in your owne thoughts shall thinke vppon, may not be equall with one that I knowe, euen shée that is Ladie and commaunder of my heart, whose beautie is so far beyond all other, as bright Cinthia from the goodliest star in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with priuate opinion) I vse these spéeches, I will make good my wordes by déedes of Armes, against anie Knight whatsoeuer that dare saye the contrarie. Now in regarde that none shall pleade ignoraunce, I wil aduertise all Knights, how the first day of Maye next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediatlie following, I wil be in open fielde in my Tent, where I will erecte a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall bée her figure whose Knight I am, and there will I defende it in this honorable quarrel, against such Knights as will Combat for the beautie of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if Fortune frowne on them in such sort as they be vanquished, they shall there leaue their Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my Mistresse as her subiect. Now if my vnhappy Starres so crosse me, as I lose the credite I would bee lothe, the conquerer shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his Mistresse bée mounted, if hée meane to maintaine her with such conditions as I doo mine. And hée that last shall accomplish these eyght daies, shall beare away the honour with the portraitures of the Ladies, which by him or anie other all the sayd time haue bëne gained. And this libertie shall bée granted, that hée which receiues the foyle with the Launce, shal Cõ-

ſt and not with mine honour, yet ſuch is my fortune. Let me intreate you therefore to conceale this loue ſo diſcreetlie, as none may know of it, eſpecially my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that ſhall yeelde you content and make mee happy. This anſwere ſo highly liked the Prince, as neuer man thought himſelfe in greater felicitie, and rendering her manifold thankes, ſayd. I ſweare to you Madame, by the diuine force of loue that gouerns vs both, to bee for euer your Knight, and neuer ſhall any other deſire abide in me, then you ſhall like and well allowe off, for otherwiſe I were not worthy this ſpeciall fauour. The Ducheſſe thanking him, departed, and thenceforth ſo ſecretly ſhadowed their loue, as none ſuſpected that the Prince loued the Ducheſſe.

Chap. XXXII.

Of the enterpriſe of Lewes the Prince of Fraunce, for the loue of the Ducheſſe of Burgundie.

LOng continued the King of Fraunce this ſtate in all magnificence, there meeting many noble perſonages, as wel ſtrãgers as of the Realm, that it was meruailous to behold, as alſo the Ladies and Damoſels that accompanied the Queene: who on a day in the preſence Chamber among many Knights, conferred of the bountie and proweſſe of the florifhing braue young Courtiers, among whom the Prince Lewes making one, each one ſpake in behalfe of his Ladies beautie, yet concealing their names to themſelues till better occaſions might cauſe the mutuelly to be known. All this talke the Prince to it marking, who for the Ducheſſe

loue

loue was depriued of libertie, threw many swéete glaunces at the Mistresse of his affections, perswading himselfe, that nature neuer made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, burst her molde, whereupon he sayd. Lordes and Ladies, who with such aduantage haue chatted on beautie, vnderstand that such as you haue yet spoken of, or seuerally in your owne thoughts shall thinke vppon, may not be equall with one that I knowe, euen shée that is Ladie and commaunder of my heart, whose beautie is so far beyond all other, as bright Cinthia from the goodliest star in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with priuate opinion) I vse these spéeches, I will make good my wordes by déedes of Armes, against anie Knight whatsoeuer that dare saye the contrarie. Now in regarde that none shall pleade ignorance, I wil aduertise all Knights, how the first day of Maye next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediatlie following, I wil be in open fielde in my Tent, where I will erecte a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall bée her figure whose Knight I am, and there will I defende it in this honorable quarrel, against such Knights as will Combat for the beautie of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if Fortune frowne on them in such sort as they be vanquished, they shall there leaue theyr Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my Mistresse as her subiect. Now if my vnhappy Starres so crosse me, as I lose the credite I would bee lothe, the conquerer shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his Mistresse bée mounted, if hée meane to maintaine her with such conditions as I doo mine. And hée that last shall accomplish these eyght daies, shall beare away the honour with the portraitures of the Ladies, which by him or anie other all the sayd time haue bene gained. And this libertie shall bée granted, that hée which receiues the foyle with the Launce, shal Cõ-

bat with the Sworde (if hée pleaſe) beſore he yéld. Now that this mine enterprize may be openly knowne, and put in execution as the vertue requireth: I will ſend Horſemen through all the prouinces of Chriſtendome, that all Knights willing thus to aduenture, ſhall be héere receiued. His ſpeeches ended, the Gentlemen preſent could not meruaile ſufficientlie, at this great and high enterprize of the Prince *Lewes*, and the daunger whereinto he thruſt himſelfe, yet not knowing who was the Ladie he would thus aduenture for: but ſhée béeing preſent, perceiued that the Prince in honour of her loue, toke in hand this perillous hazarde, wherein ſhe conceiued ſuch ſecrete content, as the paſſions of loue hauing penetrated her hart, made her feare his misfortune, which ſhe would not for her life. In this aſſemblie was preſent the Duke of Sauoye, a young Prince, braue, hardie and couragious as might be, and eſteeming ſo well of himſelf, as he thought no Knight in the world could vanquiſhe him, who to anſwére the Prince Lewes, aroſe and thus ſpake. My Lord, I would not willingly haue entered the Combat againſt you, but that I heard you ſo farre outreache your ſelfe, as ſhee whoſe beautie you maintaine, is more perfecte then all other Ladies: but ſhée that is the commaunder of my heart, is ſuch a braue accompliſhed Ladie, as (in truth) her beautie may not be matched through the whole world. And to affirme what I ſay, I ſweare by the order of my knighthode, that the morrowe after you haue finiſhed your eight dayes enterprize, I will enter the ſame fielde, and anerre againſt all Knights, that the Goddeſſe to whom I am dedicated, excelles all other Ladies in her heauenly gifts: and he that dare maintaine the contrarie, vnder my Sword I will make him confeſſe it. All ſuch therefore as will make proofe of theyr valour, ſhall find me there in my Tent at my appointed day, and nine dayes after to ſuſtaine the ſame quarrell in plaine Combat, eyther at the Launce, the Mace, the Sword, on horſebacke or on foote, at his choiſe. And though I vanquiſh one Knight, it

ſhall

shall not be lawfull for me to rest a minute space, but presentlie take him in hande that shall followe: and bée it my fortune to be foyled by him, he shall kéepe the field in manner as you my Lord deuised. And to the ende all may be the better executed, please you that in such places where your intelligencers shall come, my enterprise may likewise bee declared, in respect I hope to behaue my selfe so well, as my Ladie will make speciall account of me. The lady for whom the Duke of Sauoye thus attempted, was Daughter to the King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom he loued intirelye, and aboue all things desired in marriage: which to compasse, and to honour his Ladie, he thus offered the Combat against all knights. These Princes, intending to go thorow with their intent, concluded betwéene them, that the Duke of Sauoye should breake it to the King, to gaine his good will: whereuppon the Duke departing towards the Quéenes Chamber to find the King, espied him at verie good leysure walking in his Garden, to whom hée went in all haste, and on his knée thus began. So please it your highnesse to graunt me one boone, I shall be bound to continue the loue I haue borne your Maiestie, which is to prolong my life in your seruice, as the most forward Knight in your royall Court. The King who had long time fauoured the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus aunswered. Demaund my good Cozin what you please, and it shall bée graunted. Then the Duke deliberatelie discoursed, what the Prince Lewes and he had intended for the loue of theyr Ladies; wherewith the King scant content, and merualling at this hastie enterprise, said. Why Cozin? do you imagine your selues able to maintaine so hard a taske, in resistance of so manie hardie Knights, wherewith the world is now plentifullie stored? Beléeue me, in manie Countries are Ladies of greater beautie [I doubt] then is at this time in our Realme of Fraunce. I promise you, I hardly like what my Sonne and you attempt, but séeing my word is passe, you shall not now bée hindered: do therefore what your

ſelues thinke expedient, with this conſideration alwaies, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning. The Duke humbly thanking the King, aunſwered. Wee doubt not my Lorde, but by the helpe of God and fauour of our Ladies to ende our affaires with fortunate ſucceſſe: but if now we ſhould giue ouer, and not go forward with our promiſe we might woorthily be reproued of ſhame and cowardiſe, the moſt villainous reproches that can be to anie noble heart.

The King perceiuing the earneſt affectiõ of theſe two yong princes, and that to denie their requeſt would be more hurtfull then to graunt: commaunded him againe to proceed with their intent, with ſuch ſuretie againſt al ſtrange knights, as what loſſe or victory happened to them, they muſt be content with al that fel out. The Duke not a little ioyful, kiſſing his highnes hand departed, and immediatly acquainted Prince Lewes therwith: but now the quéene vnderſtanding her ſons enterpriſe, ſent for him, & with ſad countenance thus ſpake. I would (my ſon) that the intent of you and the duke of *Sauoy*, were eyther a while deferred, or vtterly forgotten, becauſe I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a further conſequence then you expect. For think you, that by all your forces & Chiualries, the beautie of your Ladies ſhalbe anye iote increaſed? no beléeue me: but if they loue you as loyall Frendes ought to do, as greatly will they diſlike your enterpriſe, as feare the daunger whereinto you may fall, a matter cauſing other deſire then you thinke on, and more offenſiue (perhaps) to them, then any honour you may winne can pleaſe them. Lewes, who by no meanes would be diſſwaded from his conceit, aunſwered. God Mother, if for no other feare, this matter ſhall not be reuoked, in regard of the ſhame, and neuer dying dishonor I ſhal gaine thereby, which makes me deſire a thouſand deathes, rather thē not to bée ſo good as my woorde: therefore perſwade your ſelfe good Mother, that albeit her beautie for whom I enter the Combat, cannot bée more perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet

ſuch

such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her swéte lokes shall deliuer me strength enough to ende my taske, without dread of any inconuenience that may happen. The Duchesse (enflamed with loue) hearing these wordes on her behalfe, must nedes speake, and thus began. I knowe not (my Lorde) who is the Ladie you loue, nor what are her vertues, but hereof I can assure you, that she is highlie beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrarie) ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your selfe into for her beautie. Madame (quoth the Prince) the trauaile I shall take, and the bad fortune may befall mée, are little and of no accoũt in respect of her gracious deserts, therefore for her honour I will beare my inward paines with secret content, and attempt these outward actions with the greatest courage I can possible, desiring no other recompence then her fauourable conceit, wherof once assured, nothing can séeme difficult to me, no, were it to dye in her diuine seruice. And as hée would haue continued longer, the King (not yet thoroughly content with his promise past to the Duke of Sauoye) entered the Chamber, by whose countenance, Lewes well knewe he was mal-content with him, wherefore falling on his knée, he said. My Lord, no one is ignoraunt, how all my welfare and reputation consisteth onelie in your Maiestie, as a Prince and Father, the most vertuous that I know: which great good in some part to recompence, I haue enterprised a matter vnworthie of dislike, so please your highnes (of your accustomed bountie) to excuse and accept it in good part, in respect that such as are borne to the highest place of dignitie, ought to bée more prompt and readie to all magnanimous actions, then their inferiors, cheefely in prowesse, chiualrie, and deeds of estimation. What brought such renowne to Horatius, Mutius Scæuola, Marcus Curtius, Manlius Torquatus, and a number more of Romaine Knights, if not the couragious following of occassions offered? What made for euer immortall the fame of Marius the Romaine Cittizen, Hanniball the

Carthaginian, and Agesilaus the Greeke, if not the vndaunted valour of their minds, deliuered in their déeds of kinglie consequence? Assuredlie I beléeue, that their Fathers, Vncles, and auncient progenitours neuer made them noble or ought renowmed: what then? onelye vertue, the very formatrix of all nobilitie. For this cause my good Lorde and Father, hauing now opportunitie, as my Cozin ỳ Duke of Sauoye hath informed you, may it please your grace to permit my endeuours with fauour, to the ende I may deliuer perfect testimony, that I no whit degenerate from your heroycall and kingly vertues. The King somewhat moderating his former opinion, answered. Trust me Sonne, full well you know how to disguise and couer your follye with vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well: arise, and be it as your Cozin and you haue requested. See in meane time that you prouide all néedefull occasions, that when the day comes nothing bee wanting. Lewes humbly thanking his Father, arose, euery one present not a little reioycing, because they feared all would be squandered. Then began the Lordes and Ladies to conferre togither, and the Duchesse departing to her lodging, being manned by the Prince, did not [as I thinke] repent her selfe of her loue, as a number of you (marching vnder the same Ensigne) would doo the like in such a case. In fine, the Duchesse feareful of the thwarts of Fortune, that she would worke her disgrace by some bad coniectures or wounding reports, said. I know well (my Lorde) the good will you beare me, without anie further shewes or confirmations by actions so daungerous, which I had rather die then behold, and therefore whatsoeuer you shall performe, will condemne mée as vnworthy of so good deserts: in this respect you shall therefore graunt me one thing, which is, that aboue all you haue care of your selfe, else will perpetuall discontent cut short my date, béeing bereaued of the honour of my greene desires. Nowe Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fortune, not doubting to follow the deuise of a Ladie so vertuous, for

your

your swéete wordes prolong my life, else ere this had death robd you of your knight. The Duchesse hereto with an amiable smile, aunswered. I must not lose you yet good Prince, for may I lengthen your life, it shal be for euer. Many solēne thankes the Prince returned, and by this time had brought her to her Chamber, where hauing baise la main, departed.

Chap. XXXIII.

How the Prince Lewes and the Duke of Sauoye, sent their Heraldes and horsemen into all partes, to make knowne to all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of their Combats.

THe Prince Lewes ioyfull of the King his fathers consent, but of the gracious answere of the Duchesse most of all, dispatched immediatlye his Heraldes into all the prouinces of Europe, who executed their charge with such diligence, as there was no court of Emperour, King, or Prince, but they declared the enterprise of these two young Princes. So that one of the Princes Heraldes, accompanied with the King of Armes belonging to the Duke of Sauoy, came to the Emperors Court of Allemaigne, which then was furnished with a great number of Lordes and Knights, being there to solemnize the daye of his byrth, but especially Palmerin aboue all the rest, trymphing in the loue of his Mistresse *Polinarda*. The Heraldes beeing entred the great Hall, founde the Emperour sitting in his chayre of estate, with many Princes, Barons

and noble perſonages about him : who graunting them libertie of ſpæche , the Herald of Fraunce began firſt in this manner.

Illuſtrious and moſt redoubted Emperour, the cauſe why we thus preſume before your Maieſtie, is by the commaundement of the vertuous yong prince Lewes, ſon to our dread Lord Agarie' King of Fraunce, as alſo of the Duke of Sauoy his Cozin, ſo good a knight as may well commaund : what our meſſage is, ſo pleaſe your highnes to cal al your knights in preſence, becauſe it chæfely concerneth them, we with dutie will deliuer it . The Emperour preſently called for all knights and Gentlemen of his Court, who deſirous of the newes, were not lõg in coming, before whom he ſaid. Dread Lord, the prince Lewes of France my maiſter, commẽds him to your Maieſtie with this Letter, may it pleaſe your grace to command it to be read, and you ſhall ſone ſée the effect of our Embaſſage. The Emperour cauſed his Secretarie to read it openlie, and becauſe it cõtained what you haue heard alreadie , it ſhall be nædleſſe to waſt longer time in talke therof : but the letter bæing read, the herald thus proceæded. The Prince my Maiſter (wooꝛthie Emperour) giues the knights of your Court (as elſe-where) to vnderſtand, that hæ entends to prooue by dædes of Armes , how no Ladye in the wozld is comparable in beautie to the Ladie he loues, which hæ will bæ readie to maintaine in Combat the firſt of Maie next , and ſeauen dayes following, in his Tent before the Gates of *Paris*, there will hæ verifie it againſt all commers that dare auerre the contrarie. Afterward he rehearſed all the conditions to be obſerued in this Combate, and the King of Armes to the Duke of Sauoy, made known his Maiſters challenge likewiſe as you haue heard. The Emperoꝛ meruailing at this meſſage, ſaid. Without doubt the Ladies had næd to be fayꝛe , and my Cozins your Maiſters valiant and hardie, elſe it is doubtfull how ſuch an enterpriſe will fall out, foꝛ the affections of perſons are diuers, and theyꝛ foꝛtunes daungerous , neuertheleſſe I deſire the

iſſue

issue may sort to their honour. These Lords and Knights haue heard your message, and I iudge some of them will prounde to be there, because they prize the beautie of their Ladyes at as high a rate, as your maisters do estéeme their faire friendes: yet let them doo what they thinke most expedient, because they are olde inough to make you answere. As for mee, you may salute (on my behalfe) the King my Brother, and my Cousins, to whom I send thankes with al my heart, that they thus acquainted me with their honorable endeuours. All this while the knights conferred together, with diuers iudgements of their pretended combats: some were either fearefull or too forward, others well aduised and prouoked with discréte courage. Among whom repute we noble Palmerin, all pensiue, his eyes fixed on the ground, and not a word, hauing in his spirite discoursed how bitter the diuorce would be of the eye from his swéete obiect: in the end concluded the Combate, perswading himselfe, not in Christendome, nor in the other thrée habitable parts of the earth, either Empresse, Nuéne or Ladie, was more accomplished with perfections then his gracious mistresse *Polinarda*. And in respect of this Embassage, it séemed to him vituperous, and a dishonour not sufferable if he should not iustifie the truth, and haue so good occasion: wherupon hee desired a thousand deaths, rather then hée would defer so braue a voyage, and so on his knée before the Emperour thus beganne. Gracious Lorde and my worthie Patron, I intend (with your good liking and leaue) to depart with all spéede possible, to the Iousts and Combats of Fraunce and Sauoye: let it not therefore displease (for the honour of Chiualrie) that I leaue your Court a while, but may commit my selfe to this iourney with your fauourable opinion. The Emperour very loth to let Palmerin go, answered. In sooth Palmerin, I greatly doubted (so soone as I heard these newes from Fraunce) that it would not passe without your presence, which displeaseth mee, not so much for their follie, as your absence, which is and will bée

to

to me greater greefe then you iudge: but let me intreate that thy returne may be ſpeedie, and ſtay no longer then thou haſt good occaſion. I would gladly know, would you graunt it me, what Lady ſhee is for whom you thus aduenture, you need not Palmerin hide it from me. My lord (quoth he) the Dame for whome I enter the Combate is ſuch, as none may or ought compare with ſo ſingular, rare, and (aboue all) vertuous, as neuer would I thinke my ſelfe worthy to beare Armes, if feare of danger, miſfortune, or death it ſelfe ſhould haue power to plucke me from my ſuite. As for my ſtay, the Iouſts ended within one moneth or ſooner, will I returne to your Maieſtie: and let me intreate you not to feare any thing in my iourney, becauſe I go for your honour, and my ſword ſhall ring on the ſtoutest creaſt, the euer continuing honours of the Emperour of Allemaigne. The Emperor vnwilling to forgo him, and loth to hinder knightly chiualrie, ſays. Without queſtion Palmerin, the Ladyis indebted to you, and you declare vnſpeakable loue, that for her beautie you deliuer your ſelfe to ſo great hazard: but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your preſence, then thirſt after ſuch applauſe with your abſence. But ſeeing you will needes to Fraunce, happie fortune go with you and make you victorious in all your attempts: which I doubt not but by your valor and vertues of your miſtris, the French will not braue ſo much on the ſeauentæne of May, as perhaps they will on the firſt Prouide, that before you depart, you demaund and haue all things for your iourney, as well for ſuch as go in your company, as for your owne neceſſarie prouiſion: and ſome will I appoint to trauaile with you, that may preuent any trecherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refuſing this bountifull offer, with great obeyſaunce thanked the Emperour, and taking his leaue for that night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with expedition, becauſe the day of the Iouſts were at hand. Nowe was Trineus the Emperours Sonne a yong Prince, and had not yet re-

ceiued

ceiued his order of knighthood, he hearing of Palmerins departure, was maruailous desirous to beare him companie: wherupon he kneeled before his father, intreating him not to denie him one request. Demaund what thou wilt my Sonne (quoth he) I graunt it thee. Then I beseech you good father, saide he, to suffer me see Fraunce with noble Palmerin, that I may be acquainted with the courteste and ciuiltie of that nation, not doubting but soone to deserue my knighthood. And yet if before I receiue my order, I see these high and woorthy deeds of Armes, happily they may entice mee to follow their vertues: beside, if now I loose so good an occasion offered, I know not when I shall compasse the like commodity, therefore (good father) let me not bee denyed. The Emperour offended for his rash promise to his sonne, laboured to change his minde, yet all would not serue, for the Prince promised to go so couertly, as none should know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Hall, saying. I see Syr *Palmerin*, you shall not go alone in your voyage, for my sonne Trineus desires to be your companion: for which cause I commit him to you, and desire you to conceiue so well of him, as at your returne we may be all merrie together. Which Palmerin promised, whereupon the Emperour called for the maister of his horse, commanding him that all things might bee in readines against their departure: all which was doone with such diligence, as the third day following all things prepared; they tooke their leaue of the Emperour and the Ladies, who at their departure shed many teares (a common matter with them) wishing the victorie and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trineus and twentie other knights, a great number of Squires and seruants in good equipage, they iourneyed towards Paris without any hinderance by the way, or matter of memorie.

Now before we passe any further, you shall vnderstand, that after the Heraldes of the Prince of Fraunce and Duke of Sauoye were departed, and that *Palmerin* had obtained

lained leaue of the Emperour, the Princeſſe *Polinarda* aduertiſed hereof, was greatly diſpleaſed with this ſodaine departure, wherefore calling Vrbanillo the Dwarfe to her, ſhe ſaid. Vrbanillo, thou muſt go to thy Maiſter, and will him this night to meete me at our appointed place, that I may confer with him of a ſecret nearely concerning mee. Which when Palmerin heard, the earth being couered with her blacke mantle, and euery one in their dead ſleepe, he called *Ptolome* and Vrbanillo, who were all acquainted with this loue walke, and being there in preſence of their Ladies, the princeſſe with a great ſigh thus beganne. Alas my Lord what minde is this in you, thus to voyage towards Fraunce, and leaue me alone ſad and ſolitarie? Alas not content to hazard ſo long a iourney, but a dangerous combate beſide, for my beautie, which is of ſo ſlender eſtimation, as may not parragon with the Ladies of France, being peerles (as I haue heard) among thoſe of higheſt perfection. Ah my Lord, more comfort and content is it to me to haue your companie, then to bee crowned Queene of any realme conquered by your vertue and proweſſe. Therefore (ſweete friend) I intreate you with all my heart, and by the vnfained loue you beare me, to leaue ſuch dangerous enterpriſes, where death is commonly more frequent then life. Theſe words came with ſuch amiable conturation from the Princeſſe, as *Palmerin* (though loth to be diſſwaded) anſwered. Let me preuaile with you ſo farre good Madame, as not to miſlike my enterpriſe for your gracious loue, for the honour you haue doone me, in making me your knight, I prize at no leſſe value then my deereſt bloud, and ſhould I be helde from theſe French exploits, vnworthy were I to be your Seruant: in that (as you knowe) no knight but carries the honour of his ladye in ſuch account, as hee preferres that before his owne life. If then madame in religion of this office, I abſent my ſelf for a while, I ſhal accompliſh nothing but my duty, whereto your ſelfe bound me, and I hope to execute with ſuch ſucceſſe, as you ſhall

beare

beare the prize of beautie, not onely from the Ladyes of Fraunce and Allemaigne, but from all Christendome, yea, the whole world, may I liue to trauaile it. Doo not then (sweete mistresse) mislike, if I absent my selfe for a cause so reasonable, and continue me still in your fauourable conceit, as hée that was borne to doo you seruice. And albeit I cannot depart without excéeding gréefe and anguish, yet perswaded of your rare arguments, I arme my selfe with patience and yéelde to reason, being present with you alwaies, in that I carrie your diuine Image in my soule, and leaue heart, life, and all with you till I come. These words were sealed with many deuout kisses, and *Ptolome* had like paine in perswading Brionella, yet this contented them in the end, that the honor of their trauaile was the renowne of their beautie, and so with forced content they louingly departed. The next morning the Princesse sent *Palmerin* an arming coate of gréene Veluet, imbrodered all ouer with great Orientall Pearles, and very thicke beset with Starres of gold, and in the midst of each Starre a costly Emeralde: and hee had caused her picture to bée most curiously drawen in Gold, her face and handes formed wonderfull néere the life, and all her lineaments very singularly fashioned, and this portrait caused he to be set in a faire litter, couered with Crimson velues, which hée had prouided onely for the purpose, and so set forward.

Chap.

The famous Hiſtorie

Chap. XXXIIII.

How the Prince Lewes came to ſee the Ducheſſe of Burgundy, and what happened.

SO ſoone as the Heraldes and horſemen of Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke of Sauoye hadde diſpatched their charge, their Lordes gaue order to prepare all things in readines ſo ſoone as might be: but yet the princes affection to the ducheſſe did ſo torment him, as hee daily compaſſed new meanes to conferre with her, that ſhee might know the paſſions hee endured for her ſake. At length it came to paſſe, that the king, the Duke of Burgundie, and diuers other Princes rode forth on pleaſure together, and returned not again for two dayes ſpace, which made him thus begin with the Ducheſſe. I neede not tell you Madame, for you know it well inough, how continually I languiſh in remedileſſe affections, till now this opportunity puts me in ſome hope of comfort, that you performing ſo ſolemne promiſe, will deliuer me out of this extremitie. Wherefore faire Miſtris, ſince time and occaſion hath pointed it, and Fortune (by nature froward and inconſtant) fauours it, let me intreate you to take the benefit of both, leaſt hereafter we compaſſe not the like againe. My Lorde (quoth the Ducheſſe) you muſt thinke I am more yours then mine own, and make that reckoning of you, as no Lady can the like: howe is it poſſible then for me (louing as I loue) to flie from that which loue commaunds me to fulfill? Let it ſuffiſe you then, that the regarde of mine

honour

honour defended, I am ready to doo ought may agrée with your lyking. What happened afterward I leaue to your opinions, but by the halfe the whole may be discerned: notwithstanding, vertuous Ladyes haue power to resist such motions, though time, occasion, and such amorous solicitings did offer it them: but such may be accounted more diuine then humane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophe, in disgrace of the temptresse Venus. But this little discourse not much dissenting from ỹ matter, is written in reproch of such yong daintie wantons, that attende on theyr ouerfond and vnchaste desires: and may likewise be a warning to vndiscréete olde men, that they choose theyr pantofle fit for theyr foote.

But now is come the first of May, the day to begin the enterprises of the Princes of Fraunce and Sauoye: Lewes to entertaine the Duchesse loue, begunne with such aduantage, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. Wherefore this day was his tent erected at the Citis Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous, and at the entrance thereof was placed a goodly monument of blacke Marble, curiously set forth with columnes of white Marble, very thicke imbossed with gold and pearle. At the side of his pauillion was placed another monumẽt of gréene Iasper, adorned with many Bases, Pillers, and antique imagerie of Gold, whereon he intended the strange knights that came should place the figures of their Ladyes. On the other side was a seemely place appoynted for the Iudges of the field, who were the dukes of Orleaunce and Burgundy, Princes greatly estéemed for their nobilitie, and in theyr time had béene hardy and aduenturous knights. Many other Tents and Pauillions were that day there set vp, as well for strange knights that came, as Noble men and Gentlemen of the Realme. And now comes the Prince brauely mounted to the fielde, accompanyed with many young Princes, Knights and Gentlemen, the Heralds and Kings of Armes ryding before, Drums, Phifes, Trumpets

pets and Clarions ſounding ſo gallantly, as made the ayre deliuer a moſt ſweete Eccho. Before him in a very ſumptuous Coch, was carried the curious counterfeit of the Ducheſſe, ſo ſuperficially ſet forth with ſuch perfection of arte, as though it had beene the liuely Ducheſſe her ſelfe. After followed Prince Lewes in glorious gilt armour, all ouergrauen with moſt artificiall flowers, and mounted on a Courſer of Spaine, eſtéemed one of the beſt runners in Europe, which made way with braue and loftie voltages, as did not a little delight the beholders: one of the chéefe princes of the Courte bearing his Helmet, and another his Launce. What néede I make further report of the Princes tryumph, he comming to the field with ſuch equipage, as well beſéemed the houſe from whence he diſcended and as beſéemed a louely Knight in preſence of his Ladie: who as her fauour had ſent him that morning, a coſtly Girdle garniſhed with rubies, diamonds, great emeraulds and other vnualuable ſtones, with a Sworde ſo good as euer Knight wore, and therewith rode he gyrded to the Field. Before he went, the king his father thus ſpake to him. My Sonne, this day and all the other following, Fortune ſpéede thée ſo well, as thou maiſt winne the honour my heart doth wiſh thée. My Lorde, anſwered the Prince, I hope before the ſennight be finiſhed, to accompliſh your deſire effectually, ſo fauour me ſhe that may commaund mee. So leauing the King he came to the place appointed for the Combate, the Iudges placing themſelues where they ſhould, and the Prince himſelfe in his Tent, where hauing his Miſtreſſe picture ſet on the appointed place, he commanded the trumpets to ſound, and a Heralde to proclaime, that no Knight bearing Armes ſhould be ſo hardy as to enter his Tent, except hée firſt graunted his Lady to bee the fayreſt creature in the worlde, and if any were ſo ſtubborne not to confeſſe it, by knightly proweſſe hée would force him to do it. The herald hauing done his charge, and the Iudges cauſed the conditions to bee openly read, the people diuided themſelues

themselues in conuenient places, and the Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen betooke them to their tents and Scaffolds. The first that entred the field against the Prince, was the Counte Durcell of Arragon, his foure Squires conducting before him in a great gorgeous litter, the statue of his Mistresse, Daughter to the king of Arragon, the fayrest ladie in all Spaine, and for whose beautie hee tooke in hand this quarrell. After him came foure other Squires, the formost leading his Courser, the second bearing his Helmet, the third his Shéeld, and the fourth his gauntlets and launce: and comming to the monument appointed for strange ladies, caused the portrait of his lady to bee placed thereon: then comming to the princes Tent, said. I know not lord Lewes, if ouercome with glory, presumption of your strēgth, or ouerwéening your selfe, you haue made this large enterprise, to Combate with the best approoued Knights in the whole world, in iudging no fairer lady to be this day liuing then your owne: for mine own part, I am not so troubled in conceit as you are, to quarrell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will denie, I am ready by the strength of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes féeling himselfe gréeued with these iniurious spéeches of the Count, answered. Proude knight, I am ashamed to heare thy iudgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I would not iustifie against thée and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, before we depart I wil cause thée know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thoroughly bumbasted: looke to thy selfe, for I intend to doo it. So mounting on horsebacke, and prepared as it had béene to a warre mortall, encountred each other with such furie, as their Launces flying in shiuers vp into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Shéeldes, their Horses and their heades, as they were both dismounted to the grounde. But earnest desire to vanquish, they béeing beside, strong

and well diſpoſed knights, made them quickly beginne the ſecond aſſault with their Swords, which was ſo dangerous, and handled with ſuch dexteritie, as it was hard to iudge who ſhould haue the honour of the Combate. But Lewes beholding the repreſentation of his Lady, and conſidering her ſo excellent and fauorable to him, toke heart afreſh, and (as it were inſpired with newe vigor) ſo layde on the Counte *Durcell*, as in ſhort time hée brought him vnder the mercie of his ſword, when holding it againſt his throate, hée ſayd. Peremptory knight, if now thou confeſſe not my Lady to excell thine in beautie, thy vndiſcréte head ſhall raunſome thy folly. The Counte (for all this) would not anſwere one word, by reaſon of the debilitie he felt himſelfe in, hauing loſt ſo much of his bloud, as for the gréefe he conceiued to be thus vanquiſhed: whereat Prince Lewes not content, would haue taken his head from his ſhoulders, but the Iudges of the fielde came to him, ſaying. My Lord, you ought to forbeare, hauing brought your enemie beyonde his owne defence: your victory being ſufficient to content you, forbids his death. The Prince perſwaded, entred his Pauillion, and ioyfull of his conqueſt, commaunded two Cardants of the field, to take the figure of the Princeſſe of *Arragon*, and place it at the féete of the Ducheſſe counterfeit: which was doone imediatly, and the Counte Durcell brought into his owne Tent, where the Chirurgions toke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Soone after came a knight of Myllaine, who giuing ſuch defiance as the other did, was in the ende conſtrained with great ſhame, to confeſſe vnder the conquering ſword of Lewes, the imperfections of his Lady, and her ſtature placed by the Princeſſe of Arragon. The ſame day were fiue great Lordes of Italie brought in like ſubiection, and ſo the tryumph ended till the next day, when the firſt that came into the field was a braue Gallant of *Spayne*, a knight of good eſtimation, and ſpecially reputed, who after a vaine-glorious oration made (as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his

fortune

fortune to the triall of his launce: where he sped so ill, as he was vnhorsed, and in the following Combate likewise receiued the foyle. After him seauen other knights of Castile prooued as vnfortunate, their ladyes pictures all reuerencing the Dutchesse, who beeing not a little proude of her knight, and the memorable renowne he witnessed of her beautie, I leaue to your considerations, both for her conceit that way, as also in loue towards the Prince, who seeing no more readie to enter the quarrell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conferre with his sweete mistris of his high good fortunes.

Chap. XXXV.

¶ Of the Combate betweene Prince Lewes of Fraunce, and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.

GReat pleasure did the King conceiue, and all the nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy knights, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And nowe the third day when he was entred his Tent, an English Knight (no lesse braue in tearmes then the other) defied the Prince, and betweene them beganne a daungerous conflict, in the midst whereof, the king with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Queene and the Dutchesse of Burgundie, came to theyr standing, and vnhappily beheld the foyle of the English Knight, the Dutchesse hearing him confesse her beautie, and beheld his Ladyes portrait placed vnder hers. But now the courageous Duke

of Gaule named Crenus, came brauely mounted into the field, doing his dutie to the King, Quéne, and Ladyes, who not knowing him, by his Armour iudged him some great Lord, in that no knight before cauſed ſo good opinion generally, nor came with brauer countenance into the field, hée béeing indéede a Prince of wonderfull poſſeſſions, and a Knight at armes woorthily prooued. The Duke (as all the other had doone) cauſed his Ladyes counterfeit to bée placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admiration of al the beholders, noting what rare and excellent beautie it was adorned withall, the workman hauing performed ſuch exquiſite perfections, as it had béene the Ladie her ſelfe naturally liuing: while the Squires were thus placing it on the monument, the Duke aduanced himſelfe to Lewes in this maaner. The ouermuch ſelfe conceit Lord Lewes) of mindes but eaſily acquainted with matters of difficultie, hath often béene, and yet is the cauſe to plucke great perſonages more lowe then they expect: ſo that men haue ſéene them deceiued of their intents, and rewarded with ridiculous ſhame and confuſion. This ſpake I to you, hauing héere begun a buſineſſe, the end whereof will be more hard to you, then as yet the beginning hath béene: for Europe is ſufficiently ſtored with hardy knights to aſſwage your preſumptious opinion, and Ladyes much more faire and excellent, then thée whom you contend for. And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regarde of my Lady and miſtreſſe, and helpe of my good Sword) will I enforce you to confeſſe, that incomparable Agriola, daughter to the King of England, for vertue, for beautie, and al diuine perfections, exceédeth yours whatſoeuer ſhe be. Before ſuch a leaſing (quoth the Prince) ſhall paſſe the lippes of a Sonne of Fraunce, eyther will I conſent to be péecemeale torne in ſunder: and before fayre Phœbus haue paced one houres iourney, I doubt not to make thée repent thy pride and arrogancie. By the ſoule of king Arthur, ſaid the duke, looke thou garde thy ſelfe well, for I haue with my courte-

lay, abate the pride of a brauer man then thy selfe, and ere we two part, I meane to trie if I can do it againe, therefore resolue thy selfe to thy best defence, for (by my life) I will not fauour thee. Without any further speeches they encountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes was throwne betweene his horses feete, and he for England lost his stirrops, but recouered himselfe well inough by the mayne of his horse: then hee seeing his enemie not vp againe, cast himselfe out of his saddle to haue taken his aduantage, but Lewes preuented him, and came marching against the Duke with his Sword drawne, who stayed him thus. Me thinks Prince of France before any worse befall thee, thou were best to yéeld thy selfe, and remember that our Combate beginnes for the excellencie of beautie. By God man of England, answered Lewes, thou canst not perswade me to a thing so farre from my thought, therefore go to, and he that hath the fairest friend shall soone be knowne. In this great choler he reached the Duke such a stroke on the head, as made him fall one knee on the ground, but recouering himselfe quickly, and both throwly angry, they layde on each other so cruelly, as the very Tartest of the beholders feared the successe. Thus fought they for matter of special value, the defence of their owne reputations, and honor of their Ladyes, whose loue was more precious in their hearts then their owne liues. So long these eager charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes hauing receiued more then twentie wounds on his body, feeling himselfe fainte, fell downe before his enemie, saying. O noble heart of Fraunce, the true successer of thy famous predecessours. The victorious English man setting his foote vpon him, saide. Lord Lewes, if now thou declarest not my Lady to excell thine in beautie, it costs thee thy life, a matter nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chiualrie and singular prowesse I haue found in thee, as also this magnanimous enterprise of thine, which in despight of thy foyle, and death it selfe, shall make thee liue for euer. But Lewes made

no anſwere, eyther for his weakeneſſe, or for rowful conceit of his miſfortune, wherefore the Iudges came, who granting the Duke victorie, deſired him to proceede no further, which he honourably granting, was as ioyfull of the conqueſt, as the Ducheſſe ſad and penſiue, thinking Prince Lewes had beene ſlaine outright: wherefore ſhe flung away to her lodging, not tarrying for the king or any of his Ladies, who likewiſe departed the field in marualious ſorow, ſeeing their Son ſo pittifully wounded: but aboue all, the Ducheſſe made more lamentation, then ſhee would haue doone for the death of her husband, yet fearing what ſhee thought ſecretly, ſhould by her greefe bee openly ſuſpected, comforted her ſelfe ſo well as ſhe could: and being by her ſelfe, with one of her truſty Gentlewomen, ſhe thus breathed forth her mones. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemie to all actions of regarde, why haſt thou ſuffered the man thou moſt fauoured, thus to be vanquiſhed? and (which is moſt to be pitied) without hope of life? Ah deceitfull trompereſſe, ſeeing thou haſt offered him ſo much wrong, doo mee the fauour to beare him companíe in death, that liued and died ſo honorably for my loue. Ah death, let it ſuffiſe thee that loue hath wounded him, and make not thou experience of thine inevitable ſtroke, vnleſſe thou wilt doo as much for mée. Ah falſe and flattering Sonne of Venus, is this the guerdon thou rewardeſt them withall that ſerue thee faithfully? So ceaſing her complaint a while, in great impatience ſhe thus began againe. Alas, neither the one or other are cauſe hereof, but my moſt vnhappy ſelfe, when (prouoked by my beautie) ſhee toke in hand this enterpriſe: but if it bee ſo (deere Friend) that enuious fate deale ſo hard with thee, ſoone mayſt thou be reuenged on her that cauſed it. And with theſe words ſhe fell betweene the armes of one of her Ladyes preſent, whom ſhe ſpecially truſted, who thus ſpake to her. Why how now Madame? will you perſwade your ſelfe no otherwiſe? beléeue me there is no remedy but you muſt change your conceit. What will you forget your

ſelfe?

selfe: it is no time if you remember your selfe well, for if he whom you loue and endure these paines for, should vnderstand hereof, in stede of seeking his health, you will shorten his daies, if (as you say) he liue not without your welfare. More requisite is it that you go comfort him with your cheerefull presence, then thus to be the argument of both your deathes. Beside Madame, if my Lord suruiue, as no doubt he shall, what may he presume? trust me matter sufficient (if you gouerne not your selfe better) that you seeke to discouer, what most of al beseemes you to conceale. Alas (my Friend) answered the Duchesse, I knowe you speake the truth: but how is it possible for mee to content my selfe, seeing what estate he is in, onely for my loue? But if hee die, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour be blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat bee aduised by thee, and I will go see if my presence will any thing comfort him. To breake off this talke, came an Esquire from the Queene, to intreate her come to her Maiestie: which she did, and went with the Queene to the Princes lodging, who beholding the Duchesse so pale ant full of greefe, with this conceit his woundes opened and bled afresh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceiued, that any one should see what wounds he tocke by the Duke of Gaule; wherfore they forbad any to enter his Chamber, vntill the perill of death was better passed ouer, which was within short time, when the duchesse by hir often visiting him, conuerted his sorowes into many ioyful conceits. But because our history appertains not only to his deedes, or the loue of the Duchesse, we will returne to the Duke of Gaule, who after he had thus conquered Prince Lewes, followed the conditions of the fielde, taking the portrait of his Ladye Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stoode, setting it among the other conquered Ladyes. That day diuers other knights came on behalfe of their ladyes, whom

the valiant Engliſhman entertained with ſuch valour, as al his paines turned to the honour of his Miſtreſſe Agriola, who now was ſeated as paragon of the field.

Chap. XXXVI.

¶ Of the Combate betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Gaule, and of the ſucceſſe thereof.

N the ſame day that the Prince of Fraunce was vanquiſhed by the Duke of Gaule, arriued at Paris Palmerin, Trineus, and their traine, but the combate was firſt ended, wherefore they commanded their Squires to prepare their Tent. Palmerin vnderſtanding that the duke was conquered, greeued not a little, in that he came no ſooner to win the honor of the Prince: yet knowing, if now he could conquer the Duke, more honour ſhould ariſe to him then by the Prince Lewes, hee contented himſelfe, paſſing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trineus, in diuers arguments of the Combate betweene Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly commended of Palmerin though he were ouercome, becauſe he had ſo bravely done the two former daies againſt al the knights that came. All this night could not *P*almerin ſleepe, thinking on the day enſuing, but riſing early in the morning, & commending himſelfe to God in his prayers, he put on the Coate of armes his Lady *P*olinarda gaue him before his departure, and tooke the counterfeit of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his Knights or Squires worthie to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus and

other

other Allemaigne Lordes, entred the Lystes with so braue a gesture and countenaunce, as euery one commended him for a good Knight. And hauing placed the picture on the accustomed monument, as if had béene to the liuely creature her selfe, he thus began. Ah perfect mirrour of all beautie, vertue and excellencie, resolue thy selfe this day to beare the palme of honour from all Ladies in the worlde, in that your Knight craues a thousand deathes, before he giue consent to the contrarie: and perswades himselfe so assured of your present fauour, as he durst venture on a whole Army, to kéepe his religion in your diuine seruice. These words were spoken so loud, as the duke of Gaule heard him, wherewith not contented, he aunswered. What now Knight? demaundest thou courage of a Ladie to defend her beautie, ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if thou bée no better prouided. For all that Sir, sayd Palmerin, I hope to make you graunt what I say, and that there is not a fayrer Ladie liuing, then thée whose figure thou héere beholdest, otherwise I shall constraine thée whither thou wilt or no. That shall we sée, quoth the Duke, so departing into their Tents to be armed, and readie to Ioust, they met so valiantlye togither, as they brake their Launces brauelye without mouing eache other, and taking newe staues encountred againe, when the Duke was vnhorsed, and Palmerin verie sore woũded: so betaking them to their swords, continued a daungerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the end Palmerin ouercame the Duke, and holding his sworde readie to cut off his head, sayd. Knight thou art dead, if thou graunt not my Ladie to excell thine in beautie. Ah sir, sayd the Duke, vnhappy be the houre that you toke in hande this voyage, to depriue me of that which made mée the most happie Knight of the worlde, with what countenaunce may I present my selfe before her, séeing Fortune hath béene so aduerse to me? thus filling the ayre with his regrets, the Iudges came, desiring Palmerin to saue his life, whereto he consented: which words were more bitter to the Duke then

death

death, who in theſe complaints was lead into his Tent by his Squires. Palmerin not forgetting the honour due to his Ladie tooke downe the Image of Agriola, and ſette his Ladies in the roome, ſaying. Now are you in the place Madame, which is your owne by right. This victory was not a little pleaſaunt to the Frenchmen, but eſpecially to Prince Lewes when he heard thereof, who the better to make his loye knowne to Palmerin, ſent him two of the beſt Horſes in his ſtable, as glad of the reuenge on the duke, as that Palmerin remained conquerour. Palmerin ſent heartie thankes to the Prince, as well for his preſent as his good will, and continued in his deuoire to his Ladies beautie, as that day he honoured her with the conqueſt of foure French Knights, and the ſubmiſſion of their Ladies for traitores: yet aboue all, Palmerin commended to Trineus the valour of the Engliſhman confirming the Duke for a choſen knight at armes, and neither Frenchman, Italian, Spanyard, Engliſhman, Romaine, or Greeke, that attempted againſt Palmerin in the following daies, but ſtill he bare away the victory, and Polinardaes picture their Ladies obeyſaunce. The laſt of the eyght daies, came into the fielde the Lord of Albret, greatly eſteemed for proweſſe and chiualrie, and hee would defend the beautie of his French Ladie: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Miſtreſſe among the vanquiſhed, and ſo cõcluded the French princes enterpriſe to his owne immortal honor. Afterward came the King Agariell, with the princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greateſt entertainment could be deuiſed, whereof Trineus and the other Allemaigne Lordes were highly contented, and after his woundes were healed, cauſed him and his companie to be lodged in his owne Pallace, where the Quæne and her Ladies would often viſite him, and the Prince Lewes likewiſe, who by manie intreaties with Trineus, vnderſtood her name for whome Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King vnderſtood, that Trineus was the Emperour of Allemaignes ſonne, and

all

all this honorable companie came from his Fathers Court, their welcome cannot be sufficiently sette downe, nor Palmerins praises effectually rehearsed, whome the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In soth Sir Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happie, that is honoured with your knightly seruice, but aboue all, the noble Emperour of Allemaigne. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, it likes you to speake your pleasure of me, yet did I neuer knowe Knights more worthy in fight then your Countrymen, among whom your deserts may not escape vnreported, no more then the deedes of Scipio can among the Romaines. Manie other honourable and familiar spéeches passed betwéene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladies figures that were brought to the Joustes: Polinarda onelye tryumphing beyonde all the rest, hauing no seconde but fayre Agriola of England, the Goddesse and Mistresse to the Duke of Gaule.

Chap. XXXVII.

Of the Combat which the Dukes of Sauoy and Lorraine had together, for the beautie of their Ladies, and what was the issue thereof.

YOu haue héere before heard, the enterprise of the Duke of Sauoy for the beautie of his Ladie, and how after Prince Lewes his daies of Combate were finished, hee should maintaine nine other in the like quarrell: wherefore the day after Palmerins victory, he put himself in order as the time required, and hauing in the field erected two Pillers of Porphier, displaying them that belonged to

the

the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there ſet vp al of Crimſon
veluet, verye curiouſlye imbroydered with Golde and
pearle, and rounde aboute within were manie braue
ſentences of loue, drawne from Hiſtoriographers and
Poets, as well Greeke as Latin, in praiſe of the Miſtreſſe
of his deuoted affections. In the morning hee went to giue
the good morrowe to the Princeſſe Lucemania Daughter
to the King of Fraunce, whom he had choſen for his ſpouſe
and Wife. After many ſolemne courteſies paſſed betweene
them, fearing the Queene ſhould finde them togither, hee
toke his leaue of her, ſhe giuing him from her arme a ſump-
tuous Bracelet, garniſhed with fiue great Diamondes, and
fiue fayre Rubies, which gift encouraged him to follow his
enterprize. Being come into the Field, the Iudges appoin-
ted were the eldeſt Sonne of Fraunce, and the Count of
Armignac, wiſe Princes and valiant Knights, and ſtan-
ding in the gate of his Tent vnarmed, becauſe he ſaw none
readie to offer him battell, the Duke of Lorrayne at length
entred the Fielde, attended on by a braue companye of
Knights and Squires who brought the portrait of his La-
die, being a figure of rare beautie, and hauing a Crowne on
her heade, where ouer was written in great Letters of
Golde, This is Polinarda, exceeding in beautie all Ladies
in the world, which was read by mame; who could not ſa-
tiſſie theyr eyes in beholding ſo braue a ſpectacle, and being
ſette on the Piller appointed, he came to the Duke of Sa-
uoye, ſaying. Blaſphemous knight, detractour of the beau-
tie of Ladies, heere may thine owne eyes witnes how thou
haſt belyed beautie, in preſuming to thinke any more faire
then this incomparable creature, to whome thy Lady maye
not worthilie be handmaid. And if thou will not preſently
confeſſe what I commaunde thee, ſherde thy head from my
weapon, which I meane to knocke well for thy great in-
diſcretion. The Duke of Sauoy enraged with theſe words
armed himſelfe preſently without any anſwere, and mou-
ting on horſebacke with a ſtrong Launce in his hande, en-

countred

countred his enemie so courageously, as breaking their staues bravely in shiuers so their verye Gauntlets, passed on without any further harme. The Duke of Sauoy angry that he had not dismounted his enemie, with his Sworde drawne returned furiously vpon him, & laid on such strokes as the fire flew forth of his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine like a good and hardie Knight, defended himselfe valiauntly and reached the Duke of Sauoye manye shrewde wounds, so that both of them throughly netled, rent each others Armour in such sort with their swords, and mangled their flesh so vnmercifully, as the iudges could not imagine who had the better vauntage. The Duke of Sauoye wondering to see the Duke of Lorrayne hold out so long, beganne to storme more like a Fiend then a man, rayling on Fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beautie) shee afflicted him no better, and being at the verie point of dispayre, toke hart a fresh, and redoubling his strokes vpon his aduersarie, at length slewe his horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Maister vnder him, by reason he was so sore wearyed, and beside, had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recouer himselfe, before the Duke of Sauoy (being alighted) sette sore vppon him, and in fury would haue parted his head from his shoulders, but that the Iudges ran quickly and stayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorraine halfe dead carried into his Tent, and the Duke of Sauoye caused Polinardas picture to be sette at Lucemanias feete, a thing verye strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwarde hee was vnarmed to haue his wounds bound vp, which were so dangerous, as gladlie he would haue beene excused from the Combat with any other Knight for that daye, did not shame, and the Lawe hee made himselfe prouoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, hee was defied by a Knight of Sycilie, who would Combate on foote with the battell Axe, in which conflicte the Duke was verye neere ouercome, he had lost so much bloud before: but in breefe, the

Sici-

Sicilian Knight loſt the day, his Ladies Picture was yéelded conquered, and the Duke of Sauoy went to reſt him in his Tent.

Chap. XXXVIII.

How the Duke of Sauoy entered the Combat againſt *Ptolome*, and how he ſped.

PAlmerin not as yet in perfecte health, was aduertiſed, how the Duke of Sauoy hadde conquered the Duke of Lorrayne, fighting for the beautie of the Princeſſe Polinarda, the conceit wherof ſo gréeued him as nothing could more, to ſée her honor ſo badly defended, whom aboue all other he eſtéemed déereſt, which made him in great choller ſay before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lorde) Loue made a ſlender choyſe of the Duke of Lorrayne for his vaſſayle, and Madame Polinarda ſcant wiſe to chuſe him for her Champion, in reſpect of the excellent beautie Nature hath beſtowed on her. And yet it could not be imagined, how the Duke of Lorrayne ſhould gaine the victory without ſhame, in ſéeking honour beyond his deſert, becauſe he is vnworthy ſuch extraordinary fauour: which makes me repute it rather of a faynt heart, then any want of a iuſt quarrell. Trineus hearing *Palmerin* ſo affectionate in his ſpéeches, in a merry laughter ſaid. In good ſooth Sir Palmerin, the Duke of Lorraine was but ill counſelled, to enter the Combat for my Siſters beautie without her licence, in that he once learned, how you could defend it much better then hee. Palmerin fearing hee had ſpoken

more

more then he ought, because he discoursed his loue too openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lorde) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Ladie, on whome dependeth my life, and whome I loue more déere then my selfe: I would cause the Frenchman well to vnderstand, how Madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections eyther of grace or beautie, all the Ladies of this Country, yea, I dare say of the whole world: therefore one may easily coniecture, that the Duke of Lorrayn during the combat, had his mind fred on baser occasions. Then Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his loue, said. It is no straunge matter Frende Palmerin, to see presuming mindes payde with selfe-same coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot meruaile enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to your charge, she hauing had so good knowledge of your valour and prowesse. These speeches pleased not *Palmerin* a little, and did in such sort encourage him, as for the iniurie done his Ladie by the Duke of Sauoye, in setting her figure at the feete of Lucemania, had not Trineus perswaded him with fayre speeches, all sicke and sore as he was, he would haue gone to reuenge this dishonor. Notwithstanding, he called *Ptolome* secretlie, saying. Thou knowest (my déere Frend) what shame is offered her, to whom I was destenied before my byrth, by the presumption of an ouer-bolde Knight, and what greefe it is to mee, that I cannot at this present reuenge this wrong my selfe, I pray thée therefore supply my insufficiencie, and enter the Combat with that vaine-glorious Duke, of whom thou maist gaine honour and yéelde me content, in giuing ease to my afflictions, which else are insupportable. I promise you my Lorde, answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such good will, as I doubt not to ouercome the Duke of Sauoye. And for my Mistresse Brionella, will I enter the fielde, whose beautie is sufficient to enrich me with the victorye, for in my conceit, shée farre passeth Lucemania. Therefore my

Lord

Lorde let me requeſt one courteſie, which I am lothe you ſhould denie me: that if you ſhall be able to morrow, but to accompanie me with your preſence in the fielde. If the ayre will ſuffer me, quoth Palmerin, I will, in meane while I will pray, that thy fortune may fall out to my hearts deſire. Thus Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome, were paſſing the time with other noble men, of the valour of the Duke of Sauoye againſt all ſtraunge Knights, and how he had foyled the Duke of Lorrayne, had not his Horſe fallen on him and maimed him, otherwiſe hee brought the Combate to ſo good a iudgment, as he had won the honour of the fielde. Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, becauſe himſelfe was not able to reuenge this misfortune: herewithall he conceiued a kinde of iealouſie of the Duke of Lorrayne, becauſe hee had choſen his Ladie Polinarda for his Miſtreſſe; and on her behalfe had entred the Combate, and howe hee durſt place her picture on the Piller with her name, without he had receiued ſome commaundement from her, which conceit ſo greeued him, as his wounds began to be as daungerous as at the firſt, continually labouring in his thoughts, now with the lightnes, then againe with the conſtancie of Women, neuertheleſſe, he could not iudge (affecting earneſtly the vertues of his Lady) that ſhe would bee of ſuch a double liking, and in this doubtfull eſtate, ſayd. Ah God, I ſée that Women wax lightly, and loſe againe more eaſilie. Then repenting his words, followes on thus. O heauens, and what ſhall I ſay? it is impoſſible that ſhee (meaning Polinarda) ſhould be ſo forgetfull, and neuer will I beléeue, that a princeſſe ſo wiſe and vertuous, would reward me with ſuch treaſon, which may not, nay I dare ſweare cannot, once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions ſerue to allay this new iealouſie, but ſtill it had power to confound reaſon: and all the night continued he in this variable conceit, till the next morning, when Ptolome (ſo ſoone as the Sun aroſe) accompanied with Trineus, went to his Tent, where being armed, all ſauing his Helmet,

hauing

hauing his Launce and Shéelde, he came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest Knight the cause of my comming, stand vpon thy guarde, for I fight for beautie. The Duke suddainly at these words mounted on horsebacke, and ranne against his enemie with such strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his saddle, and suddainlye alighted with his sworde drawne: but the Duke recouering himselfe, entertained him in sharper sort then he expected. Now beganne betweene them a cruell and pittious Combat, as their Armour, shéelds and swordes, flewe about in péeces, and the blood trickling downe their bodies in manie places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their lines. Yet in the ende, the Duke béeing of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and greedy of victory ouer his enemie, ran so violently vpon him as hee got him on the grounde, and he béeing vppermost, offered to take the aduauntage of his life: but the Iudges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stayed, not a little sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise sore wounded was carryed into his Pauillion, but first hée sawe the portrait of Brionella sette in the raucke of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a Knight of Scotland at the Pace, who not nimble enough in vsing that weapon, in the end bad the foyle, and three other Knights afterward at seuerall weapons, so that it was admirable to beholde the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no Knight as yet medled with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as banquished. And now was Palmerins Combate against the Duke of Gaule not talked on, for the Duke of Sauoy was accounted the onely Knight in the worlde, to the no small ioy of the Princesse Lucemania, who perswaded her selfe now, that her beautie was most excellent. But shée was not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensiue, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weakenes, and the often intreaties of Trineus, he would néedes to the fielde, saying.

ting. God my Lord perſwade me not, for I reckon not my life, ſo I may take vengeaunce of the diſhonour done to my Ladie your Siſter: the manifold courteſies of the Emperour your Father, haue ſo bounde me to her and you, as exceede my life farre, and therefore I beſeech you not to hinder me. Trineus yet ouercame him by perſwaſions, aſſuring him to haue time ſufficient for his reuenge, whereat greatlie diſpleaſed, he feigned himſelfe to be whole ſoner then he was indéede, for the great deſire hée had to deale with the Duke. And Prince Lewes angrie, to ſée the Duke hold the fielde longer then he did, not able to bée ouercome by anie Knight, came to Palmerin ſaying. I knowe not my Lord, whither you vnderſtande the Duke of Sauoyes victories againſt ſo manie hardie Knights, but belike his ſtrength is much better then mine was, or Fortune allowes him more fauour then ſhée did to me. In my conceit, if you enter not the Combat, you do me wrong and your ſelfe tw: and if hee depart hence with victory, then ſhall I haue cauſe to complaine of you: in that his ſucceſſe hath made him ſo braue and preſumptuous, as though no Knight is able to anſwere him in the fielde: let me intreate you Sir *Palmerin* to abate his pride, and (as well he deſerues) make him knowe his folly. Palmerin hauing greater deſire to execute this matter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this anſwere. My Lorde, God giues honour and victory to whom he pleaſeth, without eyther regarde of the cauſe or the perſons. If according to bountie or nobility of minde hée diſtributed ſuch gifts, then had you bëene among the better ſorte, as furniſhed ſufficientlye with valour and magnanimitie: yet if your enterprize haue not ſorted to your deſire, account this for certaine, that it is for your good, and for other reaſons then are to you known, for ſuch matters are his ſecrets, and hée doth ballance them by his diuine wiſedome. Notwithſtanding, as well to ſatiſfie your requeſt, as eaſe mine owne minde, to morrowe morning will I enter my Tent, albeit my preſent eſtate would haue me ſtay a while: there

will

will I Combate with the Duke, not certaine how fortune meanes to deale with mée. But happen what shall, I go with a minde to conquere, and doubt not but the issue will be such, as shall yelde you content, and me the victory: so shall your sadnes and mine be cõuerted into pleasure. With this aunswere the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was hée ignorant of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise then he imagined: but pleased as he was he went into the presence Chamber, where many Knights were conferring of dédes of Armes past, to whom hée opened the fantasie of Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke, setting him downe for vanquished, except Palmerins weakenes were his greater Frend.

Chap. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Sauoy, and the issue thereof.

Ir daies togither had the Duke of Sauoy maintained this quarrell, for the beautie of his Ladie Lucemania, & no knight as yet could get any aduantage of him, vntil the seauenth day, when Palmerin prepared himselfe to the fielde, and entred his tent, accompanied with Prince Lewes of France, Trineus and many other Princes. The King with all his traine taking their standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armed forth of his Tent, sauing his Helmet, which was carried before him by two Squires with his Sheld and Mace, and next to them came two Princes, who bare the portraiture of his Ladie Polinarda, which béeing sette on the Piller, hée

claſped on his Helmet, and taking his Mace in his hande, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus ſummoned him. Knight, thou haſt long enough defended the field, and to my great greefe that it hath bene ſo long, my turne is nowe come, and it is good reaſon I ſhoulde keepe it the reſt of the time: for the Ladie whome I loue, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beſide, excelleth all other whatſoeuer, and if thou wilt not confeſſe the ſame, I will not leaue thee with this Mace till I haue forced thee to do it. I knowe not ſaide the Duke, what thou canſt doo, but I am of the minde, that I ſhall ſoone qualifie thy ouer bolde braning. At theſe woords the Duke taking his Mace, deliuered Palmerin ſo ſounde a ſtroke on the heade, as made him to ſtagger, but Palmerin requited him well againe for it, and long had they fought togither, and bruſed eache other very pittifully, till at length Palmerin gaue the Duke ſuch a cruell ſtroke betweene the heade and the ſhoulders, as hee fell to the grounde cleane bereft of ſence: when Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but ſetting his ſwoorde againſt his breſt, ſaid. Now am I ſufficiently reuenged on him, that ſo ill intreated the figure of the moſt fayreſt among Ladies. The Iudges of the fielde, thinking Palmerin would haue ſlaine the Duke, came running to him with theſe woords. Content you Syr, he is vanquiſhed, and hath no power to defend himſelfe. Whereupon Palmerin put vppe his Swoord againe, and leauing the Duke, went preſently to the Piller where his Ladies portrait ſtoode, which embracing in his armes, hee placed higheſt, and Lucemania at her feete, ſaying. I beſeeche you Madame to pardon your Knight, in that he did no ſooner repel the famous iniurie offered you, and impute it not to feare, or want of courage, but debilitie of bodye, which once a little recouered, I came to maintaine your honour, and heere confirme you for the moſt beautifull Lady liuing. While Palmerin thus contemplated his Miſtreſſe figure, the Iudges commaunded the Duke to bee carried into his Pauilion,

where

where, with soueraigne drinks life was got into him again, but when he knewe himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre hée lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of greefe had well-neere slaine him. No lesse was the sorrowe of Madame Lucemania, but shée and her Knight were not so much discontented, as Palmerin, Trineus, and Ptolome were toyfull: but aboue al other, Prince Lewes of Fraunce, more pleasant then if himselfe had tryumphed in victory, thinking he could not sufficiently extoll the renowne of Palmerin, calling him ỹ onely puller downe of the proude. That day did *Palmerin* encounter with seauen other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himself not onely magnanimous, but mercifull, sauing their liues, and honouring his Mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after manie braue exployts, béeing readie to leaue fielde because none came to resist him, on a suddain there entred a Knight in blacke Armour, striped all ouer with Golde, and bearing in his shéelde of Azure the Golden Sunne, whose braue order of entraunce declared him to be a hardie Knight at Armes, who aduauncing himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of comming hither (Sir knight) is to let thée vnderstand, that I am the Seruaunt and beleued of a Ladie, who may not bee equalled with any other, and because I am enformed, ỹ thou maintainest thy Frend, to excell all Ladies whatsoeuer, I offer to proue the contrary, and will make thée confesse it. I neuer spake wordes more true, aunswered Palmerin, and héere abide to iustifie them: but this place is ordeyned to no other ende, then to make thée and thy like knowe, what vnaduised enterprises you take in hand. And one thing is required of thée, that before thou begin the Combate, thou sette vppon this Piller the counterfeite of her, whom thou perswadest thy selfe to excell my Ladie in beautie, accorting to the conditions of this fielde published through all Europe. That cannot I do, aunswered the Knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath

ſo liuely figured her perſon, as ſhe is dayly preſented to mee by her incomparable beautie, which cannot bee taken from me but onely by death. And if loue follow the ſoule, [as diuers hold opinion] whole worldes cannot ſeparate me from her. And therefore are all men vnworthy to receiue fruition (by their regard) of a thing ſo precious, which makes mée imagine, none but my ſelfe worthy to looke on her diuine figure. Prepare thée therefore to thy Horſe, and defende thy ſelfe. Palmerin deſirous to know the name of this fayre Ladie, ſayd. I ſée ſir Knight, that thou art meruailous proud and ſurlie, which make mée rather deſire to Combat with thée then any other, to abate this hotte humour: albeit this is contrarie to his conditions, who was the principall Authour of this enterprize, which is, that thou ſhouldeſt ſet on this Piller her portrait whom thou ſo eſtéemeſt: yet this exception ſhall be graunted thée, for the deſire I haue to knowe what thou canſt doo, as alſo her name, if thou dareſt reueale it. To tell thée her name (anſwered the knight of the Sunne) I will not ſticke with thée, and becauſe in concealing it, I ſhall offer her wrong, nature hauing in her ſette downe the onely worke of beautie: know therefore that her name is Polinarda, Daughter to the mightie Emperor of Allemaigne. Theſe wordes were ſo yrkeſome to *Palmerin*, and troubled his thoughts in ſuch ſort, that hée knewe not readilye what to aunſwere: notwithſtanding in midſt of his choller, thus ſpake. By God Knight thou haſt made a good choyſe, for againſt her beautie will not I contende, hauing it in greater eſtimation and reuerence thē thou cāſt haue: but I am readie to proue, that thou deſerueſt not to be named her Knight, no not ſo much as her meaneſt Seruaunt. That ſhall we try, ſayd the knight of the Sunne, before we part: and albeit her excellencie deſerue farre greater ſeruice then mine, yet ſo it is, that for the loue I beare her, and the affection I haue to obey her by ſome agréeable ſeruice, I may by good reaſon name my ſelfe hers. At theſe ſpéeches Palmerin conceiued ſuch iealouſie, as without attending

tending any further matter, mounted in great anger on horsebacke, and met the Knight of the Sunne so forcibly, as both of them were sent to the grounde: whereuppon they drewe theyr Swordes, and charged eache other with such furie, as theyr Armour and Shields were hacked in peces, and the ground coloured with their expence of blood. No permission of breathing was suffered betweene them, but bloud and death earnestly desired on eyther part, so that the King, the Lordes and the Judges, reputed this for the strangest Combat that euer they sawe, nor could they say who was likest to win the fielde, but if the one died, the other could not escape, so that the King moued with compassion, caused them to be seuered, and commaunded them to enter theyr Tents. Which motion liked wel the Knight of the Sunne, for long he perswaded himselfe he could not hold out, wherfore he mounted on horsebacke so well as he coulde, & withdrewe himselfe, Palmerin being wonderfully displeased, that he could not obtaine the victorye of this knight. Sone after, the king and the Prince Lewes came into his Tente, and seeing him very sore wounded, would not let him staye there, but sayd, Beleeue me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great neede of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shall therefore be conueyed to my Pallace, where all helpes that may be deuised shall be giuen, assuring you, that greater honour could neuer knight purchase, then you haue done. And though this last Combate were not ended, you neede not be displeased, the issue thereof importing the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue seene for two of the best prouinces in my Realme. And me thinks you should content your selfe, hauing receiued before such honour ouer so manie Lords and knights of name, come you therefore with me, and Lord Trineus beare vs companie. Great thanks receiued the king of them for this honourable courtesie, and Palmerin went with him to the Pallace, where the kings Chirurgions toke care of his woundes, he being lodged in the most stately Chamber

in the Courte. Now the Prince Lewes beganne to loue Palmerin ſo dearely, as he could not be an houre footh of his cõpanie, deſiring his health as his owne welfare: wherfore all things that he imagined Palmerin toke pleaſure in, would he performe with his vttermoſt endeuours, and would ſuffer none to hold him talk, but onely of matter that might yéld pleaſure and delight. Notwithſtanding, diuers Knights conferring with him that euening, as concerning the Knight of the Sunne: Palmerin aunſwered them, that his mind ſhould neuer be thorowly quieted, vntil ſuch time as he fought with him againe. The Prince, who ſtil endeuoured to kéepe him from ſadnes, ſaid, I beléeue (my lord) that he will not eaſily be induced to deale with him againe, for you brought him into ſuch eſtate, as hee will kéepe himſelfe héereafter out of your handes: and well I am aſſured, that had you continued but a little longer, the victorye had béene yours, for the Knight was ſo weakened, that he did nothing but defend your blowes. It pleaſeth you (my Lord) to ſay ſo quoth *P*almerin, but had hee felt ſuch valour in me, or ſuch courage as beſéemes a vertuous Combatant, hardlye coulde hée eſcape as hée hath done: neuertheleſſe, I hope (with the fauour of Fortune) to méete him once more, and then we will trie who is the ſtrongeſt. Much other talke they had, but *P*almerin intreated the Prince, that all the portraits of the conquered Ladies might bee brought him, which were aboue an hundred, of diuers beauties and moſt ſtrange faſhions, and among them all could be founde none ſecond to *P*olinarda, but (as we haue ſaid alreadie) that of Agriola the Princeſſe of England: who (by the reporte of a Gentleman preſent that hadde ſéene her) was much more beautifull then her figure preſented. Such ſpéeches they continued ſo long of the Engliſh Virgin, as Trineus (albeit he neuer ſawe her) became amorous of her, and at ỳ inſtant he ſolemnly vowed himſelfe hers, as thence forward hee ſwore neuer to loue any but her, ſo that for her ſake he thruſt himſelf into manie perrillous fortunes, as in the following

diſcourſe

discourse of the Hiſtory you shal reade more at large. From whome let vs returne to the Prince Lewes, who séeing so many portraitures of Princesses and Ladies, would daily congratulate Palmerins good fortune, and embracing him, said. So helpe me God, my noble companion, I would neuer desire greater riches in the world, then to resemble you, especially in chiualrie, which in you is so surpassing al other, as you haue ended to your honor, what a number haue fayled in. Oh how happy may the Lady account her selfe, that hath such a knight: and were not the condition too cruell towards my selfe, I could wish I were a Woman in her place, to haue so high rule and commaunde ouer you. At which words al present beganne to smile, yet shewing good countenance to Palmerin, for the affection they sawe the Prince bare him, which is yet to this day a common vsage and practise among Courtiers: but Palmerin somewhat ashamed of such superstitious prayses, answered. Truste mée my Lord, I account my happinesse the greater, that I haue doone seruice to so high a personage and so good a knight as you are, desiring to méete you in such place hérafter where you may perceiue the good will I beare you, not onely for this high entertainumēt, which is more then I can deserue, as for the pleasure I haue to honor so good a Prince, which if the occasion happen, you shall perceiue the experience. I haue spoken nothing (quoth the Prince) but what is more acquainted to others then my selfe, and if I would conceale them, then will they be most openly knowen, because vertue doth so apparantly shine in them. Many other spéeches passed betwéene them, and longer had continued, but that many Lords which came to sée the Iousts, were nowe vpon departing, and therefore would take their leaue of the King, whereupon they were constrained to breake off, the prince going to his Chamber of presence, where hee gaue thankes to a number that honoured the Court with their presence, and so one after another al departed, the Duke of Sauoye béeing one of the first, ashamed (God knowes) to

be

be ſo conquered by Palmerin, and not bidding his Lady Lucemania fare well. But Lewes did not ſerue the Ducheſſe ſo, for her loue continued as reſolute as before, and ſhe loued him as well conquered, as had he beene the conquerour, whereof ſhée aſſured him by many amorous meetings, by which meanes the Prince ſtayed the Duke at the Court longer then himſelfe would haue doone. Lewes thus louing Palmerin as you haue heard, intreated the Ducheſſe to come and viſit him, which ſhée accompliſhed the day following, when Palmerin ſpent many diſcourſes with her, rather of loue then entring into religion, for ſhé perceiued by her countenance that ſhé had no will to become a Nun, where we will leaue them together, and tell you who the knight of the Sunne was, that fought the laſt Combate with Palmerin.

Chap. XL.

Who the knight of the Sunne was, and of his ſtrange aduentures.

THe King of Hungaria, Father to the Prince Tariſius, that married the fayre Griana, Mother to Palmerin, hadde in his latter yéeres a Sonne named Netrides, and after hé had long liued in reſt and proſperity, hé dyed, leauing the yong prince Netrides fiftéene yéeres olde, & in the cuſtody of his elder brother Tariſius. This Netrides growing in good conſtitution of body and behauiour, béeing well beloued generally, ſo gracious, gentle, and well gouerned he was, as the Lords, knights,

Gen-

Gentlemen, and the people of Hungaria, eſtéemed him moze then theyz king Tariſius, who being crowned after his Fathers deceaſe, loued Netrides as bzotherhood required, till Foztune (enuious of this concozd) not willing that the vertues of this yong pzince ſhould be there extinguiſhed, changed his affection into excéeding hatred, by an occaſion héereafter following. One day the king Tariſius walking in his garden to take the ayze, left his Bzother Netrides in the Chamber accompanied with the Quéene, who without imagination of any harme, noz that his fatall ſtars would ſozt him any miſſoztune, ſate downe in the kings Chayze as he talked with the Quéene, and continued there ſo long, till Tariſius came vppe and founde him there ſitting, which he tooke in ſuch ill part, as in a great rage he thus began. Who made thée ſo audacious and pzeſumptious to ſitte in my ſeate, againſt thy dutie and my liking? By mine honoz thou haſt doone moze then thou weeneſt, and if I ſée the like againe, oz I may but heare thereof, thy head ſhall pay the pzice of thy folly. Netrides, who of his owne nature was humble and gentle, fell downe on his knée, intreating the king his Bzother to pardon him, foz what hee had doone was not with any intent to diſpleaſe his Maieſtie, but an ouerſight, and that ſo he would permit it to paſſe. The king made him no anſwere, becauſe hée tooke Netrides reaſons foz no payment, but conceiued a ſecret hatred in his minde, by this occaſion of ſo ſlẽder moment, which increaſed thence-fozward, as the matter pzouoking a fiꝛie Meteoze: ſo that he did repine at his bzother ſo much, as he would not ſpeake to him, noz affoozd him a good countenance. Then called hée to remembzance the loue of his people towardes his Bzother, and if this hatred ſhould come to their knowledge foz ſo ſmall a cauſe, hee imagined they would diſplace him, and make Netrides king. Foz which cauſe hee intended to haue him ſlaine, and the execution hereof he committed to one of his Archers, but God (who is euermoze the pzeſeruer of the innocent) would not ſuffer ſuch a damned déede

of

of paradice to take effect. Which Tariſius perceiuing, and finding one day his brother alone, enflamed with this diſcontented humour, ſaid. Netrides, thou haſt offended mee more then I will now ſtand to argue on, I therefore baniſh thee my Court and Kingdome, and looke that within three dayes thou get thee hence, and on thy life not to diſcouer it to any man, or take any one with thee to beare thee company. The yong prince obedient to his brother, made anſwere, that he would accompliſh his charge, and ſo withdrew himſelfe into his Chamber, not declaring to any one his cauſe of heauines. Then willing one of his Squires to ſaddle his Horſe, departed as cloſely as he could, forbidding any of his Seruants to follow him: and ſuch expedition he made, as not reſting but one night in any lodging, he left his brothers kingdome, wandering without any care of himſelfe, or which way he went, but went heere and there, as fortune pleaſed to guide him. Hauing long time trauailed in Allemaigne, his money fayled him, in that at his departure he was but badly prouided: yet could not his princely minde abaſe it ſelfe to beg, ſo that beeing without meate or drinke, or any place to reſt himſelfe in, aſhamed of himſelfe, hee ſought to ſhroude him where none might diſcry him, and ſo entring a great Forreſt, very thicke ſette with Trees ſhrubs, and buſhes, hee eſteemed that a conuenient place to reſt in, wherefore alighting from his horſe, and turning him to feede, layd himſelfe downe at the roote of a tree, and thus began to breath forth his complaints. Ah inconſtant Fortune, and to me moſt of all inconſtant, didſt thou erect me ſo high, and reiect me now thus lowe? wel then may I ſay, that more wrong thou doſt a man in one houre, then right all his life time: for if heretofore thou diddeſt lende me pleaſure and delight, thou nowe makeſt mee pay for it, (and that with vſury too rigorous) not leauing any hope to comfort mee. Ah tyrannous king, cruell and vnmanlike Brother, thou haſt with ſhame baniſhed mee, and brought me into this poore eſtate, wherein I muſt die, Oh happie if

I might, rather then to liue in the vile estate of beggerye. So saying, hée laide him downe among the Yearbes, and was surprised with such extreame feeblenes, as he fell into his lamentations againe, thus. Ah my Lord and Father, to soone diddest thou leaue me, woulde God I then had borne thée companie, or that at this instant I could come to thée, Ah men of Hungaria, I am well assured (knowing the loue you euer bare mee) that you will pittie when you heare my afflictions and calamies: alas, I neuer deserued this vnhappie end. And being vnable to continue longer speeche, hée there determined to finish his life. But better fortune befell him then he expected, by the meanes of an auncient Knight named Lombardo, who béing neere, heard all his doloreus complaints, This Knight béing rich and of noble bloud, had neere that Forrest a strong, delightfull and sumptuous Castle, and delighted to walke among the woods for his recreation, as good hap it was for Netrides that he walked this euening. He hearing these sad and sorrowfull regrets, pittie so touched his hart, as the teares bedewed his cheekes: yet would he not trouble him while he continued his mones, but afterward came and toke him by the hande saying. Arise my Frend and take courage, for you are in the place where you shall finde more good to benefit you, then harme to offende you, therefore cherish your spirites, and forget this heauines, which may endaunger you beyond recouerie. Netrides séeing this honourable Gentlemanne, with his bearde so white as snowe, hearing his courteous offer, and for him nowe so necessary, with ioy, feare & bashfulnes all coupled togither, accepted it, and humblye thanked him, albeit (quoth he) a contented death is better to me, then a miserable and despised life. The Knight comforting him aunswered, that it was not in his power to chuse life or death, but the founder of the heauens reserued that authoritie in his owne handes. With these wordes hé toke him by the hand, and conducted him to his Castle, where he was worthilie entertained by the Knight himselfe, his La-

die

die and her Daughter, one of the fayreſt Virgins in all that Countrey. Lombardo hauing heard all his miſfortunes and hard aduentures, in the night diſcourſed the whole to his Lady, wherefore (good Wife) quoth he, entertaine him ſo well as may be, for I aſſure you he is diſcended of high degrée, and if his manners and vertues be correſpondent to his birth, wee will giue him our Daughter in marriage, if ſo himſelfe accept our offer. The good Lady miſliked not her husbandes opinion, wherefore the next morning ſhe went to entertaine her gueſt, ſaying. My Lord, your comming hither hath well contented my Lord and husband, and ſo pleaſe it you to ſtay héere, we will be glad and faine of your company: which gentle offer Netrides accepted, thanking God and the Lady for his good fortune. Thus remained hée with this auncient Knight Lombardo, who afterward neuer remembred him of his miſeries in the Foreſt, but intreated him ſo well as though he had béene his owne Sonne. Netrides ſéeing the Knights Daughter ſo fayre and well conditioned, and ſhe regarding not onely the vertues of his minde, but alſo his comely and well featured body, they beganne amorouſly to affect each other ſecretly, but loue inuented the meane to reueale it openly: for Lombardo well noting the great diſcretion of this yong Gentleman, and knowing him to bee diſcended of bloud royall, reſolued to cauſe him marrie his daughter, demaunding the queſtion of Netrides among other ſpéeches, if ſo he liked to marry his daughter? My lord (quoth he) it is the ſumme of my deſire, and greater honour cannot you beſtow on mée, ſo pleaſe her to conceiue the ſame opinion I do. The marriage was ſolemnized with al expedition, with the preſence of many gentles, neighbours thereabout, who marueiled the knight beſtowed his Daughter ſo, in that they eſtéemed Netrides but a poore knight errant. It fortuned afterward that the auncient knight and his lady deceaſed, leauing theyr Daughter great with childe, to the no little content of Netrides, that after all his ſorrow hee ſhould become a

Father.

Father. Three dayes before this lady fell in trauaile, shee dreamed that shee was shut vp in a very darke Chamber, where out she could by no meanes get, and therefore called for helpe to one of her Gentlewomen. Then was she aduised to take her childe in her armes, and to stay there still, whereuppon shee beheld her infant, and saw that his face resembled the beames of the Sunne, the brightnes whereof chased away the darknesse, so that she might behold the place as cleere as any other, saying. My lord, forgette this heauines, and you shall reioyce by this infant, for this is he shall reestablish you in the place you haue lost, & shall seate you in that Chayre with honour, for which you were exiled thence, giuing you his crowne, that traiterously chased you from his kingdome. He comforted with these words, tooke the childe in his armes, and sayd. Little soule, I pray God thy mother speake truth, and that thou maist be able to execute it. So saying, he espyed a furious man who snatched the infant foorth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his intreaties and supplications, carryed it away with him. This sorrowe for Netrides made her giue a loude shryke, when he calling his Wife, demaunded the cause of her sodaine affright, whereuppon she rehearsed to him the whole manner of her dreame, and reioycing thereat, said: I hope my Lord that it will so happen to you as I haue dreamed, and therefore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortune: notwithstanding he remained in many doubtfull opinions, till they vnderstood by effects the certaintie of this dreame. Now was come the time of the Ladyes deliuerance, which was a goodly man childe, so faire and well fauoured as one should lightly beholde, being named Frysol, and shee would suffer none to nurse it but her owne selfe, for the certaine hope she reposed in him. The Childe growing in time to such comely stature, as each one tooke great pleasure to beholde him, whereof the Mother was so glad, that albeit shee had afterwarde two other Sonnes, yet she wed she no such speciall loue towardes them as vnto

Frysol,

Fryſol, which procured ſome hatred betweene his brethren and him. This yong Lord growing to fourteene yeares of age, was in ſtature very tall, delighting himſelfe in ryding great horſes, ſhooting in the long bow, caſting the barre, and diuers other Gentlemanlike exerciſes, as alſo to chaſe in the Foreſt, where old Lombardo met with his father. So that one day after long and wearie chaſing of the Hart, hauing ſweated very ſore, and maruailous dry for want of drinke, finding a little ſpring by the foote of a Tree, he lay downe and dranke, but afterward hee became ſo ill and ſickly, as hee trembled very ſore, ſo that one of his Squires could hardly leade him againe to the Caſtle. Netrides ſeeing him ſo exceeding ill, was maruailous ſorrie, commaunding his Phiſition to ſeeke ſome preſent helpe for him, who plyed him with ſuch wholſome potions, as his feuer left him, but his face and all his body was ſo painted, as hee had beene a Leaper, which made him be mocked of his other Brethren, and ſcorned of all the Seruants, except his Father and Mother, which was ſuch greefe to him, as hee would haue dyed with fretting at them, but his Father rebuked them, and comforted him in this manner. I did hope my Sonne, by thy meanes to be reſtored again to the Realme of my deceaſed father: but now, how long it will be before, God knowes, if this ſtrange malady of thyne bee neuer holpen. Fryſol amazed at his fathers words, deſired him earneſtly to report the whole circumſtaunce, which Netrides at length did, rehearſing how hee was brother to the King of Hungaria, the hard entreataunce hee vſed towards him, and laſtly hee told him the Dreame of his Mother. Fryſol ſtudying a long ſpace on his fathers words, at length anſwered. My Lord, you are not ignorant of the ſoueraigne power of the higheſt, who by his diuine iudgement hath ſent mee this diſeaſe that thus torments mee: euen ſo when pleaſeth him he will take it from me againe, and giue me health and ſtrength much more then euer I had, with meanes ſufficient to giue you ayde and ſuccour,

according

according to the matter whereon you haue diuined. And albeit I feele so extreame anguish, as death may not be likened to it, yet doth this hope comfort me in such sort, that me thinks already I am become more healthfull: therefore my Lord dismay of nothing, but perswade your selfe there is comfort behinde. These words were so pleasing to Netrides, as mere ioy caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, marualling at the wonderfull courage of his Son, enduring such terrible paines as he did: wherefore what he thought he could not reueale, but withdrew himselfe into his Chamber.

Chap. XLI.

How Frysol persecuted with his disease, and the mockery of his brethren, determined to go seeke strange aduentures.

FRysol hauing heard the originall of his birth, as also the vision that appeared to his mother, was thence forward more pensiue then he had beene before, and perceiuing his brethren continued their bad disposition, and day by day mocked him more and more, he determined to forsake his fathers house, and to seeke aduentures, and remedie for his sickneese, if any were to bee founde. And being one day in the Forrest more melancholyke then accustomed, hee espied a knight vered with Leopards come by the high way, mounted on a proper Palfray, to whome hee sayd. My Friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to beare thee companie,

and I will be ready to do what thou ſhalt commaund mée. The knight perceiuing hee might gaine ſome benefite by Fryſol, was well contented, and ſo bad him mount vppe behind him. So was hée glad to doe what was contrary to his nature, and in this life continued two yéares, trauailing many countries, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit eams he deliuered his maiſter, reſeruing nothing for himſelfe but what hée gaue him, and bearing a mind ſo noble and vertuous, as he deſired rather death, then to enrich himſelfe by any villainous or diſhoneſt act. So many countries and prouinces had they trauailed, as at laſt they came into the Realme of Hungaria, when *Fryſol* remembred that he was in his Vncles Land, who ledde a life ſo baſe and ignominious: hée was ouercome with exceeding heauineſſe, which ill agréed with his dangerous diſeaſe, ſo that his companion deſired to know the cauſe of his ſadneſſe: but *Fryſol* prayed him to content himſelfe, ſaying, that death was more agréeable to him, then a life ſo dolorous and miſerable. At which words the knight growing in choller, thruſt him beſide his Horſe, and rode away leauing poore Fryſol there, hauing no other comfort then to fill the ayre with his teares and complaints, till at length hée receiued ſuccour by a young maide named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countreyman that dwelt on a mountaine neere at hande. This maiden leading her Fathers Beaſts and Cattell to paſture, tooke great delight in gathering hearbs and roots, wherewith to make oyntments for all woundes and diſeaſes: and this day (by the diuine permiſſion) ſhée chaunced that way where ſhée heard the mournefull lamentations of Fryſol, whome when ſhe beheld, ouercome with pittie and compaſſion, ſayd, Alas my Friend, how came you into this deſert and comfortleſſe place, being oppreſſed with ſuch a bad and dangerous ſickneſſe? In good ſooth miſtreſſe (quoth hée) by no other meanes then the miſfortune and diſpleaſure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this inſtant, thē to liue any longer in this monſtrous languiſhing.

Friend,

Friend, answered the mayde, you ought not thus to dispayre in sickenesse, but consider that the Lord and gouernour of the heauens and earth, dooth by these meanes trie and proone his people, whom if hée perceiue thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reprobate enemies, he makes thē his Frends and Children, onely by the ransome of his beloued Sonne paide. If then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perswaded you shall soone finde remedy. So causing him to ryse, shée conducted him to her Fathers house, where for certaine dayes shée bathed him with wholesome Hearbes, and annointed him with such precious oyntments, as in short time his disease forsooke him, and hée was as cleane as at the time hée dranke the Water: for which hée humbly thanking the maiden, said. God make me able (fayre Virgin) to requite this wonderfull kindnesse receiued at your hands, accounting my selfe more indebted to you, then to my parents that gaue me first life: and this perswade your selfe, that whereseoeuer my body bée seperated from this place, my heart shall remaine ready to do you any seruice. That is my will & intent (quoth Leonarda, but thanke him chiefly that made mée able to helpe you, and in so doing shall I account my labour well bestowed. Frysol for this vnexpected good fortune, was thencefoorward very dutifull and louing towardes Leonardas Father and her Brethren, as the readiest seruant he had in his house: but the good man esteemed so much of him, as by no meanes hée would suffer him to be so painful, but with such fare as God sent him, entertained and welcommed him, not suffering him to depart thence in the space of a yére and more. Frysol often accompanying Leonarda to the field, shée séeing him so fayre and comely in personage, began secretly to affect him, yet would she not acquaint him therwith, fearing more to offend then to be refused. So soone as Frysol hadde thus recouered his strēgth, he determined to stay no longer there, wherefore finding Leonarda at leysure conuenient, he sayd. I know very well (faire Mayden) how much I am

beholding to you, for the ſpeciall grace and good I haue receiued by you; which inuiteth mee to make you this promiſe, that you ſhall not commaund any thing, but I will gladly accompliſh it. And becauſe I am deſirous to trauaile after ſtrange aduentures, I would requeſt that it might be with your willing conſent, promiſing you to ſtay no longer hence then the tearme of three yeeres, in which time I will not fayle to viſite you againe: and if my fortune ſo fall out as I am perſwaded, I doubt not to recompence what you did for me. That which I alway feared (ſir Fryſol) quoth ſhe, is nowe come to paſſe: notwithſtanding, ſeeing it is conuenient I ſhuld loue honour more then mine own pleaſure, I am content you ſhall go ſeeke your aduauncement ſo well begunne: but I pray you not to caſt your promiſe in oblinion. I will not to the death (quoth he) do any thing to diſlike you, or againſt your will, and ſince you haue ſo freely granted me libertie, perſwade your ſelfe my word ſhall bee my deede. So taking his leaue of her Father and Brethren, hee trauailed towards Allemaigne, where hee heard that chiualrie was more maintained then in any other place, and ſo rode hee foure dayes together without any aduenture: till paſſing through a Forreſt, hee heard a great noyſe of people fighting, wherefore making haſt that way, hee eſpied an auncient knight aſſaulted by fiue villaines that ſought to murder him, whom he reſiſted ſo well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his ſword to defende him. The Knight eſpying Fryſol, called to him for helpe, when hee (ſudainely finding a ſtrong yong Tree pluckt vp by the roote, came therewith to the villaines, ſaying, Why traiterous varlets, who prouoked you to offer ſuch ſhame to a knight? with which hee tooke one of them ſo ſodainely on the pate with his tree, as hee neuer roſe to tell who hurt him. The knight and hee together ſo behaued themſelues, as three of the villaines were laide dead before him, which the other three perceiuing, tooke themſelues to flight: whervpon the old knight ſeeing himſelfe ſo well deliuered, came

and

and embraced Fryſol with theſe wordes. Now may I ſay my good friend, that my life had periſhed without your aſſiſtance, bethinke your ſelfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentleneſſe: in meane time, I haue a houſe not farre hence, let me intreate you to lodge with mée this night, and I will make you the beſt entertainement the Country wil affoord. Whereto Fryſol agréed, promiſing to leaue him in ſafetie before he departed: for which the old knight thanked him, and as they went he diſcourſed to him, how theſe villaines aſſailed him, becauſe he had enforced them to ſurrender certaine heritages, which vniuſtly they detained from poore Orphanes, and for that cauſe ſet ſpies to watch him, that they might ſet vpon him and kill him: which ſurely they had done (quoth hee) without your ſuccour. In the continuance of theſe ſpéeches, they arriued at his Caſtle, where many of his Squires marualled to ſée him ſo ſore wounded, but ſpecially his Lady and his two Sonnes, to whome hée rehearſed the ſumme of his aduentures, and the great fauour and helpe hee found by Fryſol, for which cauſe he entertained him with exceeding honour. And ſo long abode Fryſol there with the Knight, till béeing deſirous to receiue the order of knighthood, hée came to the knight in this manner. May it pleaſe you Sir to beſtow on me horſe and armour, I will go to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, he béeing the moſt renowned Prince in the world. The good knight ſéeing him ſo forward to chiualrie, gaue him horſe, armour, and money for his iourney, whereupon hée ſet forward, and the third day after hée arriued at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trineus and Palmerin were departed towards Fraunce: which newes made Fryſol earneſtly deſire his knighthood, becauſe he intended with all ſpéede to trauaile thither likewiſe, in reſpect of the honour was there to be won. Fryſol vnderſtanding the Emperour was in the Chappell hearing diuine ſeruice, went thither, where beholding the Princeſſe Polinarda, he reputed her the onely faire Lady of the world,

thinking hée could neuer glut his eyes with regarding her: whereon, ſeruice béeing ended, he fell on his knée before the Emperour in this manner. Becauſe I knowing (inuincible Lorde) that you are renowned beyonde all other Potentates whatſoeuer, and that you make no ſmall account of knights aduenturous: I deſire that by your hand I may be numbred among them. The Emperour ſéeing him ſo yong and yet valiantly giuen, anſwered. I would bée loth my friend to deny a requeſt ſo reaſonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle borne, or no. My Lord (quoth he) I ſweare by the faith I owe to God and your Maieſtie, that I am noble borne, and of the bloud royall by my Fathers ſide. God forbid then (ſayd the Emperour) but you ſhould be knight, and Fortune ſhéeld you ſo well in chiualrie, as ſhée haue indued you with comely ſhape and beautie. Then was the Spurre put vppon his right héele, and the Emperour bad him riſe a Knight, commaunding his Daughter Polinarda to gyrd his Sword to him, which ſhée did, ſaying. Worthily and with happineſſe (Sir knight) may you imploy the order you haue receiued. Madame (quoth Fryſol) if héereafter any vertue or valour abyde in me, it ſhall be imployed onely for you, hauing thus honoured mée with my Sword, wherewith I hope to accompliſh ſuch déedes of armes, as ſhall renowne her name that gaue mée my weapon: but Polinarda made him no anſwere, becauſe Palmerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Fryſol was thus knighted, taking his leaue of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no ſmall haſt till he arriued at the Iouſts of Paris, where he determined for his firſt déed of chiualrie, to enter the Combate for the beauty of Polinarda. But he could not get thither ſo ſoone as hée intended, for he was hindred by the way with an vnexpected aduenture, which was, in a fayre forreſt, where hée beheld foure knights carrie away a Lady perforce, who ſéeing him, cryed. Ah good knight, for Gods ſake ſuccour mée: whereuppon Fryſol couching his Launce, ſent one of the

Knights

knights headlong to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sort, as now hee had but two left to resist him, on whome Frysol made tryall, how well he could imploy the gift of Polinarda. The knights seeing the hard fortune of their two other fellowes, the one hauing broken his necke in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recouery, tooke the wisest way for themselues, posting thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambush that might haue intrapped him, wherefore hee conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where he remained that night, and the next day sette forward to *Paris*, where hee arriued at the time he fought with Palmerin, according as it hath beene before rehearsed

After the knight of the Sunne, (who hencefoorth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as hee knewe not which way hee rode, so that the moysture of the euening dewe did great harme to his woundes, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, he was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to go ayde the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway, who was Nephew to the Emperour of Allemaigne, for that they molested him with troublesome warres: and the Duke beeing benighted, was glad to pitch his Tents in a fayre fielde, through which it fortuned Frysol to passe, complayning of the danger hee felt himselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being abroade foorth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this sorrowfull noyse, which made him sende his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: whither when they had brought him, the Duke pitting his estate, demaunded whence hee came, and who had wounded him in that sort. Then discoursed he the whole matter, how hee had fought with the knight that ouercame the Duke of Sauoy, and so long the fight endured, that the darke night

and the king cauſed them to be parted, neyther of them as yet conquered, and becauſe he would not returne into the Citie, ſought ſome Village where hée might conueniently lodge. The Duke of Gaule hearing the wordes of Fryſol, eſteemed him for a worthy and valliant knight, hauing ſo long endured againſt Palmerin vnuanquiſhed, wherefore hée ſayd. Sir knight, you are very welcome to me: all the aide and ſuccour I can giue you, you ſhall be ſure to finde with hearty good will: aſſuring you, that there is no knight liuing to whome I wiſh more euill, then him whom you haue this day fought withall. So cauſing him to bée vnarmed, willed him to reſt himſelfe vppon his owne bedde, and made his wounds be dreſſed, abyding there eight daies for the health of Fryſol. In which time, the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the king of England, which made him make more haſt to be gone, or els he would haue kept him company longer. My Lord (quoth Fryſol) ſo pleaſe you to accept my companie, I hope to behaue my ſelf ſo wel, as you ſhall not be diſcontented with me. The Duke thanked him, and reioyced that by his meanes ſo good a knight was preſerued, and did him all the honour he could deuiſe, taking him with him into England, where hee found the Countrey very much deſolated with warre to his no little griefe: but leaue we them, and returne to Palmerin.

Chap.

Chap. XLII

Of the great courteſie the King of Fraunce vſed to Trineus and *P*almerin: and of their returne into Allemaigne.

SO diligently were Palmerins wounds attended, which he had receiued by the hand of Friſol, as not long after he recouered his health, whereof the King and Prince Lewes were highly glad, & much more Trineus, to whom the King deſired to giue his Daughter Lucemania in mariage, which to compaſſe, hee intended a ſumptuous banquet, whereto he would inuite theſe Knaine, yet firſt he would acquaint the Quéne therewith, and therefore began the matter with her thus.

I ſée Madame, that our Daughter Lucemania is of péres ſufficient for a husband, and becauſe I euer more deſired her highest preferment, & for that I would knowe if the Prince Trineus to whom I could wish she were eſpouſed, were anything in loue ý way affected, for hardly in my iudgemẽt ſhall we finde a greater Lorde, béing heyre to the famous Emperour of Allemaigne: for this intent (I ſay) will I ordaine a banquet, whereto hée and noble Palmerin ſhall bee inuited, and our Daughter to beare them company in ý beſt ſorte you can deuiſe. The Quéne, who more deſired this marriage then the King her husband, anſwered. You doubt not (my Lord) that I requeſt her greateſt aduantage, wherefore let it be as you haue determined, and ſhée ſhall be preſent as you haue appointed. This matter thus proceéding,

cæding, two daies after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this banquet, and to honour them the more, the King cauſed his Sonne Lewes, with a braue companie of Knights and Gentlemen, to conduct them into the Pallace, where they were royally receiued by the King and Quæne, and ſo led vppe into the Chamber appointed for their banquet After they had waſhed, the King cauſed Trineus to ſit by him, and Palmerin againſt him, aboue whom ſat faire Lucemania his Daughter, being placed iuſt oppoſite to ỳ Prince Trineus, the Quæne to furniſh the Table, ſatte downe by the King. And albeit nature had beſtowed on the Princeſſe moſt exquiſite beautie, yet her ſumptuous accouſtrements made her appeare moſt amiable: but all coulde not moue the heart of Trineus, to forget her to whoſe ſhrine hee was dedicated. The banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawn, Trineus daunced with the fayre young Princeſſe, Courting her with manie honeſt & decent ſpæches, which made Lucemania ſuppoſe hæ loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to Engliſh Agriola. In this time the other Ladies were conferring of Palmerins Knightlie valour, when the Counte of Armignac his Sonne, intreating the Duke of Orleaunce Daughter to daunce, was thus ſtaied by her ſpæches, to the other Ladies. You ſæ faire Ladies (quoth ſhæ) that Palmern hath miſprized our beauties, to reuenge our iniurie, let vs all fall vppon him, and ſhut him in ſome place where hee may neuer come forth, for if hæ eſcape vs, the Allemaigne Ladies ſhall beare the honor from the French, which will bæ to vs perpetuall diſcredit. Theſe wordes ſhe ſpake with ſuch a pleaſant countenaunce, as moued all the other Ladies to ſmile, whereuppon the Ducheſſe of Burgundie anſwered. In ſooth it is neceſſarie we ſhould do ſo, and let vs not ſuffer him to gette out of our handes ſo eaſilie, as he did from the Knights that came to the Combat. All the companie lyked this motion well, but the King ſaid. Ladies, I will not conſent that Palmerin ſhall haue any wrong, becauſe I haue

taken

taken him into my guard. And who shall make recompence (quoth another Ladie) for the wrong he hath done vs? You ought to suffer for satisfaction, said the King, and be glad that you had the meane to see the best knight in the world, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseth your Maiestie to report, but what my abilitie is, it remaines to do you seruice: accounting my self more then happy by coming to your court, to haue knowledge of a prince so noble & vertuous, and no man liuing (next my lord the Emperor) that may command me more then your highnes. Among other speeches, the king broke the matter of his daughters marriage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the cause to Trineus, which he promised: but al in vain, for after they had taken their leaue to return towards Allemaigne, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the beauty and nobilitie of ỹ princesse, as for the support he might haue by matching with the daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thanke you my Lord for the good you wish mée, as also the honour the King affoordes mée: but another beyond her (whose renowne hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistresse of my affections. And because you are free from whom I will not hide my most secret thoughts, know that it is Agriola, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemie, yet by your ayde and mine owne good endeuours, I do not doubt to compasse my loue. You knowe my Lorde (quoth Palmerin) that I wish as wel to you as mine owne heart, as, when occasion serues, tryall shall make manifest. And séeing you haue fixed your loue on faire Agriola of England, imparting likewise the same so confidently to me: I am perswaded you could neuer make a better choise, therefore let nothing chaunge your opinion.

Thus rode they on with many sundrie speeches, not a little glaode they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin

cæding, two daies after were *Trineus* and *Palmerin* called to this banquet, and to honour them the more, the King cauſed his Sonne Lewes, with a braue companie of Knights and Gentlemen, to conduct them into the Pallace, where they were royally receiued by the King and Quæne, and ſo led vppe into the Chamber appointed for their banquet After they had waſhed, the King cauſed Trineus to ſit by him, and Palmerin againſt him, aboue whom ſat faire Lucemania his Daughter, being placed iuſt oppoſite to ỹ Prince Trineus, the Quæne to furniſh the Table, ſatte downe by the King. And albeit nature had beſtowed on the Princeſſe moſt exquiſite beautie, yet her ſumptuous accouſtrements made her appeare moſt amiable: but all coulde not moue the heart of Trineus, to forget her to whoſe ſhrine hee was dedicated. The banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawn, Trineus daunced with the fayre young Princeſſe, Courting her with mame honeſt & decent ſpæches, which made Lucemania ſuppoſe hæ loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to Engliſh Agriola. In this time the other Ladies were conferring of Palmerins Knightlie valour, when the Counte of Armignac his Sonne, intreating the Duke of Orleaunce Daughter to daunce, was thus ſtaied by her ſpæches, to the other Ladies. You ſee faire Ladies (quoth ſhæ) that Palmern hath miſprized our beauties, to reuenge our iniurie, let vs all fall vppon him, and ſhut him in ſome place where hee may neuer come forth, for if hæ eſcape vs, the Allemaigne Ladies ſhall beare the honor from the French, which will bæ to vs perpetuall diſcredit. Theſe wordes ſhe ſpake with ſuch a pleaſant countenaunce, as moued all the other Ladies to ſmile, whereuppon the Ducheſſe of Burgundie anſwered. In ſooth it is neceſſarie we ſhould do ſo, and let vs not ſuffer him to gette out of our handes ſo eaſilie, as he did from the Knights that came to the Combat. All the companie lyked this motion well, but the King ſaid. Ladies, I will not conſent that Palmerin ſhall haue any wrong, becauſe I haue

taken

taken him into my guard. And who shall make recompence (quoth another Ladie) for the wrong he hath done vs? You ought to suffer for satisfaction, said the King, and be glad that you had the meane to see the best knight in the world, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseth your Maiesty to report, but what my abilitie is, it remaines to doo you seruice: accounting my self more then happy by coming to your court, to haue knowledge of a prince so noble & vertuous, and no man liuing (next my lord the Emperor) that may command me more then your highnes. Among other speeches, the king broke the matter of his daughters marriage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the cause to Trineus, which he promised: but al in vain, for after they had taken their leaue to return towards Allemaigne, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the beauty and nobilitie of ỹ princesse, as for the support he might haue by matching with the daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thanke you my Lord for the good you wish mée, as also the honour the King affoordes mée: but another beyond her (whose renowne hath conquered me) is Lady and Mistresse of my affections. And because you are hee from whom I will not hide my most secret thoughts, know that it is Agriola, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemie, yet by your ayde and mine owne good endeuours, I doo not doubt to compasse my loue. You knowe my Lorde (quoth Palmerin) that I wish as wel to you as mine owne heart, as, when occasion serues, tryall shall make manifest. And seeing you haue fixed your loue on faire Agriola of England, imparting like wise the same so confidently to me: I am perswaded you coulde neuer make a better choise, therefore let nothing chaunge your opinion.

Thus rode they on with many sundrie speeches, not a little glade they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin

merin much more then was Trineus, for the deſire hée had to ſée his Ladie Polinarda: wherefore with the conſent of the Prince, he ſent a Squire before, to aduertiſe the Emperour of their comming: before whom he had no ſooner done reuerence, but he was preſentlie knowne, and demaunded in what eſtate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, where he had left them, & what accidents had happened in Fraunce? Then the Squire rehearſed the Combats and victories of his Maiſter againſt the Knights of Fraunce and the Dukes of Gaule and Sauoy, with their royall entertainment by the King and his Sonne, how manie portraits of Ladies Palmerin had conquered, with the whole diſcourſe of euerie action. Whereof the Emperour, the Empreſſe, and all the Lords and Ladies were meruailous glad, yet was not their ioye comparable to the Princeſſe Polinardaes, hearing the Squire reueale the honourable déedes of her loue, ſo that her conceit might be diſcerned by her coũtenance, and néeds ſhe muſt thus demaunde of the Squire. I pray thée tell me my Frende, how fares my Lorde and Brother, with his noble companion Sir Palmerin? The Squire well aduiſed, becauſe he knewe the loue betwéene her and his Maiſter, ſette his knée to the grounde againe with this anſwere. I left the Prince your Brother, accompanied with my Lord Palmerin, well and in good health: but chéefely my Lorde, who ſince you ſawe him, hath wonne the greateſt honour that euer Knight did. Afterward he reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what greéfe his Maiſter ſuſtained in his ſickneſs, when he could not be reuenged on ỹ Knight that loſt her counterfeit, which the Duke of Sauoy placed at the feete of Lucemania: and laſt of all, the perillous Combat betwéene his Maiſter and the knight of the Sun. Which ſhe tooke ſuch delight to heare, as ſhe made him repeate one thing manie times, and could not ſatiſfie her ſelfe ſufficientlie with theſe worthie reports. Which the Squire perceiuing, delighted as much to iterate euerie thing, and ſaid Beléene me Madame, the loue my Maiſter beares to her,

for

for whose beautie he entered the Combat, in my opinion is incredible, for he is much more hers then his owne, and I haue seene him in such sort thinking on her, as one could hardlie iudge him aliue or deade, fearing least any other should rob him of his loue: such is ỹ iealousie of his vnspotted affection, albeit my Maister reputes his Ladie immoueable. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at ỹ Squires wordes, annswered. The Ladie should be very ill counselled, being honoured with the loue of so good a Knight as Palmerin, to make refusall of his worthie seruice: and I promise thee, by the faith of a Princesse, that if I knew her, for the vnwillingnes I haue to heare him cõplain, I would endeuour to cause her like none but him, and therein to thinke her selfe the most happie among Ladies. Wherfore [if thou maist bee so bolde] tell thy Maister at his returne, that I will be a meane to ayde him towardes her he loues: and therewithall present him my fauourable salutations, in that I euermore desired the fortunate ende of his enterprise, not so much for the liking of his Ladie, being beloued of the best, as for the renowned chiualrie that harbours in his hart. These speeches ended, the squire returned to meete the Prince Trineus and his Maister, to whome he reported his talke with Polinarda: which Palmerin reioycing at, let fall all iealousie, esteeming her now the truest Ladye liuing. The men of Gaunt for ioy of his returne, that so worthilie deliuered them from the oppressions of the enchaunted Knight, went forth in seuerall companies, according as honour, yeeres and office directed them, to meete him, and so conueied him with signes of ioy to the Pallace, where the Emperour so much abased himselfe, as he came downe into the open Court to entertaine him, and glad likewise to see the safe returne of his Sonne Trineus saying. My Sonne, right happie is thy returne, and you sir Palmerin, perswade your selfe so welcome as hart can deuise, assuring you, that your successe hath not a little pleased me. And needs must I account the Ladie especially bounden to you, for whose

loue

loue you haue paſt ſo manie dangerous Combats, good reaſon hath ſhe to loue you, in reſpect of your trauailes for her, renowning her ſo much by your knightlie chiualrie, ſo that if ſhe recompence you not according to your merits, wherthille may ſhée be condemned of ingratitude, Alas my Lord (quoth he) her beautie commaundeth higher matters then all my labours. Polinarda béeing in preſence, remembred well her Fathers words, and therefore ſhe intended to ſhun that condemnation, ſaying to her ſelfe. he that deſerues honour ought to were it, and he that commaundes the ſoule, maye eaſilie ouer-rule the paſſions of the minde: lette my knight then be rewarded as hée hath rightlie deſerued. All this while, the eyes of theſe two louers ſo well diſcharged their office, as Palmerin wiſhed that Iuno had graunted him ſo much, as ſhe did ſometime to Argus her ſhepheard, that he might haue more eaſe in his afflictiõ: for he thought it not enough, onely to behold the beautie of ſo rare and excellent perfection. Againe, he was not a little tormented, becauſe Polinarda (to couer what ſhé would gladlye none ſhould diſcerne) caſt her lookes on the ground, which ſometimes ſhée likewiſe compelled him to doo: but her preſence whome he eſtéemed aboue all other things, would not allow him that conſideration. The Emperour at length commanded, that all the figures of the Ladies which hée had wonne in Combat, ſhould be brought before him: but when he ſawe ſo manie, and of ſo contrarie qualitie, hée could not but commende Syr Palmerins victorie. Then were diuers iudgments giuen of the beautie of the portraits, eache one of the beholders after their ſeuerall opinions. Ptolome made deſcription of whom they were, and who did enter Combate on their behalfe, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin: whereat they all admired, ſome commending their complexions, others their ſwéete yong yéeres, and altogither the proweſſe of him that brought the conqueſt with him, whereupon the Emperour ſaid. In good faith Sir Palmerin, I bleſſe the time that Fortune ſent me ſo good a knight,

knight, and thinke not to carrie away all the glorie of your victorie your selfe, for I meane to haue parte because you gaue your selfe mine. And would the Ladie you loue were in this Courte or in my Realme, to the ende I might so assist you in your suite, as you might both be mine. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the victorie is wholly yours, being gotten by your knight, and if the Ladie I loue were not vnder your regiment, then should I complaine of a greater matter then abiding with you, being obedient to your highnes as your humble subiect and seruaunt. With which aunswer the Emperour was highly contented, and Trineus comming to his Sister Polinarda, sayd. Trust mee fayre Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin, then to anie other knight in the worlde beside, and rather accept of him then of the Duke of Lorrayne, who maintaining your beautie, was ouercome by the Duke of Sauoy, and your picture placed at the feete of Lucemania, where yet it had remained, but that Palmerin conquering the Duke, remoued the figure of the French Princesse in obeysaunce to you. Polinarda not content with the vndiscrete enterprise of the Duke of Lorrayne, aunswered. In soth good Brother, the Duke of Lorraine is none of my knight, and I repute Palmerin to haue more bountie and valour then the Duke can haue of wit or courage, therefore great meruaile that hee was not slaine. The Emperour seeing Polinarda was offended with the Duke of Lorrayne, aunswered. you cannot (Daughter) forbid men to execute their owne pleasure, and if the Duke liked to enter the Combat for your beautie, it was for the honourable good will he bare you, and albeit hee could not reache his desire, yet haue you no cause to thinke the worse of him. Polinarda being a Princesse of rare wit and iudgment, as anie of her time, would multiplye no more words, but continued silent: neuertheless, Palmerin remembring her aunswere to Trineus, intreated her to keepe all the portraits of the Ladies, determining to sende them to whom they belonged, according to their degrées in

birth

birth and honor. Which ſhe thankfully accepted, and ſpending this whole daie in diuers delights, Palmerin beeing in the euening in his Chamber accompanied with Ptolome, ſent his Dwarfe to the Princeſſe to appoint the time of their meeting: and ſhee ſeeing the Dwarfe, caught him about the necke, demaunding of him what newes hee brought. None but good Madame, anſwered the Dwarfe, my Maiſter hath ſent you the Bonſoir; and therewith his humble duetie to your highnes: for, beeing your Knight, and liuing onely to doe you ſeruice, he hath good hope that your vertuous nature will not forget, how many daungers hee hath paſt for your ſake: and now doth loue appeale for his deſired reward. Therefore good Madame, as you are hartfaſt, vnite your ſelues handfaſt, giue my Maiſter life, your ſelfe comfort, and make me happy by carrying of this meſſage: for I vowe by the reuerend faith I beare you both, that I will not departe without ſome gracious aunſwere. Polinarda ſmyling to heare Vrbanillo ſpeake ſo earneſtlie, ſayd. The aſſuraunce thou giueſt me of the truſtie affection thou beareſt thy Maiſter, doth not a little content mee, and pittie it were ſo good a Knight ſhould labour all this while in vaine: therefore perſwade thy Maiſter, that to morrow at night I will meete him where we were wont, and there will I reſolue him to his owne content.

Chap.

Chap. XLIII.

How Palmerin went in the night to the appointed place, to confer with his Lady Polinarda, and the amorous communication they had togither.

VRbanillo with chérefull countenaunce returned to his maiſter, declaring to him his talk with Polinarda, her ſwéet looks, her gracious anſwers, how choiſely ſhé loued him, and laſtly her promiſe to meet him in the accuſtomed place: yet is not this all, for before you depart with her, ſhe hath aſſured me to reſolue you to your own content. And that is it I want (q he) for might I once receiue my content, then ſhould I think my trauailes rewarded. And doubt you not thereof ſaid the Dwarfe, if ſhe be a woman of her word. Then Prolome béeing preſent, aſked the dwarfe if hée ſaw Bryonella. No in ſoth (quoth he) ſhe was not in the princeſſe Chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was ſhe acquainted with my comming, yet dare I thinke ſhe will be there with my Lady. The time béeing come, the Ladies were at the place with deuotion anſwereble to thoſe ſilent houres, and theyr Knights not fayling theyr appointment, what pleaſure on eache ſide was conceiued, is not to be enquired, for all wiſhings are nothing in reſpect of their contentments. Polenarda hauing her frendlye Knight before her, ſo ſwéete a bluſh eclipſed her countenaunce, as woulde driue nature into a ſtudie to frame the like, and thus ſhe began. Alas my ſwéete Frende, in what paine, anguiſh and heauineſſe of

heart, hath your abſence brought me? what teeres haue fallen from mine eyes, and drops of blood from my heart, by renting ſighs and ceaſeleſſe acclamations, remembring our pleaſures paſt, and preſent comfort, and the hope of better hap to come? What dolorous conceit hath often wounded me, thinking on ſo many hazards and perrils as might hinder me from ſeeing you againe? and not without cauſe, beléeue me, for had you miſcarried, neuer Lady ſuſtained ſuch a loſſe, in reſpect of your knightly valour, and the vnfained loue I beare you, whereof (before I depart) I meane aſſuredly to reſolue you, in requitall of your honourable trauailes for maintenance of my beautie. And hereof perſwade your ſelfe good Knight, that to haue you, I refuſe al other good fortunes whatſoeuer: and therefore I care not though it were openly knowne, how eſpecially I prize, deſire, loue, and eſteeme you. Palmerin confounded with this long expected comfort, and not able to endure with ſilence, interrupted her in this maner. By the faith of your ſworne Seruant, ſweete Madame, the perrils, miſhaps, and dangers I haue paſt ſince my departure, neuer deſerued the very leaſt of your complaints, nor could my endeuors proue ſuch, as your incomparable perfections merrited, the onely remembraunce whereof, was ſufficient to make me inuincible: wherefore ſweete Miſtreſſe, if I haue woonne any honor, your fauour was the meane, and your beautie gaue me the vertue, ſtreaming ſo plentifully from your chaſte eyes, as the water from the Fountaine. To little purpoſe were it now to rehearſe, the ſtrange aſſaults, maſſacring thoughts, and violent flames, wherein I haue burned and continually béene crucifid, ſince the houre it pleaſed you to let me ſée Fraunce: vndoubtedly the very meaneſt of my ſufferings was able to deſtroy me, without the reſolute aſſurance of your diuine fauor, which triumphing ouer death, ſhal make me liue continually. So that the deſire to let you knowe how aſſuredly I am yours, and the continuall wiſhing to ſée you againe, gaue mee victory ouer your enemies, and

brought

brought mee safe thorow all extremities, to honour you as I do at this present. It nowe remaines Madame, that you regard the truth of my loue, the permanence thereof, and the instant passions worse then death to mée, yet with this promise, that I presume not of any action meritorious but your grace, which is able to strengthen mée in greatest debilitie. And no where know I to seeke for pittie and support of my cares, if not onely by hir who hath the souraigne power to chase hence, the cruell and euer threatning menaces of death. Forbeare good Lord, quoth shée, thus to talke of death, considering I cannot liue one houre without you, or holde I any comfort of my life, but onely in loning you, to enioy you: so that what you endure, I suffer, and no passion torments you but, I haue a share therein, so deuoutly is my spirite consorted with yours. And therefore thinke not your oppressions greater then mine, for if you doe, it procéedeth by want of experience of feminine passions, the extremity whereof farre surmounteth your sexe. For which cause, to giue some rest to our long and ouertrauelled desires, I giue you héere my hand, and therewithall a chast heart, accepting you onely for my Lord and husband, and to my promise call heauen and earth to witnes. Where is the wit so raintie, the tongue so flourishing, or the pen so diligent, as can conceiue, report, or set downe in perfect colours, the ioyes of these louers? You fayre Lordings, and you likewise swéete Ladies, that long haue trauailed in amorous affections, and in the end receiued the rewards of your passions, by your owne conceits can imagin the content of these twaine: for Palmerin was in this opinion, that Iupiter had not the like pleasure with fayre Alcmena, for whome hée caused one night to endure the space of three daies, as hée hadde with his gracious mistresse Polinarda. For nowe the manifolde strokes he gaue for beautie, were héere remembred, his daungerous trauailes in all places recounted, his absence with kinde gratulations welcommed, his teares, sighs, complaints, and feares resolued,

and laſtly, his long, vnchangeable and moſt faithfull loue, friendlie rewarded. Let vs not heere forget, that Ptolome and Brionella were in ỳ ſame predicament, for he knowing her to be of the noble and auncient ligne, beſide, ſole heyre to the houſe of Saxon, might count himſelfe highly honored with ſuch a Wife: and therefore the like coniunction was made betweene them, ſo that now theſe Knights and Ladies were eſpouſed before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremonie of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Vrbanillo, and he breakes off this pleaſure, becauſe the time was ſo farre ſpent, as they muſt needes depart: which with much adoo they did, leauing theyr Ladies examining theyr content, the Princeſſe ſone after, thus conferring with Brionella. Alas faire Frend, it is doubtfull what danger may ariſe, becauſe you haue contracted your ſelfe to Ptolome without the Emperors conſent: how will you anſwer when you are charged with the fault? Brionello, who now feared nothing but the preuenting of her loue, anſwered. In ſoth Madame, you ſpeake with great reaſon, you now's giue counſell when the deede is done, and cannot bee reuoked till it bee diſpatched: would you haue all the good fortune your ſelfe, and ſuffer your Frends to enioy no parte with you? truſt mee that is vnconſcionable dealing, for hee that made you to loue, framed me to the ſelfe-ſame mettall. But I ſee you make the occaſion to mee, to learne howe to anſwere your owne deede: let vs referre all to him Madame, that appointed your choiſe by deſtinie, and mine by mine owne lyking. Manie other pleaſaunt ſpeeches paſſed betweens them, and diuers times theyr knights came to viſite them, till Fortune who will neuer ſuffer things long in one eſtate, ſent an occaſion to hinder this delight of theyr loue: for there was a Meſſenger come to the Courte from the King of Norway, Nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus deliuered his meſſage. Mighty Lord, the king of Norway my Maiſter, requires your aſſiſtance in his great diſtreſſe, againſt the king of England,

land, who with a mightie and puissaunt Armie is entered his dominions, where he hath made great wast & slaughter of his people, in diuers skirmishes and conflicts passed betweene them, so that he neuer had like nede as at this instant. Trust mee (quoth the Emperour) I will assist him with right good will, and his misfortune doth not a little greeue me, but I will take order for it immediatlye, and my power shall be with him so soone as possible may bee: with which aunswere the Messenger departed. Now as concerning the cause of these warres, betweene the kings of Norwaye and England, it was procured by displeasure of succor, that the King of Norway gaue to ỹ King of Scots his Brother, who helde warre with England about the taking of certaine Shippes: the Emperour likewise his heanie enemie, and for that cause he promised helpe so soone to the King his Nephew. Which when Trineus vnderstoode, that his Father declared himselfe displeased with the Father of his beloued Agriola, (whose loue no occasion could alter) hee was greatlie discontented, yet dissembling his conceit, determined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Cozin, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompanie him to his Chamber, where he would acquaint him with some part of the sorrowe he conceiued, by the succour his Father would sende to the king of Norwaye, against her Father whose Seruant he had vowed himselfe, and therefore (quoth hee) let me desire you to conceale a request I shall make to you. You knowe my Lord, said Palmerin, that I will no lesse obey you then the Emperour your Father, commaund therefore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall be executed. So it is, quoth Trineus, that I would haue you not accompanie the power my Father sendes by Sea, but do so much for me, that you, Ptolome & my selfe (vnknowne to any) may assist the King of England in his warres, by which meanes I doubt not to compasse the thing I most of all desire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is only dedicated to her seruice, and so well do I hope to imploye my

paines, that ſhe ſhall haue cauſe to loue me, and regarde the paine I ſuffer for her ſake: and but I gaine the fortune to purchaſe my loue, right ſone and ſuddaine ſhall you heare of my death. You that haue felt the like torments can cenſure of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperor my Father, becauſe of the hatred hee beares the King of England, aduiſe me therefore good Frœnd what I ſhall doo.

Theſe ſpeeches were nothing pleaſing to Palmerin, ſeeing hee muſt now againe depart from his Ladie: but becauſe he earneſtly affected Trineus, and knew how well he might helpe him in his loue, anſwered. Aſſure your ſelfe my Lord, that I will labour dilligently for your good, and ſhall aſſiſt you to my vttermoſt, in that you beare ſuch loue to the Princeſſe. And I am of the opinion, that hauing receiued the order of Knighthood, which the Emperour your Father will not denie, it would auaile you much, to tell your Father how you deſire (vnknowne) to ayde the King of Norway. For my parte, if he demaunde my aduiſe, I will like it ſo well, as becauſe the Armie cannot bee readie ſo ſone, your honor, Ptolome and my ſelfe, will ryde before towards the King, and ſo may we accompliſh what we ſo earneſtlye deſire. This counſell pleaſed ſo well Trineus, as he intended on the morrow to requeſt his order of the Emperor: as alſo how gladlie he would aſſiſt ỹ King of Norway, and how neceſſarie it was for him to go before the Armie, as Palmerin and he had deuiſed togither.

Chap.

Chap. XLIIII.

How Trineus was knighted, and what happened to him afterward.

ON the morrow, this young prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was necessarie he should be knighted, he gaue attendance to find the Emperor at leysure, when hee might sollicite his highnesse with his sute: and vnderstanding that he was walking in his gallerie, he went to him, and on his knee thus began. Dread Lord and Father, so pleased your Maiestie, it is now time I should receiue my order of Knighthood, and more necessary now then at any other time, in respect of my earnest desire to aide the King of Norway my cozin in his wars. The Emperour meruailing whence this humor should proceed, answered. Why Trineus, do you think your selfe able to take so waighty a charge in hand? truly such honor is soone receiued, but to maintaine it as it ought to be, and preuent the dangers incident therto, is more hard then you weene, and maketh proofe of the most corragious stomack, in that neither paine, feare or danger must hinder, what a matter of so great consequence doth commãd. And perswade your selfe, that such as counselled you therto, knowe scant themselues theyr duetie in those affayres, wherefore for a time haue patience, and refer re it till better abilitie: for I will sende good store of other Knightes in this expedition, who shal well excuse you to the king my nephewe.

Trineus not contented with this answer, replyed. In truth

my Lord, if I were not deſirous to fulfill what is required in chiualrie, I would not ſo boldly haue made this demaund, therefore for ſuch exceptions as you admitted, let me not I beſeeche you be denied at this time: and let this induce you, that ſuch as are borne to gouerne kingdomes, if they giue themſelues onely to pleaſure, without paſſing through the pykes of ſome dangerous hazarde, they are not worthy to be lifted to ſuch honour. The Emperor hearing the braue minde of his Sonne, and that hys wordes ſauoured of courage, conceiuing well thereof, anſwered. Since your deſire is ſo earneſt to be made knight, I am well contented, but I would haue it done honorably, and before a greater aſſemblie then now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, ſaid Trineus, there is no neede of tryumphe before victorie: let ſuch pomp remaine I pray you, till I haue wonne honor and account by my deedes. The Emperor ioyfull of the Princes good opinion, perſwaded himſelfe he ſhuld proue fortunate, wherfore he graunted his requeſt, ſo that Palmerin might accompanie him in his voyage. Of which condition Trineus was not ſorie, becaute in him conſiſted all his hope of ſucceſſe: ſo his Father commaunded him to prepare himſelfe for his order, whereupon Trineus made himſelfe a coſtly Armour, and another for Palmerin, the deuiſes being changed, becauſe they intended to paſſe vnknowne. Now had the Emperour leuied an Armie of tenne thouſande good Souldiers, the conduct whereof was appointed to the Counte Tolano, a knight valiant and hardie, hauing had like charge in ſundrie occaſions of war: therefore ſo ſone as all things were in readines, they were imbarqued, and ſayled with ſuch beneſite of winde and weather, as ſone after they toke landing in England. Where a while we wil leaue, returning to Polinarda, greatly diſcontent with her Brothers departure, becauſe of Palmerin, and Brionella no leſſe troubled for her frende Ptolome: but the Princeſſe feeling newe afflictions for the abſence of her loue, came to her Brother, ſaying. I knowe not (Brother) who hath aduiſed you to

venture

venture so dangerously, our Cosin hauing assistance sufficient without hazarding your person, let mée then intreate you (good Brother) to aect occasions that promise better securitie. Better occasions sister, quoth he? it is impossible, if it be a thing allowable and vertuous to succor a stranger, howe much more then is it to our kinsman, especially such a one as is our Cosin of Norway? therefore I pray you be of good comfort till my returne. And if it so happen that my Father in my absence intend your marriage, loke that you consent not till I come home againe, for my not being héere will serue you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised, and her word so past, stode her in no small stead afterward, as you shall find in the discourse following. So sone as Trineus was prouided of all thinges for his knighthode, he came to the Emperour in this maner. I desire you my Lord to accomplish your promise, hauing doone my dutie as you commaunded me. With right good will my Sonne, said the Emperour, go arme your selfe. Then went hée, Palmerin, and Ptolome, armed to the Chappell, Trineus beeing in gréene armour, figured all ouer with harts of Golde, and in his Shéeld was portrayed a Knight vnarmed, holding in his hand a Bowe bent, with an arrow ready to shoote againſt a gréene trée, whereon hung a scrole, which had written in it in Letters of Gold this mot: Madame, quand Mourray-ie? Whereby he meant, that the loue which made him enterprise this voyage, should beare him companie till death. Palmerins armour was all blacke, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Lady, and in his Shéelde for his deuise, was figured a goodly Eagle, shrowding a little Birde vnder his winges, declaring therby the fauour he had receyued of his Mistresse. Sone after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where hée knighted his Sonne, put his Spur on his héele, and girded his sword about him: afterward they went to dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for ioy of the newe knight. Palmerin and Ptolome to conuoyt their Ladies before they depar-

departure according as they were wont, when the Princesse Polinarda thus began. Alas my Lorde, what greefe will your departure be to me? with what patience do you think I am able to endure it? perswade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence will be my death, or at least a cause of such danger as I shall neuer recouer. Bee well aduised therefore how you deale with me, for the intent of my Brother might be broken if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then saue my life by your speedie returne. These words were deliuered with such teares and reking sighes, as Palmerin might well perceiue the vehemencie of her greefes, and aunswering her beauinesse with as earnest oppression, said. Sweete Ladie bee perswaded, and temper your sorrow with patience, considering the vnion of our spirites makes a simpathie of afflictions, if then for my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to sheeld your owne perill, let me intreate you to be resolued, in that my returne shall bee with such expedition as you will commaunde. But if you continue thus melancholie, you will bewray what as yet shoulde bee concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and thinke well of my departure, which is chefely to seeke out a knight, against whome I fought in Fraunce for your beautie, as for any other matter you may beleeue me.

Whereuppon he reported his Combat with the knight of the Sunne, which made the Princesse (as well for Palmerins promise, as the account he made of Frisol) somewhat better quieted, to answer. If it be so my Lord, that your returne will bee with such speede, I shall enforce my selfe to beare the burthen of my cares with as much patience as I can, and see you faile not your appointed time: but tell mee I praye you, what Armes beares the knight of the Sunne you spake off? which Palmerin discribing, Polinarda remembred him, saying. My Lord, I know now verye well what he is, for eight daies after your departure towardes Fraunce, the Emperour my Father knighted him, commanding

ding

ding me to gird him with his sword, which I could not but obey: wherein the knight glorying, solicited me with affections not liking me, which I pray you reuenge, being ỹ man whom the matter nèrest concerneth. After many other amiable conferences, the knights humbly toke their leaue of their ladies, and in the morning betimes, the mariners called on Trineus and his company to hast aboorde, because the wind serued wel for England, which they performed with al spèd, hauing first taken their farwell of the Emperour and the Court. So hoysing sayle, they set on to Sea, and in good time came within the kenning of England: where we will forsake them a while, and returne to the Emperors Armie, which he sent to the king of Norway his Nephewe.

Chap. XLV.

How the Armie of the Emperour of Allemaigne arriued in England, vnder the conduct of the Count Tolano: & how they were discomfited.

REhearsed it hath bène alreadie, how the Emperor of Allemaigne promised ỹ messenger of Norway, to send his maister the ayde of tenne thousand men at Armes, of whom the Count Tolano was made generall, and they arriued in England without any resistance. The Counte vnderstanding by his auaunt courers, the order of the Enemies Armie, and where the King of Norwaye was encamped, raunged his men in good order, and marched toward their Forte, which the King had made in

in the Duchie of Gaule, and which he had deſtroyed during the tyme the Duke was in Fraunce, hauing there fortified the ſtrongeſt Cittie, and the hauen that ſtood beſt for their commoditie. Crenus at his returne with Friſol, as you haue heard, vnderſtanding the ſpoyle of his Countrey, aſſembled his people together, and with the ayde of the King of England, came within a dayes iourney of his enemyes. The Countie Tolano, hearing thereof, appoynted his men in ſeuerall companies, and the next day gaue ſuch ſharpe ſkirmiſhes to the Gauls, as they were conſtrained to keepe within their defences. Hereby the Duke determined to bid them battaile, and to helpe him in his attempt, hee cauſed an ambuſh of a thouſand light horſmen, to place themſelues in a Forreſt neere adioyning, of which companie Friſol was the leader: and to prouoke the Norwayes to the field, hee ſent out certaine men at Armes well prouided, who ſcouted heere and there, to the ende the Allemaignes, who had beene ſo hote the day before, ſhould be compaſſed with the ſecrete ambuſh, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation. For ſo ſoone as the Allemaignes ſaw the Engliſhmen ſo ſcattered, they diſlodged themſelues, and followed them, with the whole armie of the King of Norway, becauſe they were perſwaded that they toke themſelues to flight: but ye Gauls not diſmayed with their comming, being but foure thouſand horſe, and tenne thouſande footemen, came valiantly againſt the Allemaigne Enſignes, and then began a verie fierce encounter, but the Engliſhmen wiſe and politique, fearing miſfortune, came on with their reregard towards the Forreſt where the ambuſh lay. When the king of Norway ignorant of their intent, ſuddainly made after them with the greateſt part of his power, but they had a worſe welcome then they expected, for the Engliſhmen aduertiſed what they ſhould do, gathered vpon the Forreſt ſide, charging their enemyes with ſuch a ſharpe aſſault, as in leſſe ſpace then an houre, two thouſand of them were ſlaine. Friſol perceyuing the tyme was come to ſhew himſelfe, calling his

squadron togither, cryed. Upon them valiantly my frendes, the spoyle is ours. So entred they pel-mell among the Allemaignes, making such slaughter of thē as was wonderful to behold, for albeit they thought not of this deceit, they were so ouer wearied with valiance, as whē they came to the exploit they could do nothing, but were slaine downe right, such valour shewed Frisol and his fresh supply, forcing them to flight, and they following them, being glad to take the Cittie of Tomar which was strongly fortified. Which whē the King of Norway perceiued, he staied not long after thē, because he sawe it was not best for him, and therefore fled after them for companie at the hard heeles, and got the Cittie in good time, else had they all perished. Thus remained Crenus Maister of the fielde, and following his successe, the next daye begirt the Cittie of Tomar with siege, swearing neuer to depart thence, till he sawe the Cittizens eyther through the Gates or the walles. Yet had this courage of his beene soone coled, if Frisol like a good Captaine hadde not cherished vp his men, when Crenus at one saillie of the enemie lost two thousand men, and therefore said. Why howe nowe my louing Frendes and companions? will you flye or faint at the houre of good fortune? desire you not to purchase the vertus so highlie esteemed? know you not that you deale with people halfe conquered, and altogither discouraged? courage then my Brethren, courage, and let vs not exchange our reputation with their feare and fainting: you giue mee double strength good Frendes, if but with good countenaunce, you will make them know, what cowardly cranens they are. Folow me braue Englishmen, and this verie day will we giue them punishment, as their treason and rebellion hath well deserued. These words renewed eache ones courage meruailoullie, so that the Duke with a fresh supply beganne againe thus to animate them. You knowe my good Frends, that although we are but a handfull in respect of them, what successe we haue alreadie had in our encounters, so that with greater ease may wee nowe

con-

conquere, weakening them ſo mightily as we haue doone: let vs not diſmay them, but witneſſe that the woꝛſt man amongſt vs, is moꝛe valiant and hardy in armes, then the greateſt Lord that is in theyꝛ companie, each man theꝛefoꝛe cheriſh his hope, and beard our enemies to the very teeth. The day following the enemie came foꝛth at a poſterne Gate, and held the Dukes power very good play, and the Norwayes very well appointed with Bowes and arrowes, gauled the hoꝛſe ſo cruelly, as they were glad to take theyꝛ Campe, whereupon the Counte Tolano in hope of the day, followed vpon them with his Allemaigne courtlaces, which Fryſol perceiuing, mette him in the face with his Engliſh ſquadꝛon, and giuing the ſpurres to his Hoꝛſe, ranne with his Launce quite thoꝛow his body: whereat the Allemaignes much amazed, when they ſaw theyꝛ Generall fall dead from his hoꝛſe, determined valiantly to reuenge his death, but Fryſol and his men dealt with them ſo roundly, as the ſtouteſt was glad and faine to make them way. Yet had they hemde in Fryſol with ſuch a troupe, as if the Duke had not ſpeedily come with reſkew, they hadde taken him: and then began the ſharpeſt bickering, foꝛ the Duke of Gaule and Fryſol with theyꝛ men ſo beſtirred them, as the Allemaignes cleane diſcouraged, beganne to diſoꝛder themſelues, and with the Norwayes fled to the Cittie ſo faſt as they could, where Fryſol and his men had entred, but that the king of Norway not daring to come into the field, was there with men ſufficient to reſiſt his entrie. Thus remained the victoꝛy of the Duke of Gaule, by the braue pollicies of Fryſol and his men, hee being generally commended of the armie: and thus retired the Allemaignes and Norwaies to their ſhame and diſhonour. After the retrait ſounded by the king of Norway, hee ſent the Duke to demaund truce foꝛ foure and twentie houres, that they might bury the dead, among whom was the Counte Tolano: which being graunted him, hee cauſed the Counts body to bee embalmed: who by the Counſell of his Loꝛds and Captaines,

was

was sent home into his Countrey. The king and his company secretly in the night embarqued themselues, to ioyne with the king of Scots who exacted his comming, and then did the Cittizens send word to the Duke, that by the breake of day they would yeelde the keyes of their Gates to him: whereupon Frysol was Lieuetenant generall for the Duke of Gaule, and entred honourably the Citie of Tomar, where the Englishmen resisted themselues for two or three dayes, to recompence their paynes with profit and pleasure. The enemie was no sooner departed vnder sayle, but there arose such a terrible tempest, as the most part of their vessels perished in the sea, and the other were so scattered, as they had lost the sight of one another: yet was some small number remayning with the king, as well of Allemaignes as his owne countrymen: so getting safe to shore in his kingdom, he determined a reuenge for his great ouerthrow, but he could not compasse his intent, as you shall reade hereafter.

Chap. XLVI.

¶ Howe after the Prince Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome, were arriued in England, they went to the Court, and what torments the Prince endured for his loue to the faire Lady Agriola.

TRineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, being landed within foure daies iourney of the kings Campe, which was prouided against the king of Scots, were aduertised that the king stayed but the comming of the Duke of Tintriel, and then he meant to bidde his enemie battaile, that hadde so boldly presumed vppon parte of his Realme

Realme. The garders of the port where they landed, ſéing they were ſtrangers, would ſuffer them paſſe no further, till they knew their names, whither they went, and what they came for. Palmerin aunſwering on the behalfe of them all, ſaid.

Good friends, we are Grecian knights, & trauaile ſtrange countries to ſéeke aduentures, and becauſe we heard ỳ your king menaceth war, againſt his auncient and malenolent enemie the king of Scots, we come to offer our ſelues and our ſeruice to him, ſo pleaſe his Maieſtie to except it. This anſwere ſo well contented the Officers, as by their meanes they were conducted to the Court, where they were honorably entertained, and two daies together were there feaſted with the King, in which time Trineus vnderſtood, that the Quéene and her Daughter, were aboue twentye miles thence, whereupon the nert morning they take their iourney thither, and by dinner time came where the quéne laie. But it fell out ſo happilie for Trinuus, as before they came to the place where the Court abode, they mette the Quéene and her traine, who daily went to a Chappell, not a quarter of a mile from the Cittie, to heare diuine ſeruice, as ſhe kept it for a continuall exerciſe, and with her was faire Agriola her Daughter. The Quéene and all her Ladies alighted from their Palfrayes, they entred the Chappell, the Prince well regarding the Goddeſſe of his heart, who belike making her prayers more breefe then her Mother, came forth with her waiting Ladies, to walke vnder a companie of greene Trées néere adioyning. Trineus ſéeing her a creature ſo rare and excellent, made doubt in a matter of aſſuraunce, leaſt he ſhould bée ſurprized as Acteon was, when he found Diana bathing among her Nimphes. He being thus caried away with meruailous conceit of her beautie, ſaluted not the Princeſſe as ſhée paſſed before him, nor heard Palmerin who reprooued him for omitting his courteſie: but wading further and further into this amorous furie, ſpake ſo loude as he was eaſilie heard, in this manner.

O heauens, will you suffer the perfections of a Ladie so diuinelie accomplished, to be ỹ cause of my vndeserued death? when may the time come for me, to let her vnderstande my desire to do her seruice? or howe might she knowe the loyall affection I beare her? One of the Ladies of honor attending on the Princesse, reputing his words vnwise & ouer-bolde, answered. Why Sir knight, where learned you so little courtship, as when the fairest in the Westerne world passeth before you, you make no gentle gesture or salutation? I doubt that what is counted honestie and vertue among men of qualitie, with you is esteemed harsh and vnciuill, which makes me repute you more meete for the kitchen, then to beare the honourable office and rich Armes of a knight, as you do. Trineus as it were awaked out of a traunce, said' Ah sweete Ladie pardon me, for by my fayth, I can neither tell what you sayd, nor well where I am my selfe: for euen as you ended, I felt such a passion strike me to ỹ very heart, as death will soone arrest me without remedie. The Ladie, who knewe not his meaning, checked him againe, thus. Were it not better then for you to be in the field, then heare in this foolish and vndiscreete pensiuenesse? It is true Ladie, (quoth the Prince) that at this time I haue shewed my selfe vnmannerly, and a slender Courtier, yet is not the blame altogether to bee throwne on mée, ignorant who the Ladie was which you speake of: for wee are straunge knightes, and are come farre from this Countrey, with intent to aide and succour the king in his warres, with our vttermost endeuours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with no more regarde done our dutie to your Mistresse, may it please you to entreate her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: for satisfaction whereof, we will go serue the king her father in battell, where we doubt not so well to behaue our selues, as shall deserue our pardon, if so be she will not at this instant so fauour vs. And I gladly would, faire Ladie, that such seruice should bee done by her commaundement, for our strength and vertue by her affections augmented, will at-

tribute the honor to her that ſo graciouſly aſſiſted vs, wherfore, ſo pleaſe you to make knowen our good intent towards her, we ſhall for ſuch kindnes remain indebted to you. The Ladie toke pleaſure in hearing Trineus, eſpecially perceyning the zeale of him & his companions, to imploy their valour on the Kings behalfe, which cauſed her immediatelie doo this meſſage to the Princeſſe, who at that inſtant (as a thing fatall to her) was wounded with loue: whereuppon ſhe ſent them anſwer by her Gouerneſſe, that ſhee intertained them as her Knights, and as her Seruants deſired them to goe aide the King her Father, yet would ſhee not conſent to pardon them, till the renowne of their eyploytes might ſhew them to deſerue it. Trineus toke this anſwer for better aduantage then the Princeſſe thought on, accounting himſelfe happy by ſuch a good beginning, and therefore ſayde to the Ladie, I thinke my ſelfe (fayre Ladie) one of the moſt fauoured by Fortune, hauing the meane to obey your Miſtreſſe in her commaund, and hope to execute her charge in ſuch ſort, as I ſhall deſerue the grace ſhee doth nowe denie me, yet with all humilitie on our behalfe, I intreate you, to yeelde thankes for her princely kindneſſe. The Lady returning to Agriola, accompliſhed what Trineus deſired her, whereupon ſhe turned herſelfe, and gaue them a countenance of fauour, which was anſwered by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, with great reuerence, & the Princeſſe, (ſhewing herſelfe not too ſtately towardes the Knightes) with her hand & ieaſture gaue a ſigne of her content, which was not a little welcome to Trineus. Then the Queene comming forth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her train mounted on horſebacke, taking their way to the Court againe: but when Trineus had loſt the ſight of them, wonderfull verations began to aſſaile him, ſo that hee ſayde to Palmerin, Ah, my good Freend, how happie may that man account himſelfe, whoſe fortune honors him with the beautie of Agriola? Ah ſir Palmerin, I feele my ſelf ſo exceedingly tormented, as I doubt my death will be inuitable. But

till

tell me the truth and dissemble not, howe thinke you of my Mistresse? is shee not a Ladie more then diuine? In good faith my Lord, said Palmerin, what the knight in France tolde vs, was but fables, in that she exceedeth report beyond all opinion: notwithstanding, it is necessarie for you to nourish your hope, hauing thus spoken to her, and bewrayed your afflictions, not doubting but this good beginning of your enterprise, will cause the ende fall out to your content. So rode on these three knights, pleasing their humors with their seuerall iudgements of their Ladies, yet Palmerin had seene such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted promise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to chaunge his fancie. The next day they arriued at the King of Englands campe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pitched their Tents beyond all the other: and soone after came the Duke of Trintriel, bringing with him a number of hardie men at Armes, so that in short time the Kings strength was such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Hereupon the King assembled his counsell, and concluded, that the next day they woulde goe seeke out the King of Scots, who in two encounters had the vpper hande, which made him so peremptorie, as he perswaded himselfe vtterly to cõfound the King of England: who raysing his power, followed so diligently, as the thirde day after, he encamped within halfe a mile of his enemie, that had besieged the Towne of Corsania, and had brought it ready to yelde, but that the King preuented it by the strength he brought.

Chap. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell, betweene the King of England, and the King of Scots.

WHen the King of Scots vnderſtood the comming of the King of England, and that in all haſte he would bid him battaile, he would no longer buſie himſelfe in beſieging Corſania, but retyred a little for his better aduauntage, conferring with his Captaines about their preſent affayres, concluding to offer the enemie no ſkirmiſhes, becauſe thereby they would know their intent: notwithſtanding he gaue order to prepare for battaile, becauſe he knew the King of England came for no other purpoſe. The Engliſhmen not ſuffering the Scots to haue any leyſure to fortifie themſelues, were by the King the next morning commaunded in aray, and all wings & ſquadrons appointed, the Duke of Trintriel was made leader of the auauntgarde, wherein likewiſe were Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome: and to the Dukes Brother was committed the charge of the arreargard, and being all ready to march on, the King himſelfe begaune this Oration. I thinke my Friends, that no one of you, but ſufficiently is acquainted in what reſpect we continue this warre, namely, to defende the honour and reputation of our Realme, and to ſaue the liues of you, your wiues and children, and your goods, which the enemie would violently ſpoile and take from you, intending to throwe perpetuall bondage and ſlauerie on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties? will you not

not maintaine your auncient renowme, which is, to be Lordes and commaunders of the Scots? assure your selues, that howe strong soeuer our enemie be, I hope with the aid of God, your vndaunted courages, & the right of our cause, to make a noble and victorious conquest. For I knowe that our enemie hath not one man in his Armie, endued with such an entire hart and magnanimious courage, as you are, nor that valueth his title of honour with his life, as you do: and therefore if wee march on valiantly, continuing resolute and confident togeather, euerie man labouring for his Prince, Countrey, friende, and fellow, and God for vs all, your forwardnesse will make them fearefull, and your verie countenaunces enough to conquere. Euerie man then be chearefull, with a desire to vanquish. And here I vowe to you on the worde of a King, that if fortune stande so well with vs, as to winne the day, neuer shall the Scots hereafter dare to lift vp themselues against vs. Thus did the king of England animate his men, and so marched on in good array to the sight of their enemies, who by this tyme had raunged themselues for battaile, their auauntgard conducted by the Marques of Monthel, the King of Scots himselfe in the maine battaile, and the arrie regarde led by the King of the Ile of Magdalen: and as the King of England had encouraged his Souldiers, so began the King of Scots to harten his men in this manner. The time is now come (loyall Subiects, and deere Friends) that the pride of the English must bee abated by the vertue and valour of the Scots, so that if you set before your eyes the occasion calling vs to the field, there is no one of you but will blame his predecessor, for staying so long time to recouer, what by true patrimonie belonged to them, and by the Kings of England, (tyrannous vsurpers) agaynst all right, violentlye taken from our Auncestors. Will you not then recouer your losse, and reenter on those possessions, from which your Fathers (agaynst all reason) were expulsed? Dutie doth chalenge it at your handes, being the good not onely for your

ſelues, but for your children and ſucceſſors. Would you thē loſe ſo good opportunitie, to reeſtabliſh things ſo loſt? Are your hearts more timerous then your enemies? are your mindes made of worſe mettall then theirs? No, no, well am I aſſured that the leaſt among you, is of higher vertue and account then the beſt in their compaine. If it hath bēn their cuſtome, (as they themſelues vaunt) to tryumph ouer vs, let vs learne them to confeſſe with patience, that they haue no ſuch right or cuſtome to vanquiſh, as in three ſkirmiſhes alreadie we haue ſufficiently made knowne, with what fortune and vnconquerable ſpirites you entertained your enemies. Diſmay no more now (my good Frendes) then you haue done, let each mans ſworde make his entraunce amidſt his foes, and fauour one anothers life, ſo ſhall ſweete ſucceſſe returne you with victorie. The King hauing ended, they diſcerned the Engliſh power eager to encounter, and ſo the Armies meeting, began a dreadfull and daungerous battaile. There might you heare the Drummes thunder, the Trumpets ſounde, the Clarions ring, the Phifes warble, Launces ſhiuered, knights diſmounted, ſwetemen ſcattered, heades defended, armes and bodies wounded, ſome crying, other dying, a matter more they lamentable to beholde, and ſo long continued this cruell and bloodie conflict, as the moſt part of the auauntgarde were ſlaine, ſore wounded, or taken priſoners. Which when the King of Scots perceyued, being a Prince ſo hardie and valiaunt as might bee, commaunded the maine battaile to giue the charge, in middeſt whereof he was in perſon: whereupon the fight beganne again much more fierce then before, ſo that yee might haue heard the Horſes ſtorme, the Armour clatter, and on euerie ſide beholde good and venturous Knights giue vppe their liues. At this furious onſet, Palmerin ſeeing the Scots to retyre for aduantage, cryed to the King of England, Why how now my Lord? doo you forget your ſelfe? why do you not follow on with your maine battaile, ſeeing the enemie playes vpon aduantage? cheerefully let vs vpon them, for the day

will

will be ours. The king seing that Palmerins counsaile was verie expedient, commaunded his men to marche on valyantly, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was thoroughly busied. Palmerin fearing least Trineus would be ouer venturous, because the yong Prince was marualious forward, desired him not to runne so farre into daunger, but keepe by him, to the end the one might succour the other, if necessitie required. With these words he ranne vpon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they sawe him make such slaughter: the king of England following him at an inche, deliuering true testimonie of his inuincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle Magdalen, piercing his Launce quite through his bodie, so that he fell dead among his owne Souldiers: and Ptolome all this while was not idle, but where ere he came, he layd his enemie at his feete, so that the Scots wondered at the behauiour of these three knights. When the king of the Isle Magdalen vnderstood the death of his Brother, incensed with vnquenchable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till hee came where Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome were, one of his Knightes shewing the King the man that slue his brother, whereupon he making towards Trineus, lifted vppe his Sworde, and thought to haue slaine him: but Palmerin stepping betweene them, sayd. To me Captaine, to me, and so the king and he encountered together so terribly, as Palmerin was wounded in two or three places, for which he made such recompence to the king, as fastening his Sworde on his Helmet, cleft his head in twaine: that done, he fell dead to the ground. The sight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they ranne cutting and killing among the English, as well to reuenge the king of the Isle Magdalens death, as to defend their owne king, whose danger they feared. In this hote skirmish, the kings of England and Scots, met together, who charged each other with their forcible strokes, as the king of England was vn-

horſed and ſore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, ſeeing his déere friendes Father in ſuch perill, buckled with the King of Scots ſo valiantly, as he gaue him many a cruell wounde, and had not his men made haſte to conuay him through the throng, he had béene ſlaine by Trineus, ſo was the King of England mounted a gaine, and reuenged his foyle on his enemy with marueilous valour. There tryumphed the three Grecian Knights, with inexplicable honor, the Engliſhmen making ſuch hauocke among the Scots, as vtterly deſpayring, they fled, one part to a Forreſt néere at hande, and the other towardes the Sea to their Ships, the King getting into one of them to ſaue his life, by the meanes of one of his Knights, that lent him a good Iennet of Spaine, to eſcape away withall. And ſo ſailed thence the King with greater ſhame, then did the Emperor Antonius from Octauius Cæſar, leauing his men fiercely purſued by the Engliſh, who terrified them in ſuch ſort, as many of the poore Scots choſe rather to runne into the Sea, and drowne themſelues, then to fall into the handes of their conquering enemies.

Chap. XLVIII.

Of the retreate of the King of Englands armie, and the honour he did to the three ſtraunge Knights.

After the King of Englande was Maiſter of the field, he cauſed the retreat to be ſounded, and his men called togeather, commaunding likewiſe that ſearch ſhould bee made through the field, to ſuccour ſuch as were ſore wounded, and to burie the deade, leaſt the ayre

ayre shoold bee infected: whereupon the Englishmen tooke the spoil of their enemies, chiefly their bag & baggage which they had left behind them. In the meane while the King withdrew himselfe into his Tent, where remembring the great seruice of the three strange knights, he commaunded his Nephew Cerides to seeke them immediately, who found them in a Scottish tent, binding vppe their woundes, and being not a little glad of his good fortune, he came to Palmerin, saying. Gentleman, the King my Vncle earnestly desireth you to come to him, because hee will neyther enter the towne nor vnarme himselfe, till he heare some tidings of you. Seeing it pleaseth him, said Palmerin, to commaund, we humbly obey, wherefore wee pray you Sir to returne his maiesty our dutifull thanks, and diligent attendance. After Cerides was departed, they resolued among themselues (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin should bee the cheefest among them, and him they would honor as their Lord, because the prince feared to be knowne if such account should be made of him: so went they presently to the kings Tent, where they were no sooner entered, but the king (albeit hee was sore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and embraced them louingly one after another, not suffering them to kneele before him, but honorably thus spake to them. Woorthy Gentlemen, how welcome you are I cannot expresse, for I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England had sustained this day great foyle, but by your fortunate valour: thinke then woorthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my worde it shall not be denied, in meane while I pray you lette me haue your company, because I will see your hearts carefully attended. The knights with great reuerence accepted the kings noble offer, and were conducted into a fayre Tent next the kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dressed their wounds, and afterward they came and supped with the king. And because the king intended on the morrow to go refresh himselfe at the

Towne

Towne of Corſania, which before had bene cruelly beſieged by the *Scots*, to giue God thanks for the happy victorie, a famous Sermon was made before him by the Archbiſhop of Canterburie, to whom likewiſe he gaue order for entertaining ſuch as had bene ſlaine of account, and in that place for memorie of his good fortune, he cauſed a goodly Monaſterie to be builded, and deſpatched a poſte preſently to aduertiſe the Quene of his good ſucceſſe. Now was his Maieſtie verie deſirous to know the three ſtraunge knights, that had ſo valiantly aſſiſted him, eſpecially the man that ſaued his life: whereupon the next morning he went to ſee them, demaunding how they fared: for (quoth he) wee will nowe ſet forwarde to Corſania, where we will make you better entertainment then wee can here in the field. Then mounted they all on horſebacke, and rode to Corſania, where the King remained till he and his knights were better recouered. And where the King made the Duke of Tintriel high Marſhall of England, committing to his charge fiue thouſand men, commaunding him to chaſe all the Scots forth of his kingdome, whereſoeuer he could find them, and to ceaze to his highneſſe vſe, the Townes and Caſtles, which they before had in vſe: which the Duke executed with ſuch expedition, as hee left not a *Scot* in any Village or Hamlet, placing faithfull Officers for the King in euery iuriſdiction. During theſe labours of the Duke, the King euery day viſited theſe three knights, and finding *Palmerin* at a time conenient, hee requeſted to knowe of whence hee was, and the names of his companions. Let me intrrat you (quoth he) not to hide your ſelues from me, becauſe I ſhall not be in quiet till I know, that I may remunerate your deſerts according to your perſons. Palmerin, who feared to be diſcouered, could not readily deuiſe what anſwere to make, yet at length in great humilitie, thus ſaid. We would deſire your Maieſtie, that it might ſtand with your good liking, at this time to excuſe the knowledge of our preſent affaires, as alſo what we are: yet thus farre will I reſolue your highneſſe

that

that we are all Gentlemen of Greece, nourished in the court of the King of Macedon, who in seeking strange aduẽtures, haue trauailed many prouinces, and nowe at length came into your kingdome, well stored at this time with knights errant, and gouerned (as we well perceiue) by a King so gracious as to such persons alloweth honor and good affection, as no King where we yet haue come doth the like. For this cause my Lorde, as also vnderstanding that the king of Scots menaced warre against you, came we into your countrey, to serue you in all obeysance as the very simplest among your Souldiers. Trust me (said the king) I haue well noted your seruice, & a man might be deceiued in expecting better assistance, for which I rest yours, in ought I may while I liue: but if you would name your selues, thẽ should I know to whom I were indebted, as also that my subiects might honour you accordingly. That (quoth Palmerin) will neither profit nor preiudice your Maiesty, let suffice then I beseech you, the vnfained good will and seruice we owe to to your highnesse. The king seeing he could not get what hee would, changed his talke, saying. Was it you Syr, that on the day of battell was armed all in blacke? Yea my Lorde, sayd Palmerin, and this knight (pointing to Trineus) is my Brother, who shielded you from daunger against the king of Scots. Ah deere friends, quoth the king, this made me so importunate, and may it like you to stay in my Court, I will regard you according to your speciall deseruings, as the onely knights of the world in my fauour, yelding thanks to heauen, for the good I haue receiued by your meanes. Humbly did the three knights regratiate the king, promising for a while to sojourne with him.

Chap.

The famous Hiſtorie

Chap. XLIX.

¶ Howe the *Queene* of England was aduertiſed of the victorie againſt the King of Scots, and the ouerthrow of his whole armie.

Hen after the king of Eng'and had ſent tidings to the Quéen of his good fortune, and the honour he intended to the thrée knights of Greece: the meſſenger was ſo ſpéedy, as the ſecond day following he where the Quéene kept her court, and preſented hir the letters from the king her huſband, reciting the whole maner of ỹ battel, with the rare exployts of the thrée Grecian knights, and howe one of them preſented the kings life, omitting nothing that was néedfull to be reported, as howe the king intended to come with the thrée knights in great royaltie to London, & therfore ſhe ſhould prouide equal entertainement. The Quéene highly contented with theſe newes, demaunded of the meſſenger if hée knew the thrée knights that gaue ſuch aſſiſtance to the king. No indéede madame, anſwered the meſſenger, neither did I ſée them, but at the time I was diſpatched with my meſſage. Agriola finding in her ſelfe the puiſſance of a little God that made leue, ſodainely ſuſpected that theſe knights were they which thée ſawe at the Chappell, and therefore ſaid. I pray thée tell mée my Friend, what armes beare the knights? One of them Ba[illegible] (quoth he) the very beſt knight in the world is in Créene Armour, and that is he that ſaued the king your fa-

thers

thers life, when the King of Scots had néere slaine him, but he remounted my Lord, giuing his enemy such a dangerous wound with his Launce, as it was greatly doubted hee had kild him, he lost so much blood, and this was one of the principall occasions of our victorie. This Knights companion in Blacke armour, behaued himselfe with wonderfull chiualrie, for as a Lion makes hauocke in a heard of cattell: so did he cut, slash, & mangle the Scots, as the very hardiest durst not abide before him. The third is in blacke Armor, sparckled all ouer with white Roses, a Knight of no lesse courage then his companions, and one that fought for England with incredible prowesse. Let me die, said Agriola to the Quéene, if these be not the Knightes that past by this Cittie, when we went to the Chappell to performe our exercise: & therewithall she rehearsed what speech her Gouernesse had with them, and what she commaunded them. In sooth Daughter, quoth the Quéene, your Gouernesse and you may well bee blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray your therefore when they returne, let your former fault bee sufficiently recompenced. That shall I not faile to doe, saide Agriola. So the Quéene honourably rewarded the Messenger, sending him backe with answer, that the Kings charge should be effectually executed. The King aduertised of the Quéenes replie, set forwarde with the Knightes of Gréece and his traine to the Court, and by the way, remembring the power sent by the Emperour of Allemaigne to the King of Norway, he said to Palmerin. I cannot sufficiently maruaile, gentle knight, why the Emperor should declare himselfe mine enemie, and giue assistaunce to the King of Norway, against me, considering I neuer did any thing might deserue his displeasure: but I sweare by the fayth of a King, that I will reuenge my wrong, and let him assure himselfe, that while I haue one foote of ground or a dozen of my Soldiers to helpe mee, I will neuer haue peace with him: to molest mée within mine owne dominions: by God, my Friends, I cannot forget it. These words greatly displea-

sed

ſo Trineus, but eſpecially Palmerin, who anſwered. In my opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reaſon, and as duetie bound him, in reſpect he could not honeſtly refuſe to aide the King of Norway his Coſin, and hereof I can aſſure you, in that I haue ſometime beene in his Court, that hee is one of the wiſeſt and beſt gouerned Princes that euer I heard of. Wherefore, bee it ſpoken vnder correction, your Maieſtie ſhould forget this light offence, and conſider if the like had beene towards you, you would haue done no leſſe. When the King heard him ſo ſupport the Emperors cauſe, he preſently iudged him to be of his Courte, and therefore ſayd. Are you he Sir, that wonne ſuch honor and renowne in Fraunce, at the combat maintained by the Prince Lewes for the loue of his Ladie? If you be ſo, I pray you do not denie it, for I ſhall henceforth thinke my Court moſt happie, to harbour the moſt excellent among all Knights: and I promiſe you I am ſo iealous of mine owne conceyte, as you can hardly perſwade mee otherwiſe, ſuch experiences haue I made of your bountie and vertue. Palmerin bluſhing at theſe words, and doubting he ſhould nowe be certainlye knowne, anſwered. Wee humbly intreate your Maieſtie heeretofore, and ſo we doo now againe, that you would not enquire whence we are: ſufficeth your highneſſe, that wee are his humble Seruants, in any thing that ſhall like him to commaunde vs. The king this hearing, repented himſelfe that hee had beene ſo importunate, for hee feared leaſt his ſpeeches would make them forſake his company, wherfore by this time beeing come neere his Pallace, hee ſayde. What I haue ſayd Gentlemen, I hope ſhall not offend you, in my excuſe admit my earneſt deſire to know you. By and by ouertooke them the Duke of Tintriel, who went to reſtore the Crowne (as you haue heard) what the Scots vſurped, and he aduertiſed the King, that the Queene and her Ladies were ridden to a Caſtle foure miles from London to ſollace themſelues, whereupon the king reſolued to ryde thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not ſorie, ſuch

was

was his desire to see his faire Frend, whose loue still crossed him with so many passions, as hee seemed a man of another world, and did not his woundes serue somewhat to couer his disease, hardly could he haue founde any shift to conceale it so closely, wherefore he beganne with Palmerin thus. You knowe my chosen friend, that the hope of my loue made me leaue my fathers court, and to preuent my meaning consists onely in you, now in respect of my forcible captiuitie, being vnprouided of strength sence, or any meane to discouer my loue to her, who only can helpe mee: I intreate you by the inuiolable league of our amitie, that when you chaunce to speake with the Goddesse of my life, my paines and anguishes may serue for my salutations, and imparting to her the extreamitie of my sorrowes, shee may perceiue in what estate I am, and what neede I haue of her gracious pittie. These words were deliuered with such sighs and teares, as Palmerin was amazed thereat, albeit hee knewe howe heauy the burthen was, and howe it exceeded patience in suffering, comparing his absence from his mistresse Polinarda to be as insupportable, as the presence of Agriola (not daring to speake to her) was to Trineus, whereupon he answered. My Lord, repose your trust in this matter on me, which I doubt not to handle in such sort, as you shall haue no cause to be mal content, or the Princesse any reason to be ingratefull. But what thinke you if my Dwarfe did carrie this message? in my opinion (through the whole world) you could not finde a more fitte fellow, such is his subtile and present inuention, as hee will prooue the onely string to your bowe. Alas sayd the prince, I care not who were imployed herein, so I were sure of comfort. Then was the dwarfe called, to whom Palmerin in this sort began. It is well knowne to thee Vrbanillo, with what good will I would do any seruice I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparable kindnes I haue receiued of my Ladie his Sister, as for the affinitie I hope shall one day be betweene vs by his meanes. So often haue

I made experience of my loyall ſeruice and fidelitie, in my chiefeſt and very nearest affayres, as well may I impart to thee, the ſecrets of my noble companion, perſwading my ſelf of thy ſuretie and ſecrecie. It now remaines that thou pleaſure the Prince Trineus, in breaking his loue to the Princeſſe Agriola, as thou diddeſt for me to my Miſtreſſe Polynarda: but aboue all things haue regard, that thou bewray not of whence, or what we are, yet muſt thou aſſure her, that the Prince is one of the greateſt Lords in Europe. My Lord, quoth the Dwarffe, I was neuer yet diſobedient to you in all my time, and very loath were I now to beginne: but becauſe I am ſuch a little withen fellowe, you make me your Broker in theſe perillous loue matters. Notwithſtanding, I will do it though I died for it, eſteeming my life well beſtowed to pleaſure ſuch Princes. There can no inconuenience ariſe hereby to thee, quoth Palmerin, but profite euerie way: be not enemie then to thine owne good. That will I neuer, ſayd the Dwarffe, and well might the Ladie be iudged vnprouided of reaſon, and verie farre from vnderſtanding, if ſhe make refuſall of the Princes honourable offer: the King himſelfe, if he knew it, would imagine his dayes bleſſed: the iſſue then of this enterprize can not but ſort to good. The Dwarffes wordes pleaſed ſo well Trineus, as he toke him in his armes, ſaying: I commend my ſelfe, and my happineſſe to thee. Let me alone, quoth Vrbanillo, if I bring you not hearbes that ſhall cole this hote feuer, then let me neuer bee counted for a tall man: ſo went he about it, as you ſhall vnderſtand hereafter.

Chap.

Chap: L.

How the King of England went to the Caſtle to the Queene and her Ladies, and of the honourable entertainment made to the three ſtrange Knights.

NEwes béeing brought to the Quéene, that the King was not farre off, ſhée ſent a verie honourable traine to méete him, and with them his ſonne the yong Prince Fredericke, ten yéares olde, but beautifull and of ſuch perfection, as promiſed great hope in time to come. Hée hauing made reuerence to his Father, and the other Princes, demaunded for the ſtraunge Knightes, and ſaluting them with ſuch kindneſſe as was rare in a Childe, he rode betweene Trineus and Palmerin, giuing them harty thanks for their frendly ſuccour to his Father, without which, ſayd hée, as the Quéene my Mother tolde mee, hée had dyed, and wée all béene diſtreſſed. By this tyme they were come to the Caſtell, all the way ſo thicke peſtered with people, as there was no roome to ſtirre among them, euerie one crying. Happie be the Knights that foyled our enemyes. So entring the Caſtell, in the vttermoſt Court they mette the Quéene and her Ladyes, among whom fayre Agriola ſhyned, as beautifull Venus among the other ſtarres, wherewith the Prince of Allemaigne was ſo nipt in the head, as an offendour with his guilt before a Iudge, ſo that not regarding what yong Fredericke, or the other Lords courteouſlie ſayd to him, he was readie to fall beſide his horſe with ouermuch gazing: But Palmerin ſuddainly twitching him

ſoftly, ſayd. Fie, my Lorde, what meane you to forget your ſelfe thus? ſee you not her that is ordayned yours, and will you not triumph in your happie fight, but ſitte as one vtterly diſcouraged? For ſhame let paſſe this puſillanimitie, and with chéerefull countenaunce goe giue her the good morow. The Prince did ſo, but with ſuch timerous conceits, as hauing ſaluted the Mother, hée durſt not ſpeake to the Daughter: who imagining the beſt, and that baſhfull reuerence did ſo with-holde him, ſhée came to him in this manner. Are not you ſir, the Knight in the gréene Armour, that not long ſince promiſed one of my Ladyes to ayde my Father in his warres? I am ſayre Princeſſe, quoth hée, and what I haue done, was at your commaundement, the vertue whereof gaue me ſuch ſtrength, as ſome of the *Scots* haue felt to their coſt: but had I gone vnprouided of ſuch fauour, I am perſwaded I could neuer haue returned aliue. It now remaines, ſwéete Ladie, that according to the requeſt I then made by your Ladie, it would pleaſe you to remitte his offence, who deſerued the ſharpeſt punishment can bée deuiſed, for not honouring that Princeſſe, which carryes the Palme from all Ladyes liuing. In trueth, my Lorde, ſayde the Princeſſe, not oneli is your fault to bée forgiuen, if it could be named a fault, but alſo ought I to recompence you to my vttermoſt power, ſéeing by your meanes my Father in ſafetie, and the Realme of England deliuered from the tyrannous ſeruitude of the Scots: wherefore you may aſſure your ſelfe, that if I can ſtande you in any ſtedde towards the King my Father, you ſhall commaunde mée to my vttermoſt. The Prince returned her a thouſand thanks, and ſayde. Beléeue mée, Madame, the verie leaſt title of your good will, is recompence to mee more then ſufficient, and would prouoke ſuch affection in mée towards your ſeruice, as you could not commaunde the thing, but I ſhoulde with dutifull willingneſſe performe it, as I doubt not but better occaſions ſhall make manifeſt vnto you. Then entred they the great Hall, where ſuch a ſumptuous banquet was

prouided,

prouided, as will aske more time to report, then leysure will admit. Likewise here to set downe the wonderfull passions of the amorous Prince Trineus, in regard of a Ladie so exceeding in perfections, surpasseth my capacitie: but hee that is seated so opposit to so faire a creature, and loues so earnestly as Trineus, yet dare not speake least he should bee spyed, may iudge of that which I cannot vtter. But seeing the libertie of speech was denyed, the speedie eye posted betweene them with sweete conueyances, and still must shee countenance the straunger Knights, till fearing to be taken tardie, she closely conferred with the Princesse Eufemia, daughter to the Duke of Norgalles, saying: What thinke you Cozen of these strangers? are they not the seemelyest personages that euer you sawe, both in fauour, countenaunce, good grace and hardinesse? I am of the opinion, that although they report themselues but as simple Knights errant, they bee doubtlesse great Lordes, discended of noble and princely parentage: as oneway easily gather by their ciuill and vertuous behauiour, which is euermore the witnesse of true nobilitie. These words caused Eufemia to marke well Trineus, as her Cozin Agriola did, which shee perceyuing, and iudging that they talked of him, his alterations were so sensible as they might be easily discerned: for the more they eyed him, the greater was his torment, till the Table being withdrawne, he had some ease in opening his minde to Palmerin, whose comfortable wordes were as good to him as restoratiues. Agriola on the other side escaped not free, for her ease was no greater when she arose, then when she sate downe, and that must be little, hauing so daintie a dish before her to fill her stomacke.

The next morning, the King and the Ladies mounted on horseback, setting towards London, and God knowes the Prince was not farre behinde them, liuing onely by the regard of her, with whose rare beautie hee could neuer satisfie his eyes. And as they rode thorowe a Forrest, the King seeing the Trees so greene and delightfull, and because

the heate of the day hindered their trauaile, hee cauſed his Pauilions and Tents to bee there preſently pitched, and intended to dine there vnder the cole trées. Dinner bëing ended, hée would nëedes go courſe the Hare, waſting the afternoone in that paſtime, and on the next day, rode to chaſe a Hart which was taken in the toyles, and therewithall a huge wilde Boze, the mightieſt that euer was ſëne, hauing wounded him in ſo many places, as the Dogs and Bloodhoundes might eaſily tracke him. Afterwarde they rowſed a fallow Dëere, when the Huntſmen made ỹ woods ring ſo brauely with winding their Hornes, and the Greyhoundes purſued the courſe ſo ſpëedily: as Palemedes choſe was not comparable to this, till in the ende the Dëere was fallen. Theſe pleaſures finiſhed, the King with his companie returned to his Tents, ſhewing to the Quëne and her Ladies the fruits of theyr paſtime, ſaying. I promiſe you Madame, I thinke theſe Grecian knightes excell in euerie thing: for as in chiualrie, ſo this day haue they ſhewed themſelues excellent woodmen, as none in our trayne may compare with them. By this time the Tables were couered for Supper, all which time was ſpent in diſcourſing of theyr ſports: till the good night giuen on all ſides, the three knightes withdrew themſelues into their tent. All theſe pleaſures made not Vrbanillo forgetfull of his Maiſters charge, wherefore practiſing how to accompliſh it effectually, hée ſeunde meanes to come acquainted with the Ladyes attending on the Princeſſe, and in reſpect he attended on the knights of Greece, he was licenced the oftner into theyr companie. The next morning, the king and the knights walking into the Woods, the Dwarffe watching time to deliuer his meſſage, made ſo many walkes and returnes before the Princeſſe Pauillion, as at laſt ſhe eſpyed him, and calling him to her, ſayd: I pray thée, my Friend, by the faith thou beareſt thy Maiſter, tell mée the trueth of a matter I ſhall aſke thee. Madame (quoth the Dwarffe vpon his knee) commaund what you pleaſe, for there is nothing

(my

(my mistresse preiudice excepted) but I will truely tell you. Which of the three, said the Princesse, is thy Maister? My Maister (quoth the Dwarfe) hath not his second in all perfections, he it is that was in the blacke Armour, who in the battell for your Father did so manie wonderfull exployts, as farre excéedeth the fabulous reportes of sir Gawen or Launcelot du Lake. In sooth (quoth she) so haue I heard, and beside thy dutie reserued to thy Maister, I see thou canst sette him foorth for a most hardie knight: but tell mée of whence he is? what are his companions? and why do they make it so daintie to be knowne? Herein Madame, sayde he, I cannot with my dutie aunswere you, for I am restrayned by a former promise, not to reueale the least matter that may be hurtfull to them. Neuertheless, in regard of the reuerent good will they beare you, and that I would not haue you offended with such an abiect creature as I am, I would gladly tell you some thing to your content, so you will promise me on your princely worde, that what I reueale shall neuer be discouered by you. Perswade thy selfe thereof, sayd the Princesse, and looke what thou sayst, by my honor, shall neuer turne to thy after harme. Then know sayre Madame, (quoth he) that the grœne knight is of the most noble and illustrious house in Europe, louing a Ladie as his proper life, for whom he hath left his Countrey, parents & friends, to come and do her seruice. The blacke knight, as I haue alreadie tolde you, is my maister, and further then this I may not tell you. What am I the nearer my desire, quoth shée, by this aunswere? eyther thou shouldest haue sayde nothing, or else thoroughly satisfyed mée, for now I can not bée quieted, till thou tell me what Ladie it is, that the grœne knight loues so dearely: let mée not make so many intreaties, for I promise to thée againe, by the faith of a Princesse, that neuer shall any creature know it by my meanes. You vrge me so farre, quoth the Dwarfe, and haue made mee such great promises, as I am constrayned (beyond ỳ charge giuen by my maister) to acquaint you with the trueth, in

reſpect, the fault wil be greater in you to make refuſal, then in yéelding. Reſolue your ſelfe therefore good Madame, that the braue gréene Knight, ſo rich in Armes, but more in minde, is the Prince Trineus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, ſo paſſionate in loue, and ſo depriued of liberty, by deuout ſeruice to your excellent bountie: as againſt both duetie and nature, he hath deceiued his Father, feigning to come ayde his Kinſman the King of Norway, where contrariwiſe, he hath ſhewed himſelfe his mortall enemie. And to no other ende hath he thus offended both Father and Cozin, then to make known his long & labourous deſires, to make you Lady and Miſtreſſe of him and his: and ſuch is his feare to be refuſed, as he endures more torments, then the martired bodye of poore Prometheus. Bee not then the cauſe ſwéete Ladie, that a Prince ſo famous, and a Knight ſo gentle, ſhall buy his great good ſeruice to your Father and Coũſtrey, yea the moſt loyal loue he beares to you, with vntimelie, vnfortunate, and cruell death. Thinke with your ſelfe, is it not the higheſt among all honours, to be Wiſe to ſuch a Lord, and Empreſſe (in time) of renowned Allemaigne? Is it not perpetuall report, to be Lady and commaundreſſe of the principall parte of Europe? Let not him beare record that a bodie ſo adorned, and countenaunce ſo milde and gracious, can entertaine tiraunie or crueltie: yea Madam ſuch crueltie, as if you receiue him not into your fauourable conceit, you ſhall procure the death of ỹ trueſt Knight in loue, that euer liued. The blacke knight is the renowned Palmerin d'Oliua, the wonder of the world for valour, conquering in Fraunce the Duke of Sauoy, in maintenaunce of his Ladies beautie, fayre without compare: conforming his Shéelde and Armour equall to his mourning thoughts, for his abſence from her that tryumphes in his loue. The third knight, ſo adorned with white Roſes, is called Ptolome, loued by a Ladie well worthy of him. It now remaineth fayre Princeſſe, that you make the Prince Trineus equall with them in felicitie, for you haue the maydenheade of his

loue

loue, which with honor you may entertaine into your chaste thoughtes. Thus haue I acquainted you with such a secrete, as no creature but your selfe could haue got of mée, and the danger to fall into your misconceit, hath made mée such a blab: leauing all you haue heard to your gracious cõstruction. Agriola, mœtelie farre enough in loue before, but now vtterly denied of longer libertie, hearing the wordes of Vrbanillo, was surprised with such a strange alteration, as a long time she was driuen to silence, not able to vtter the secrete conceits of her minde, yet at length (to shadowe her suddaine change from the Dwarfe) thée sayde. Ah my Frende, thou acquaintest me with matter altogither incredible, is it possible that Trineus Sonne to the Emperor of Allemaigne, would venture into this Court, considering the mortall enmitie betwéene our Fathers? Trust mée my Frende I cannot credit thée. I renounce mine owne soule (vde the Dwarfe, if it be not as I haue told you: then iudge Madame what acceptaunce shoulde be made of his seruice, when loue to you excedeth nature: may it not bee termed loue surpassing all other, eyther regiſtred in antiquities, or present memorie? If it should be, quoth she, as thou sayest, it is beyonde my power to returne condigne recompence, yet in respect of thy secrecie, I dare assure thée, mine owne opinion of him hath so ouer-maistered me, as in honorable modestie he may commaund, and I am not so well nurtured to disagrée. But if eyther by my words thou hast gathered, or by any chaunge of countenaunce perceiued, the suddaine yéelding of a flexible nature: interprete it in this good sort, that Princes afflictions make each other melt, as framed of one mettall, which I charge thée conceale from him, as thou regardest my word and his safetie. Pardon mee Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, it standeth not with my allegeaunce to obey you herein, what a villaine might I bee accounted, and vnworthy the name of a faithfull seruant if I shoulde kéepe these happy tydings from him, to ease those torments that euery houre threaten his death? Yea

Madame, did my maiſter but thinke I would ſo abuſe him, well deſerued I to be torne in peeces. Well, quoth ſhe, if thou findeſt time conuenient, till him, but no other I charge thee on thy life: and withall certifie him, that I woulde not for my Fathers Crowne he ſhould be knowne. Feare you not, good Madame, ſayde the Dwarfe, they are alreadie ſo well aduiſed, as none but your ſelfe can any way endaunger them. It ſufficeth that the Prince vnderſtande your pleaſure, which I will impart to him when the King is returned: ſo kiſſing her hande hee departed, leauing her ſo highly contented, in aſſurance of the loyall loue of Trineus, as ſhe neuer determined any other Huſbande, yet woulde ſhee not diſcloſe her minde, no not to Eufemia, her ſecret companion, thinking herſelfe too much bewrayed, becauſe the Dwarfe knewe it. Soone after the Queene ſent for her, to walke in the cole ſhadowe of the Trees, where not long they ſtayed before the King returned, who reported what paſtime they had all that morning. The Knightes hauing ſaluted the Queene and her Ladies, Trineus ſaluting the Princeſſe Agriola, was ſo tranſported as hee ſcant knewe where he was. The Princeſſe likewiſe fixed with a ſtedfaſt eye on him, as wounded both him and her ſelfe togither, her complexion ſo aptly deciphering her ſickeneſſe, as the Prince perceyuing it, ſayd to himſelfe. Ah loue, haſt thou wrought ſo happily for mee, as my Ladie knowes my ſecrete afflictions? ſhall I be ſo fortunate, as ſhe will take remorſe on my paſſions? ſweete hope perſwades mee ſo, for the often change of her diuince countenaunce, tels me there is ſome mercie in working. The King and Queene departing into their Pauilion, Trineus and Palmerin did the like into theirs, the Prince taking Vrbanillo aſide, demaunded if he had any good newes for him. If you will graunt mee one thing, ſaid the Dwarfe, I will tell you ſuch tydings, as cannot but content you. Demaunde what thou wilt, quoth Trineus, and by the faith of a Prince, thou ſhalt not bee denied. Then beganne the whole diſcourſe hee had with the

Princeſſe,

Princesse, and what deuotion shée had for the recouerie of his health. Iudge you in what rare humour the Prince now felt himselfe, without question he imagined himselfe in a more beautifull paradise, then euer was inuented by Epicurus himselfe, and embracing the Dwarfe he said. Ah my good frend, what wilt thou ý I giue thée? tell mée what thou demaundest? thou hast my whole life so much at thy command as thou maist liberally share out thine owne recompence, but séeing the beginning is so good, no doubt much better remaineth behind. Why my Lord, q the Dwarfe, you know I was borne to do you seruice, commaund what you please and I will accomplish it. Then shalt thou, said the Prince, returne to my Mistresse againe, and kissing her hande, present her from me this Emerald, desiring her to weare it for my sake: with remembrance to pittie his painfull miseries, whose life and death is onely in her hand. Vrbanillo taking the ring, Trineus and Palmerin went to passe the time with the King, and the Princesse at their entraunce regarding Trineus, perceiued by his countenance that he vnderstoode her message, for his blood was now risen chéerely in his face, which before was suncke downe with too much languishing, so that she imagined her selfe more happie, in béeing so beloued, then to loue, and knew not well how to dissemble her ioy. Ah poore Trineus, the paine thou endurest, attending the wished houre to speake with her, far surmounteth the torments of Leander, awaighting when Phœbus would go bathe himself with Thetis and the Marine Goddesses, that he might afterward swim to his affianced *Heroe*: and had not shée giuen thée a better signe by her eye to aduenture, I would haue reckoned thée more infortunate, then the betrothed spouse to the prisoner of Abydos. Now had Trineus bashfully taken the Princesse by the hand, when vnhappily one came to aduertise the king, that the hart he had chased the day before, was now againe gotten within ý toyles, that if it pleased him to hunt in the morning, hee should no doubt kill him with little labor. These newes were so wel-

come

come to the King, that becauſe he would the next morning more earlie go to his paſtime, hee withdrewe himſelfe for that night, the Queene and Agriola likewiſe departing to their Pauillion: ſo that Trineus encounter was thus preuented, and he with Palmerin returned to their Tent, truſting ſtill on the Dwarfes diligence, that he ſhould perfect all things to his hearts deſire, & to perſwade him the more, Palmerin thus began. I haue this hope my Lord, ſeeing alreadie ſo manie good ſignes, that you cannot any way bee deceiued in your loue: and this I would aduiſe you, Fortune beeing ſo fauourable, & aſſiſting you to her very vttermoſt, you ſhould not hence-forth ſhewe your ſelfe ſo feminine, but in hardie manner, reueale to the Princeſſe, when you ſhall find her at conuenient leyſure, both howe you loue her, and what fauourable grace you expect at her hands. I muſt confeſſe, that Letters and meſſages are able to do much: but the perſon beeing preſent, and knowing how to requeſt, and how to be anſwered, is more auailable a thouſand times: and in breefe, no Meſſenger can bee like himſelfe. I ſpeake not this, as though my Dwarfe were not faithfull, but to this ende, that ſhee ſhould receiue no occaſion of diſpleaſure. In how manie dangers haue Gentlemen beene, only by the bad conſtruction of their ſeruants meſſage? the readieſt wit that is cannot number them: therefore if you find opportunitie, attend no other ſuter but your ſelfe. This councell wel liked the Prince Trineus, wherefore he determined to ſpeak to her himſelfe, ſo ſoone as time and leyſure would permit him, and in this reſolution they went to take their reſt: but the remembrance of Polinarda, would not ſuffer Palmerin to ſleepe, comparing his ioy in her preſence, with his tormẽting paſſions nowe in her abſence breathed forth manie ſighes, & shed manie teares, till at length hee began to ſlumber wherin he thought he diſcerned this ſight. Beeing in cõpanie with the King, he ſawe come forth of a darke caue a dreadful Lyon, who with open throat ſet vpon him, and aſſayled him in ſuch maner, as with his nailes & teeth he rent

his

his Armor, and put him in verie great daunger of his life, so that he strone in such sort in his sleepe, as Trineus beeing in bed with him, awaked him, demaunding why he strugled so earnestly. Palmerin thus awaked desired God to withstand all his euils, and afterward recounted to Trineus the whole effect of his dreame, and said. It will not bee amisse my Lord that to morrow we ride armed in the Kings companie, for such illusions, albeit they commonly fall out vntrue, yet can presage no good to follow. I like your counsell well, aunswered Trineus, and that Ptolome go armed as well as we. In the morning they arose and armed themselues, all saue their Helmets and Launces, which their Squires caried, and in this sort came to bid the King good morrow, who mervailed much to see them so prepared, and doubting they had receiued some occasion of offence, demanded what moued them so to be armed. You know my Lord quoth Palmerin, that a Knight ought euermore to be ready for all aduentures, and not knowing what inconuenience or danger may happen, before such time we shall returne againe, we haue armed our selues to preuent the worst. The King not discontented with this answer mounted on horseback, & comming to the chase, had excellent game at Deere, Hart, Boze and wilde Buffell, wherein hee toke such exceeding pleasure, as he determined to stay there fiue or sixe daies longer. But in the place where he supposed himselfe safe, and free from all hazard, suddainly hee was solicited with the chaunges of fortune, for the Queen and her daughter Agriola were in mervailous danger, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

Chap.

Chap. LI.

How the Queen of England and Agriola her daughter, were in danger to be rauiſhed by the giant Franarco, and of the ſuccour they had by Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome.

THe king returning from the chaſe with his companie, little minding any inſortunate euent, and conferring with Palmerin til they drew néere vnto their Tents: at length they heard a great tumult, and beheld a Squire making towards them ſo faſt as his Horſe could gallop. Palmerin doubting ſome vnhappy chaunce, and remembring his dreame, ſaid to the king. Neuer credit mée my Lord, if this ſquire come not to you about ſome ſpeciall affaires, as well maye be gathered by his ſpéedie pace. At theſe words the Gentlemã came to the king, reporting how the Giant Franarco, Lord of the caſtle of Carbones, ſince his departure came to his Tents, and from thence had violently taken the Quéene and her Daugter Agriola, notwithſtanding the reſiſtance of manie knights, who ſtriuing to defend her, loſt their liues. The King with theſe words ſtroken in wonderfull gréefe, ſaid.

Ah Gentlemen, this villainous Traytor hath notoriouſly wronged vs. How is it poſſible to recouer them againe before they be diſhonoured? Trineus and Palmerin mooned at theſe newes, aſked the Squire, which way he went with the Quéen and her Daughter? In truth my Lord quoth he, I cannot tell yée which way he tooke, we all were ſo troubled,

bled and misused by his traine: except they went along the Forrest, and so are gone to the next village. Then Palmerin clasping on his Helmet, and snatching his Launce from his Dwarfe, Galloped amaine after the Giant, not speaking a word to Trineus, who accompanied with Ptolome, rode a pace after him, and as they passed by the Quænes Tent, they saw the Ladies and gentlewomen heauily lamenting, especially Eufemia, the chefe companion to the Princesse Agriola. Diuers Knights beside armed themselues to pursue the Giant, but Trineus not a little enraged, followed the tracke of the horse, demaunding of all he met, if they saw the villaine that had stolen away the Ladies. As concerning this Giant Franarco, you must note that hee was the cruellest tyrant and most notable fellon in all ỳ Realme, hauing a dayes iourney from the Forrest where the King hunted, a Castle so well fortified, and furnished with munition and all things necessarie, as in England was not the like, which was left to him by the death of his Father, who forcibly tooke it from a Lorde his neighbour, and diuers other places, especially the Isle Magdalen. There succéeded he ỳ royall dignitie, after the death of the elder Brother, , who (as you haue heard) was slaine in the battaile by Palmerin, and hée vnderstanding the death of the king of the Isle Magdalen, was so highlie displeased, ỳ although he had alwaies before borne allegeaunce to the king, hée nowe solemnly swore to reuenge his Brothers death, béing so feared of the whole Countrey, as none durst enterprise to deale with him. So to reuenge the slaughter of his eldest Brother, with diuers of his kindred and Frendes likewise slayne in the battaile, he strengthened himselfe with thirtie hardie knightes, intending to displease the king so much as hee could. And hearing ỳ he was comming to London, to feast the knights that were the cause of this victory, but chefely him that slewe his brother, came with his cõpany this way, in hope to finde them all vnprouided. And comming that morning the king was gone on hunting, he found those hée

desired

deſired to méete withall, for the hatred he bare them, thinking himſelfe ſufficiently reuenged, if hée could carry away with him the Quéene and her Daughter: which he accompliſhed to his owne deſire, cauſing them mount vp behinde two of his Knights. The gentlemen that were left to kéepe the Quéene companye, offended to ſée ſuch villany offered their Ladie and Miſtreſſe, defended her ſo well as they could, but all auayled not againſt the Giant and his power, becauſe they were armed, and they with the Quéene were vnprouided, ſo that a number of them were ſlaine and ſore wounded, and more had béene, but that he feared the return of the King, which made him in haſt ride thence with his ſpoyle, ſending them ſomewhat before, and loytering behind himſelfe, to fight with anie that ſhuld come to reſkew them. Trineus hauing gotten the ſight of them, came paſting to the Giant, ſaying. Stay trayterous théefe, for thou maiſt not ſo cary her away that is worthy the greateſt lord in the world. With theſe words they ran fiercely togither, Trineus giuing the Giant a ſore wound on the ſhoulder, but the Prince receiued ſuch a mightie ſtroke from the Giant, as he fell frõ his horſe with his héeles vpward. Palmerin béeing not far off, and doubting leaſt the Prince had bene ſlaine, came in a great rage to Franarco, ſaying. Monſtrous enemie to manhoode, who made thée ſo ſaucie to lay violent hands on Ladies of ſuch account, by my Sworde villaine, I ſhall make thée déerely to pay for thy folly. So couching their Launces they met togither, the Giant fayling, but Palmerin gaue him a ſhrewd wound on his body, and their horſſes roughly ſhouldring one another, as their maſters were both thrown to the ground. Franarco (béeing heauie and vnweldie) had ſuch a fall, as eaſily he could not recouer himſelfe. Palmerin nimbly getting vp againe, gaue the Giant ſuch a wound on his right legge, as the fleſh hung downe pittifully to beholde. The Giant béeing not able to ſtande any longer on that leg, ſet his knée to the ground, béeing glad to defend the ſtrokes of Palmerin, who reached him ſuch a ſounde

blow

blowe on the forehead with the hils of his swoorde, as the Giant fell along on his backe, when Palmerin soone setting his foote on his breast, with his Swoord deuided his heade from his shoulders. During this fight, Trineus & Ptolome, made after the Quéene and her Daughter, whome the Giants Knights droue cruelly before them. Nowe was it a matter well worthy memory, to sée the braue behauiour of these two Knights, but cheefely of Trineus before his sweete Mistresse, whose presence endued him with such exceeding courage, as hée thought himselfe able to conquer the whole world, and therefore sufficient for all them, were they as manie more in number. But strength doth not alwaies equall courage, and louers thinke more then they are able to doo, as to Trineus perill it had now fallen out, but that a companie of the Kings Knights arriued, whereupon began a hote encounter betwéene them, and Trineus comming to the Knight ý had Agriola behinde him, set him soone beside his horse, with his neck broken in his fall, so that ý princesse getting forth of the throng, and séeing her beloued so valiant in prowesse, betwéene ioy and greefe, she said. Ah happie Knight, the mirror of all such as follow armes, I desire thy fortune may prooue such, as thou & thy company may haue victory ouer these traytors. Now may I bée well assured of the loue thou beares me, for which, (if we may escape this hard brunt) perswade thy selfe not to passe vnrecompenced. Trineus hearing the woords of Agriola, was enflamed with such a spirite of conquering desire, as breaking in among the thickest, his strokes gaue witnes he fought for a wife. But the Giants Knights were men of such proofe, as the fresh supply that came were all wel-néere slaine, and doubtlesse the rest had borne them company, but that the King and Palmerin, with fifty Knights more, came to assist them: for Palmerin hauing slayne the Giant, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the goodliest ý euer he saw, and espying the King comming with his traine, set on with him, and found Trineus in great danger, because so many of

his

his ſide were ſlaine, but this freſh aſſiſtance brought by the king, was the meane that all the Giants knightes were ſlaughtered, and they kneeling downe thanking God for their victory. The king alighting, came and embraced the quéene, ſaying. How happy may we thinke our ſelues Madame, hauing ſo well preuented this trecherous villanie? for neuer did I thinke to ſée you againe, but that God & theſe knights ſo highlie befrended vs. The Quéene and her Daughter were as yet ſo diſmayed, in remembraunce of their former daunger, as beholding ſo many lye ſlaine before them, and ioyfull beſide béeing ſo fortunately deliuered, as betwéene theſe extreames they knew not what to ſay, but deſired ſpéedilie to ſet forward thence, which they preſently did, ỹ king commaunding his Nephew Cerides, to ſée Franarco and his men burned to aſhes, and honorable Sepulture to be prouided for the other. When the Quéene hearde that Franarco was dead. Tell me my Lord (quoth ſhe) who hath done ſuch a gracious acte to kill that monſtrous villaine? Euen hée Madame, ſaid the king, that was cauſe of my victorie in battell, the knight héere in blacke Armour, to whome I am ſo far indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence ſufficient for him: and this can I not ſpeak without great maruaile, ſéeing ſo rare valour performed with ſo little danger on his behalfe. Long may the good knight liue ſaide the Quéene that hath ſo defended vs, and may they all thrée proſper in their affaires, for their knightly ſeruice to the Realme of England. While theſe ſpéeches endured, Trineus béeing ſore wounded, was brought betwéen two ſquires and ſet vpon his horſe, but the king, the quéene, and chéefely faire Agriola was glad, when ſhe heard there was no ſuch daunger but he might well eſcape it. Wherefore mounting al on horſebacke, they rode to ſée the Giants bodie, which made Agriola repute Palmerin for no leſſe then his Dwarfe commended him. Then the king commaunded to vnarme the body, and one of his knightes ſhould bring away his Helmet and Shéelde, which would be tokens ſufficient for him

to

to recouer the Caſtle of Garbones which he ſeiſed on, and all other things belonging to the Giant, he ſent the Count of Bonneroy with fiue hundred men to confiſcate and return to his Maieſties vſe. The Count well knowing ſuch matters would not eaſily be accomplished, if they in the Caſtle ſhould make reſiſtance, therefore politikely he ſent the Giants Targe and Helmet before, as ſent from Franarco, who was with the king, and they ſhould open the gates becauſe they were comming thither, for witnes wherof they ſhewed the giants ſignet of arms. The guard ſuſpitious, and thinking it vnpoſſible for any man to conquere the giant, opened the gates, wherupõ the Count preſently entred with his power, putting all to the ſword, not ſparing any, not ſo much as the giants yonger brother, who eſcaping aliue from the battel, was the cauſe who Franarco dealt thus villanouſly. Thus did the Count yéld the Caſtle into the Kings obeyſance: remaining Captaine therof vnder the Kings authoritie, the like hee did in many other places, where the people aduertiſed of the Giants rebellion, and that the Caſtle of Garbones was taken, there was none would reſiſt the kings commandement, wherof the Count was not a little glad, returning as ſoone as he could with the glad tidings of his ſucceſſe to the Court, certifying the King how all things happened.

Chap. LII.

Of the conference Palmerin had with the Princeſſe Agriola, after he had ſlaine the Giant *Fraiarco*.

By this time the King was come to his Pauillion, where he cauſed his Chirurgions diligently to attend the three knights, for the curing of their wounds, who found that the prince of Allemaigne was worſt of al hurt, yet the king vnderſtãding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, becauſe he loued him dearely, and intended to honour him ſo much as lay in his power, promiſing not to depart thence till hee recouered his health: and becauſe he would preuent like miſchances, he cauſed diligent watch to be made euerie night, as though he hadde lien in field encamped with the enemie. During the Princes ſickneſſe, hee was oftentimes viſited by the Queene and fayre Agriola, not vnthankfull of the courteſie receiued by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manifold thankes. Trineus eſteeming himſelfe worthily recompenced, ſeeing that heauenly ſpectacle, whoſe preſence healed a greater wound then any hee had receiued in fight, deſiring the continuance of the outward hurts, for comforting of his inward oppreſſions. And while the queene thus conferred with Trineus, Palmerin came to the princeſſe Agriola, ſeeing the time ſo lawfull and commodious, that hee might thoroughly acquaint her with matter long enough before premeditated, but becauſe ſhee was deſirous to talke with him, ſhe firſt began in manner following. I know not ſir Knight, how the king my Father will ſatisfie the great

ſeruice

ſeruice you haue done him, in ſo many hazards to his Realme and himſelfe: but for mine owne part, I think my ſelfe ſo bounden, that after life, which he gaue me by generation, my deuoted ſoule ſhall remaine to honour you. And if theſe occaſions paſſed doo giue mee iuſt cauſe to thinke my ſelfe happie, what leſſe account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your companion, who came into this Countrey onely for my loue, as I am perſwaded: yet doubtfull to be lightly carried away with report, I ſhould accept it for more ſound aſſurance, ſo pleaſe you to ſpeake the truth herein. Madame (quoth Palmerin) if I haue done any ſeruice to the King or you, it is rewarded with much more the ſufficient, ſeeing it pleaſeth you to make ſuch account thereof, and I promiſe you, you haue two knights wholly at commaund for the loue of the third, who is ſo confidently bound your friend and ſeruant, as no man in the world can bee more, & this is he that lieth wounded in his bed, the princely ſonne and heire of the Emperor of Allemaigne, in which report my Dwarfe hath not deceiued you. And giue my word this credit (Madame) that ſince the time hee firſt heard of your excellent beautie, being then in Fraunce, he neuer had other determination, but to ſpend his life in your gracious ſeruice, and making refuſall of many faire Ladies, eſpecially of Lucemania, daughter to the moſt chriſtian king of Fraunce, ſet downe this princely and commendable reſolution, neuer to eſpouſe any other but you, ſo it may ſtand with your liking to accept him for your husband: think then aduiſedly (ſweete madam) of the incomparable happines ordained for you, and ſtand not in your owne light to loſe ſo good fortune. In truth my Lord quoth the princeſſe, I were well worthy to be reputed among the number of moſt hard harted and ingratefull Ladies, if I ſhold not loue the prince Trineus, were it but for the danger he remaines in for me, and the vnfaigned loue which you ſay he beares mee. And thus farre I preſume my Lorde on your credit, that if it were otherwiſe, you would not diſguiſe the matter to me in

this manner, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which (notwithstanding) would bee to you but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him on my behalfe, that the loue I beare him is more then he thinks, and very far exceedeth his iudgement, as the proofe hereof (in time) shall deliuer true testimonie. Madame, quoth Palmerin, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully vnderstoode, in you then it consisteth to preuent the contrarie, by mercifull regarde of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly he would enterprise (though against his will) to ayde the King your Father onely for your loue. And this will be the meane that the conceiued pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happie coniunction of their Children. My Lorde, quoth the Princesse, I wil do what shall please my father and mother to command me, and no other wise, considering the danger I may fall into by yéelding my honour to any preiudiciall occasion. Palmerin who had no other feare but to bee knowne what himselfe was, thus answered. I am perswaded madame, that your iudgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so royall as the Prince Trineus, you will not stand on frinolous tearmes, nor be carried away with any light or feminine feares, séeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accõplish the thing which shall make you the most renowned Lady vnder the Occident. I pray you sir Palmerin, quoth she, referre this talke to some other time, for the answere of such a high and weightie matter, deserueth to be excogitated with leysure, for oftentimes we sée, that such actions sodainely and slightly performed, causeth more repentaunce afterward then is expected. Yet thus farre I venture, and so faithfully perswade him, that he is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my husband, if they were so agréed to whom God, nature, and dutie hath bounde mée: and to let him vnderstand my willing desire towardes him, I will speake to him my selfe, as soone as the Maúne is departed.

parted. Not long after, the Quéene returned to the King, leauing her Daughter with two of her Ladyes to comfort the prince, whereupon Palmerin taking her by the hande, brought her to the bedde side where Trineus lay, to whome she made very curteous reuerence, & trembling with modest bashfulnesse, said. How fare ye gentle knight: truste mee your hard fortune doth greatly displease mee, and if I could beare part therein, beléeue me I would gladly endure the paine: for it is good reason that the causer of the harme, should haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a Maidens thankes, for your good assistance without any desert. Trineus was so rauished with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consisted the safetie of his life, as hee could not vtter the ioy hee conceiued: which the Princesse well noted and Palmerin likewise, who aunswered her in this manner. It cannot be madame but my Lord Trineus will soone amend, hauing the sodaine medecine so néere him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: when the Prince giuing a gréeuous sigh, saide. Faire madame, to accomplish what you commanded the first day I sawe you, I did my deuoire to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not so sufficiently as I could wish: yet since that time I neuer enioyed one minute of rest, till this instant, when mine eyes delighted with your swéete presence, gaue hope to my heart of further comfort. For this onely cause (faire mistresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and countrey, regarding nothing more then this present happinesse, whereby my woundes are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all daungers sufficiently recouered, so that no gréefe can now molest me, when your gracious fauour thoroughly confoundeth all. And nowe might I imagine my misfortune beyonde all other, were not this fearefull doubt left to trouble it, that scanning disdaine should be hid in such rare perfections, as oftentimes it commeth so to passe: therefore I be-

ſéech you Madame, may it ſtand with your liking to reſolue all doubts by your direct opinion, and héerein ſhall I account my ſelfe more honoured, then were I monarch of the whole worlde. Loue hauing then ſo wounded the princeſſe, as for a while ſhe was driuẽ to ſilence, at length withdrew the paſſion, and cauſed her returne this anſwere. Alas my Lord, I was (ere this) ſo certaine of your affection towardes me, in reſpect of the dangerous trauailes endured for my ſake, as you néede not ſéeke any other prowes, then what mine owne hart was fully reſolued on: and ſo I continue ſtill, expecting the day to make vs both fortunate, which I would haue you as yet diſſemble, leaſt crooked miſhap any way preuent vs. As ſhe was proceéding in her diſcourſe, the Quéene entred the tent againe, by which occaſion Trineus could not ſay what he intended, wherefore taking her ſecretly by the hand, wrong her fingers with ſuch a trembling paſſion, as all the night following he lay meditating on his goddeſſe Agriola, and the comfortable anſwere ſhee gaue him. If the young prince were in ſuch torments, his Lady beare him companie, thinking on the ſpéeches paſt betwéene her and Palmerin, and this euening the Dwarfe (not compaſſing before to ſpeake with Agriola) preſented her with the Emeralde from the Prince, which ſhe kindly receiuing, in recompence thereof ſent him a fayre Diamond, rewarding the Dwarfe liberally for his paines, who among the reſt of his talke, highly commended the vertues of the Prince, which increaſed her loue ſo confidently, as ſhe aſſured him of the Princeſſe loue, that death could not change her ſetled affection. Trineus fully reſolning héereon, gaue ſuch chéerefull phiſicke to his heart, and the Chirurgions ſuch diligence to his woundes, as within ſeauen or eight daies he was able to beare armes: whereupon the King departed thence towardes London, where the ſtrange knights were entertained with meruailous honor, the Lords, Knights, Burgeſſes, Officers and other Citizens, welcomming them with great pompe and

royaltie,

royaltie, saying. Welcome are the knights that deliuered the Quéne and her Daughter, from the cruell Giant Franarco, with diuers other salutations, whereat Palmerin and his friendes were greatly abashed. Passing on to the Pallace, all the way they were still presented with rare shewes and deuises, and the knights lodgings were appointed in very stately Chambers in the Court, causing open Court to be kept for eight dayes space, for the honour of these knights, and entertainement of all friendly commers, in all which time there wanted no sports & delights, as such times and occasions do necessarily require. Nowe came all the Princes, Lords, and renowned knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaule, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne prouince, which yet was not the chéefest cause of his absence: but the shame hée reputed to himselfe for his foyle in Fraunce, when hée entred the Combatte for the beautie of the fayre princesse Agriola. These knights thus worthily intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the King and Quénes Chambers, by which meanes Trineus might when himselfe pleased, conferre with the Princesse, till this instant among all other, the prince thus began to his Ladie and Mistresse. You may easily presume swéete madam, what secret Combattes I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the onely hope of your fauour, which as you haue promised to my especiall friend Sir Palmerin, I doubt not but you will perseuer in that gracious opinion, and what promise hee hath made of my seruice to you, thinke not but I obserue with religious care & deuotion, though not sufficient to equal your deserts, yet because ingratitude shal not insult against me. So many thanks (quoth the Princesse) I returne you my Lord, as good opinions can bee imagined betwéene vs both, and accounting you for my friende, which is a higher degrée, I héere discharge you of my seruice, and (mine honour guarded from blame) I shall iudge my selfe happie to yéelde

you any content, which I will fulfill, notwithſtanding any daunger towardes mee. But I praye you tell mée my Lord, what is the intent of your loue in this action. Madame, (quoth the Prince) for Palmerin, who is nowe come to beare vs companie, ſhall credibly enforme you, ſo pleaſe you to reſt contented therewith. Palmerin thus entred, and imagined theyr talke was not about affayres of Merchandiſe, wherefore hée sayde to the Princeſſe. God ſpéede you Madame, pardon mée, I ſhould call you Ladie, and Wife to the Prince of Allemaigne, for I doubt not but you haue choſen him your Huſband in heart. Agriola bluſhing and ſmyling hereat, made no aunſwere: Wherefore Palmerin went forward in this manner. In faith Madame if you haue done ſo, I would counſell you to accompliſh it preſentlie, and prouide to go with vs to Allemaigne, where the Emperour will entertaine you with ſuch gracious fauour, as you will not loſe if you beare the minde of a Princeſſe: beſide, you ſhall be the meane of euerlaſting peace betwéene the King your Father and his Maieſtie. To which wordes, Agriola thus diſcréetly anſwered.

I promiſe you my Lord, there is no Prince thys daye liuing, whome I would more gladlie accept for my Huſband, then the Prince Trineus: notwithſtanding, for mée to departe without the knowledge of the King or Quéene my Parents, is an acte in (mine opinion) farre diſſenting from duetie and honeſt reporte. Therefore my Lord, louing myne honour as you ſay you do, I pray you let our behauiour be with better wiſdome, leaſt we both fall into dangers not recouerable. Palmerin perceyuing Agriola contrary to the moſt neceſſary occaſion, vſed ſuch arguments, and played ſo well the Orator, that the poore Princeſſe had no power to reſiſt: conſidering the great loue ſhee bare the Prince Trineus, which made her yeelde more eaſily to his perſwaſions, ſo that ſhée agréed to accompliſh their determination, and depart with them towardes the Realme of Allemaigne. Trineus ioyes nowe exceeded meaſure, and Palmerin (for)

his

his sake) was no lesse contented, in respect hee should the sooner see his mistresse Polinarda, whose very remembe-raunce gaue him life, as the ayre doth the Camelion. But fortune beholding each thing prosper as likte their fancies, would nowe néedes beginne to play her Pagant, crossing them with the vnhappiest stratageme, that euer could happen to so noble Princes, as in the sequell shall bée largely discoursed. They little expecting such a chaunce, are earnestly following their serious enterprise, which was secretly to carrie Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for which purpose they prouided ships and skilfull Pilots to conduct them, conueying all their necessaries abroade, at what time this aduenture following happened in the Court of England.

Chap. LIII.

Howe in the time of this pleasant and great assembly, there came a Damosell to London, who desired the king to do her iustice against a knight of his owne Court.

During the time that this royall company continued at London, minding nothing but pleasures, pastimes, and courtly recreations: there came a damosell so faire as might be, accompanied with two auncient knights, and a lustie Champion brauely armed, with fiue Squires attending on him. The Damosell entring the Pallace, came before the King, and on her knee began

beganne in this manner. Dreade Lorde, hauing long time hearde your good iuſtice towardes your Subiects, without any fauour or exception of perſons: I am the more bolde, (albeit he that hath iniuried mee, is reputed for a Man of good quallity, and holdeth place of authority in your Court) humbly to craue of your highneſſe one requeſt, againſt the moſt falſe and diſloyall Knight that euer was: whom when I but remember, more weightie and grieuous oppreſſions fall vpon my ſoule, then this wretched body of mine is able to endure.

Damoſell ſaide the King, I ſhall right gladly releeue your heauines, if it ly in my power to do it: therefore tell mée the cauſe of your offence: and what hée is that hath ſo wronged you. Knowe my good Lorde (quoth ſhée) that I loued a Knight ſo déerely, as contrary to the lyking of my Parents and Friendes, and two much forgetfull of mine owne ſelfe, I take him to my Huſband, thinking he loued mée ſo faithfully, as his ſhewes and behauiour gaue demonſtration. But the Traytour had no other meaning, then to beguile and falſely deceyue mee, for after I haue made him Lorde of mee & mine, and brought him to a Caſtle of mine, ſo ſtrong and fayre as anye in your highneſſe dominions: the Traytour expulſed mée thence violently, pretending that mée were ſo neere allyed, as he might no longer account mee for his Wife. Since which time, notwithſtanding all the humble intreaties I haue made: hée will neither reſtore mée my goods and poſſeſſions againe, nor yet accepte mee as his eſpouſed Wife. Therefore I beſeeche you my Lord, as becomes a good & vertuous Prince, for the honour of nobilitie and regarde of womanhode, you will take pittie on a poore diſtreſſed Ladye, and that in ſuch a righteſull demaunde, you woulde doo mée iuſtice, which I had ſooner demaunded, but coulde not by the occaſions of your troubleſome warres.

Ladye, ſayde the King, as yet you haue not named the man that hath offered you this ſurpaſſing iniury. My Lord (quoth

(quoth shée) this is the man in your presence, name Miseres, a vile Traytour, and publique aduulterer. And if he dare affirme that I haue spoken vntruth, I haue héere brought a Knight with mée, who by Combatte shall make him confesse his falshood and treason, so please your Maiestie to fauour my request. Miseres, (quoth the King) how answere you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Lady chargeth you? Miseres béeing suddainly driuen into this dumpe, knewe not well what to saye: yet at length (with humble reuerence) hée thus beganne. My soueraigne Lorde, if credite may be giuen to the first countenaunce of accusations, without hearing howe the partye accused can iustifie himselfe, I doubt not but your Maiestie will presentlye condemne mee: but when the matter is well debated and discided, they which séemed at first vnreprooueable, are found malicious and slaunderous persons, and the accused, innocent and frée from blame, as heere your highnesse shall most plainely beholde. The matter whereof this Ladye detecteth mée, is forged, and most villainously inuented: for to mée belonged the Castle shée quarrelles for, discended from my Predecessours, to whom I am the true, lawfull, and legitimate inheritour. True it is that this dissembling Womanne, by swéete spéeches, feminine guiles, and secrete deceits, oftentimes practised to winne mée for her Husbande: but knowing her behauiour such as beséemed not a Woman of modestie and vertue, I would not héere her, much lesse consent to match with her. And this is the cause of her complaint, in hope that you, (béeing aboue all other Princes most benigne and honourable) will constraine mée to wedde her, in respecte of your absolute authoritie, as the duetifull obedience wherein I am bounde. When the Knight which came with the Lady, heard Miseres blame her in this sorte, hée stepped before the King with these words.

It is great follie (my Lord) in Miseres, to deny a matter so apparantly knowne, although, if it were put to the

iudgment

iudgement of honeſte perſonnes, his common good reporte might cauſe him be beléeued: but the poore Ladye deſires that her right may bée cleared by Combatte, wherein let him confounde her if hée can, or elſe receiue rewarde for his notorious offence. On her behalfe, therefore my Lorde, I ſaye and will maintaine, that Myſeres is a moſt diſloyall Traytour, and his mouth ſhall confeſſe it, or this day will I take his heade from his bodie. Myſeres fæling himſelfe ſomewhat touched, grewe into great anger, and albeit the ſhame hé did the Ladie deliuered him culpable, and made him doubt the iſſue of the Combatte: yet in meruaylous choller hée aunſwered the Knight, that hée falſelye belyed him, and was readie to make proofe thereof in Combatte, if it pleaſed the King ſo to appoint it. And I doubt not (quoth hée) to make thée paye for thy raſhneſſe, and force thée confeſſe thy lacke of diſcretion, in giuing credite to the frotheleſſe complaints of this deceitfull Woman. Then was it ordained, that this difference ſhould bée tryed by Armes: Wherupon the Ladies Knight ſpake thus to the King. Séeing it hath pleaſed your Maieſtie, to graunt the Fielde to Myſeres and mée, may it pleaſe you (as it is the cuſtome) to commaunde, that he deliuer hoſtages: to the ende, if hée bee vanquiſhed, the Caſtle maye bee deliuered into your handes, to deliuer it in iuſtice where it appertaines. Good reaſon, ſaide the King, and therefore Myſeres, you muſt before you enter the Fielde, accompliſhe what the Knight in equitie hath demaunded.

Then Myſeres called one of his Brethren, whom he required to ſtande as his hoſtage: and doubt not before the Sunne be ſette, but I will diſcharge my ſelfe & my pledge, with which wordes hee departed the Hall to arme himſelfe: but becauſe the daye was too farre ſpent, the matter was deferred till the nexte morning. The King & his Lords, ſeing the Ladies Knight in ſuch reſolute aſſurannce, meruelled of whence and what he was, for none there knewe him but *Palmerin*, who neither coulde geſſe aſſuredly what

he

he was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure sheeld, which made him remember that at the Iouſtes in Fraunce the perillous Combate without victorie on either ſide, was fought betweene him and this knight. Palmerin being glad to ſée the man he long loked for, and purpoſing now to bee fully reuenged on him, ſecretly went forth of the hall, commaunding one of his Squires, to conuey his horſe and armour the next morning out of the Citie, becauſe if he vanquiſhed Miſeres, at his returne he intended to fight with him, or if Miſeres had the better, yet he ſhould not depart thence againe with life.

Nowe you muſt vnderſtande, that this Knight which came with the Ladie, was the Knight of the Sunne, named Fryſoll, who euer ſince the Combatte betweene Palmerin and him, remained with the Duke of Gaule, and was of him highly honoured for his worthie chiualrie. Of whom when this diſtreſſed Ladie heard, ſhée made her complaint to him of the wrong Myſeres had done her, and *Fryſol* pitying her caſe, promiſed to ayde her in recouerie of her right: and ſo came with her to the King of Englands Court, to the great griefe of the Duke of Gaule, who made Fryſol promiſe him to returne againe after the Combatte: but Fryſol was more deſirous thereof then the Duke, in reſpect of his fayre Syſter, becauſe ſhé was ſpecially beloued of her. Thus Palmerin following his enterprize, feared to bée preuented, becauſe the Field was appoynted by the King, in the ſame place where ſhé intended to méete with Fryſol, and beſide, *Palmerin* and the Duke of Norgalles were ordained Iudges of the field, which ſhé would not willingly haue taken vpon him, doubting by that meane to bee hindered of his other determination. The time being come that the Knights ſhould to the Combatte, the King and the Ladyes came to their Scaffolds, and the two Iudges were placed in their Tent, accompanied with many Princes and honourable perſons.

After that the Heraulds had commaunded the Champions

pions to doo theyr deuoyre, then they claſped their helmets, and fetching their carrire, mette with ſuch puiſſaunce as Miſeres brake his Launce on *Fryſols* Sheelde, not mouing him in his Saddle: but Fryſol driuing his Launce through Miſeres bodie, cauſed the Traytour to fall deade to the earth. Then he allighting, and opening Miſeres Helmette, ſawe no life in him, came to the Iudges, ſaying. You may nowe perceyue my Lordes, whether hee that offered this Ladie ſuch villanie, hath receyued his due deſert, or no, if there yet remaine any thing elſe to doo for recouering of her right, I am here ready to maintaine her cauſe. *Palmerin*, who was not verie well pleaſed with this victorie, anſwered. Knight, you haue done enough at this time, pray that other aſſayres may proue as proſperous to you hereafter, and in anger went forth of the field, commaunding the bodie of Miſeres to be brought thence, which was afterward interred with great honour.

Fryſol hauing thus vanquiſhed Miſeres, the Ladie for whom he entred the Combatte, fell on her knees before the King, deſiring him to ſurrender the caſtell which Myſeres vniuſtly detained from her. In ſooth Ladie, quoth the King, it is reaſon you ſhould haue iuſtice, and your owne deliuered you, but know you his name that defended your quarrell? My Lord (quoth ſhe) in concealing his name, I ſhould offer him great wrong, concealing the bountie and prowesſe of the man, which hath not beene ſparingly ſhewed heretofore, in preſence of the Duke of Gaule, againſt the King of Norway, whoſe armie was diſcomfited by the worthy valour and policy of this knight, who calleth himſelfe by the name of Fryſol, the Duke of Gaule bringing him forth of Fraunce at his laſt voyage, and euer ſince hath ſo dearly loued him, as he were his owne naturall brother. I promiſe you Ladie, ſayde the King, you made no ill choyſe of your Knight, for I haue heeretofore heard of his actions, and am not a little glad that I know him, wiſhing he were of my Court, becauſe a King accompanyed with ſuch perſons, muſt

needes

nédes imagine his Countrie happie. And in respect he is so braue a Champion, it is impossible but hée shoulde bée a wyse and vertuous Knight, wherefore I pray you cause him to come to mee: which shée presently did. And hauing saluted his Maiestie with honourable reuerence, the King embraced him with these wordes. Worthie Sir, you are most heartily welcome: I could wish you were one of my Knights, in respect that my Court should bee the more honoured, and I might requite your paines better then I can on a sudden.

Mightie Prince, (quoth Frisol) in assisting this distressed Ladie, I haue done but my dutie: but if I could any way do your highnesse seruice, I knowe no Prince liuing, for whom I wold more gladly employ my selfe. And at this time vrgent affayres excuse me from staying héere any longer: neuertheless, I intreate you my good Lord, (if it may stande with your fauourable liking) to repute mee among the number of your Souldiours and Seruaunts. If it must néedes be so, sayde the King, you shall doo what please you, yet will I reckon you amongst those to whom I owe continuall loue and affection. And although the death of Myseres doth somwhat greeue me, because I made some estimation of him: yet for your sake shall I deliuer the Ladie her Castell, which you haue conquered with so knightly chiualrie. Frysol humblie thanked his Maiestie, and departed with the Ladie, which way they came: but Palmerin very much offended at his departure, and earnestly desiring to be reuenged on him, commaunded his Dwarfe to marke well which way they went.

The Dwarfe diligently fulfilling his Maisters charge, returned and told him which way they tooke: whereupon, he beeing desirous to follow, without giuing any knowledge thereof to his companions, left Trineus to conferre with his sayde Mystresse Agriola, and departed the Court so secretly, as neither the Prince or Polomie suspected any thing. And so accompanied with the Dwarfe Vibanillo, he came

to

to the place where his Squire ſtayed with his Armour, where, when hée diſarmed, hee mounted on horſe backe thus ſpeaking to his man. Returne you to the Cittie, and there expect my comming: as for thée Vrbanillo, thou ſhalt ſay to Tryneus, that hée muſt pardon mee, though I did not acquaint him with the cauſe of my departure: which I was more enforced to doe then he thinkes on: nenertheleſſe, pray him take no paine to enquire after mee, becauſe I doubt not to returne verie ſhortly, although not ſo ſoone as hee woulde: yet pray him to vſe ſo little ſpeach thereof as may be. The like mayſt thou ſay to Ptolome, and to them both commende me moſt heartily: With this charge to you both, that vppon payne of your lyues, neither of you doo followe mée, nor cauſe anie other to ſéeke after mee.

So taking his Launce, hee gallopped that way which his Dwarffe ſhewed him they were gone, and he with the Squire returned to the Cittie, making verie ſorrowfull lamentation, becauſe they thought their maiſter woulde returne no more, in that hée would not bee knowne whither hee went, yet would they bewray nothing they? maiſter had forbidde them. Trineus and Ptolome were maruellous ſorowfull, eſpecially the Prince, who without the Dwarffes aſſurance of his Maiſters ſhort returne, had followed to ſeeke him: yet not thoroughlie contented with Vrbanillos perſwasions, the King came to comfort him, ſaying. You muſt thinke good Sir, that your noble Frend is gone about ſome ſtraunge aduenture, for you knowe he neuer enterpriſed any thing, but it returned him to honour. If héeretofore for the loue of his Ladie, hée ſhewed himſelfe without his Péere in chiualrie, thinke you he will not regarde his reputation, and premeditate his actions before hee runne too farre in daunger? Content your ſelfe I pray you, for if his returne be not the ſooner, I will cauſe ſuch prouiſion to bée made, as hée ſhall be found againe. The Princeſſe Agriola likewiſe intreated him not to bee diſpleaſed at the abſence

of

of Palmerin, for with the helpe of God and his Frendes, quoth she, his returne will cause as much ioy, as his departure doth greefe. All this could hardly content Trineus, for hee dreamed in his sleepe, that the Knight which slewe Myseres, was hee against whom Palmerin entred the Combat in Fraunce, at what time they could not overcome each other. And remembring what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected that for this cause hee followed him, which imagination somewhat comforted him, and he reputed the Knight unwise if hee medled any more with Palmerin.

Chap. LIIII.

How after the death of Myseres, Palmerin followed Frysol, whom he had slaine, but that a Damosel intreated his life.

ALL that day Palmerin travailed, and most part of the next, yet could hee heare no tidings of the Lady and Frisol, which mave him ryde in great melancholly, till at length meeting with a Damosel, mounted on a goodly Palfray very richly harnessed, of whome he demaunded, if shee mette not a Knight armed, who bare in a Sheelde of Azure a Golden Sunne, and with him a Ladye attended on by manye Squires. Trewlie Sir, quoth the Damosell, if you will graunt mee two requests that I shall demaunde, I will bring you to him you seeke for, before to morrowe the third houre of the day. Palmerin who was woonderfull desirous to finde his enemie, granted to anye

thing ſhee woulde deſire: on condition (quoth he) that you ſhewe mee the Knight. Followe mée then ſayde the Damoſell, for I will accompliſhe what I haue promiſed. So rode they togither, and among other ſpeeches, Palmerin aſked her if ſhee knewe the Knight, and what his name was: The Damoſell anſwered, that ſhée knewe not the Knight, but ſhée was very well acquainted with the Ladye in his company, and this night (quoth ſhée) they minde to lodge at a Caſtle of mine Auntes. In the euening they arriued within the ſight of the Caſtle, where they alighted from their Horſes, and entred a little thicket, for feare of béeing ſéene, and the Damoſell hauing a flagon of Wine, and a paſtie of redde Déere in a maunde at her ſaddle bowe. Palmerin and ſhée refreſhed themſelues therewithall: but all that night coulde not Palmerin ſettle himſelfe to ſleepe, watching the caſtle Gate, leaſt in the time of his ſléeping his enemie ſhould eſcape him. The next morning, ſo ſoone as the breake of day appeared, Fryſol came forth of the Caſtle with his companye, wherefore Palmerin not a litle gladde, ſaide to the Damoſell. Now (Lady) is your promiſe performed, for this is the Knight I ſéeke: if therefore you will any thing with mée, I muſt intreat you to followe mee, for I would be very lothe that he ſhoulde eſcape me.

With which wordes hée mounted on horſebacke, galloping after Fryſol ſo faſt as the Horſe coulde away, and ouertaking him, ſayde. Stay a while Sir Knight, thinke you to paſſe away in ſuch ſorte? haue you forgot your wordes at Parris, to the Knight that guarded the Duke of Sauoyes Tent? now is the time I hope to correcte your preſumptiõ, when thou ſhalt well perceiue, that thou neyther deſerueſt to be Seruant to the Princeſſe Polinarda, nor art worthy to talke of her honourable name. Fryſol thus ſaying, knewe by Palmerins wordes, that it was hée againſt whome he fought the Combats in Fraunce, whereupon he anſwered.

Truely Sir Knight, I haue not as yet forgotten what I then sayde, nor is the beautie of Polinarda, or my loue to her so little, that my desire to doe her seruice shoulde not bee now remembered, nor will I forbeare to confesse it still, for feare of thee or any other whatsoeuer. And if thou hast sought me forth in this quarrell, thou hast found me so readie to defend it: as I will more willingly chose to die, then denye any parte of my duetie to that gracious Princesse.

Palmerin beeing so angrye, as hee woulde multiply no more wordes, encountred his enemie so valyantly, as they brake theyr Launces, and yet coulde not vnhorse each other, then drawing their swordes, they laide so cruelly vppon their bodies, as theyr shields being broken, theyr Helmets battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so grieuously mangled, as neither of them both could iudge who was likest to winne the victorie. Till at length Frisols Horse sayling vnder him, fell to the grounde, and hee so weakened with his great losse of blood, as hee coulde not recouer himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to haue parted his head from his shoulders with his sworde, which when the Ladye sawe, for whome Frysol had slaine Myseres, shee fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her louelye tresses of hayre, but with great impatience renting them violentlye, made the ayre to eccho her lamentable complaints. Which the Damosell seeing that guyded Palmerin, and moued with compassion of her exceeding greefes: fell on her knees before Palmerin, intreating him to giue ouer the fight. But he, feyning that hee heard her not, because Frysol with rough struggling had got on foote againe: charged him with such violent strokes, as Frisol (beeing of inuincible courage) requited him with as woorthy chiualrie.

Againe the Damosel came on her knees to him, intreating him to giue ouer the fight, saying. You know my Lord, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer

Combatte againſt this Knight, and in ſo doing I ſhall acquite you of part of the promiſe which you made mee. Palmerin chafing like a furious Lyon, aunſwered. I pray you Damoſell aſke ſome other thing, for in this matter, of force you muſt pardon mée. In ſoth ſaide the Damoſell, if you denie mee my demaunde, I will complaine at the King of Englands Courte, and there will I declare you periured, for ill it beſeemes ſuch a Knight as you are, to make promiſe to a Lady and not obſerue it. By God Lady, ſaide Palmerin, you doo me great wrong, in with-holding mee from reuenge on him, whom aboue all menne in the worlde, I hate moſt deadlye, vnhappye was the houre wherein I mette you: and ſo mounting vppe on horſebacke, he galloped awaye in very great anger. When the other ſorrowfull Lady ſawe, that Palmerin was gone, and hadde left her Knight, with great ioye ſhée embraced the Damoſell that had procured it, thanking her for ſhéelding the life of a moſt noble Knight, for which courteſie ſhee remained bound to her during life.

What I haue done, (quoth the Damoſell) is for the loue of you and this Knight, ſwearing to you by the fayth of a Gentle womanne, that I haue another thing to aſke of the Knight which is gone, that concerneth mée very neere lie. Notwithſtanding, your teares moued mée with ſuch compaſſion, that I ſtande in daunger to loſe what I ſhall neuer recouer, yet in reſpecte the cauſe was ſo honeſt and vertuous, I do not repent what I haue done: but becauſe he remaineth indebted to mée for another requeſt, I muſt néedes leaue you and followe him, ſo mounting vppon her Palfraye, ſhée rode after Palmerin with all the haſte ſhee poſſiblye coulde make. And in her iourney wee will leaue her, returning to Fryſol, whoſe woundes being very dangerous, the Lady bounde them vppe ſo well as ſhée coulde, till they came at theyr next Lodging, where by good Fortune was a Lady ſo well ſéene in Chirurgery, as in ſhorte time ſhe cured his woundes whole and ſounde. Fryſol ſo

well

well recouered, departed thence with the Ladie, because the thirde day following they shoulde bee at the Castell, whither alreadie was come Hermes, one of the King of Englands Knights, beeing sent by his Lord the King to deliuer the Ladie her right: which Hermes did according to his charge, entertained the Ladie honourably, deliuered her the Keyes of the Castell, and commaunded all the Subiects to reuerence the Ladie, which they refused not to doe, but were glad of her comming. For ioy hereof, were very solemne feastes prepared, and the Ladie recounted to Hermes, Commissioner for the king, howe Frysol fought the Combate by the way, agaynst the Knight of the blacke armour: whereby Hermes presently knewe, that it was the straunge Knight, who had left the Court, vnknowne to his Companions, or any of his Friendes, whereof hee was not a little glad, because hee iudged that these newes woulde bee welcome to the King. Wherefore so soone as he had accomplished his charge, and seated the Ladie quietly in her Castell, hee departed, intending to follow Palmerin till he found him, trauayling the way was assigned him by the Ladie.

Frisol stayed there with the Ladie till hee had perfectly recouered his health, and then without any other recompence for his paynes, but onely a Horse, because his owne was slaine, and a newe Armour, his owne beeing spoyled, hee returned to the Duke of Gaule, who reioyced greatly to haue his companie. But when the Duke vnderstood how discourteously he had beene vsed by the blacke Knight, who was so highly fauoured in the English Court, hee deuised by all the meanes possible to bee reuenged on him: so that beeing in a Castell on the Frontiers of his Duchie, yet within the King of Englandes dominion, hee vnderstode the blacke Knight should passe that way, because he coulde not else returne to the Court. Now perswading himselfe for resolute vengeaunce, hee pitched his Tents in a fayre Medow neare a Bridge, and there placed twelue knights,

the moſt hardie and valiant men in all his Dukedome, who ſhould maintaine this order: that no Knight ſhoulde paſſe ouer the Bridge, vnleſſe hée entred Combate with thoſe twelue Knightes one after another, and ſuch as were vanquiſhed, ſhoulde ſubmitte themſelues to the Dukes mercy, eyther for their deliueraunce, or to remaine his prysoners, and the horſſe of the partie foyled, ſhould belong to the conquerer, but if they were diſmounted, the paſſenger ſhoulde go on his iourney, and take theyr Horſſes with him. Thys aduenture thus eſtabliſhed, many good Knights were ouercome, becauſe it was a verye harde matter to vanquiſhe twelue Knights, and yet eſcape: But the Duke toke no little pleaſure herein, who detained *Fryſol* more by conſtraint then otherwiſe, for his anger ſo behemently encreaſed againſt Palmerin, as no delight or pleaſure coulde expiate his reuenging deſires.

Chap. LV.

How Palmerin went with the Damoſell to accompliſh the promiſe he made her, and what befell him.

PAlmerin (as you haue heard) departed from the Damoſell in a rage, becauſe he coulde not execute what he intended, wherefore hee deuiſed to deale ſome other way, and to ſingle forth Friſol in ſuch conuenient place, as one of them ſhould dye before they departed. And as he was imagining ſome other way to ouertake Fryſol, the Damoſel had now againe recouered his company, ſaying. I pray you ſir Knight, conceiue no il opinion of me, for hinde-

ring

ring you from killing your enemie, whome you haue left in very great ieoperdy, considering what bountie and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will bee sorye for. Wherefore I pray you forget this displeasure, & determine to fulfill what you haue promised, which if you will do, you must go with me.

Beléeue me Damosell, saide Palmerin, you shewed but little courtesie, so often hindering me from the thing, which aboue all other in this worlde most tormenteth mée. What vnhappye bodye are you? but more vnhappye the houre I mette with you? but séeing it is reason I shoulde kéepe my promise, leade the way, and I will not faile to follow you. So rode they on, and for foure dayes space hée woulde not speake one word to her, and sayne he would haue left her company, but that he could not with honor forsake her. The next daye, as they rode by a Riuers side, Palmerin espyed a Knight standing with a Bowe and arrow in his hand, which he let flye at his Horse & killed him. Palmerin impacient by remembraunce of Frysol, and angrye that the Knight had thus killed his Horse, made towardes him so fast as hee coulde, but the Knight was suddainlye gotte on the further side of the Lake, and Palmerin vppe to the middle in Water before hée was ware of it, and nowe hee could neyther sée the Knight that slewe his Horse, nor the Damosell that came in his companie. Palmerin héeing in great perplexity, when he sawe nothing but water rounde about him, and féeling he was vpon a Bridge, behelde a meruailous déepe streame running vnder it, and at the ends thereof a goodly Castle. Walking along the Bridge toward the Castle, amazed at this contrary aduenture, hée espyed a Knight on the battlements of the Castle, who sayde. Staye a while Sir Knight, one shall come presentlye and open the Gate. Palmerin knewe not what to say, but determined to defende himselfe if any came to assaulte him, so the Castle Gate beeing opened, hée entred with his sword drawne, yet was there no man that displeased him, but euery one made

him humble reuerence, with very good words and gentle countenaunce, declaring by their behauiour, that hee was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towardes him a Ladie, accompanied with manie Damoſels and Knights, all ſhewing cheerefull geſtures, and the Ladie taking Palmerin by the hande, ſayde.

Ah, gentle knight, right welcome are you to this place, and heauen bee prayſed for the good it doth mee, to ſee you here, that is able to accompliſh the thing, which no other as yet coulde bee able to finiſh: enter hardily in good aſſuraunce, for you will wee make all the honour wee are able. Palmerin beleeuing the Ladie, was brought into a marvailous goodly Chamber, where certaine Squires holpe to vnarme him, bringing him a gorgeous Mantle to wrap about him. This done, he was conducted into a large Hall, where the Table was couered, the Ladie entertaining him ſo nobly, as in the King of Englands Court hee coulde not be better. The feaſt ended, and the Tables withdrawne, the Ladie beganne to deuiſe with Palmerin, ſaying. Long time (my Lord) haue we deſired your comming, as the man in whome our onely helpe conſiſteth: for by your valour we are perſwaded to be deliuered from the miſerie, wherin I and mine haue too long time beene detained. I beſeech you, Madame, quoth Palmerin, to tell mee your affayres, as alſo what the Knight meant to kill my Horſe, and why you entertaine mee with ſo great kindneſſe. If you wil promiſe mee, ſaide the Ladie, to accompliſh a needfull occaſion, and which I thinke is deſtinied to you: I will reſolue you, otherwiſe, I ſhall but loſe my labour. If it bee a matter reaſonable, (quoth Palmerin) and that a knight may compaſſe, ſpare not to tell mee, for I will do my endeuour therein. Gramercies gentle knight ſayde the Ladie, the circũſtance of the occaſion followeth in this ſort. This Caſtel (my Lord) ſometime belonged to my noble Father, a knight ſo hardie and valiant as any in theſe parts, in whoſe yonger yeares

loue so ouerruled him as he affected a lady of no lesse quantitie and condition then himselfe, by whom he had a daughter, at whose birth his Lady and Wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Lady of very honourable and auncient discent, by whom he had me the first Childe. My Sister come to fourténe yéres of age, my father oftentimes would haue richly married her, whereto she béing vnwilling, by my Fathers consent shée remained with her mothers Sister, whose skill was very great in all sciences, by whose counsel my sister caused a goodly Pallace to be edified, and a strong Tower in an Isle on the other side of this Castle, where afterwarde they made their continuall abiding. During this time, my father louing mee déerely, matched me with a wealthie and noble knight, excelling in all perfections, but chéefely in chiualrie, by whom I had a Daughter a yére after our espousall: but the more my gréefe, my Husband and Father both died, within little space after my Childs birth. My Daughter being come to the yéres of marriage, her beautie made her desired of many noble Lords: but because I still reputed her too yong, I denied all her suters, which afterwarde turned me to verie great detriment. For my Sisters aunt had a sonne, the most mishapped, deformed, and worst conditioned knight, as all the Countrey could not shew such another, yet became he so amorous of my Daughter, as hee requested his mother to demaund her of me for his Wife: but when I heard thereof, you may well perswade your selfe that neuer woman disliked any thing more, and yet to this time doo as much as I then did, so that I made her answere, howe I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonour her, because he was altogether vnworthie such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharpe repulse, he continued his amorous desires to my Daughter, so that he earnestly perswaded his mother to permitte him to take her from me perforce, to which suite the vndiscréete mother

consen-

conſented, either moued with pittie, or ouercome by the importunate ſolliciting of her, ſo that one day (vnder colour of a friend méeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my Daughter. This wicked traytor hadde long before that time intended this trecherie, compacting the matter ſecretly with villaines and théeues, by whoſe aſſiſtance he carried away my Daughter, ſhutting her vppe in a ſtrong Tower whereof I told you. And becauſe he feared I would gather ſome ſtrength to reſkew her, conſidering how well I was beloued of my neighbours, hee preuented mée by a ſtrange enchauntment, enuironing the caſtle and the tower with ſuch a marualous water, as no knight ſhoulde enter vppon them without their conſent. Now that themſelues might come forth and returne againe at their pleaſure, they deuiſed a little Boate, which is guarded by two fierce Lions, and a puiſſant knight that hath charge of them, ſo that none comes to them but whome they liſt. Since this vnhappie time did I neuer ſée my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which moſt of all gréeues mé) immediatly violated and raviſhed at his pleaſure, ſwearing now neuer to take her as his Wife, but to vſe her as his Concubine: and beſide all this, the Traitour in deſpight of mee, and to reuenge the words I gaue him, doth monſtrouſly abuſe her, and (vnmanly) whippeth her dayly with Roddes, which my Siſter hath often intreated to be ſpared, but he by no meanes will be perſwaded. Thus ſéeing my ſelfe out of all hope to recouer her againe, haue euer ſince continued in earneſt inuocation to Heauen, that ſome notable vengeance might puniſh this villaine: and ſuch fauour haue I founde in my deuout imprecations, as firſt his mother was chaſtized with a diſeaſe called Saint Anthonyes fire in one of her legges, which ſo gréeuouſly tormenteth her, as no remedie can bée founde to aſſwage the veration. Her Sonne vnderſtanding héereof, would haue ſlaine my ſiſter, accuſing her to procure his Mothers infirmity by her learned knowledge: whereuppon my

my Sister fearing her life, and watching time conuenient for her purpose, escaped from the villaine hither to mée, béeing sorrie that her Aunt should thus iniuriously deale with me, and promised to worke the meane that I should recouer my Daughter. These wordes not a little pleasing mée, I would néedes knowe howe I should come by my Daughter againe, whose misfortune had béene so vrkesome to me, whereto she thus answered.

It is so good Sister, that I cannot nowe reuerse the enchauntments I haue alreadie made for your Daughter, though gladly I would if it lay in my power, wherefore you must attende the comming of a Knight, who excédeth all other in vertue and prowesse: for he shall passe the water, kill the Knight, enter the Tower, and deliuer my Niece your Daughter againe into your custody. As concerning the Knight: good Sister, that shall so hardly passe the water without feare, and fully accomplish my former enchauntment, for him will I leaue with you a Sworde, a very sumptuous armour, and diuers other gifts to bestowe on him, because my selfe shall not liue to sée him, which came to passe, for very shortly after my Sister died. Nowe know you Sir Knight what matter is prepordained for you, therefore take pittie on mée a poore desolate Mother, and aduenture your selfe in this cause of honour, as bounde hereto by vertue and néedefull occasion.

Beléeue mee Madame, saide Palmerin, your discourse hath béene strange, and good reason moones you to request vengeance, because your wrong is the greatest that euer I heard of, which may sometimes perswade you, that the offender cannot long escape, without shame aunswerable to his villanie, for Heauen will not suffer it, by assistance whereof I hope to reuenge your Daughters rape. And trust mee Lady, I am sorrie I came not in your Sisters life time, because shee coulde haue resolued mee in a doubtfull matter: neuertheless, I will doo so much for you as if

ſhe were liuing. But I maruaile what is become of the knight that ſlewe my horſe, and the Damoſell that conducted me hither. As for the Damoſell (quoth the Lady) ſhe ſhall come anone to attend vppon you: but the knight was onely a matter of enchauntment, deuiſed by my Siſter to diſcouer the man that ſhould ende this aduenture. And the Damoſell whereof you ſpeake hath brought hither many knights to the Lake, but when their horſes were ſlaine, none of them durſt be ſo hardy as to enter the water, but onely you, beeing predeſtinated of this aduenture. In this and other ſuch like talke they ſpent the day till Supper time, and afterwarde was Palmerin conducted to his Chamber, and beeing in bedde hee could take no reſt, firſt for greefe that he hadde not ſlaine Fryſol, then againe by the ſtrange tale the lady tolde him: wherefore ryſing the ſooner in the morning, hee went with the Lady to ſeruice in her Chappell, where hee deſired of God that hee might preuaile againſt theſe coniurations, and vanquiſh the knight that had ſo much abuſed his order. Returning from the Chappell, the Lady among other talke thus ſaide. I ſee Sir knight that your Armour is broken and much defaced, that one may iudge you haue not kept it idle in your Armorie, wherefore I thinke you met not with your friend, when you were enforced to ſo dangerous tryall: but as I vnderſtande by the Damoſell that was your guide, hither you returned him good payment for his paines. To ſupply your want, I will beſtow an Armour on you, which my Siſter long ſince prouided for you, and with careful regard kept cloſe in her Cheſt: therefore let me intreate you not to refuſe it, in reſpect it was not prouided but for ſpeciall purpoſe, beeing needfull for the preſent occaſion you muſt nowe enterpriſe. Palmerin would not refuſe her offer, wherefore opening the Cheſt, there lay the Armour couered with white Taffata, whereon was wrought in letters of Golde this inſcription: Theſe Armes were made for the good knight Palmerin D'Oliua, Sonne to the moſt royall King

that

that his day liued in all Greece. That worthie present greatly delighted Palmerin, because herein his desire was somewhat satisfied, which was to knowe the estate of his Father: wherefore in midst of this pleasing humour hee saide to his Lady: I perceiue faire Madame, that your sister knew more of my destinie then any other, for seeing she could so truely describe my name, I neede make no great doubt of her further iudgement. So taking away the like, beholde there a more sumptuous Armour, then that which halting Vulcan made for noble Achilles, at the earnest intreatie of beautifull Thetis, being curiously chased ouer with flowers of Gold, and the Sheild of steele, engrauen with rare deuises, as well might beseeme the greatest Prince in the world. Palmerin presently put off his owne Armour, and inuested himselfe with the Ladies gift, which so well agreed with him in euery poynt, as the like could hardly be framed for his body.

When hee was thus armed, he desired the Lady to shew him the way, that might conduct him to the place where he should discharge his promise, for he would delay no further time in a matter of such weight. The Lady commaunded three of her Squires to conduct him, who lead him along a narrow pathway, which brought him to the enchaunted water so deepe and dangerous, and there they shewed him the boate to passe ouer in, which was fastened with a great Chaine to a Tree, whereupon Palmerin sought the meanes to vntie it: but so soone as hee laide hand on the Chaine to plucke it towardes him, there rushed presently forth of the enchaunted water two mighty Lyons, who assaulted Palmerin in such forcible manner, as they got him downe on the ground vnder them, yet he recouered himselfe quickly, and valiantly encountred these hidious monsters, who had such a deuilish charme on them, as no sword could any way hurt or wound them. Palmerin perceiuing that all his labour was in vaine, called to Heauen for helpe in this necessity, and commending his ability to the highest

pow-

protection, and his heart to the gracious regarde of his myſtreſſe: hée gaue one of the Lyons ſuch a cruell ſtroke betwéene the eyes, as he tumbled headlong into the Water, and was afterwarde ſéene no more, and ſone after he ſent the other after for company, but had not his Armour béene of meruailous vertue, doubtleſſe this ſhould haue béene his laſt aduenture.

Not a little ioyfull of this happy victory, he entred the Boate, and with one of the Dares beganne to rowe, but nowe was hée ſurpriſed with a wonderfull daunger, for the Water aroſe in huge billowes, beating and tolling the Boate ſo carefully, as hee had much a do to kéepe the bottome from turning vpwarde. In this perplexitie, which hée coulde not deuiſe how to mittigate, a matter of greater miſchaunce yet befel him, for a meruailous great and ougly Monſter ſuddainlie ſtarted out of the Water, which laboured by all meanes poſſible to ouerturne the Boate. Nowe was hée conſtrayned to forgoe his Dare, and drawe his weapon to reſiſt this Monſter, which terrified him ſo cruellye on the one ſide, and the rough Waters ſo daungerouſlye on the other, as hee was not in the like hazarde, when he fought with the Serpent on the Mountaine Artiferus.

To comfort him in this contagious extreamitie, hée imployed his diuine aſſiſtaunce, whoſe onely prouidence muſt nowe defende him, elſe had the raging and diſtempered Water, or the rauenous Monſter that gaped for his life, deuoured him. But he that in greateſt perrilles, was euer of vndaunted ſpirite, made ſuch harde ſhifte to rowe with his Woorde, as in deſpight of the Monſter, and the hurling waues of the Water, hée landed on the other ſide: when immediatlye all the coniuration ceaſed, ſo that neyther Water, Monſter, Boate or any thing elſe might then bée diſcerned. I leaue you to imagine, whither Palmerin were glad or no, that he had ſo happily eſcaped this daunger, for ioye whereof he fell vpon his knees, and with hea-

ued

ned hands and eyes to heauen, gaue thankes vnto God for his deliuerance. His praier being ended, he went to the Castle, where he heard a most grieuous and doleful complaint of a Lady, saying.

Vnhappie bee the houre of my nativitye, alas is it possible that in all the whole worlde, my Ladie may compare with my miseries, Palmerin attentiuelye marking these speeches, knewe well it was the imprisoned Lady, wherefore moued with compassion, hee called aloude for one to open the Gate, and so long hee called that the Knight heard him, who looking forth at a Windowe of the Fortresse, saide. In an euill houre (Knight) cammest thou hither, and I meruaile what foolish presumption guyded thee to this place, seeing thou canst no waye escape my hands, but in my courtesie it remaines, eyther to spare thee, or put thee to a most cruell death, although my enchauntment haue suffered thy passage. Thou art meruailous hartye, quoth Palmerin, there at thy Windowe, but if thy courage bee such, as to deale with mee haue to hande: I shall let thee vnderstande, that thy great wordes cannot sheelde thee from my Sworde, for I will pull downe that proud stomacke, and reward thy inexorable tyrannye, to that good Ladie I heard complaine, whom villainously thou tookest from her Mother. Come downe I praye thee if thou bee not afraid, and thou shalt see what entertainment I giue to such as thou art.

Are you Sir (quoth the Knight) such a Corrector and reformer of vices? Darest thou but tarrie till I come downe I shall teache thee the way to be better aduised. So arming himselfe presently, hee mounted on horsebacke, and came forth of the Castle: whereupon Palmerin thus spake to him, There is our great or a foyr Knight, you to be on horsebacke, and I on foote, you shall shewe small manhode in offering me such wrong: I praye thee (of courtesie) alight, otherwise I shall bestowe such a currying on your Palfray, as your seruaunt after warde shall take but small paynes

with

with him. The knight of the Caſtle made as though hée heard him not, and ranne fiercely with his launce againſt Palmerin, who eſcaped his enemie, with his ſworde gaue his horſe ſuch a ſtroke on the leg as hee paſt by him, that the bone being cut in twaine, he fell to the ground, hauing one of the knights legges ſo faſt vnder him, as hée was not able to recouer himſelfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him vppe againe, gaue him halfe a dozen ſuch raps about the pate, as hee lay quiet enough without any mouing: whereupon he vnclaſped his helmet, when the knight hauing ſome aire, beganne to ſtriue with him, and drawing his pocket dagger, gaue Palmerin a ſore wound therewith in the thigh, in recompence whereof, at one ſtroke he toke his head from his ſhoulders. The Squires and ſeruants of the Caſtle, who came forth to ſée the iſſue of the fight, ranne apace to the Caſtle againe, to ſhut the Gate for their owne ſafety: but Palmerin (albeit hée was hurt) preuented them, laying about him ſo roughly on euery ſide, as hee ſware if they would not bring him to the impriſoned Lady, they ſhould all preſently die the death. Many of them with feare tombled headlong into the ditch, other on their knées aſked for mercy, promiſing to doo whatſoeuer he commaunded them, whereupon he ſayd to him that had the keyes. Ariſe quickly villaine, and conduct mée to the priſon, or I ſhall pay thée for thy lazineſſe. The poore fellow almoſt frighted out of his wittes, brought him to the Tower where the Lady was, whome they found naked from the middle vpwarde, and ſo greeuouſly beaten, as all her body was gore bloud, which the knight had done that morning, for a Dreame he had the night before, howe her mother would ſende a knight that ſhould take her thence perforce, and murther him, in which opinion he came to the Lady ſaying. I perceiue that thy mother and friendes labour to get thée from me, and practiſe my deſtruction by all the meanes they may: but for their ſakes thou ſhalt be requited their dealing. And with theſe words the villaine

ſo

so cruelly whipped her, as shee was ready to giue vppe the ghoste, and so left her in hope she would haue dyed. Palmerin finding the Ladie in this lamentable plight, sayde. Arise good Ladie and leaue your sorrowfull acclamations, for the villaine that thus misused you, hath had such absolution for his deserts, as he hath left his heade in signe of his penaunce: and if you will depart with me towardes your Mother, I will shewe you the Traytour where hee lies nowe quiet enough. Ah my Lorde, (quoth the Ladye is the Trayterous Scloto deade, that so monstrouslye wronged mee? Hee is Ladie, sayde Palmerin, you neede feare him no more. Then Heauen bee praysed (quoth she) for this happy daye, and among all Knightes bee you the most renowmed, for euer, with which woordes shee arose, and wrapping a furred Mantle aboute her, without anye other garments on her bodye, shee wente with Palmerin, and passing by the place where Scloto laye slaine, lifting her eyes, and hands to Heauen, she sayde. O my God, how is thy name to be praysed, so iustlye punishing the trecherie and disloyaltye of this villayne: Ah Traytor, how worthilye haste thou receyued this death, which is not rygorous, as thy mercilesse tyranny hath beene to me.

Where you must note, that so soone as the Knight was deade, all the enchauntments about the Castle were presentlye finished, the great Lake being consumed after Palmerins passage, so that the Ladies Mother aduertised thereof, came to meete Palmerin, embracing her daughter with such exceeding ioye, as they coulde not speake to eache other they teares so hindered them, at length the Mother kneeled before Palmerin with these woordes. Ah woorthy Knight, howe happye haue you this daye made mee? all my former greefes (by your meanes) being now conuerted into singuler contentation. As she would haue proceeded in her gratulations, she perceiued the blonde to trickle downe Palmerins Armour, which shee sorrowing to beholde, sayde. Me thinkes Syr Knight you are very

ſore wounded, I beſeech you graunt me ſo much honour, as to repoſe your ſelfe a while within my Caſtle, where I doubt not to vſe ſuch diligent are, as you ſhall bee whole and ſounde in verye ſhort time. Palmerin not minding to refuſe her offer, returned with the Lady, and being vnarmed, was brought to his Chamber, where the Ladye dreſſed his woundes, and hee was ſo well entertained as heart could deuiſe. Then went the Ladies ſquires and Seruants to Sclotos Caſtle, from whence bringing all things that were of anye value, they burned the Traytours body, and putting his heade on the poynt of a Launce, they placed it on the toppe of the Tower for a perpetuall memorye. The next daye came people from all partes of the Iſlande, to ſee the Knight that ended the enchauntments, and among other, the Damoſell that conducted him thither was one, who on her knée thus ſpake to him. Nowe am I ſatisfied Sir Knight, and you diſcharged of the promiſe you made mee, which was onelye for the deliueraunce of this Lady, whome you haue valiantly conquered from the tyrant that tormented her. I beſéech him, who euermore hath regarde of the poore afflicted, that his pleaſure may be to ſende you the like, or a better aduenture, whereby you maye accomplish all your hautie enterpriſes. So will hee I doubt not, ſayde Palmerin, and that was one from which you diſſwaded mée: but I ſhall neuer bée merrye till I finde him againe, though then at your entreatie hee eſcaped my handes ſo well. And Fortune ſpéede the matter ſo happilye, quoth the Damoſell, as peace and Frendſhip maye bée united betwéene you: for if eyther of you miſcarrye, it were great pitye, conſidering the worthy valour wherewith you are both nobly furniſhed. Let come what will, ſayde Palmerin, neuer ſhall other agrément be betwéene vs. With theſe wordes the Damoſell held her peace, for ſhe perceyued by his anſwers, that hee was not halfe pleaſed with the other Knight.

CHAP.

Chap. LVI.

How Palmerin trauailing through a great Forrest, espyed a Dwarfe enter into a Caue, whom he followed, and found there a Knight, with whom he had much conference.

SO long cõtinued Palmerin in the castle with the Lady, till his woundes being healed, and he able to beare Armour, he said to the Lady. Madame, by the help of God and your diligent endeuour, I find my self in good cõstitution of body wherfore with your fauorable licẽce, I mean to mooue to depart hence, because occasions of great importaunce so commaundeth me: yet this assuraunce will I leaue with you, that in any place where I shall come hereafter, your wonderful courtesie hath gained such power ouer mee, as at all times I remaine to doo you any pleasure.

The Ladie right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daughter thankeful for her benefit receiued, returned him many thankful gratulations: but seeing they could no lõger detaine him, for his speeches were such as he would needes be gone, she said.

Gentle Knight, seeing it likes you no longer to sojourne heere, but that you thinke it expedient to departe, I woulde gladlye present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your painefull trauailes, but onelye that hereafter you might remember from whence it came.

Then take ſhé out of a Coffer two riche and prccious Ringes, and preſenting him one of them, ſhe ſayde. You ſhall giue this Ring to her whome aboue all other you moſte eſteeme, the Ring containing this ſpeciall vertue, that the longer ſhé weares it, the more ſhé ſhall loue you, and dayly ſhall her loue ſo vehemently encreaſe, as all aduerſities and troubles, ſhé ſhall beare with patyence that by meanes of your loue maye anye waye endaunger her.

This other Ring is of a contrarye vertue, which you muſt giue to the Ladye your deere Frende beloueth, and to him may you ſafelye ſaye, that anye occaſion whatſoeuer, cannot plucke it from this Ladyes finger: for this is the nature thereof, that the Ladyé which weares it, ſhall not bee diſparaged, and neyther intreaties, giftes, or whatſoeuer beſide, cannot compell her, to doo anye thing contrarye to her lyking. If it came ſo to paſſe that ſhe were beloued by anye other, then him ſhee nowe affecteth, ſhee ſhall be able by vertue of this Ring, to quenche all ſuch libidinous deſire in her ſollicitour, and cauſe him neuer afterwards to mooue her with anye diſhoneſte requeſt. As for theſe ſtones of ſo rare and excellent qualitie, you muſt note that they were preciſelye choſen for you by my Siſter, and placed as you ſée them, by her ſuperficiall knowledge in the Magicall ſciences, that in time to come they ſhall doo ſuch ſeruice, as no Jewels (of what value ſo euer they were) might bee able to doo the like.

Beſide theſe, ſhee gaue him diuers other Jewels to carrie to his Ladye, for which he humblye thanked her, and taking his leaue of her and her Daughter, who ſhed manye teares for his departure, hee mounted on horſe-backe, and trauailing thorowe a great Forreſt, hée eſpyed a Dwarfe, whome hée iudging to bee his Seruaunt Vrbanillo, becauſe hee was of his ſtature, and very much reſembled him, he called aloude. Heareſt thou tall fellowe,

how

howe camest thou in this place, so vnfrequented and inhabited? The Dwarfe béeing in a great feare, ranne so fast as hée coulde into a great Caue betwéene two Bushes, which made Palmerin alight and followe him, and very farre went hee into the Caue not séeing anye bodye, till at length he came into a little roome, as it had béene cut out of a quarrie, which had light into it by a little chinke cutte through a Rocke: and there hée founde a young Knight layde vppon a bedde, at whose féete lay the Dwarfe, quaking and trembling with his late feare, whome Palmerin nowe sawe that hee was not Vrbanillo, whereforе he saluted the Knight, saying. I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon mee, because I entred so boldlye, neyther knocking first, or calling for any of your Seruaunts: albeit I desired to speake with this little man, but nothing coulde induce him to tarry my comming, for hée fledde from mée as I hadde béene a deuill. Whereuppon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body héere more courteous, I followed him at the harde héeles, with no other intent, but onelye to know howe I might possible gette forth of this dissolate Forrest, wherein by misaduenture I haue lost my way, for I woulde not willinglye straye too farre, least I shoulde be forced to remaine héere as an holye Hermit, considering my profession is cleane contrarye. To preuent such chaunce, I thinke it was Gods will I shoulde followe your Seruaunt, let mee therefore intreate you, to know what you are, and wherefore you liue héere so solitarye, shunning as it séemes the company of men: protesting to you, that if I may in ought assist you, whereby to drawe you from this obscure life, I wil with all my heart accomplishe it, though it were matter that shoulde concerne my life.

The Knight raysing vppe himselfe, and sighing so bitterlye as life and soule woulde haue parted in sunder, aunswered. Alas noble Knight, séeke not to vnderstand

the depth of my ſorrowe, in reſpect the remedie is altogether impoſſible: yet in that your demaund proceedeth from ſuch a gentle ſpirite, as pitieth the miſeries of deſpiſed creatures, I will acquaint you with ſome part of mine eſtate.

Knowe then gentle Knight, that I am the moſt ſorlorne Varnan, whoſe vnfortunate life exceedeth all mens whatſoeuer, for this worlde affordeth me nothing but miſhappe, diſgrace, contempt, and all tormenting griefes, as for delight and pleaſure, they are loathſome to mée, my monethes, wéekes, dayes, howres, and minutes, béeing continually accompanyed with all extreame paſſions. My greateſt eaſe conſiſteth in dolorous lamentations, remembraunce of paſſed infortunes, ſad regrets, and inſupportable melancholie. In bréefe, I am onelie hee, whoſe companions are, a trauelled ſpirit, thoughts confounded with fruſtrate hope, hauing vtterly loſt the light of thoſe gladſome Sunnes, whereof the one ſhined in my face, the other in my heart, that nowe nothing is left for me but a life deſpiſed, yet welcome to me that am ſo diſdayned.

Theſe wordes were vttered with ſo many ſighes, ſuch flouds of teares, and haling his fleſh with ſuch impatience, as would haue relented a heart of Adamant, which mooued Palmerin by gentle perſwaſions, to requeſt of him the cauſe of his diſquiet: and ſo long he continued his importunate intreaties, that the Knight at length thus anſwered. Gentle Syr, ſo well contenteth me the ſorrowes which I ſuffer, that in hope of any remedie, I would not bewray them: but ſéeing Fortune hath thus conducted you hither, in reſpect of your gracious and affable nature, as alſo that you ſhall not repute mée vndiſcréete and miſgouerned, I will ſatiſfie you in the cauſe of my ſadneſſe.

True it is, Syr Knight, that I haue hitherto, and euer ſhall, loue a Ladie, Daughter to a Knight my neighbour,

bour, shée béeing (in my iudgement) one of ẏ fayrest Ladyes in the whole worlde. And perceyuing by her behauiour that shée loued me as well, or rather more, which indéede shée did not: for her I accomplished all thinges that a Knight could for his Ladie, aduenturing mine honour, and my life in all daungers for her sake, yea, nothing might bee refused for the diuine Mistresse of my thoughts. Perceyuing my selfe to bée so equally loued, and my passions to growe beyonde my abilitie, finding occasion to acquaint her with the secretes of my heart, I desired her to pittie my oppressions, which if shee refused to doo, she should lose her louer, and his life withall. For I was so solemnely vowed to her seruice, as she could not commaund any thing so hard or daungerous, but by her fauourable regarde would be most easie to mee. These words could drawe no pittie from her, but displeased and in great anger she answered. That I might not bee reckoned among those Knights, who deserued the loue of a Ladie of her calling, and thencefoorth I should not bee so hardie, as to speake to her, or come in her presence. Goe quoth shée, and followe her loue that gaue thée thy Faulcon, wherein thou takest such pleasure, and neuer mayst thou turne againe to me.

With these wordes shée flong from mee to a Windowe, where I was wont alwayes to stande and talke with her, beguiling the time in no lesse contentation, then those happy soules in the Elysian Fieldes, such was the rare beautie, good grace, and singular courtesie of my (sometime) beloued Ladie Valerica. I cannot denie: but that a Ladie bestowed the Falcon on me, but in any such respect as my Ladie imagined, God knowes is most vntrue, nor could death compell mee so much to abuse my chosen Mistresse.

Seeing my Ladie then so rigorous, and her answeres so seuere, yet assured of mine owne innocencie and loyaltie; I was surprised with such surpassing heauinesse, as

euerye houre expected when my feeble ſpirite, would forſake his long deſyred habitation. My Ladie being thus reſolute in her owne opinion, and diſdayning all meanes I ſhewed to perſwade her, deſpayring likewiſe of any after hope: I determined with my ſelfe, to abandone all companye, as vnworthie of theyr ſocietye, and then betooke my ſelfe to this brutiſh kind of life, where I might without any impeach, breathe forth my continuall complaints.

In this reſolution I came to this place, without the knowledge of my Lady or any other, this Dwarffe onelye excepted, who euermore hath beene my moſt truſtie Seruaunt, and fetcheth my neceſſaries at a village neere adioyning, and by his honeſt perſwaſions, hath manie times with-held mee from committing violence on my ſelfe. Thus haue you heard in breefe the cauſe of my ſorrowe the depth whereof cannot bee conſidered or valued, but by ſuch as haue in like manner tryed and ſuffered, the diſdayne and ingratitude of vnconſtant Ladies. Palmerin hauing heard the fortunes of the Knight, repeated to him the graces and fauours of his Ladye *Polynarda*, what honour ſhee did him in her Fathers Court, and how hee was in daunger to receiue the like reward, as the Knight did of his *Valerica*: and fearing indeede that his misfhappe would forte to that iſſue, he fell downe at the feete of this poore refuſed Louer. The Knight perceiuing, that the repetitiõ of his misfortune was cauſe of this alteration, breathing forth a penement ſighe, hee ſayde.

Alas wretched Catife that I am, hath my deſtenye made mee ſo vnhappie, that enduring an extreamitye worſe then death, I cannot dye, and yet hee that did but heare my miſerie hath loſt his life? I will not liue any longer to preiudice any other man, but will now make waye to the ende of mine owne troubles. Sodeinlie hee forth Palmerins ſworde, and offered to thruſt it into

his

his bodye : but Palmerin receiued to his former estate, started suddainlye vppe, and catching him in his armes, sayde.

How now my Frende ? will you bée so inconsiderate, that for a little temporall paine which your body endureth, to condemne your seule to euerlasting perdition? And though your passions touch you so seuerelye, as you will affoorde no pittie to your selfe : yet let mée intreate you to forbeare this humour. For not without reason haue I sustained this suddaine motion, remembring the vnspeakable comfort I receiued by one, who by false suggestions, or slaundreous reports (which woundeth more déepe then the fatall weapon) may in like sorte be chaunged into such conceit, as her indgement may exceéde a hel of torments. Yet canne I not denye (your Lady hauing with such shame refused you) but you haue great occasion to greéue thereat, yet not to stretch the extreamity so farre as to dispayre, or worke iniurie to your selfe calling to memory how light the opinion of a Woman is, how suddaine shée will alter, and howe prompt shée is to iealousie, especially where shee loueth effectually. And if héeretofore shée loued you feruentlye, it is impossible but shee should féele some part of your anguish, and more violently (I thinke) then your selfe can Trust then in him that hath all hearts at commaunde, repose your self constantly on his prouidence, for hée will not leaue you frustrate of your honourable intent, standing with iustice and perfect integritie.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable persuasions, the Dwarfe couered the Table, and sette before them such a small pittaunce, as he had prouided, when they hadde refreshed themselues : Palmerin tooke his leaue of the Knight, promising him (if hée coulde by anye meanes) to giue some ease to his oppressions. Varnan returned him many thankes, commanding his Dwarfe to conduct him to the high waye, béeing not a little sorrowfull

rowfull to leaue his compaule, who had ſo well aduiſed and comforted him. Palmerin being come into his ready way, ſent backe the Dwarfe, and rode on till he was got out of the Foreſt, intending to finde out the Caſtle where Valerica remained, becauſe he would ſomewhat ſollicite the cauſe of ſollitarie Vernan. Ryding along in this determination, hee eſpyed a knight and two ſquires before him, ỹ knight thus ſpeaking to one of his ſquires. I knowe not whether it be time as yet to enter the Garden, or if Madame Valerica be as yet come thither. Go ſee if ſhe be there, and returne quickly to mée againe. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knewe well it was ſhee for whome the ſolitarie knight liued in ſuch penſiuenes: wherefore mooued with pitty of his miſeries, hee ſayde to himſelfe. See heere the trecherie of a trothleſſe Woman, ſo vnhonorablie to forſake the man that loues her ſo dearely, and preferre the villanie of this intercepting Traytour: but I ſhall teach him ere I go, what a penalty belongs to the preuenting of a loyall knight, and ſo comming to the knight hee ſayde. Art thou a man villaine, that wouldeſt forefl all the loue of the beſt knights in Englande by my Sword, thou ſhalt dearely pay for thy diſloyalty. With theſe words he gaue him ſuch a ſtroake on the head, as he cleft it therewith to the very téeth.

The Squires ſéeing theyr maiſter ſlaine, beganne to haſte away: but Palmerin caught him that was ſent to the Garden, to whome he ſayde. Come on Sirra, if thou loueſt thy life, bring mée to the Lady if thou doeſt: not, thou ſhalt neuer followe thy trade any longer. The Squire durſt doo no otherwiſe, ſo he brought him to the little gate where Valerica was wont to receiue in her louer, and knocking with his finger as his Maiſter was accuſtomed, Valerica opened the doore, and thinking it was her Friend, caſt her armes about Palmerins necke, who brought her in his armes forth of the Garden, commanding

bing the Squire presently to followe him. Valerica abashed hereat, sayde. Howe nowe swéete frénde? whether will you carry mee? Knowe you not if my father heare héereof, that neyther of vs durst approch before him? Tush Madame, sayde Palmerin, these are but wordes, there is no remedy but you must go with mée. So neyther with teares nor requests would hee be intreated, but mounting on horsebacke, caused the Squire to helpe the Lady vppe before him, because he would be sure shée should not escape from him, and riding on towardes the Forrest, because the night drew on, he left the rode way, séeking some place where they might cõueniently repose themselues for that night. At length hee founde out a little thicket, where they alighted, and hee returning his horse to pasture, toke off his Helmet and came to the Lady, desiring her to bée content with such hard lodging for that night: but when shée beheld that it was not her frénd, wringing her handes she thus exclaimed. Alas vnhappy wretch that I am, how trecherously am I deceiued? What mishappe may be comparable to mine, hauing lost my frénde, and abyding at his pleasure that hath cruelly murdered him? Ah Fortune, why art thou so inconstant, to chaunge my former pleasure into this gréeuous stratageme?

Palmerin hearing her so impatient, sayde. You must thinke Lady, that what hath happened, is by diuine permission, who hath thus appointed to punish your loosenesse, and your excéeding disloyalty towardes him, who loues you dearer then his owne soule, and for your loue leades a most austere life, in the very desolate and vncomfortable place of the worlde. If hée haue thus long endured such hardnesse for your sake, it is good reason that you should participate a little with his misery. Feare not therefore, for I speake nothing of him but what I haue séene: and by great chaunce, haue I thus brought you from your Fathers house, meaning by Gods grace

(this

(this humor forgotte) to cauſe you match with him, whoſe true loue aboue all other hath deſerued you. Ah miſerye incomparable, ſaid the Lady, I ſée now it is in vaine to ſhun what the deſtenies haue appointed, how falles my fortune from ill to worſe? muſt I now go to that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually deſpiſed? me rather die a moſt ſhameſull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, ſaid Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you eſtéeme him, and a better Knight then he, that coulde defende his pate with no wiſer pollicy: worthilye may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to doe you ſeruice. So long they ſtood on theſe tearmes, vntill a knight paſſed by them, to whome Valerica cryed. Helpe gentle Knight, for Gods ſake pittie me, & deliuer me from this Traytour, who falſelie hath beguiled me, and violentlie brought me hither againſt my will. What art thou ſayde the Knight, that thus diſhonoreſt this Ladye? I ſhall teache thée better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quicklie bridling his Horſſe, and claſping on his Helmet, ſayd to the Knight. What art thou that wouldeſt take her from me, whō I conquered euen nowe by my Sworde? followe thy way, or I ſhall ſhewe thee what diſcipline I vſe to fooles, that wil meddle with matters aboue theyr capacitye. Dooſt thou ſo obſtinatelye ſtande in thy trecherie? ſayde the Knight: Marke what will be the end of thy preſumption.

Chap.

Chap. LVII.

Howe Palmerin hauing thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue to her beloued Varnan, and there confirmed the agreement of their loue.

BEfore we passe any further, you shal vnderstande that the Knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, who the King sent after the Lady with Frysol, to make deliuraunce of the Castle, as you haue heard before: he being Palmerins friende, yet neither knowing the other. For Hermes tooke such regard of ỹ ladies complaint, as he marked not Palmerin before he put on his helmet. Palmerin seeing that Hermes woulde nedes trye his fortune, encountred him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shyuered in a hundred peces: so Palmerin called *Hermes* Squire, commaunding him to helpe vp the Lady, or else he woulde sende him after his Maister. The Squire alighted and holpe vppe the Ladye, rewarding her with an infinite number of cuffes, because his Maister had sped so ill by her meanes.

Truste me Lady, quoth Palmerin, though you thinke my labour but ill bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as ending the Hell of torments he suffers, I must nedes holde better opinion of my paines. With these and such like speeches hee beguiled the time, till they came nere to Varnans Caue, who to take the ayre, was there walking vnder the Trées: but when hee sawe *Palmerin* returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiuing well

well that it was Valerica, they were no sooner alighted but he caught her in his armes, saying. Is it possible sweete fortune, that after so long mishap, and when all hope was vterly gone, thou canst allowd me this gracious fauour? Ah happy eyes that haue powred forth such showers of teares, what felicity may compare with yours, cõtemplating now the rare beauty of your mistresse? May it be, that after so many insupportable torments, the meanes therof should return such pleasure, comfort and solace? Depart then teares, peck hence lamentations, greefe, torments & all melancholy conceits, get you else-where, yea in the most barbarous countries of the world make your abiding, for she commands you hence, in whom cõsists my special cõtentment. O fortunat knight, how may I recompence this inexplicable kindnes, surmounting al other that euer was heard of? impossible is it for me to requite this fauor, though al my possessions, life, body and spirit were bound to your service. But heauen will supply my want, and continue you in as great happines, as your noble bountie hath brought me comfort. Forbeare these speeches sayd Palmerin, albeit I had done a thousand times as much, yet should I but accomplishe what one Christian owes to another. I pray you therefore let vs go into your Cane least we be espied, and so preuented, beside, I am so ouerwatched, as I cannot stand on my feete through want of sleepe. Valerica seeing her selfe in such an vncouth place, and in his custody she most detested, her angry stomache would not suffer her to speake one word, but when she had a while rested her selfe, on a seate of Yearbes and flowers which Varnan diligently prepared, Palmerin sayd. Behold Madame Valerica, see in what place, in what solitary, austere and sharpe kind of life, your Varnan liues by your commandement, now seeing time and fortune is so fauourable, let not your rigor and disdaine exceede their mutability. Consider a little, what greefes hee hath endured in this comfortlesse place, which verily haue beene so great, as all the pleasures in the world, cannot recompence the verye least of

them.

them. I beseech you then, if heretofore you haue borne him hard liking, let it now be forgotten, and if vnawares he hath any way offended you, let his long torments & surpassing loyalty some what satisfie, & take him to your husband, as the most perfect and faithfull knight in England. You like wise sir Varnan, without remembrance of your passe miseries, or her two rigorous refusals heretofore, take her as your lady & wife, and in al honor vnite your self to her by present speeches, for seeing I haue brought her hither, it will remaine a continual reproch to me, if you shuld not accept her as your spouse and wife. Ah my Lord & Varnan, with right good wil shall I accomplish your commaund, so it may stand with my ladies liking, for herein is comprised the whole sum of my desires. Ah miserable beyond al other, said Valerica to Palmerin, must I by a varlet be subiected to so vile an extreamity, and constrained to take him for my husbande whō I cannot affect, he being the most false and cowardly knight that euer I knew? must I against my fathers wil, and by my Traytors procurement that hath so abused me, as no vertuous knight would so haue wronged a Lady, be cōpelled to my mariage? heauen cannot like hereof, & father will I die, then do this thing shal return me such reproch. The sighed she so pitifully as though she had bene quite distraught of her sences, which Varnan beholding, began thus to complaine. Ah gentle Knight, what griefe is it to heare her in these torments, whom I loue much better then mine owne life? and for whom I rather desire to die, then not to enioye her with her owne liking. I cannot liue seeing her in these afflictions, and therefore conuay her againe to her fathers house, and no sooner shall she be departed hence, but life will forsake this sorowful Carkasse, then shall my death declare how faithfully I loued. Palmerin seeing the obstinacy of Valerica, said. By God Lady, I thinke in all the world, is not a more cruell and disloyall woman then you are, perswade your self, that if I take the pains to carry you againe to your fathers Castle, I shall tell your errande

there

there in such sorte, as all your life time repentance will hardly excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much more then you deserue, if you well remember your selfe, and for you are so stubborne, I shall giue you the desart (offering to drawe his sworde) that such ingratefull and treacherous women woorthily merit. Valerica afrayde when shee saw him in such choler, and doubting hee would discouer her incontinent loue past, threwe her selfe at his feete, desiring him to appease his anger, & shee would obey what ere he commaunded. For (quoth she) seeing my fortune hath brought me into his company, who for his vnfeigned loue to me, hath so long suffered woonderfull calamities: well might I be esteemed of brutish nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therefore I will be his wife, and giue him my faith heere in your presence. Palmerin well pleased with this answere, woke her vp by the hand, and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there togither by solemne promises, and afterwarde laide him downe to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica in his armes, with sweete kisses and amorous speeches, expelled all former heauinesse, esteeming himselfe the happiest knight in the whole worlde, hauing now at length obtayned the fauour of his Mistresse, giuing her to vnderstande, howe acceptable the gift of pittie was, comming from so rare a creature to her languishing beloued. Palmerin seeing them so well agreede, would nowe depart and leaue them to their fortune: but by earnest importunitie of these louers, he stayed there longer then hee entended. Now was the loue betweene these twaine, far greater then they hatred had beene, so that after they had stayed three or foure dayes in the Caue, with such entertainment as the Dwarfe could make them, they departed to one of Varnans Castles, and there obtaining peace with the sad Parentes of Valerica, continuing long time togither in comfort of their loue, and ending their liues in loyaltie thereof.

CHAP.

Chap. LVIII.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladies in chase, one of thē giuing him a Faulcon. And what happened to him against the duke of Gaule his twelue Knights, out of whose hands he deliuered Hermes.

WHen Palmerin saw Varnan and Valerica so well contented, after many offers of their seruice, and kinde adieues deliuered on al sides, he left them in their Vault, and set forwarde on his iourney, lodging ỹ night in an auncient knightes castle, where he vnderstood, how the brethren of the slaine Knight, besieged Valericas father in his Castle: Wherefore he turned an other course, and leauing the broad way that guided to London, he met two ladies accompanied with three squires, who had cast off a faulcon and a Martin to flie, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he would neuer tarry to see the end thereof, which made one of the Ladies thus speake to him. I see sir knight you haue no haste on your iournie, because you staie to behold our pastime, therfore if you will go with vs to a water hereby, you shall there see a braue flight indeede, such worthy game is there so plentifull, & my faulcon so good as she will neuer faile. Palmerin who aboue all pastimes loued Hauking, rode with the Ladies to the Parthos by their Castle, where they haddes such excellent sporte at Heron, Duck and Mallard: as the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the castle Palme-

merin manned the Ladies Faulcon ſo well, as though all his life time hee hadde beene a Faulconer. The Lady ſeeing him ſo braue a Gentleman, ſo courteous, affable & comelie in behauiour, and that he tendered her Hauke ſo gentlye: was immediatelye ſuppriſed with his loue, ſo that ſhe deſired to knowe of whence he was, whome ſhe could ſo gladlye affoorde to chuſe for her beloued, and hauing long earneſtlye beheld him, ſhee ſayd. Sir Knight, that I may entertaine you as your eſtate beſeemeth, I pray you tell me your name, & whither you trauaile. Lady (quoth Palmerin) I am a ſtraunger, who by fortune on the Sea was brought to this Countrey, and becauſe the King had warre againſt the Emperour of Allemaigne, I remained a while heere as a ſouldiour, attending a proſperous winde, to conuay me home againe into my native Countrey. The Ladye hearing this, and iudging him one of the famous Knightes, that came to the Courte, loued him more earneſtly then ſhee did before, prouiding ſuch ſurpaſſing delightes for him, as ſhee wiſhed that night hadde beene a yeere in length. The Tables withdrawne, and many pleaſaunt ſpeeches paſt betweene Palmerin and the Ladies Daughter, ſhee conducted him to his Chamber, wiſhing if her honour might ſo aucuche it, that Palmerin neuer might haue any other bedfellowe But leauing him to his good reſt, ſhee departed to her chamber, where little ſleepe ſuffiſed her that night. In the morning, Palmerin called for his Horſe to bee gon, the Lady very ſorowfull to forgo his companye: but ſeeing ſhee had no meanes to holde him, ſhe ſayde. Seeing your departure by no may not bee denied, I would preſent you with the Faulcon, which yeſterday did ſo ſpecialye content you, which if you pleaſe to accept for my ſake, I ſhall not forget the honour you haue beene me, cheefely that you vouchſafed to ſtay heere this night being as welcome hither as the King himſelfe. Seeing it is your pleaſure Madame, ſayd Palmerin, to beſtowe your Faulcon on me, I accept it as the onelye thing you could giue me, and by the faith of a Knight I promiſe you,

that I will keepe it for your sake, and neuer parte therewith, if by force or villainie it bee not taken from mee. The Ladye so ioyfull heereof as might be deuised, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him. Heere must you note, that this is the selfe-same Ladye, which sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and loued him so deerely as after she vnderstoode hee had forsoke the Countrey, shee gaue her selfe altogither to this recreation. Her Father perceiuing how shee was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her euermore the best Haukes that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so frendlie giuen, and in the like sorte taken, proued very vnfortunate to both the Knightes, causing them to curse the houre, that euer they accepted the Ladyes liberalitie, came neere her Castle, or sawe her Haukes, as you haue already heard by solitary Varnan, and hereafter shall perceiue in Palmerins fortune. hee being departed from the Ladye, rode two dayes together without any aduenture, till at length hee came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gaules Knightes guarded the passage, which scant pleased Palmerin, because he imagined if hee fought with them, he should be deceiued in his intent, and not see Trineus so soone as hee would, whom he left at the Court expecting his comming, wherefore he would haue turned another way, but one of the Knightes called to him. Returne eswarde returne, thou shalt not escape without tryall of thy manhode, for we must make proofe if there bee anye in thee. Palmerin not knowing where to set his Haukes, and very loth to lose it, was not desirous to Iouste: but seeing that with honour he could not refuse it, answered. It is small courtesie Sir Knight, to challenge the man that hath no will to your sporte: but if there be no remedye, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you will first repent it. I see thou canst prate well, quoth the Knight, and beleeue mee thou wert wise if thou couldest so escape: but seeing thou art so long before thou art readye, Ile bring thee to such a place where haukes shal not hinder thee, and in one yeere thou shalt spare

the wearing of Bootes and ſpurres in ſuch a comfortable place, as the Sunne nor day light ſhall offend thine eyes. I hope I haue learned, ſayd Palmerin, to keepe my ſelfe from ſuch places: but I would faine knowe the gentle Chamber Page, that is ſo skilfull in waiting with his Pantofles, as he can teach Knights errant how to weare them. The knight being angry, called forth the reſt of his companions, among whome he eſpied Hermes priſoner, his Helmet lying by him, and his armes pinnioned: therefore to reuenge his wrong, he called his Squire, ſaying. I pray thee my Friend looke to my Hauke a while, for I am come to defende thy Maiſters honour, and calling to the dukes Knight, ſaying. Come Sir let vs diſpatch quickly, for I haue earneſt buſines in another place: the Knight laughing at him, anſwered. Why how now Captaine? thinke you to paſſe hence ſo eaſily? Heere are ſufficient to ſtay your haſty iourney, eleuen more muſt talke with you, the worſt of them able to abate your pride, for your horſe lackes a ſtable, and wee will prouide him one. So couching theyr Launces, they mette together with ſuch force, as the Dukes knight was throwne from his Horſe, his ſhoulder being broken with the weight of his fall: Palmerin arreſting the Knightes horſe for his owne, gaue him to Hermes ſquire in keeping, ſaying. Becauſe the Knight is not willing to get on horſe-backe againe, hold this for mes, and he maye lie at eaſe to ſee the fortune of his fellowes. Then came another Knight from the tent, whom Palmerin welcommed in ſo friendly maner, as he lay not able to ſtirre hand or foote: with this one Launce hee vnhorſed foure more, and brake it ſo valiantlye on the ſeuenth Knight, as while he liued he meant to iouſt no more. With a freſh Launce hee diſmounted all the reſt, none of them being willing to deale with him any further, wherefore Palmerin came to Hermes, ſaying. What doe you Sir Knight? Why take you not the beſt horſe among all the troupe? That ſhall I doe, ſeeing you commaund me, albeit not long ſince you ſerued me as theſe Knights are: yet God be thanked

that

that by your meanes I am deliuered from imprisonment, wherein these knights intended to keepe me, because I vnhorsed foure of them, and at the fift encounter my horse was killed, which was the cause of my foyle and taking. The knights (quoth Palmerin) haue nowe leysure to rest them, for they were troubled before with watching for passengers: I doubt not now but we may quietly passe the bridge, for I see none of them offer to hinder vs. Hermes mounting on horse backe, commanded his squire to take a fresh one for him likewise, and so they rode on together reioycing at this good fortune. They had not ridden the space of a mile, but Hermes demanded Palmerins name, which when hee knewe, in great reioysing he saide: Ah worthy knight, now is my trauel ended in search of you: trust me, I would refuse the best citie in England, in respect of the great friendship I haue found at your hands, as also for the comfort your presence will bring to our dread Lord and your noble companions, who long time haue expected your desired returne. As they rode on in these speeches, they came to a fayre fountaine, where Palmerin would alight to refresh himselfe, and to bind vp such small woonds, as he had taken in iousting against the knights of Gaule.

Chap. LIX.

¶ How Friſol was deliuered out of Palmerins handes, by the meanes of Colmelio his Squire.

THe ſame day that Palmerin toulted with the knights of Gaule, the duke himſelfe was gone on hunting, by meanes whereof, he loſt the ſight of the paſtime, which afterward he repented, becauſe he had with him the moſt part of his knights, ſo that no one was left in his Caſtle but Friſol, that might be counted of any value, who beholding ſo many knights foyled by one, marualled not a little what he might bee, and after long conſideration of his haughtie exploits, hee ſaide to himſelfe, I cannot thinke this knight to be the man, againſt whom I combatted ſometime in Fraunce. yet know I no man liuing but hee, that could performe ſuch rare chiualrie. Now, becauſe Palmerin had changed his armor, he verily imagined that it was not he, yet was he deſirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reaſon of his former experience: againe, if he ſhould ſuffer him to paſſe without ſome triall, he iudged it would returne to his great diſhonour, wherefore he reſolued to aduenture his fortune. And in this determination he came to the dukes ſiſter, who loued him intirely, as you heard before: ſhe beginning with him in this manner. I cannot ſufficiently maruell Sir Friſol, how you haue ſuffered in your owne view, my brothers knights to be ſo ſhamefully confounded by one paſſenger: I deſire you ſweet friend, if euer you make launce for a Ladies loue, that for my ſake you

will

will deale with that proude knight, and make him knowe that you can abate his courage, were his heart framed of ỹ hardest hammered brasse. If you fulfill my request, you shal do an acceptable deed to my brother, & to me such seruice, as I shal hereafter requite to your own content. Madame, quoth Frisol, I did intende to fight with him, but seeing it pleaseth you so graciously to cõmand me, no danger can withhold me, because the worlde can witnes, what great auaile so honorable a Ladyes fauor is, to the knight that liues to renowne her name. So departing from his lady, he presently armed himselfe, & mounting on a lustie Courser, followed the way that Palmerin was gone: the 12. knights not a little glad therof, wel hoping ỹ he wold reuenge their dishonour. Frisol continued his trauaile so long, til at length he came to the fountaine where Palmerin refreshed himselfe, who had no sooner espied him, but surprised with great ioy, sayd to Hermes. I am sure this knight comes hither is to seeke me, wherfore I intreat you by the reuerend loue you beare to your best beloued, not any way to hinder ỹ fight betweene vs, til the end deliuer victorie to one side or other: for he thinking to reuẽge the reproch of his fellow, hath followed me to performe what they were not able. Then Palmerin sodainly clasping on his helmet, mounted on horsback, and taking aduantage of the plaine field, because it was most conuenient for the combat, which Frisol perceiuing, scornefully saye. I think Sir knight, you are some kinde of prophet, because you deuine so wel the cause of my comming: vnhappie was it for you to prevaile in such sort against the duke of Gaules knights, which you must now pay for with too late repentance. If I did them any harme, sayd Palmerin, it was their owne seeking, and by your arrogant speeches it may be presumed, you are one of the same company: but ỹ leue of the Dukes sister, cannot shielde you from your deserued recompence. At these words Frisol well perceiued, that this was the knight he so much doubted: Neuertheless

leſſe his courage was ſo good, as remembring the promiſe he made to his Lady, gaue ſpurres to his Horſe, and they encountred with ſuch braue chiualry, as ẏ ſhiuers of their Launces flew vp into the aire, and then they aſſaulted each other ſo roughly with their Swordes, as well they might bée eſtéemed right valiant Champions. No mercy was intended on either ſide, for Fryſol was determined to die or conquere, and Palmerin held the ſame reſolution, ſo that the ground was coloured with their bloud, their armour and ſhéelds battered in péeces, and no hope left on either ſide of life. But as alwaies ſome miſchance or other followes a noble mind, ſo fel it out with Friſol, for in their cloſe buckling togither, Palmerin had got ſure hold on his ſhéeld, which Friſol ſtriuing forcibly to recouer, the buckls brake in ſunder, and with the ſodaine breach therof he fel down backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horſe, ſaid. And let me neuer hereafter bee called Palmerin, if now I do not reuenge my ſelfe ſufficiently. Which words when Friſols ſquire heard, he came haſtily and fell at his féete, ſaying. Noble knight, I beſéech you for the honour you beare to arms, to pauſe a while, & tel me if you be Palmerin D'Oliua, for if you be, I am your brother, who haue ſuffered great paine and trauaile to finde you out. Palmerin preſently knew Colmelio, the ſonne of Gerrard his foſter father, whoſe ſight was ſo ioyfull to his, as caſting away his ſword, he ran and embraced him about the neck, ſaying: My déere friend Colmelio, the moſt welcome man in the world to me. How happie may I account my ſelfe quoth Colmelio, to finde you when all hope was paſt? hauing trauailed ſo many countryes, and al in vaine: if then you loue me as you make proteſtation, let me intreate one fauour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my maiſter Fryſol, and giue ouer your fight, for long time haue I ſerued him as my Lord, and well hath hee deſerued much better ſeruice then mine. Colmelio, ſayde Palmerin, the thing thou demandeſt is meruailous great, ne-

ner-

uertheleſſe, ſuch is my comfort hauing met with thée, as I graunt thy requeſt, and happily hath he now eſcaped with life, cõſidering what occaſions haue paſt vs hértofore. So taking Colmelio by the hand, he ſaid to Friſol. Sir knight, at your ſquires intreatie, I ſuffer you quietly to departe, and méete with me againe at any time you thinke good: but you ſhall go looke another Squire, for Colmelio at this time goes with me. Friſol, who was wounded in many places, & very faint with loſſe of his bloud, might eaſily be induced to this agrément of peace: but cõming to Colmelio, he ſaid. Wilt thou forſake thy maſter and go with his enemy? Truſt me ſir, quoth Colmelio, you muſt néeds pardon me, if in this matter I chance to offend you, for to ſéeke him I forſoke my fathers houſe, & haue continued a verie labourſome ſearch. If thou wilt néeds go, ſaid Friſol, and that my intreaties may not diſſawde thée, I will pray for the ſucceſſe of thy deſires, and thy aduancement to honour, and while I liue will I account of thée as my frend and brother. So returning as he came, he began in this manner to exclaime againſt Fortune. Ah cruell & inconſtant Lady, ſuffiſed not thée to diſhonour mee before mine enemie, but thou muſt rob me of my ſquire I loued ſo dearely: but ſo haſt thou dealt with them of higheſt calling, for infinit kings and potentates haſt thou deceiued, and (before their very cheefeſt enemies) diſhonoured: ſuch hath béene thy trecherye to me at this inſtant, that I may iuſtly cõplaine of thée while I liue. As he continued theſe complaints, he met diuers armed Knightes that came to aſſiſt him, and the duke himſelfe in company among them who demanded of Friſol, whither his enemie were ſlaine or ſent away vanquiſhed. Vanquiſhed, ſayd Fryſol thinke you ſo good a knight may be ſo eaſily vanquiſhed? Then he diſcourſed his whole ſucceſſe, to which the duke hearing, exclaimed on his hũting, that he was not preſent when Palmerin paſſed: wherefore he would néeds followe him, but that Friſol intreated him to the cõtrary, becauſe the night

approched ſo neere, as it was impoſſible for him to ouertake Palmerin. The duke in a marueilous rage, for ỳ his enterprize fell out no better, returned with Friſol, and an houre within night they came to his Caſtell, where hee called for his chirurgians, charging them to giue diligent attendance on Friſol. When the Dukes ſiſter heard the miſſortune of her friend, ſhe came haſtily to him in his chamber, & after many ſwéet kiſſes, ſaid. I beſeech you my lord forget my folly, for I was ỳ cauſe of your miſchance. Madame, ſaid Friſol, where no offence is cõmitted, what needs any remiſſion? If my fortune haue béene ill, it is not for mée to complaine on you, for your requeſt tended to mine owne honour: but I muſt be content with my hap, though it hath ſorted to ſo bad effect, and this doth yet comfort me, that I receiued my foile by the onely Knight in the worlde. And if the heauens pleaſe to lengthen my dayes, I ſhall be deſirous to do him ſeruice, for there is no man liuing to whom I could better affoord it. Now néede I not miſlike (hauing tried him ſo often) if he be worthy the loue of diuine Polinarda, for he (beyond all other) doth beſt deſerue it. Why, how now? quoth the Lady, are you ſo vnwiſe, to honour him ſo much, that hath ſo iniuried you? and which is moſt childiſh, to deſire his ſeruice? Goe then and ſéeke him whom thou ſo loueſt, for by mine honour, I moze deſpiſe thée now then any man in the world, thou making ſuch reputation of him, whom thou oughteſt to purſue with mortall hatred. Friſol ſmiling hereat, ſaid. Madame, I muſt néeds ſay ſo, ſéeing no ill wordes can amend my miſchaunce: ſo without any aunſwer, ſhe flong forth of his Chamber. The next day, the Duke called all his Knights, commanding them to reſtraine the paſſage no longer at the bridge, intending to go to the Court, ſo ſoone as Friſol had recouered his health.

CHAP.

Chap. LX.

Howe Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio returned to London, and the good entertainment the king of England made them.

AFter that Frisol was returned from the Combate, *P*almerin after many embracings of Colmelio, went with him to the fountaine where hee left Hermes, all three togither making no little toy: Colmelio for his happie finding of Palmerin, and he for the loue of his supposed brother, and *Hermes* for the comfort hée should bring the King his Maister, being able nowe to acquaint his highnesse with Palmerins name, which hée was loath any in the English Court should knowe, wherefore he sayde. Nowe can you not my Lord hereafter hide your name, though you haue béene daintie of it all this while. It is true sir, quoth Palmerin, albeit I little thought to be discouered so soone: but séeing it is so come to passe, my hope is in ỹ highest, who will defend me in all mine attempts: now tell me Colmelio, what newes in Greece? Truly my Lord, quoth he, the discourse will be long and tedious: therefore if you please to mount on horsebacke, it will serue well to shorten the thought of our iourny. So as they rode towards London, Colmelio began to discourse, in how many places he had sought him in Greece, and how at length he heard of him at Macedon, by report of his conquest of the serpent at the mountaine Artisseria, which was the meane that brought the King of Macedon to his former health. Afterward, hauc

how he left Greece, trauailing into Allemaigne, and frō thence into England, at what time the Emperors power was discomfited: and hearing great fame of Frisol his late Maister, he spent some time in his seruice, not doubting but by his meanes to find the man he loked for. Palmerin was somewhat moued, hearing Colmelio so commend Frisol, wherefore he demaunded of him, if he knewe any thing of that Knights linage. No my Lord, quoth he but I can assure ye, that he is one of the most gentle Knights in the world, and he concealeth his parentage very secretly, which makes me iudge he is discēded of royal birth. After Colmelio had ended his discourse, he repeated to him some parte of his fortunes, in the end perswading him that hee would remunerate his paines in seeking him and in time manifest the loue he bare him. By this time they were come to the Citie of London, Hermes riding before to the pallace, where he aduertised the king, how Palmerin was returned to ỹ Citie, which newes so highly contented the king, as oftentimes he imbraced Hermes for bringing the man he long desired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exceeded him in ioy, and mounted presently on horseback to go meete their friend, when so many embracings, courtesies and kinde gratulations had passed betweene them, as is vsuall at the meeting of long absent louers: Ah my Lord and frend, quoth Trineus, how long hath Fortune kept you from me? & why did you depart not vouchsafing a farewel? What earnest occasion might cause such an vnkind departure trust me, I perswaded my selfe in respect of the long continuaunce of our amitie, that death could not procure such a seuere enterprise. My Lord, quoth Palmerin it seemeth you haue some cause to complain of mee: but whē you vnderstand how matters haue happened, you will not condemne me altogither. For at the time of my departure, I thought verely to return the next day following: but such importunate affaires continually fell out, as I could not return till this very instant. Ptolome said as

much

much as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate meeting forbad all further accusations, and they became as good friendes as euer they were. So rode they to the Pallace, where the king attending their comming, perceiued at length they were entred the Hall, when Palmerin falling on his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably embracing him, saide. Where hath my noble friend beene so long? What crooked fortune hath caused your so long absence? you departed from vs in blacke Armour, I pray you tell vs, where did you conquere these sumptuous Armes? by the loue you beare to chiualrie and to mee: satisfie me in my demaund. Palmerin seeing the king coniured him so straightly, reported the truth of all his aduentures, howe he had that armour of the Ladie whose daughter hee deliuered, and left his owne there broken in peeces. The king embracing him againe saide. I cannot be perswaded, but all especiall aduentures, high good fortunes, and cheefest honours in the world are onely reserued for you, and among all the rest, most marualeous is this of the Castle in the enchaunted Lake, which many knights haue heretofore attempted, but returned with the losse of their horses, Armour, and with great dishonour. Thrise welcome are you for these happy tydings, as also for your gentle courtesie to Erisol, who is a knight of most honourable reputation. But in regarde of your wearisome trauailes, it is verie requisite that you nowe go rest your selfe, therefore lette some body helpe to disarme you, and betake your selfe (on Gods name) to your Chamber, Palmerin reputed the kings counsell most expedient, and therefore did as hee commaunded him, so hauing reposed himselfe a while, hee came to see howe the Queene and her daughter fared, who would not suffer him to departe, before hee hadde likewise acquainted her with all his fortunes, especially the whole circumstaunce of his trauile at the Castle of the Lake. But night being come, and euerie one betaking themselues to rest, Palmerin demaunded of the Prince, by whose solli-

ci-

ed his desires, and what hee had concluded as concerning his loue? Ah deere freende, sayd Trineus, why aske you mée that question? doe you not thinke that hauing so lost you, I likewise was disappointed of any meane to helpe mee? knowe then, that at this instant I am in the middest of all my misfortunes, for so badly hath it happened, that I am now further from Agriola then euer I was, and I shall tell you how. Not many dayes since, as I was familiarlye deuising with my Ladye, the Duke of Gaules daughter chaunced to heare such amorous speeches as passed betweene the Princesse and mée, whereby she gathered, that Agriola made some estimation of me: whereupon shée laboured, to cause my Mistresse in short time mislike what I hadde so long trauailed to perswade her with, as thus. That it ill beseemed a Princesse of her account, of so gracious discent, and Daughter to such a mightie King, to conferre with straungers, or vouchsafe a listening to any thing they sayde: for they were none such as she reputed them, but after they hadde brought a Ladyes honour in daunger, they then were satisfied, as they vsed it for a custome among theyr companions. And so well could shée feede the Princesse humour, with these suborning and spightfull detractions, which seemed to her as sweete and freendlye perswasions, that in steede of the little loue I latelye conquered, I finde nothing but frownes and disdaine, that she will scant afforde mée a looke. Which discourtesie hath well nere driuen me to dispayre, in regarde of her slender opinion of mee, as being so hindered onely through your absence. Often I determined with Ptolome, to leaue the Courte and followe you in trauaile: but the King by no meanes would permit mée, sending many of his owne Knightes, because I shoulde not go: yet was I resolued, that had you not come, no displeasure whatsoeuer shoulde haue holde mée heere: but to finde you I intended, or loose my life. This falles out very harde, quoth Palmerin, for by these meanes we shall stay heere God knowes how long: beside, Hermes knowes my

name, which makes me doubt least we shalbe reuealed: the Emperour likewise may be offended at our long tarriaunce. In regarde of all this, good Prince, I thinke it best, that we sende your squire and Vrbanillo my Dwarffe, to aduertise his Maiestie of our affaires, and how by reason of the tempest, we were cast quite out of course so far, as we could not by any meanes assist his Armie, not doubting but to see his highnesse in very short time. In the meane while, we may practise meanes to win the Princesse fauour againe, and so in good time departe hence, with the honourable prize that we came for. Trineus was newlye reuiued with these speeches, wherefore he desired, that betimes in the morning hee would dispatche theyr Seruauntes towardes Allemaigne, which Palmerin failed not to doe, in respect of a dreame he had the night before, for he imagined that he sawe his Lady Polynarda in meruailous heauinesse. and that she sayde to him. Alas my Lord, what shall become of me? for I am narrowly sought to be seperated from you. This fearefull vision so discouraged him, as he sent thence his Dwarfe, to shewe her what trouble he hadde with his dreame, and how constant he remained in his loue to her.

Chap.

Chap. LXI.

How Palmerin promiſed the princeſſe Agriola, to conuay her out of England, with his friendes, which he perfor-med, to the ſpeciall content of the prince Trineus.

EArly on the next morning Palmerin a-roſe, and wrote a letter to his Lady Po-linarda wherin he ſecretly put a ring, which ſhee gaue him when he depar-ted from her, ſtraightly commaunding Vrbanillo that hee ſhoulde diligently attende on the Princeſſe till hee came, which ſhould bee with all the ſpeede hee could poſſible. Pto-lome likewiſe wrote to his Ladie Brionella, and theſe Letters diſpatched, the Meſſengers immediatly ſette for-warde on theyr iourney. From this time Colmelio was Palmerins Squire, which pleaſed him very well, becauſe hee knewe that Palmerin was nobly borne, ſo that by his meanes in time hee ſhould riſe to preferment. This day the king would ride abroade a Hunting, which gaue Palmerin occaſion to ſee the Faulcon flie, being reputed by the king and all his traine, to be the beſt that ever flew. In this time of recreation, *Hermes* reported to the King, that the knight ſo long abſent was named Palmerin, and the ſame knight that woonne ſo much honour in Fraunce, which ſo well contented the king, as he more and more de-ſired his companie: ſummoning all his Barons and Lordes to his Courte, where hee made ſuch feaſtes, triumphs, and other ſportes, for the honour of the noble Palmarin and his com-

companions as the like had not bẽn of long time before. At night, when the Maskers, Mumeries and Moriscoes were in presence, that Palmerin espied conuenient time to talk with the princesse, he toke her aside to a window, and thus began. Madam, before I begin what I haue to acquaint you withal, I must giue you this ring, as I was commanded by the lady of the castel in the lake: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreate you to keepe it cõtinually on your finger: which Agriola receiuing, with a curteous reuerence, faithfully promised to accomplish his requeſt: then Palmerin, with earneſt affection on his friends behalfe, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but marueil, sayde Princeſſe, you being a Ladie of so speciall qualitie, renowmed among the moſt vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity & profound iudgemẽt that you will be gouerned by the vnaduised perswasiõs of other: which I would not beleeue, had not the Prince Trineus certenly assured me, how since my departure, in stead of fauorable countenance, and the intreatance beseeming so great a Lord, he can haue nothing but frownes, disdaine & coy regard, which is as easy for him to indure, as a thousand deaths one after another. Assure your self so farre beguiled, as your councellers disswade you frõ your chéefeſt good, desirous to withhold you from the height of honour, wherof you cannot faile, being matched in mariage with the moſt vertuous Prince Trineus. Make you no small account, that he being one of the moſt noble ſtates on the earth, hath left his parents, his friends and countrey, hath paſt so many ſtrange & vncouth regions, hath aduentured the iniurie of the seas, beaten with so many bitter blaſtes and raging billowes, euerie minute in daunger of Shipwracke, & all for your loue. Thinke you that he being sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, attending euery day the rule of the Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich dowrie? No trust me, Madame, and I thinke your own conſcience doth so reſolue you, that nérer home

he could haue found other, endued with larger poſſeſſions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame of your manifold vertues, rare life, choiſe beautie, and all other good gifts, he was willing (vnto regard of his owne eſtate, to thruſt himſelfe in daunger, yea, to forget himſelfe for your loue, which hitherto he hath with religious ſeruice intreated, and except you intertaine him with more gracious fauour, he is in danger of life. Which if it ſhould happen by your occaſion, for euer you ſhal be noted of monſtrous ingratitude, and Chriſtendome ſhould ſuſtain a loſſe vnrecouerable. How far ſuch a thought ought to be frō you, I leaue to your own cōſtruction. If hitherto you haue knowne me, a knight readie to ſupport the cauſes of Ladies far beneath your height, thinke you I haue not greater reaſon to honour you? yea, not to moue you with any requeſt, but what may euery way aduance your credite. And though my Lord Trineus were not of the blood imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnfeigned loue, and ſurpaſſing humanitie, cauſe you to make choyſe of him, aboue all other whatſoeuer they be. But ſeeing it ſo falles out, that you will not regard good counſell, following rather the perſwaſion of mean capacities, whoſe iudgemēts may not reach to ſo high occaſions, continue in your obſtinacie, and marke the end of ſuch indiſcreet cenſures. I ſée that our company is yrkſome to you, therfore (ſoner then you imagin) we will remoue that occaſion. I knowe well enough, that you intend to match with the Duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers ſubiect: ſo refuſing ỹ degrée of an Empreſſe, you ſhall tarry in England, and be a Dutcheſſe. Thinke you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greateſt Princeſſe in Europe would not triumph in his loue? Yes certainly Madam, when you may at leyſure ſit downe & recount your loſſe, which you ſuſtained by flatterers & paraſites. Think what will be the danger after our departure, the Emperour his father, not minding to pocket the loſſe of his late armie, will ſend ſuch a puiſſaunt

ſtrength

ſtrength into England, as the King your father, nor the duke your huſband that muſt be, wil ſcant excuſe ỹ whole ruine of this country. The mean to preuent this miſhap, and aſſure your continual tranquilitie, is in entertaining the counſell I haue giuen you: where otherwiſe your ſelfe conceit, makes way to manifold miſfortunes & dangers. Thus concluding his ſpeeches, in great heauines he turned from her, wherat the Princeſſe inwardly greeued, for the King which he had giuen her was of ſuch vertue, that after ſhe had put it on her finger, ſhee was wonderfully affected toward Trineus, as ſhe could not thinke on any other: wherfore in this ſudden change, and trembling with the doubtful conceit of her owns ſpirit, ſhe called Palmerin to her, thus anſwering. Alas my Lord, and only comfort in theſe heauy paſſions, what feare hath theſe hard and rigorous ſpeeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counſell of yong Ladies like my ſelfe, I haue béene perſwaded to caſt off the Princes loue, accounting him but a ſimple knight errant: but now being aſſured of his nobility, loialty, and great gentleneſſe, & that he would not requeſt (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honor, I beléeue what you haue ſaid, & ſubmit my ſelfe to your diſcretion, as willing to obey any thing you ſhall commaund me. Yet this I muſt requeſt, that aboue all things mine honour may be defended, for rather would I ſuffer mine own loſſe for euer, then this famous realme or my father ſhould be any way endangered. Beléeue me Lady, quoth Palmerin, if thus you continue, you may wel venture to gain this generall benefit, for henceforth there will none be ſo hardy, as to moleſt your father with warre, hauing matched his daughter with the great Emperours ſonne of Allemagne. To confirme this promiſe, you ſhall giue me this ſweete hand which I kiſſe, as the hand of the ſouereigne Lady & Empreſſe of high Allemaigne, that you will not ſhrinke hereafter frō this honorable determination: but for your owne regard, you muſt

conceale this contract from your most trustie friends, and dispose in such sort of your selfe, for I hope to compasse the meane and opportunitie, that you shal leaue England, and go to the noble regions of your worthy Lorde and husband. What I haue promised, sayd Agriola, I will performe, and with what speede you shall thinke conuenient: albeit I repose such trust in you, that hauing beene so fortunate hitherto in your interprises, you wil be carefull in accomplishing these daungerous intentions. Thus before they departed, the mariage of Trineus and Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then bee suspected, they stept into the daunce next the yong prince, shewing very amiable & pleasant gestures: which Trineus (in his often turning) diligētly noted, imagining that Palmerin had not so long conferred with his Lady, but some assured resolutiō was determined, yet he dissembled his inward ioies so cunningly as he could. Eche eie was fixed on these two braue knights, the Ladies and Gentlewomen perswading themselues, that they neuer beheld more noble personages, deseruing like estimation for their special chiualrie, as also for their bountie and Courtly ciuilitie. Thus passed the feast in all kinde of pleasures, and these two knights withdrawing themselues into their chamber, Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talk with Agriola, and how he had with such cunning pursued the matter that in the end he obtained what he demaunded, reporting the gentle conclusion hee made with the Princelle. These ioyfull newes drowe the prince into such a quandarie, as he could not expresse his secret content, wherefore Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, said. As I am true knight, I neuer thought ỹ a man of your estate could be of so slender courage. What countenance would you vse in a matter of sorrow, when such dainty tidings make you so effeminate? Be of good cheere man, Agriola is your owne, and none but Trineus must bee her Lorde and husband. I must confesse my lord, saith Trineus, that my be-

uio⁊, but little beſ⁊mes my calling: but ẏ cauſe ther⁊of is, that I know no deſert in my ſelfe ẏ may be eſt⁊emed wo⁊thy ẏ leaſt fauo⁊ of my Lady. Br⁊ſter, ther⁊ is no⁊ wes bo⁊ought me ſuch ſpecial contentmẽt, as I am no longer mine owne, but in her onely I liue, and ſhe holdes the ballance of my daunger o⁊ felicity, in that I was bo⁊ne to be her ſeruant. But now I deſire you my Lo⁊d, ſ⁊ing the occaſion offe⁊eth it ſelf, we hinder it not by any negligence: fo⁊ if now we looſe the fauour of the time, we neuer (I feare) ſhal re⁊couer the like, therefo⁊e let us ſo ſoone as we can, p⁊ouide all things ready fo⁊ our departure. Refer that to me, quoth Palmerin, be you as ready as I ſhall make p⁊ouiſion. The next day he went to the maiſter of a ſhip, to know⁊e when time would ſerue fo⁊ their ſecret departure, who anſwe⁊ed him, that the time was then very conuenient, the winde ſeruing p⁊oſpe⁊ouſly, and the ſea calme and nauigable, and he would furniſh him with all neceſſaries fo⁊ his paſſage. Quoth Palmerin, ſ⁊ that your men and all things be in readines, ẏ we may launch away vpon halfe an houres warning. So departed the maiſter about his buſines, and Palmerin to the p⁊ince Trineus, whom he in⁊med with theſe glad tydings, now nothing remaining but to know the p⁊inceſſe pleaſure, ſhe being likewiſe as ready to depart as ẏ moſt fo⁊ward. But (quoth Palmerin) how ſhall we ſafely get you fo⁊th of the Court? I will, ſayd the p⁊inceſſe, this night feigne my ſelfe ſicke, and fo⁊ my greater quiet, cauſe my Ladyes to abſent my Chaun⁊ber, and ſo ſecretly will I eſcape vnſeene to the back gate of the Pallace, which is not far from my lodging, whe⁊e⁊to I may paſſe vnſeene of any, and from thence go with you ſafely to the Haven. This p⁊actiſe was faithfully con⁊cluded betwixt them, and Agriola wo⁊thy⁊ we her ſelfe cloſely to her chamber, where at night ſhe began her coun⁊terfeit ſickneſſe, commanding her Ladyes to leaue her a⁊lone, because ſhe would reſt ſhe could ſlepe a little. Her Ladyes little thinking of her ſecret deceit, went to their

awne lodgings very pensiue and sorowful, which Agriola perceiuing, couered her self with her night mantle, and came to the place where the Knights staid her comming. Palmerin taking hir vnder his arme, conuaied hir in that maner to the princes chãber, where they altogither laid downe the order for their embarking, Trineus extolling his happy fortune, seeing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselues, and taking with them the princesse costly iewels, wherof she had plentifully stored her self, they came to the hauen, where they found the ship and mariners ready, and getting all aboord, the wind seruing for their auaile, they set saile, and before day they got farre enough from London.

Chap. LXII.

How the king of England and the Queene were aduertised, how their daughter Agriola was conuayed away, and of their sorrow for her departure.

THe Duke of Gaules daughter, who continually was bedfellow to the Princesse, absenting her selfe very long from bed, fearing to disquiet her Ladie, being sicke as she supposed: but comming at length to see how shee fared, finding the bedde emptie, and Agriola gone; shee presently made a great out-crie, whereat the other Ladies came, and altogither amazed at this sudden aduenture, went to the Queenes Chamber, where they reported how the Princesse was gone, but howe or when, they knew not. The Queene at these tydings suddenly arose, and comming to her

daughters Chamber found it to true, which made her fal into such pitifull acclamations, farre surpassing those of Maguelona, when she lost her friend Peter of Prouince in the wood.

In these lamentings shee returned to the king, whose heauines exceeded iudgment, for the losse of his daughter, and then came diuerse lords & gentlemen, who declared that the strange Knights were likewise departed. Which raised such a rumour through all the Citie, that they had stolen away the Princesse. The King vnderstanding the general sorow for his daughters absence, said. In sooth my friends, if these Knights haue done such seruice for mee, they haue sufficiently recompenced themselues, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could deuise: yet will I not condemne them so much as my daughter, for that I am perswaded shée procured this mischaunce. But nowe I well perceiue what credit a mã may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermore serued the Emperour of Allemaigne, then hardly could he be true to mee. Yet is it in vain for me to blame him, or his companions, if they tooke the aduauntage of their owne intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most chosen knights: if she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deserts will answer her misdemeanour. Thus the king would not suffer any pursute after them, though the Queen and her Ladies earnestly intreated him: he answering that no such mone should be made, for a child so vngratefull and disobedient, but hauing committed an action so vile & enormе, she should no more account of her as her childe. And well may wee (quoth hee) forsake her, in that she would leaue her parents, and depart with straungers: happie might we haue accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her infancie. The Queene seeing her lord so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as she could, because shee would not moue him too much. Within few dayes after the Duke of Gaule arriued at the Court, who inuit of all

greeued at these vnhappy tidings, wherefore he perswaded the king to proclaime open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperors sonne. When the king heard the Dukes speeches, forgetting his anger, he reioyced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his daughter wise, in matching herselfe with such a husband: and if she had made her choyse among al the Princes of the world, shee could not haue fonnd out one comparable in honor. In breefe answered the duke, that for a daughter so loth, he would not seeke the death of his louers and subiects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the king wisely and patiently entertained his greefe.

Chap. LXIII.

How Vrbanillo and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arriued at the Emperours Court, and what great ioy their coming procured.

IN this place our history taketh this occasion, how the king of Fraunce daily expecting newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of marriage betweene his daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing he heard no tidings at all, he determined to send his ambassadors to the Emperor, electing for chefe in this embassage the Count of Armignac, to whom hee gaue full power & authority to conclude the marriage betweene Trineus & his daughter Lucemania, as also of the

princesse

princesse Polinarda with his son and heyre. The king dispatching all things for his ambassage, sent many Barons and knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with more royaltie & magnificence, and in this maner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being advertised of their arrivall, made no great account thereof, such was his griefe for his sonnes absence & Palmerins, of whom he could not heare any tidings, as also for the foyle his Armie sustained in England. But while the messenger from the ambassadours of Fraunce stayed with the Emperour, Vrbanillo and the princes Squire entred the hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very lovingly, he demaunded for Palmerin and his sonne Trineus, when they delivering their letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their speedie return, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadours messenger. My friend, seeing I have heard such long looked for tidings of my sonne, you may returne to the Count your maister, desiring him to come when hee thinks convenient, & he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answer the messenger departed. Then the emperor taking Vrbanillo by ye hand, said. Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy maister? where is heris my sonne with him? My gracious lord, quoth the dwarfe, where your noble son abideth, there is my maister, both of them in good disposition, and highly honored. And herein I can assure your maiesty, yf you have a son, who by good reason ought to be numbred among the best knights living, for such honourable experience hath hee made of his worthines, that perpetuall memorie will recorde his deeds of chivalry: what els remaineth you shal know at their comming, which will be so soon as they can possibly. I ever perswaded my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so good a knight as Palmerin, my son could not but purchase credit and honour: therefore seeing they have such prosperitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome

are

are they whenſoeuer they come. By this time Polinarda heard of the Dwarfes arriual, which greatly pleaſing her ſhe ſayd to Brionella. I pray thée ſweete friend go ſpéedily and ſéeke the Dwarfe, that we may knowe what is become of our Lords and my brother Trineus. Brionella, who longed to heare of hir loue Sir Ptolome, whom well ſhe knew to be one of the companie, with all ſpéed accomplished the Princeſſe commandement, and found the ioyfull meſſenger with the Emperour, who tooke great delight in the Dwarfes reports: but his maieſtie perceiuing with what chéerefull countenance ſhe came to bring Vrbanillo to her Lady the princeſſe, bad him go with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreame ſadneſſe would be comforted. Brionella béeing forth of the Emperours preſence, embraced him many times to know his tydings, when the Dwarfe not ignorant of the Ladyes paſſions, deliuered Ptolomes letter to chéere her: but whē the Princeſſe ſaw Vrbanillo comming, with the teares in her eyes ſhe ranne apace to méete him, and caſting her armes about his neck, embraced him verie often, ſaying. Tell me Vrbanillo, tell mee, how fares my brother & thy Maiſter Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, ſo well as your owne heart can wiſh, and will ere long be héere with you. Then deliuered he ỳ letter frō Trineus, which certified her of his ſhort returne, & that hee would bring with him ỳ thing ſhe moſt eſteemed. But the wag knowing ſhe expected other matters, and that her brothers medicine was not ſufficient for her cure, he gaue her his maſters letter, when ſhe haſtily breaking open ỳ ſeale, found the ring which her loyal friend had ſent her, and after ſhe had welcomd it with many deuout kiſſes, ſhe put it on hir finger, with theſe words. I charge thée keepe this token ſafely, in witneſſe of the knights gentleneſſe that ſent it, whome my heart hath made ſpeciall choyſe of aboue all other. Then reading the letter, and diſcréetly conſidering (not without great effuſe of teares) the ſweet words, humble

ble supplications, entire ercules, & extreame passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, deliuering many bitter sighs, she said. Ah my true and loyall friend, I beleeue wel, and take in good part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing should stay you from the place, where ỹ only remedie of your dolorous greefes abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forsake my brother, I pray you for your continuall safetie, and speedie conduction to your longing desires, that mine eies ouerwatched with tedious expectation, & my hart neere tired with bootlesse wishings, may by your presence be thoroughly cõforted. Afterward Vrbanillo briefely reported to her the noble actions of his Lord and maister, the loue of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, discribing her beautie and rare perfections, whereupon Polinarda thus answered. Beleeue mee Vrbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou saist she is, her great vertues and firme loyaltie likewise comparable, enuie & false report shal not impeach her, to be reckoned among the most happie Ladies of the world, and her desires wil be as honorably effected, as with vertuous thoughts she first began them. The like (I doubt not) will happen to thy maister, for fortune hath euermore so specially fauored him, as now it were against reason shee should alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarfe from the Princesse, returning to the Emperor, who by no meanes could get any other tidings of his son then what you haue heard, which made him doubt the dwarfe iuggled with him. The next day the Emperour sent his cheefest Lords and Barons, to conduct the Frenchambassadors to the court, which was sumptuously hanged with Tapistrie, especially the great hall, which was adorned with costly cloth of gold, and rich purple, as it had beene the Pallace of Salomon. The Ambassadours entertained with marnailous royaltie, & hauing deliuered the summe of their embassage, the Emperour answered that hee would conferre thereon with his

councel,

councel, in the ende while they might returne to their lodgings. After they were departed the hall, the Emperour demanded of the princes electours and the reſt of his nobilitie, if theſe marriages of his ſonne and daughter, with the heire and princeſſe of Fraunce, might not be granted, as well for the vtilitie and honour of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Chriſtendome, commanding them to ſpeake their iudgements without feare. The Lords altogether anſwered, that the motion was ſo good & the alliance ſo honorable, as it was no way to be miſliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the empreſſe, that ſhe may vnderſtand hir daughters opinion, & then my lords of France ſhall be anſwered. So leauing them hee went to the Empreſſe chamber, to whom he reported his agreement with his councel, which pleaſed her likewiſe maruailous well: but when ſhe had a little conſidered on the matter, ſhe anſwered, that but little could be ſaid before Trineus returned home againe. You reaſon well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you ſound your daughters iudgement, ỹ we may returne our brother of Fraunce ſome certain anſwer. Which ſhe promiſed to do, & ſo departing frõ her lord, ſhe went to her daughters chãber, where hauing cõmanded her ladies aſide, ſhe thus began. Faire daughter, it is the emperors pleaſure and mine, that you marrie with the eldeſt ſonne and heire of Fraunce, and your brother Trineus with his ſiſter, for hee is one of the moſt renowmed kings in *Europe*, & his ſon recounted among the beſt knights of the world: for which good fortune you may thanke the heauens, that ſo great a prince offers his ſonne to be your husband. Aduiſe your ſelfe of your anſwer, for by your opinion muſt the ambaſſadors be diſpatched hence, who came to the court for nothing elſe but to conclude theſe honorable marriages. Polinarda hearing ỹ words of her mother, was ſurpriſed with ſuch ſodain heauines, as ſhe could not tel what to anſwer: but fearing the Empreſſe ſhould perceiue that her lone was already determined

determined

termined, with sad countenance thus replied. Madame, you know what promise I made my brother the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you and all the nobility, that I would not marry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grieuous reprehension, if I should so falsifie my word, which I cannot do without impeach of myne honor. And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperor my father, who euermore esteemed his promise aboue al earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will neuer marry with the princesse Lucemania, for he loues one many degrees beyond her, and (may I speake it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladyes that euer nature framed. Thus Madame, my Father and you haue excuses sufficient & auayleable, wherewith to aunswere the king of France. It may be, quoth the empresse, that your brother loues els where: but I can tell ye, that neyther he nor you shall do any thing contrary to the Emperors commandement. Polinarda seeing her mother persist in her opinyon, bit in her sorrowes with many secret sighs: yet knew she so wel how to dissemble her passions, as the Empresse could not discerne her priuat meaning. So returned she to the Emperor, aduertising him of hir daughters answere: wherat he was so offended, as in great anger hee came himselfe to his Daughter, saying. Why howe now Daughter? are you so bolde to disobey my commandement? or dare you repugne against my will? al is to no end that you haue babled with your mother, for (will ye or no) it shall be as I haue appoynted. I knowe right well dread Lord and father, quoth she, that I ought no way to deny your pleasure, but rather wil I die a thousand deaths, then consent to match with the Sonne of Fraunce, considering what promise I haue made my brother: and if I should so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regarde what I haue promised, I were not worthy hereafter to be called your daughter. Thus stode she resolute

in her anſwere, and therewith ſhedde ſuch aboundance of teares, as the Emperour was conſtrayned to tell the Ambaſſadours, that the marriages could not be concluded till the returne of Trineus, notwithſtanding he granted all the articles of their embaſſage. The princeſſe qualifying her griefe as well as ſhee could, ſent for the Dwarfe, and taking him by the hand, ſayde. Alas my freend, I am now in ẏ greateſt perplexity in the world, neuertheleſſe, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdeſt the true loue and loyaltie I beare thy maiſter, which neuer ſhal be broken, what euer become of me. And would to God he were now heere, then would I ſpeake it openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he myne. Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, if you continue faithfull to my maiſter, perſwade your ſelfe of his aſſurance, for he building on your conſtancie, takes ſuch continual pleaſure in remembring you, that it is the onely meane that preſerues his life: and you may be bolde to credit me, that if your brothers loue did not withhold him, he would haue bin here long ere this, but he will come ſoone inough (I hope) to end this doubt. As for me, I am of the opinion that heauen wil not ſuffer ſo good a knight to die, but firſt wil permit him to ſée his miſtris. Die? quoth the princeſſe, ſooner let all the knights in the world ende their dayes, and the eldeſt ſonne of France likewiſe, though hée loue mée ſo déerely, ſo might I be rid of theſe importunate Ambaſſadours. The Emperour ſéeing hée could get no other anſwer of his daughter, concluded with the French ambaſſadors, that ſo ſoone as his ſon was returned, he ſhould be aduertized, and ſo for that time they might depart: but the empreſſe and he firſt beſtowed on them many rich preſents, and ſo in ſhort time they arriued againe in *Fraunce*, where great ioye was made in hope of theſe marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarrie ſo long. Aboue all other, the French prince was moſt ioyfull, hearing the Countis of Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but

the good Lady was of another mind, for she had rather be take her self to a Cloister, then to breake her faith to Palmerin whom she loued so constantly. Thus leaue we her conferring with Vrbanillo, returning to Palmerin and the Prince Trineus.

Chap. LXIIII.

How Palmerin beeing thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marrie the Princesse Agriola.

THis noble company being thus on the Sea, hauing winde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in foure dayes they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince séeing Agriola very pensiue and sad, comforting her with many sweete kisses, and taking her by the hande, thus spake. O soueraigne Creatour, how shal I render sufficient thanks and praise to thée, in graunting me the onely thing I desired? Ah sweete madame, and my onely mistresse Agriola, howe much is your seruant indebted to you? hath any knight more cause to honour & ertol his lady then I? Beléeue me fayre Princesse, such are the rare effects of your gracious nature, and I so ioyfull of my happie fortune, as neither friend or father shall fetch you againe from mé. If my life might endure the length of tenne mens, and euery day I shuld accomplish wonders in your seruice, yet could I not remunerate the least part of your Princely deserts. But if your loue be such to me, as I am right wel assured

it

it is, let me intreat you forbeare this heauines, and banish from your thoughts your melancholy humours: for seing you in sad & pensiue, I suffer a torment worser then death it selfe. For let me perceiue (how little soeuer it be) ỳ my presence may be to your lyking, & our present enterprise somwhat more pleasing: I fly to the heauens with conceit of happines, and value my fortune aboue the reach of humane capacity. In steede of teares, let vs vse quaint tearmes, and for these dumps, pleasant imaginations, perswade your selfe Madam, you are now in his custody, that honours you for your vertues, reuerenceth you for your diuine perfections, extols you for incomparable merits, and liues for you with his very vttermost endeuors. Thinke not though you haue left your parents, the fault is not pardonable, for the new alyance wherein you haue combyned your self, shal one day glad you with such speciall content, that ỳ hat you do imagine nowe a dangerous offence, will bee reputed an act of prouident and princely discretion. Then shall you finde true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his promises of preferment and imperial dignity, shall be both rightly & sufficiently performed. Let these perswasions, if not my intreatyes, expell these passions, and procure better comfort. Madam, quoth Palmerin, though you haue left your country, consider the occasion, ỳ loue of a mighty prince, and the heauenly appoyntment, that your noble vertues should be coupled together, hath brought you from England, to sit on the imperyal seate in Allemaigne. How carefull we haue beene of your honor, your selfe can witnes, no motion being offered to preiudice your lyking. That you are contracted before the only immortall witnes, you wil not deny: therfore to preuent all ensuing dangers, the actual ceremony shalbe heere celebrated, and the royaltie thereof solemnized when we come into Allemaigne. For, if Himen claimes his due, you may graunt it without reproch, and Iuno will as well smile at her sacred offering here, as if it were in bower or hall.

hall. The credite of Princes, are charie, and angry parentes may hinder, what heauen doth further: but the deede done, it cannot be recalled, nor can you be diuorced but onelye by death, and pittie were it, loue so well begun, but shoulde continue, therefore (so please you) let it be performed. The Princes both agreed, they were there maried, requiting they' chaft loue, with a simpathie of vertuous desires: but this time of delight and pleasure hadde small continuance, for Fortune enemie to prosperitie, accompanied with her eldest sonne Mischaunce, conuerted their ioyes into sorrowe, teares and paynes vnspeakeable, as you shall reade hereafter. These Louers thus ryding merilye on the streame, suddenlye the Sea began to swell, the winde chaunged roughly, the Skyes were troubled, and suche a daungerous tempest beate vppon they' Ship, as the Pilot, Maister and Mariners knewe not what to say, and fiue dayes togither they were in this perpleritie, sometime forwarde, then againe backward, that no hope of life was expected, but euerye one prepared themselues for death, the implacable messenger of God, for they could discerne no other remedie. Agriola not accustomed to these daungers, was meruailously discomforted: but Trineus perswaded her with many examples, in that such stratagems were vsuall on the Sea, albeit, she to ende the feare shee sawe before her eyes, woulde often times haue cast her selfe into the raging waters. At length the tempest ouer-passed, they discryed an Iland, whereto with the helpe of they' Oares they coasted, shrouding themselues vnder the sides of an highe mountaine: and although the place seemed casuall, yet there they determined to cast Anker, vntill the Seas were more calme and quiet. Being thus vnder the lee, and defended from the winde with the huge Rocke, Palmerin came vp on the hatches, to see what iudgement he could make of the Iland, and so delectable the country seemed vnto him, as he was desirous to go on shore, taking his Faulcon on his fist that was giuen him in England, so with no other defence but his Sworde, he went to

vieuve the Iſyle, not ſuffering any body to beare him cõpany. Trineus and Agriola perſwaded him to the contrary, but all would not ſerue: for the ſcituation of the Countrey pleaſed him ſo well, as he walked on in great contentation, not minding to returne againe to the ſhip, till toward the euening.

Chap. LXV.

How Trineus, Agriola, Ptolome and all their Mariners, were taken by the Turkes, after that Palmerin was gone to vieuve the Iſland.

THe Hiſtorie reporteth, that while Palmerin was thus abſent, there arriued foure or fiue Turkiſh Gallies, who likewiſe glad to ſhun the tempeſtuous weather, caſt Anker neere to Trineus ſhip, and ſeeing no body on the decke of this ſtrange veſſel, becauſe (fearing no harm) they were all at reſt: they enuironed it about, and hauing boorded it, the Captaine of the Turks called to them, ſaying. What? are ye aſleep within, that ye let vs boord ye without any reſiſtance? by the reuerence of our gods we ſhal awake yee: but litle to your eaſe. So came the Souldiours on boorde after their Captaine, who put the Pilote, the Maiſter, and many of the Mariners to the Sword, ſparing none but ſuch as they pleaſed to ranſome. Then ſearching the Cabins, they found Trineus, Agriola and Ptolome, whom they toke priſoners, by reaſon they were vnarmed, as alſo ſomewhat ſickly after their roughe paſſage. This roouing Captaine or Pyrate, named Olimael, noting

the

the singuler beautie of Agriola, commaunded her to be carryed on bord his Galley. When the Princesse sawe herselfe so hardly handeled, and that her Lorde was prisoner with these villainous Moores, so that perforce they must abandon one another: she brake forth into pitifull acclamations, and loking on her husband, thus spake. Ah my Lord, how hard & straunge is this fortune? haue we escaped a tempest so daungerous, now to fall into this mercilesse extremitie? Oh that you and Sir Ptolome had beene Armed, that these Moores might haue bought our liues with the sword: but despightfull chaunce hath so thwarted us, as no meane is left to preuent our perill. Ah Palmerin, how greeuous is thine absence, and how displeasant will our mishap bee to thee? how much would thy valour now auaile us, being vtterly destitute of any succour or refuge? I knowe our mishap will so offend thee, as I feare thou wilt vse some outrage on thy selfe. With these words she fell downe among them in a dead traunce, the sight whereof so enraged Trineus and Ptolome, as snatching weapons out of the Moores handes, they layde about them so lustily, that in short time they had slaine halfe a score of them. But vnable were they to contend against so many, wherefore being taken againe, they were bounde so cruelly with cordes and chaines, as rente their tender and delicate flesh in many places: and being so conueyed into an other Galley, their Squires likewise prisoners with them, the Moores toke what they pleased out of the Shippe, and when they had done, set it on fire. Then presently they weyed Anchor, and launching away, made halfe, least any rescewe should followe them, so that quickly they losse the sight of the Ilande, and Olimael comming to see Agriola, assaied by many meanes to asswage her heauinesse, embracing her in his armes, and promising her great riches if she would be pacified. But all his speeches were in vaine, for shee seeing the Moore imbrace her, with angry stomacke like a Lyon enraged, caught him by the haire and the throat, saying. Thou villaine Dogge, thinkest thou

thou I take any delight in thy company? How dareſt thou traitourlye theefe lay hands on mee? And ſo roughly did ſhe ſtruggle with Olimael, as if his men had not aſſiſted him, ſhee had ſtrangled him: notwithſtanding hee tooke all patiently, perſwading himſelfe, that by gentle ſpeeches, ſmooth flatterings, and large promiſes, hee ſhould in time win her to his pleaſure. So came he forth of the cabin, with his throat and face bravely painted with Agriolaes nayles, waſhing away the bloud, which made comely circles about his phiſnomie: then called he the Captaines and chiefe of his companie, willing them to ſhare the bootie among them, and he would haue nothing but the Princeſſe for his parte, for he was ſo intreigled with the beautie of his priſoner, as he had no delight but onely in beholding her. In this manner then he beſtowed his priſonners, Trineus he gaue to one of his Cozins, and Ptolome to a Knight that ſerued the Soldane of Babylon; the Squires and the reſt hee gaue among the common ſouldiours. But when the Prince ſawe hee muſt needes leaue his Ladye, and each man would carye his priſoner whether him pleaſed: his greefe for his wife, and ſorrowe for his friendes, I leaue to your iudgement, as neither to bee expreſſed. Yet ſome hope of comfort hee reposed in Palmerin, that by his meanes (being eſcaped theyr hands) he ſhould get againe Agriola, elſe was there no waye lefte to helpe him. Ptolome who deerely loued the Prince, before they parted, thus began. Why how now my Lorde? where is your wonnted prudence and diſcretion? Where is that conſtant magnanimitie, which in ſo many fortunes heeretofore you vſed? what? is it leſt, or haue you forgot it? What meane ye? will ye be ſubiect to paſſions, as a weake effeminate perſon? You that are ſpring from the moſt auncient noble and generous race of Chriſtendome, eſteemed for a moſt courageous and vertuous knight, will you bee driuen into theſe ſad and deſolate opinions? What then would a Turke, Moore or barbarous Myrmidon do in like afflictions? when he y hath aſſurance of his God, and knows

that all persecutions, fortunes and mishaps, are proues of his fidelitie, and the meanes to attaine eternal quiet, sheweth these vndutifull behauiors, as though he had lost all meanes of hope and comforte. If the body be afflicted, let the spirite be animated, and armed with patience, against all infirmities of the flesh. Leaue these soft countenances for Women, and if you will not perswade your selfe, that these troubles happen for the encreasing of our ioye, it maye bee the meane that God will forsake vs. Then neyther feare or dispayre I praye you, for he that suffered vs to fall into these Moores handes, both can and will deliuer vs againe. As for your Lady Agriola, doubt not of her vnconquerable loyalty, for shee hath in her custody a iewel of such vertue, as no one can dishonour her against her owne lyking. Comfort your selfe then in the power of the highest, and repose your selfe on the constancie of your Ladye, with this certaine perswasion, that this crosse and aduersitie hath fallen vpon vs, for our greater good and aduauncement hereafter. Then came Olimael, and interrupted theyr talke, commaunding nine or ten of his people, to conuay Trineus into another Galley, and Prolome into that where his Maister was, that so they might depart, to recouer the rest of theyr Galleyes, which were scattered from them by reason of the tempest. And so they departed one from an other, the Galley wherein Trineus was discrying a goodly Ship of Christians, whereof they being glad, sette sayle with the winde towardes the Christians, who rode awaye so fast as they could, and had escaped, but that they met full with certaine Pyrates of Natolia, who ioyning with the Gallies, in the ende boorded her, and parted the spoyle among them: the winde suddenly began to chaunge, so that they were constrained to flye for succour to an Iflande in the Kingdome of Persia, which they reached in good time, glad to shelde themselues from daunger: These Pyrates thus come to the Hauen, went all on shore to refresh themselues: but they hadde no sooner sette foote on land, such enchauntments were there dis-

peared through the whole Iſle, as they preſently knew not one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of theſe enchauntments, you muſt note, that the Iſle where they landed was called Malfada, which name was giuen it by the Lady thereof, who was called likewiſe Malfada, the moſt ſubtill Magitian of her time: ſo that wee may ſay of her, as the Poets feigned of the auncient Circes. And albeit ſhe was iſſued of Chriſtian parentes, yet hauing ſuch familiaritie with the diuell and his maligne ſpirites, ſhe would not acquaint her ſelfe with any goodneſſe towardes Chriſtians, but daily practiſe their harme and deſtruction. And for this intent, ſhee had long time enchaunted this Iſland with ſuch charmes, that what Ships arriued there, could neuer depart thence againe, much leſſe ſuch as entred within the Iſle. They being thus ſtaied, Malfada would come her ſelfe, and chuſe ſuch as ſhee lyked, the reſt ſhee tranſformed into Hartes, Wolues, Dogges, Boares, and all manner of beaſtes. Such likewiſe as ſhee toke with her into her Fortreſſe, when ſhe had abuſed them to content her owne pleaſure, ſhee would caſt them forth, tranſforming them as ſhee did the other: in breefe, ſhe was worſe then a Diuell, and the whole Iſle a very diſguiſed hell. This wicked woman knowing, that more vnfortunate people were landed at the Hauen, called her ſeruaunts, and came to ſee them: but ſhe made no great account of them, wherefore ſhe commaunded her ſeruaunts to take all the riches forth of the Shippe, conuerting it by her inchauntment, that it ſeemed lyke a bottomleſſe gulfe. Afterward at her pleaſure, ſhee tranſformed them that came in it, among whome Trineus was chaunged into the ſhape of a very fayre Dogge, not that hee was ſo, for that is a thing againſt nature, and which God no way will permit, that man ſhall take any brutiſh ſhape, or a brute beaſt any humane forme. For the Magicall diſpoſitions thus holde theyr Arte, that the enchaunted eſteeme themſelues beaſtes, and of that ſort was this diſfigured Paſtime: notwithſtanding, theſe diſtreſſed captiues had

naturall

naturall reaſon and humane poſwer, but the benefit of ſpéech was taken from them. And thus was Trineus tranſformed, which he ſeemed not to miſlike, for not remembring himſelfe, he forgot all his heauie paſſions, maruelling only at his ſuddaine mutation. And here will we leaue him in his ſtraunge deformitie, to report what befell to the Princeſſe Agriola, after that dolorous ſeparation betweene her Lord and her.

THus Gentlemen haue wee left the Prince *Trineus* transformed into the ſhape of a Dogge, in the Iſle of *Malſada*, by the Enchauntreſſe: the Engliſh Princeſſe *Agriola*, in the cuſtody of the Turkiſh Pirate *Olimael*: *Ptolome* and *Colmelio* carried into *Aethiopia*, and *Palmerin* raunging in the Iſlande with his Hauke for his delight. Right ſtraunge will bee the meeting of all theſe friendes againe, after the hazards of many perillous fortunes. For *Agriola* thus ſeparated from the Prince her husband, is maried to the great Emperour of *Turkie*: howe wonderfully the ring which *Palmerin* gaue her, preſerues her chaſtitie, will be worth the hearing. How *Palmerin* counterfeiting himſelf dumbe, doth many rare exployts in the Iſle of *Calpha*, will be as acceptable. How *Palmerin* gaines his *Polinarda*, *Trineus* his chaſt wife *Agriola*, *Ptolome* his *Brionella*, and all Honors meeting togither in the Emperours Court of *Allemaigne*, wil be ſo ſtrange as the like was neuer heard: and all this performes the ſecond part, which ſhall be publiſhed ſo ſoone as it can be printed.

FINIS.

A. Mundy.

Honos alit Artes.

BRITISH
14 JY 1920
MUSEUM

A

THE Second Part of the honourable Hiſtorie,

of *Palmerin d'Oliua:*

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly deeds *of Chiualrie, happie ſucceſſe in loue: and how he was Crowned Emperour of* Conſtantinople.

Herein is likewiſe concluded the variable troubles of the Prince TRINEVS, and faire AGRIOLA, the Kings daughter of ENGLAND: with their fortunate Marriage.

Tranſlated by A. M. *one of the Meſſengers of* her Maieſties Chamber.

Patere aut abſtine.

LONDON
Printed by Thomas Creede.
1597.

THE
Second Part of the
honourable Hiſtorie,

of Palmerin d'Oliua:

Containing his rare fortunes, Knightly deeds
of Chiualrie, happie Loue: and how
he was Crowned Emperour of
Conſtantinople.

Newly Corrected and Enlarged through out by the
Diuine TRINEVS, and Faire AGRIOLA the
King's daughter of ENGLAND: with
their Honourable Loues.

Imprinted by A. M. for Thomas Gubbins, Deputy of
her Maieſties Priuiledge.

Parare aut adire.

LONDON
Printed by Thomas Creede.
1597.

To the worshipfull Maiſter *Fraunces Young*, of *Brent Pelham*, in the Countie of Hertford Eſquire, and to Miſtreſſe *Suſan Young*, his wife, and my moſt kind Miſtreſſe: *this worldes ioy and heauenly felicitie intirely wiſhed.*

PRomiſe is debt (worſhipfull Syr) as the Prouerbe auoucheth, and debt muſt needes be paide, as reaſon requireth: the one not arguing ſo much liberalitie in ſpeech, as the other doth vertue in accompliſhing. When I preſented ye my firſt part of Palmerin of England, I promiſed to haſten theſe likewiſe that ſhould preceede it: becauſe this Hiſtorie of Palmerin d'Oliua, is the beginning and inducement to all thoſe that followe thereon. Wherfore hauing ſent ye the firſt, ſo likewiſe doe I now the ſeconde, and will make what ſpeede I can in tranſlating the third and laſt,

if your kinde fauour ſpurre me on, as I doubt not but it will. So ſtill remaining yours (euen to my vttermoſt,) I humbly take my leaue, this firſt of Auguſt.

Your VVerſhips euer to be commaunded,

Anthony Mundy.

To the Freendlie READERS.

THough long, yet at length this ſecond booke of Palmerin *is finiſhed, and he hauing endured ſo manie bitter brunts in ſearch of aduentures: after all, nowe remaineth either to bee commended or condemned by your cenſure. Condemne him you cannot with reaſon, conſidering all his actions haue beene ſo honourable: as too malicious were the man would deale ſo hardly with him that hath giuen no occaſion of offence. Commend him then you muſt, in reſpect of his manifold vertues, thruſt altogither in the face of Fortune, onelie for your delight and recreation.*

As concerning his Sonnes, Palmendos *and* Primaleon, *the one is kept vnder his mothers wing, the Queen of* Tharſus, *and the other ſporting in the Court at* Conſtantinople: *not daring to ſette foote in the ſtirroppe after Knightly exerciſes, til they heare how their Father ſpeedes. If he haue that fauour his deedes deſerued, then on goes their Armor, and in the cheefeſt places of Chriſtendome will they ſhewe themſelues, with repetition to the world of wonderfull aduentures.*

But

To the Reader.

But while they expect good newes or bad, I will haſten on the tranſlation of the third part of this moſt famous Hiſtorie, which beeing of ſome great quantitie, will aske the longer time ere hee can enioy the benefit thereof: bee therefore kind to theſe two former Bookes, and that will be the better meanes of haſtening the third.

Yours to his vttermoſt,

Anthony Mundy.

The second part of the auncient and honourable Hiſtorie of Palmerin D'Oliua.

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly deedes of Chiualrie, happie ſucceſſe in loue, and how he was crowned Emperour of Conſtantinople. Herein is likewiſe concluded the variable troubles of Trineus, *and faire* Agriola *of* England, *with their fortunate mariage, &c.*

Chap. I.

How Olimel preſented the Princeſſe Agriola to the great Turke, who immediately became amorous of her: and what rewardes and preferment the Pyrate receiued, for his gift.

YEt I am ſure you remember in the firſt part, how the Pyrate Olimel vttered his priſoners reſeruing for himſelfe none but the King of Englandes daughter, hoping in time to purchaſe her fauour. And being alone with her in the fayreſt Cabin in the Galley, he vſed all meanes he could to comfort her: but all was

houres were beſtowed in vaine, for ſhée woulde receyue no kinde of ſuſtenaunce, deſyring euerie houre to die, hauing ſo loſt her Lord Trineus. He ſéeing that fayre ſpéeches, offers, gifts, and other inticements proper to perſwaſion, could not compaſſe the thing he deſired, he grewe into choler, intending to gaine his pleaſure perforce, ſo that after manie threatnings, with rough violence hée woulde néedes raviſh her. Agriola ſéeing that her féeble ſtrength coulde not long withſtand the Turke, albeit ſhe ſtroue and reſiſted ſo well as ſhé coulde: therefore with deuout prayer ſhee called on God, deſiring him to take pittie on her, and not to ſuffer that villainous Ruffian to diſhonour her. Her prayer béeing ended, Olimael beganne in ſuch ſort to tremble, as hée ſtaggered backe warde foure or fiue times, and ſo exceedingly was hée ſurpriſed with feare, as hée was conſtrayned to leaue her, and withdraw himſelfe into another place. The Princeſſe, though ſhé were amazed at this ſuddaine chaunge, noting with what terrour the Captaine departed, yet was ſhe greatly comforted by her deliuerance, imputing the whole worke thereof to the Almightie prouidence, and the vertue of the King that Palmerin gaue her: wherefore with thankfull heart, and eleuated eyes to heauen, ſhé ſayd, O celeſtiall Father, howe great and infinite is thy goodneſſe? howe happie is the creature, whom thou regardeſt with the eye of pittie? aſſuredly I nowe perceyue, that ſuch as in extremitie haue recourſe to thee, ſhall no waie periſh. Then taking the vertuous Ring, and kiſſing it many times, ſayd:

Inualuable Iewell, giuen me by the beſt Knight in the worlde, howe carefully muſt I keepe thée? howe true is that ſaying: That great perſons giue great preſents. Henceforth ſhalt thou here kept (for the loue of him that gaue thée, and for thy ſingular vertue) in the place where I vſually bare things of greateſt price. So taking a little Chayne of Golde, which ſerued her as a Bracelet, ſhé faſtened this worthie Iewell thereto, and put it about her necke, ſo that

the sumptuous Stone laye glittering betweene her milke white breasts, a prospect so rare and delicate, and of no lesse power to drawe the beholders eyes, then the Adament, the Amber, or the Ieate, can by their vertue: beside, so wonderfully repleat with sweete regard, as I dare affirme that the most cruell Tyrant in Turkie, would stand amazed at those two daintie Mountaines, more mortified and humbled then the aged Hermits of Thebaida. Olimael yet quaking at his suddaine alteration, durst presume no more to offer her villaynie, but by rich gifts and presents sought to perswade her: all which availed not, for as hee got but little profit by his violence, so wonne he much lesse by his treacherous offerings. So sayled they eight dayes together, Olimael not able to compasse Agriolas loue, nor hearing anie tydings of the vessels that were lost, neyther of his Cosin who had Trineus captive, which grieued him as nothing could do more, in that he was so unprouided, as well he could not present himselfe before his Lord, to whom hee had promised to bring store of Christian prisoners, and now hee had in his boteleste loue so lost his time, as either the tempest or shipwracke, had spoyled him of his owne companie. In this doubtfull opinion, he debated with himselfe, that the great Turke did earnestly affect fayre Ladyes, so by the meane of his beautifull prisoner, he imagined to bee entertained with good countenaunce, and his losse would be past ouer with forgetfulnesse: wherefore hee commaunded the Pilot to make toward the port of Ottobant, where as then the great Emperour of Turkie soiourned, and thither they came in short time after. Notwithstanding, as a seruant well instructed, not daring to abuse the familiaritie of his Lorde, hee sent one of his knights to excuse his cause, and to report, that by casuall mischaunce he had lost his men and Gallies: but if his Maiestie pleased to forget his misfortune, and receyue him into his accustomed fauour, he would bring him one of the fayrest Ladies in Christendome, and discended of most royall parentage. The

Emperour being laſcivious, and more addicted to vnchaſte deſires then any in his Realme, hearing this meſſage, was ſo ſuppriſed with the onely report of her beautie, as immediately he became paſſionate for her loue: ſending the Pyrate worde that her could not bring a more deſired preſent, and therefore remitted all his offences, promiſing him greater fauour then euer he had. And becauſe no contrarie occaſion may hinder his comming, quoth the Emperour, thou ſhalt carrie him this Letter, ſealed with mine owne ſignet, that hee may no way doubt of his aſſurance. The Knight taking the Letter, and kiſſing the Emperours feete, according to the cuſtome, returned to his Maiſter, deliuering him the anſwere hee had receiued. Olimael ioyfull thereof, cauſed Agriola to cloath her ſelfe in her moſt ſumptuous garments, and ſo with all his men ſet forwarde towarde the Court. Nowe although the Princeſſe was all blubbered with teares, and halfe deade to ſee her ſelfe in the power of theſe Straungers, profeſſed and ſworne enemies to her faith and religion: yet could not the rare perfections of her beautie be ſhadowed, but the glimſe thereof ſet euery eye to wonder. And as ſhe looked about her, to ſee if any of her companie were landed with her, ſhe eſpied Ptolome, whom they minded ſecretly to conuey from her, but ſhee beholding him ſo ſad and ſorrowfull, ſtept towards him, ſaying. Ah my deere friend Ptolome, what vnkeakfull chaunce hath Fortune throwne vppon vs: but well may I content my ſelfe, for this is a iuſt ſcourge for mine offence, and vndutifull obedience to the King my father. Ah my Lord and loyall husband Trineus, neuer ſhall I ſee thee againe, for God onely knowes whither theſe villaines hath ſent thee. Ah noble Palmerin, who was wont herete fore to comfort me, too much haſt thou failed vs, all thy former promiſes are nowe altered: for in ſtede of imperiall ſoueraignitie, pleaſure and honor, I am requited with penurie, greefe, ſhame and mockerie. Ah death, ſweet death, too long deſired death: why commeſt thou not to end all theſe miſeries? But God will not

permit

permit thée, because by my torments and afflictions, I may feele the weightie burthen of my offences, and large bountis of his mercies.

Ptolome seing her in this mournfull veration, sayde, It is no time nowe (Madame) thus to offende your selfe, but rather (as wise and well gouerned) to beare these aduersities, euen with as great content as your former prosperities, taking in good part whatsoeuer shall happen: for I am in good hope, and my minde perswades me, that wee shall be deliuered by noble Palmerin, who I am sure endureth greater greefe in his libertie, hauing left vs, then wee can do in our imprisonment. Olimael exceeding angry to see Agriola weepe, violently pulde Ptolome from her, charging his men, not to suffer him once to come in her sight, which he suffered patiently, because he saw it was in vaine to kicke against the pricke. When they were come to the Pallace, and admitted to the Emperours presence, Olimael kneeling downe and kissing his foote, presented Agriola to his maiestie: who seing her of such rare and wonderfull beautie, said to Olimael. This present (my Friende) is of such surpassing value, as thou couldest neuer honour me with the like: good reason is it therefore, that a gift so precious should be rewarded with like recompence, and so perswade thy selfe I will, and thou shalt say the Emperour is bountifull. As for the Ladie thou hast giuen me, I receiue her so faire and gracious, as I intend neuer to haue any other wife: and that I may espouse her with the greater magnificence, I will stay till the hallowed day of my coronation, when all my Princes, Barons, and Knights, will be heere assembled, and then in their presence shal our nuptialles be solemnized. Nowe had the Emperour a Woman captiue, named Hippolita, who was a Marchants Daughter of Scicilie, and better skilled in all languages then anie Ladie in the Court, for which he made speciall account of her, reposing great confidence in her, and acquainting her with his cheefest secrets, wherefore hee sent for her before

Agriola, and ſayd. Hippolita, I giue you this Ladie in kéeping, commanding you to intreat her as our owne perſon, and that all meanes may be practiſed, to cauſe her forſake this ſad melancholy. In conference, you may ſhewe her what honour and happineſſe ſhe ſhall receiue by falling into our handes, and what incomparable fortune it is to her, whom we ſhall pleaſe to accept for our Wife. All which Hippolita (with great humilitie) promiſed to accompliſh, and ſo conducted her into a marualous princely Chamber, the floore couered all ouer with cloth of Tiſſue, and hung about with ſuch ſumptuous Tapiſtrie and cloth of Gold, as hardly might the richneſſe thereof be valued. There Hippolita cauſed the Princeſſe to ſitte downe in a Chayre of ſtate, which was purpoſely prouided for her, demaunding her name, and of what countrey ſhee was. The Princeſſe anſwered, that ſhee was of England, but further of her ſtate ſhee would not bewray. Hippolita ſpeaking perfectly the Engliſh tongue, toke great delight daily to commune with her, and becauſe Agriola ſhould the better like of her conuerſation, ſhe tolde her that ſhe was likewiſe a Chriſtian: but by conſtraint ſhe followed the Law of Mahomet, and his Alchoran. In further ſpéeches ſhee acquainted her with the eſtate of the Sultanes, in the Court of the great Emperour of Aſia: which communication ſerued well to weare away the time, albeit the Princeſſe toke ſmall pleaſure therein. Olmael in conſideration his noble preſent, was created high Admirall of the Mediterranean ſea, and furniſhed with greater ſtore of Foyſtes and Gallies then had before.

Chap.

Chap. II.

How the great Turke ſummoned all the Kings and Princes his Subiects, becauſe hee minded to hold open Court: and howe he married with the Princeſſe *Agriola* his priſoner.

HIppolita daily conuerſing with Agriola, becauſe ſhee could not ſo well ſpeake her language, at length the Emperor came to her chamber, and becauſe he might the better behold the princeſſe, hee ſate downe in a Chaire oppoſite to her, and there he ſate a long time, not able to cõtent his eyes with loking on her: for, ſpeake to her he could not becauſe ſhee vnderſtood not the Turkiſh language. Wherefore he commanded Hippolita to requeſt her name, and what her Parents were, which to ſatiſfie his maieſtie, ſhee did, Agriola thus anſwering her. In vaine Lady ſeeke you to know of me the thing which death cannot force mee bewray: let this ſuffice you, that I am a poore Gentlewoman, the moſt infortunate that euer liued, with which words ſhee wept very greeuouſly. The Emperour moued with pittie, departed to his Chamber ſo ſurpriſed and enflamed with her loue, as hee could take no reſt one minute of the night, conſidering with himſelf, that ſeeing ſhee eſteemed ſo little of the riches ſhee ſawe in his Pallace, and refuſed the offers made her by Hippolita, that doubtleſſe ſhee was extract of ſome noble linage.

The next morning he called his foure Secretaries, commaunding them to write to all the Princes of his Empire,

that they ſhould not fayle to honour the day of his coro-nation with their preſence, and to bring with them their Quéenes and Daughters, and this they ſhould do on paine of diſpleaſure: all which was perfourmed with preſent expedition. In the meane time, hee cauſed ſundrie ſumptuous ornaments to bee prepared, with all manner of precious Jewels could be deuiſed, and theſe he daily ſent to Agriola, but all theſe preſents, promiſes, and munificent entertainment, could no way moue her, not ſo much as to grant him a gracious countenance. He likewiſe ſent for the braueſt Ladies in his Court, that they ſhould kéepe the Princeſſe companie: but ſhe would be conuerſant with none but Hippolita, of whom ſhe had ſo prettily learned the Arabian tongue, as many times ſhe could indifferently anſwere the Emperour. But when he beheld her continually ſo penſiue, and that by no meanes ſhee would bee comforted, hée doubted leaſt his preſence did offende her, and therefore hée forbare ſo often to viſit her. For ſo déerely he loued her, as for the halfe of his Empire hee would giue her no occaſion of diſcontent, hoping in time (which is the Lorde and conqueroar of all things) to alter that humour, and purchaſe her loue, which he deſired with earneſt affection. But now at this day, where may we find a Lady ſo vertuous and wel gouerned, being captiue as Agriola was, that could not be won by ſuch a mightie Emperor, conſidering her youth and beautie, and the wonderfull riches inceſſantly offered her. Yet the higheſt Lord ſo protected her, that the more liberall the Turke was in honors and perſwaſions, the more loyall continued her loue to Trineus, whoſe perfect image was engrauen in her heart. And not fearing torments or death, ſhe boldly anſwered the Emperor that he trauailed in vain, for ſhe might not loue him, in that ſhe was married to an husband, more noble euery way then he, and none but him ſhée would loue while ſhe liued: yet made he no great account of her words, conſidering what frailtie commonly is in women. The day being come of this great preparatiō,

and

and al the Princes present to vnderstand their soueraignes will: he being placed in his imperiall seate, said. That hée intended to take to wife, one of the most beautifull Ladyes in the worlde, & for that cause he sent for them, to vnderstand howe they liked thereof. Their aunswere was, that they liked well thereof, and would gladly honour her as wel beseemed them. Then sent he for Agriola, and before them all, saide vnto her: that it was his pleasure to accept her for his wife, and therefore shee should prepare her selfe on the morrow to be married. The Princesse abashed at these spéeches, fell downe before him in a dead traunce, whereupon, by the Mayrnes and Ladies present, shée was conuayed into her Chamber, where being againe reuiued, she began most pitifull and dolorous lamentations: so when all the compaine had left her, that shée was alone with Hippolita, falling downe on her knées at her beds feete, shée thus began.

O my God and benigne Father, pittie thy poore distressed creature, and forget the offences I haue heretofore committed: for what is a sinner, vnlesse thou in mercie suffer her to come before thée? Wilt thou then vouchsafe (O wonderfull woorkeman of the whole worlde) one eye of pittie vpon thy humble forsaken seruant: and suffer her not to fall into subiection, to the vowed enemie of thy holy worde, arming me so strongly in this temptation, that I no way iniurie my Lord and husbande Trineus, but rather graunt this desolate spirit, may leaue this bodie and the worlde together. Ah my honourable Lord Trineus, where art thou nowe? that thou art not héere to defende the shame and wrong this Tyrant offers thée? what? art thou dead? or hast thou forgotten me? No, no, so well am I assured of thy fidelitie, as no torment can diuert thée from mée. Yet if I knewe directly that thou art not liuing, the lesse woulde bee my feare to follow thée: for then the greatest pleasure this Pagan could for mée, were to make mée happie onely by death. But for the matter is vncertaine, and that I liue

in

in hope once more to ſee thée: I will patiently endure all afflictions whatſoeuer, for ſo ſweéte a reward as is thy loue. Theſe ſorrowes of the Princeſſe ſo grieued Hippolita, as one could hardly iudge who was moſt paſſionate, yet at length ſhée thus ſpake to Agriola. I beſeech you good Lady to leaue theſe gréeuous lamentations, and regarde the high eſtate, honour and dignitie, that you ſhall haue in marrying with my Lord. Neuer perſwade me (quoth the Princeſſe) to manifeſt diſloyaltie: for ſuch preferments, if they bée not gotten iuſtly and by vertue, they ought not to bée coueted, but to be ſhunned as diuelliſh Serpents. Thus ſpent they the whole night, and in the morning came the Quéenes and Ladies newlie come to the Court, to bid the ſorrowfull Bride good morrow in her Chamber, attyring her in wonderfull gorgious veſtures, after their Country maner, farre beyonde the royaltie of Helena, after her arriuall at Troy. Betwéene foure Kings ſhée was brought into the greate Hall, and from thence conducted to the Temple, where they were eſpouſed by the Moſti. To recount here thy royall ſolemnitie in the temple, the Maieſtie and vnſpeakable dignitie at the pallace, the excellent Comedies, rare triumphs, Maſkes, Momeries, Morriſcoes, and ſuch like courtly pleaſures, would bée a matter too prolixious: for they are not to our purpoſe. Let it then ſuffice yee, that after they were magnificently entreated at Dinner and Supper, the daunſing began, and God knowes how the Turks, Moores, Arabes, and Medes, ſet forth themſelues in their deuiſes, and ſports before their Ladies, much lyke the Satyres and horned Faunes, giuing new inuaſions on the Nimphes of Diana. But all theſe marueyles, toyes and follies, could not chaunge the Princeſſe countenaunce, for ſhée continuing in her perſeueraunce, theſe ſports were worſe to her then the torments of death: aboue all, fearing the loſſe of her chaſtitie, which was a Iewell neuer to be recouered. The Paſtimes ended by the Quéenes and Ladies, ſhée was conducted to the nuptiall bedde, ſo braue and ſtately as the Prince

Aeneas,

Aeneas, when he came to Cartage, and there was the vnfortunate Byde committed to her reft. Some after came the hastie Bydegrome, calling for Torches that hee might beholde the Goddesse her honoured, and as hee was preparing himselfe to bed, he was troubled with such feares, passions, and apoplexie, as nowe he seemed more lyke a ghost then a man. Perforce hee was constrained to forsake the Chamber, when the extremitie of the fit somewhat aswaging, and his former louepassions freshly assayling him, comming to the Princesse againe, beauily hee thus spake.

Ah, Agriola, Ladie and sole Mistresse of my heart, I thinke thou art some Goddesse, or (at least) exceeding all humanitie: so strange is this aduenture, as neuer any man (I thinke) heard of the like. Alas, cannot thy anger be appeased? nor thou induced to loue him, who for thy sake endures most horrible torments? I pray thee bee not the cause of my death: or if thou needes wilt, suffer mee first to enioy the fruites of my desires. Know, my Lord answered Agriola, that with my will you neuer shall enioy it, and if perforce you seeke to dishonour me, assure your selfe, I am resolued rather to suffer endlesse miseries, then to violate my faith to my loyall Husbande: for such is my trust in God, that hee will not forget such as call on him. But in respect thou hast not beene cruell to mee, nor hast exercised mee with any tyrannie, I shall suffer thee to lye vpon the bed by mee, as my Brother might doo, and sometime (though it be more then modestie) embrace thee in mine armes: but if farther thou presumest, thou mayst not bee permitted, but shalt loose that fauour, thy selfe, and mee together. Madame, quoth hee, in graunting mee that courtesie, you saue my life, for I haue many Concubines to qualifie theie passions, and neuer will I attempt your dishonour while I liue: if I but offer the motion, refuse mee for euer. I shall therefore account of you as my Sister, and death shall not make me doo contrarie to your appointment. The yong Princesse glad of this

solemne

ſolemne promiſe, gaue him a kiſſe or twaine, and ſuffered him to embrace her: but other kindneſſe could he neuer obtaine, contenting himſelfe with this, becauſe ſhe loued her ſo ſpecially. At fifteene dayes end, the feaſtes being ended, the Princes toke their leaue of the great Sultane, who with many rich preſents ſent them home into their Countryes. Thus remained Agriola with the great Turke, and the knight to whom Olimael had giuen Ptolome and Colmelio, ſailed with his priſoners into Aethiopia: and thenceforward vſed them not as ſlaues, but as Gentlemen of good qualitie, eſpecially Ptolome, whom hee reputed a hardie knight, and a man borne to great enterpriſes.

Chap. III.

How Palmerin after his recreation, returned to the ſea ſide, and ſeeing the Ship and his companie gone, made great lamentation, and what after followed.

BEfore in this Hiſtorie you haue heard, how Palmerin walking on ſhore with his Faulcon on his fiſt, deſired to ſee the pleaſantneſſe of the Iſle, and finding ſo manie delights to withholde him, returned not towarde the Ship till it was neere night: but when hee came thither againe, and could not ſee the Shippe, nor anie one to queſtion withall, he was greatly amazed, running heere and there, yet all to no purpoſe. Sometime hee imagined that Trineus had betrayed him, becauſe he had acquainted him with his loue towarde his Siſter: and then againe reſolued himſelfe on the contrarie. All about hee lo-

ked

ked for his companions, not knowing what to think: whether, they were carried away by Pirats, or taken prisoners by the Inhabitants of the Iland. In the end, hauing compassed in his minde all imaginations hee could, and seeing that by his regard of pleasure he had lost his Friendes, hee entred into many sorrowfull lamentations, farre exceeding Cadmus when hee lost his Souldiers by the horrible Serpent, cursing and exclaiming on himselfe, as he had beene guiltie of the death of his father. Alas (quoth hee) why did I not remember these wretched misfortunes by poore Varian? whose sorrowes was likewise procured by a Hawke: in hapelesse houre was this wicked Byrde giuen me. Ah trecherous and deceiuing Strumpet, I thinke thou art some incorporate Fiende sent from Hell, to iniurie the most constant Louers: and therefore gentle Dame, or rather enchanted Diuell, thou shalt neuer hereafter displease any other, so taking her by the necke, hee pulled her in peeces, and said:

Ah sweete Lady Polynarda, how contrarie is Fortune? and howe vnhappily our desires preuented? well am I assured, if Trineus come to the Court without me, it will endanger your life, and the onely thing that shelters me from death, is comfortable hope to see you once againe. Therefore diuine mistresse, I call for your succour, that by your gracious assistance, I may endure these vehement oppressions. Ah gentle Princesse Agriola, howe haue I deceiued you? but in requitall of your wrong, no rest nor ease shall possesse my soule, till I haue brought Trineus and you to as great ioy, as by my meanes you haue receiued discomfort. In these complaints hee layde him downe vnder a tree, and so wasted the time till morning came, when hauing no creatures to speake withall, nor any meane for him to passe the Sea, hee determined to passe through the Iland till hee might meete some body to conferre with. Thus hauing no defence but his sword vnder his arme, hee walked along, and at length he met a Boye with foure Spaniells,

and

and a Warlin on his fiſt: whome hee humbly ſaluting, demaunded the name of the Countrey, and if there were any ſhipping neere for his paſſage. The Moore perceiuing by his language that he was a Chriſtian, in great anger anſwered. Art thou come ſo farre to ſeeke thine owne miſfortune by Mahomet I ſhall welcome thee hither with a vengeance, & laying hande on his Semitary, Palmerin perceiuing by his geſture (though hee vnderſtood not his talk) that he wiſhed him no good, wherefore drawing his ſworde, hee gaue the Moore ſuch a ſtroke on the head, as he cleaued it to his very teeth, and ſayd. By God villaine, thou ſhalt not take me priſoner, or ſend me into the ſea to ſeeke my raunſome, and ſo may all diſcourteous barlets be ſerued, as reſemble thee in conditions. Thus leauing the Moore dead, hee toke another way, leaſt if he ſhould bee followed, hee might fall into danger: but ſeeing hee was vnarmed, and could not ſpeake the Arabian tongue, hee imagined that at length he muſt needes be taken. Hereupon he returned backe to the Moore, and taking his garments, left his own there, and thence forward determined to counterfeit himſelfe dumbe: by which ſubtiltie he thought to eſcape vnknowne, and preuent his impriſonment, till hee founde meanes to returne towards Allemaigne againe. The day ſtealing on apace, and darke night approching, he came to a fayre Fountaine, of the cleereſt water (in his opinion) that euer hee ſawe, where laying him downe to reſt, conſumed the night as quietly as he could. On the morrow he began to remember his miſeries, his dangers paſt, and ſuch as were imminent, the conceit whereof made him very melancholy: ſo after hee hadde eaten a little bread which hee found in the Moores budget, according to the maner of Diogenes, he layd him downe againe and ſlept.

Chap.

Chap. IIII.

How Palmerin counterfeiting himselfe dumbe in the Isle of Calphia, was found by certaine Turkes, as he lay a sleepe by the Fountaine: and howe hee was receiued into the seruice of Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon.

NOw that you may the more easily vnderstand in that which followeth, the full intent of our discourse, you must call to memorie how Gamezio, who was slaine before Constantinople by the Prince Florendos, as you haue heard in the first parte of this History; was Sonne to the Soldane of Babilon named Myfos, and brother to Maulicus, who at his death was a verie yong prince. Myfos vnderstanding by his Subiects, that Gamezio the hope of his declining age, was gone by the summons of Atropos to the habitation of the Gods, could not afterward enioy the health of body, or quiet in minde: and therefore ere a yeere was fully expired, hee went to seeke his sonne among his equalles in the fieldes of Elysium. Before hee tooke his iourney thereinto no creature returneth againe, he charged his succeeding Sonne Maulicus, to reuenge his brothers death, being perswaded that himselfe should not be discharged of his infortunate remembrance in the other world, if hee failed to accomplish his latest commaundement. Maulicus, not to hinder his departure, promised he would, yet could hee not fulfill it, beeing troubled in his owne kingdome more then 20. yeeres after.

But

But after he had reduced the rebellious Prouinces into obedience, he married with the King of Armeniaes Daughter, by whom he had the Princeſſe Alchidiana, one of the moſt beautifull and gracious Ladies of her time: who being come to age of experience, was ſo loued of her father, as he would neuer ſuffer her out of his ſight, ſo that he made deuiſe to all ſuch as requeſted her in marriage. Alchidiana, when ſhee vnderſtood her owne ſingularitie, deſired the companie of the moſt beautifull Ladies in Aſia, becauſe ſhe held this opinion, that when the fayreſt were preſent, beautie would then bee moſt ſplendant. For this cauſe ſhee ſent to Prince Guiharan, Sonne to Polidia her mothers ſiſter, that he ſhould bring his Siſter Ardemia to the Court, who was counted the Paragon through all the Monarchie of Babilon.

Shee being come to the Citie of Calpha, from whence the name of the Iſland was deriued, her Couzin Alchidiana feaſted all the Peeres ſhe could to entertaine her withall, and among other courtly recreations, they daily vſed hawking and hunting. It ſo came to paſſe, that theſe princeſſes and Gallants of the Solemne Court, now ryding to their pleaſure, the knights delighting the Ladyes in beholding the braue paſſages of their horſes, and their ſwiftneſſe in courſe like the wings of Pegaſus; after the choyſe of many places of game, they came by the Fountaine where Palmerin lay a ſleepe in ſecurity, as he neither heard their hollowing nor pollicing, which when one of the Squyres perceiued intending to make all the other laugh, he ſtaggers from his horſe, and running to him thought to haue burſt him. By ſuppoſe this Squyre was a Squyre, but I will ſpeake him, that his many words the preſent hee courſes with which laughs he made Palmerin lay a blow out of meaſure, as made him leape vp and ſtand vpon his feet. Palmerin hearing ſtarting vp and ſeeing him gone, ſaid, Now that I am awake I will ſleepe no more, but the

the

the other abashed, came to reuenge their companions fearfe
but Palmerin casting his [illegible] about his arme, layde so
bout him so lustily, as he sent fiue more after them
and any one that came neere him he layde at his feete, either
maimed or slaine outright. Archidiana marueyling at this
stratagem, as also to heare the outragious noyse of the
Moores, came riding towards them, demaunding what he
was that made such hauocke in his presence. The knights
gaue place to the Princesse, so that she came here neere to
Palmerin, who enraged like a sauage Beare in the [illegible]
made a bloudie massacre among the Moores, and (when
she beheld his braue featureth body, and hardie courage,
she perswaded herselfe that he was descended of high birth,
and if she sought not meanes to stay the tumult, it might
procure to a greater daunger, therefore (as good policie
is) she commaunded her people on paine of their liues,
to behaue themselues quiet while she vnderstood the cause
of this tumult.

Palmerin well pleased that the Princesse so fauourably,
imagined by her creeping beautie, and comely ornaments, that she was their Gouernour, inherited, falling
himselfe at her feete, offered her his seruice, protesting
she was little contenting her selfe, if whosoeuer thou be Knight or Squire, but what soeuer thou
art, seeing (of thine owne good will) thou hast thus vndone
to me, I will defend thee against all others. Palmerin told
me what he was, that against my will no [illegible]
Palmerin with reuerent obeysance, [illegible]
thanked me, and with such good countenance discouered
to be a Knight, as one [illegible] but as then spoken
ken. This done [illegible] Archidiana the Queene offered
great wrong in depriuing him of speech, for (this I will say
(blame thou whosoeuer) thou wert one of the [illegible]
pitifull men of this world, both in [illegible]
ter and bountifull. Notwithstanding [illegible]
high in their grace, being able to encounter with so many,

and defende thy ſelfe ſo worthily as thou haſt done. Then was ſhée certified by an ancient Knight, that one of the ſquyres of her Chamber ſmote him as he lay a ſleepe, which he reuenged in ſuch ſort as ſhe had ſéene. Truſt me (quoth ſhe) the ſtranger man did as well deſerued him, wherefore, in reſpect of his ciuilitie, and that he can ſo well correct the ouerboldneſſe of ſwles: I will intertaine him as one of our Court, forbidding any to wrong him, as they tender my fauour, and their owne liues. So commaunding buriall for the dead, and prouiſion for the wounded, ſhee went to her Pauilion, which was not farre off, willing Palmerin (by ſignes) to go with her, deliuering him his ſword again, and ſaying he ſhould be her ſeruant. Humble graces did Palmerin render her withall, and in ſigne of his obeyſance offred to kiſſe her ſéete, but ſhe would not permit him, and taking him vp by the hand, ſayd: Looke that hereafter thou go not from me, whereto by ſignes he conſented, knowing that by her meanes he ſhould be ſafely protected.

Whiles theſe courteſies on eyther ſide endured, the Princeſſe Ardemia and the other Ladies entered the Pauilion: but Palmerin earneſtly beholding Ardemia, was amazed at her wonderfull beautie, imagining that ſhée matched or ſurmounted his Ladie Polyarda, ſo that breathing forth a vehement ſigh, he could hardly withholde himſelfe from ſpeaking. The Ladies being couered for their hunting banquet, very choyce victuales were ſerued in on great plates of Golde, garniſhed with verie precious and coſtlie ſtones, which cauſed Palmerin to marueil not a little, whom the Princeſſe ſeeing to ſad, ſayde: What how my friend? doeſt thou not thinke thy ſelfe ſafe in my preſence? Beleeue me on my word. Many one ſhall preſently die the death. So cauſing him to ſit by her at the Table, intreated him ſo well, as he had beene one of the cheefeſt Barons in her Fathers court. The Ladies withdrawne, the Hunters had raiſed a Hare, which was ſo narrowly purſued by the Hounds, as to ſaue her life, ſhe ranne into the

Princeſſe

Princesse Vanition, but the Greyhounde was so spedie of pace, as he caught her in the presence of Alchidiana, who with her owne handes tooke her from the Dogge, and gaue her in keping to one of her Pages. By this tyme it drewe towards night, wherfore each one mounting on their Palfrayes, set forwarde to the Cittie: the two Princesses hauing no other talke all the way, but of the singuler behauiour of the dumbe knight. They riding faire and easily, because Palmerin trauayled by them on foote, Ardemia beholding his goodly shape, demaunded of him if he were a Knight, which he by signes made knowne vnto her, whereof Alchidiana verie ioyfull, sayde, that she would present him to the Soldane her father, and for this cause, the more she beheld him, the greater pleasure she conceyued in him. Being nowe come to the Gates of Calpha, there stood manie Knights readie with lighted Torches, to conduct the Ladies and their traine to the Pallace, which was so rare and sumptuously edifyed, as Palmerin was amazed to see such royaltie.

All the way Alchidiana led the dumbe knight by her side, giuing him her hand to alight from her Palfray, which he did with exceeding reuerence, and nothing discontented with his office: but manie Kings and Princes there present, murmured thereat, thinking him not worthie to come so neere her, nor might he so be suffered, but that the Princesse somewhat enamoured of him, would suffer none to contrarie her pleasure: and leaned on his arme all the while she went vppe the stayres of the Pallace, to giue the good euen to the Soldane, who stayed his Daughters returne in the great hall, still leaned she on Palmerin, till she came to her Father, who satte in a magnificent Chaire of estate, hauing the resemblaunce of the firmament ouer his heade, (after the Turkish maner) so garnished with Rubies and Dyamonds, which with the lights of the Torches shined most gloriously: whereat Palmerin wondered, conducting the Princesse with so braue gesture, as many reputed him

ſome noble perſon, and other (enuiouſly) thought the worſt of him.

The Soldane, who loued his Daughter, as you haue heard before, arose from his Chayre to welcome her home, demaunding what ſport ſhée had on hunting, and if ſhée had brought any venison home with her: Certes my Lord, quoth ſhe, we haue had better fortune then you thinke on: but before I declare the manner thereof to you, will it pleaſe you to giue me what I haue found this day? The Soldane, not able to denie his Daughter any thing, liberally graunted her requeſt. A thouſande thankes good Father, quoth ſhée: this dumbe Knight hath your Maieſtie giuen me, who (in his owne defence) hath this day ſlaine certaine of your Knights, and hereof you may aſſure your ſelfe, that hee is one of the moſt hardy Gentlemen that euer came into theſe partes. Séeing it is your requeſt Daughter, quoth hé, I could bé well contented to graunt it, but how ſhall I anſwere the Frendes of the murthered, to whom I haue alreadie promiſed, that for his offence he ſhall be deliuered to the Lions? So, which of theſe graunts ought beſt to bé kept: yours béeing my Daughter, wherein nature ruleth, or theirs béeing my Subiects, which the Lawe commaundeth? I may not be lodge herein, ſayde the Princeſſe, notwithſtanding, me thinkes (vnder your highneſſe correction) that you haue béene but hardly counſelled, to giue a ſentence ſo cruell, hauing not heard or ſéene the partie. And albeit hée were guiltie of blame, as hee is not, yet before his condemnation, hée ought to bé heard howe hée could cléere himſelfe: but if hée muſt die, I hauing aſſured him life, and taken him into my defence: the diſgrace is ſo great to mé, as mine honour muſt remaine for euer condemned. And you my Lord and Father, whoſe authoritie may diſcharge me of this reproch, if you refuſe now to aſſiſt me, the griefe hereof will bée my death. Whoſe words ſhe ſpake with ſuch affection, and ſo beautie weeping, as would haue moued a ſtony heart to pittie her: wherefore Mandeuus touched with

naturall

naturall remorse, sayd: You shall perceyue Daughter what I haue deuised, to the ende my worde may not bee impeached. He shall be put into the Lyons Denne, and suddenly taken out againe, by this meane I shall keepe my promise to his accusers, and satisfie your earnest desire. And the better to content you herein, his enemies shall bee perswaded that he escaped the Lions with life, and then will I giue him safetie thorow all my dominions. The Princesse fearing the bloodthirstie desire of the Lions, could not so content her selfe, which Palmerin perceyuing, that the Father and daughter thus contended for him, fell downe on his knee before the Soldane, making signes that hee should accomplish his promise, for hee feared not the daunger of his life. Maulicus marualling hereat, perswaded his daughter that being so hardie, hee might escape: therefore to content her selfe, for things should bee handled in such sort, as the Knight should no way be endangered. These words somewhat contented the Princesse, causing Palmerin to be conducted to his chamber, charging him that was appointed to attend on him, to see that he were very honourably vsed, and in the morning to bring him againe before her father. The Soldane and his Knights spent all that euening in diuerse iudgements on the dumbe Knight, each one being glad of the Soldanes sentence: but Alchidiana was so pensiue (considering the dangerous hazard he should passe, as she went to her Chamber, refusing all sustenaunce, and spending the time in sorrowes complaints, desiring rather her owne death, then the dumbe knight should be any way harmed.

Chap. V.

How Palmerin is put into the Denne among the Lions and Leopards, and hauing killed three of them, eſcaped valiantly.

PAlmerin beeing brought to his Chamber, which was one of the moſt ſumptuous in all the Pallace, according as the Princeſſe had appointed, he made ſigne to the Gentleman that attended on him, to withdrawe himſelfe, for he was accuſtomed to bee alone in his chamber, which he immediatly did, being loath to offend him. Palmerin beeing alone by himſelfe, gaue thanks to the God of heauen, who in midſt of his miſfortunes, cauſed ſuch a gracious Ladie to fauour him ſo kindly, as defended his life when hee was in daunger, and by whoſe meanes hée conceyued good hope to eſcape his enemies handes, and to returne ſafely toward Allemaigne. His meditations ended, he betooke himſelfe to reſt, and in the morning Linus the Gentleman that had him in charge, came and preſented him before the Soldane, who commaunded him to bée carryed preſently to the Lions. Alchidiana vnderſtanding that the dumbe Knight was with her Father, ſent him a rich Mantle of ſcarlet, deſiring him to weare it for her ſake: which hee putting about him, went frankely with his Keeper to the Lions Denne, where the doore beeing opened, hée boldly entered, deſiring God to aſſiſt him in this perill. Palmerin being in the Denne, becauſe none of the Lions ſhould get forth to hurt any other, howe euer

God

God disposed of him, made fast the doore after him, and with his swoorde drawne, & his Mantle wrapped about his arme, went to see how the beasts would deale with him. The Lions comming about him, smelling on his cloathes would not touch him: but (as it were knowing the blood royall) lay downe at his fete and licked him, and afterward went to their places againe. But there were among them three Leopards, that furiously came and assayled him, the foremost whereof hee paunched with his Swoorde, that hee was able to do no more harme. The other two, although they had torne his Mantle, and put him in verie great daunger, as they that looked in at the windowes and creuises perceyued, yet to their no little admiration, in the end hee slue them both, and so went forth of the Denne againe, to whom Linus came, and louingly taking him by the hand, brought him to the Soldane, to whom hee discoursed his fight with the Leopardes, and howe gentle the Lions had beene to him.

The Soldane greatly astonished hereat, made more estimation of him then hee did before, and because the Lions refused to touch him, reputed him of royall parentage. Whereupon he sent for his Daughter, praying her to intreate him not as a Knight, but as a noble and vertuous Prince, considering his behauiour so well deserued. The Princesse entertayned him very graciously, and hearing the successe of his happy fortune, spake thus in the hearing of them all. Because euery one shall know, Sir knight, how much I honour your good gifts, I will cause my Father so well to loue you, as hee shall repent himselfe a thousande tymes of the daunger hee put you to: and so verie louingly embracing him, desired pardon on her own behalfe, because she suffered him to be thrust to the Lions. Palmerin in signe of attonement, & that hee was nothing displeased, kissed her hand, and sitting downe in a Chaire by her, beheld Ardemia, who resembled his Mistresse so equall in beautie, and could not holde his eye from her, so that hee conceiued such

pleaſure in his regard, as he iudged it ſuſtenance enough to maintaine life. But ſhe that was ignorant of the cauſe, preſumed that he loued her, wherfore thencefoorward, ſhe began ſo amorouſly to affect him, as ſhee enioyed no reſt but in his preſence. Thus were theſe two Ladies Alchidiana and Ardemia touched with one diſeaſe, and that ſo ſharpely to the quicke, that the leaſt torment they endured (ſeeing hee could neither ſpeake nor vnderſtand their language) was worſe to them then death. And ſo it fell out, that each of them thinking her ſelfe beſt beloued: concealed her thoughts from the other, and would in no caſe be reputed amorous, leaſt ſo her deſires ſhould be diſcouered. Alchidiana for arguments of her loue, gaue him horſes, eſquires, ſeruants, and pages, ſo that the greateſt Prince in the Court was no better equipped then he: and in this fortune ſuch was his mind, that for all the honor and fauour the Soldane and his daughter bare him, he did not outreach himſelfe in behauiour, but was benigne and full of courteſie, that each one loued and deſired to be familiar with him. And if any enterprize of Iouſtes or Tourneyes were in hand, Palmerin was the formoſt in the field, and carried the prize away from all whatſoeuer, which incited Maulicus to loue him in ſuch ſort, that he entertained him into ſuch ſpeciall credite, as he would neuer reſolue on any matter of importance, without his ſhew of good liking. And albeit the Princes of the Court ſhewed him good countenance, yet Enuy (that neuer can reſt in ambitious hearts) cauſed them in the ende to raiſe ſlaunder againſt him: which Palmerin perceiued, but being vnable to remedie, awaited conuenient time for his departure, notwithſtanding the earneſt affection Alchidiana bare him. He knew likewiſe ſo well to diſguiſe his matters, that ſo often as the Princeſſe would hold him in talke, he ſtill feigned not to vnderſtand her: which made her iealous towards Ardemia her Cozin, who by Alchidianaes iniuries and Palmerins refuſall of her loue, loſt her life, as you ſhall read in the chapters folowing.

CHAP.

Chap. VI.

How the Prince Maurice sent his Ambassadors to the Soldane, to desire safe conduct for his comming to the Court: to trie if he could find any Knight there, able to deliuer him of an extreame trouble that hee dured by enchauntment.

During the time that Palmerin was thus estæmed and beloued in the Court of the great Monarch of Assiria, vpon a Sunday after dinner, as the Soldane was in the great Hall conferring with his Daughter, and many other great Princes and Lordes present: there entred a Moore knight armed, except his Helmet and Gauntlets, which were carried after him by two Squires, and making his solemne reuerence, humbled himselfe at Maulicus feete, saying. Most high and redoubted Monarch, my soueraigne Lord Maurice, sworne Prince of whole Palmeria, kisseth your highnesse hand, sending to require your gracious safe conduct, that himselfe may come to your Court, to trie among all your knights, if there bee any one so loyal and valiant, as can deliuer him from a torment he endures, the most cruell and straunge that euer was heard of, and happened to him in this sort.

The King of Palmeria, great gouernour of the Moores, and father to my Lord, being vnable (through extreme age) to weilde the gouernment of his Realme, gaue the administration thereof, and made his Lieutenant generall,

my

my Lord Maurice, a Knight so hardy and puissant as any of his time, and so renowned for his beautie, sagacitie, and braue lineaments of body, as there is none of the Kings of Iudea, Egypt, Ethiopia, and neighbour Countreyes round about, but gladly desire his attaunce and friendshippe. So that many haue sent their Ambassadours to him, presenting their Daughters and Kingdomes to him, the greater part whereof he hath hitherto refused, excusing himselfe by his fathers age and his owne youth. But as often times it happeneth, Fortune enemie to all good endeuours, not suffering him to remaine in quiet, permitted that the Quéne of Tharsus, the fayrest of the Orientall parts, a young Widdow and rich, as is very well knowne, after shee had sent him many presents of incomparable value, intreated him to come and sée her, shadowing in this message, the great desire shée had to match with him. The Prince being benigne and courteous, would not denie her, but in short time after iourneyed to her. The Quéne entertaining him with great royaltie, and séeing in him farre more gracious and beautifull gifts then before she heard reported: was so surprised with loue, as in stéede of looking to be woed, her selfe was constrained to demaund, knowing so well to declare her desirous and affectionate passions, as the Prince moued with amorous pittie, granted what she requested, without any further condition or promise, presuming on himselfe, in respect of her great and fauourable entertainment, that hee would not leaue her for any other. But herein was she deceiued, for the yong Prince hauing staied with her tenne or twelue dayes, desired leaue to departe, saying that hée had receiued Letters from his Father, which commaunded his spœdy returne home againe, promising her, (if so his father consented) to take her in marriage, and that with such expedition as might bée. The Quœne somewhat contented with this answere, thinking hee would performe what hœ promised, let him depart. He being come home into his owne Countrey, forgot his loue to his newe

Frœnd,

Frend, and by his Fathers commaundement, marryed with a yong Princesse, Daughter to the King Lycomedes. The Quene hearing these newes, was almost dead with conceit of greefe, and conceiued such hatred against my Lord Maurice, as she determinded to be reuenged on him, whatsoeuer came after. And the better to compasse her intent, shee sent to search out one of her knights, a learned Magitian, promising him, if he would help her to be reuenged on him that so deceiued her, shee would make him one of the cheefest in her Realme. The Magitian, who euermore was desirous to please her, promised her to worke such a deuise, that Maurice should endure such cruel torments, as her selfe should be constrayned to pittie him. And to accomplish this practise, hee onely desired the King her Fathers Crowne, which was one of the richest in the whole world: which Crowne he coniured in such sort, as the diuell himself could not imagine the like, and comming therwith to the Quene, said.

Madame, you must sende this Crowne to the Prince of Palmeria, desiring him for your sake hee will weare it on his head, in the cheefest affayres of his estate, which hee immediatly will accomplish: but this I dare assure you, that hereby hee shall suffer so many vexations, as hee would endure a thousand deaths if hee could possible, to be deliuered from this torment, which he neuer shall be till the most loyall louer in the world take it from his head. The Quene ioyfull hereof as could be, sent the Crowne to the prince, who receiued it thankfully, and beholding it sumptuous, sodainely put it on his head: but presently flew out of his head such a flame of fire, as it had beene the blaze that commeth from a discharged Cannon. Then called hee for ayde and succour, making the greatest lamentations that euer were heard, but all was to no ende, for no Knight or Lady there could do him any good, and so all the whole day hee remained in this cruell martirdome, burning aliue, yet not perishing, resembling the Salamander in the extreame

fire.

ſire. When his people ſaw that they could procure him no eaſe, they ſent two of the greateſt Lords of the Realme to the Quéene, who humbly intreated her to pittie the Prince, and to recompence the fault he had committed, hée ſhould take her to his Wife, and endow her with thoſe honourable poſſeſſions belonging to him. The Quéene entertained them very nobly, and after ſhe had vnderſtood their meſſage, anſwered.

My Lords, the marriage betwéene your maiſter and me, is intollerable, and no way can hée nowe contract himſelfe againe, for I remembring his diſloyaltie, and hée the torments hée ſuffers by my meanes, it were impoſſible that wée ſhould louingly liue togither, therefore in this matter you ſhall excuſe me. And let him know, that ſéeing hée was ſo preſumptuous contrarie to his faith and promiſe, to refuſe me for his Wife, I now ſo much diſdain and contemne him, as my heart by no meanes can be induced to loue him. And no other remedie is there for his torments, but that hée ſéeke through Aſia, Europe, and Affrica, a louer ſo perfect, who by his loyaltie may ceaſe the paines he ſuffers for trecherie and treaſon. With this ſhort anſwere depart my Countrey, for your Maiſter is ſo worthie of fauour, as for his ſake I hate his people.

The Ambaſſadours marualling at this fatall deſtenie, returned to their Lord, to whom they reported the Quéenes anſwere, and what remained to eaſe his affliction, which more and more encreaſed his gréefe: wherefore ſéeing what he was enioyned to do, the next day hée left the Court, entending not to ſtay a day in any place, till he ſhould finde a knight ſo vertuous and loyall. Thus hath he trauailed Ethiopia, India, Tartaria, & the greater part of your realmes, but as yet hee hath founde none to remedie his misfortune: but if any other diſloyall knight in triall touch the crowne, his vexations are far more greater then before. For this cauſe moſt mighty Lord, hauing heard the great fame of valiant knights in your Court, eſpeciall of a ſtranger

knight

knight being vnarmde, who came hither but of very late time: he desires your maiestie, his assurance graunted, to suffer him trie his fortune heere, if in your presence he may finde any helpe, or else to seeke further in other Princes Courts. These are the principall points of my charge, may it please your highnesse to consider of mine answere, how I shall returne and certifie my Maister, that you may likewise see an aduenture marueilous.

Chap. VII.

How the Prince Maurice came to the Court of the Soldane of Babilon, where he was deliuered of his burning Crowne that tormented him, by the loyaltie of Palmerin.

MAulicus wondering at this strange discourse, thus answered the Page. You may (my friend) returne to your maister when you please, and say from vs, that hee shall be welcome to our court, with as safe assurance as our owne person, as well for his valour and vertue, which I haue heard greatly esteemed, as for that wee are desirous to see so strange an aduenture ended in our presence. And wee cannot sufficiently marueile, howe he could be so forgetfull of himselfe, that after his faith so broken, hee could extinguish her remembrance that loued him so dearely: but heerein may wee beholde the soueraignitie of constant louers. Go then and certifie him of our pleasures, and that we pray our gods his comming may be in such an houre, as hee may depart hence

heere to his owne content: yet am I greatly afraid, that he ſhall not finde any Knight in our Court, but hath either forfaited or failed towardes his Lady. The Moore kiſſing the Soldans hand, and humbly taking his leaue, returned to his Lord, leauing the Soldane and his Knights, admyring this rare accident, ſo that hee exhorted euery one to aduenture his fortune at this Crowne, to giue the greater aſſurance to their Ladies, of their loyall fidelitie: but many of them were herein deceiued, for in ſtéede of prayſe and glorie, they receiued ſhame and reproch, as you ſhall ſée héereafter.

The Prince aduertiſed of the Soldans aunſwere, in hope of good ſucceſſe ſette forwarde on his iourney, and the next day following héé came to Calpha, where Maulicus cauſed him to be honourably lodged in the Cittie, becauſe that day he would not come to the Pallace. On the morrow, after that Lethea, wife to the Soldane, her Daughter Alchidiana, the fayre Ardemia, with many other Ladies and Princes were come into the Hall, to ſée the tryall of this noueltie: Prince Maurice vnderſtanding how the Soldane with all his courtly aſſiſtants, ſtayed his comming, went to the Pallace accompanied with a hundred Knights, all clad in mourning blacke, in ſigne of their continuall ſorrow for their Princes miſfortune. There he was very royally entertained, the Soldane cauſing him to ſitte by him in a ſumptuous Chayre of eſtate, of purpoſe prouided, and after many welcomes and kinde gratulations, the Soldane demaunded how hee felt himſelfe, and whether hee ſuſtayned any eaſe of his torment. Ah my Lord quoth the Prince, I cannot expreſſe to your maieſtie the paine which I féele, being a thouſand times worſe to mée then death, and euerie houre enforcing mée to deſpayre, but I muſt endure it with what patience I can, till incomparable loyaltie diſcharge mee of this burthen. With theſe words he lamented exceedingly, ſo that each one was moued to pittie him, for ſuch a burning flame continued in the Crowne, and ſo furious heate

pro-

proceeded from his mouth, as sette the Hall in marueilous hotnesse, yet consumed hee nothing at all, but in euery part was as formall as any other man. Beloued Cousin, said the Soldane, for my selfe I will not enterprise to meddle with your Crowne, for I do not imagine my selfe so fauoured of loue, as I can finish that wherein so many haue sayled, nor would I willingly seeke mine owne dishonour, being farre vnable to profit you: as for my knights, let them make proofe of their loyalty and spare not, and see which of them can winne the honour of this aduenture. Hereupon Guilharan, brother to faire Ardemia first entred, and comming to the enchaunted Prince, sayd. Trust me my Lord, since I began my profession in loue, I neuer committed any preiudice to my Lady, therefore will I trie to end this enchauntment.

Then earnestly beholding Alchidiana, for whose loue onely hee came to Court, hee approched to the enchaunted Prince, and put to hand as he could at the Crowne, but hee crying aloude, sayde. For Gods sake Sir knight striue no longer, for if by disloyaltie I could be cured, I see you are able to giue me remedie. Alas, in all my life I neuer felt like paine by any Knight that tried his fortune, great needs haue you to doe seuere pennance, if you will bee fauoured by loue any more, towards whom you haue so haynously offended, for my infirmitie may not be holpen, but by loyaltie, firmnesse, faithfull pursuit, constant perseuerance, and such other honoured vertues esteemed in loue, whereof you haue not the least particular. Thus retyred this newe louer, more ashamed then a Virgin to bee seene lightly disposed, and so sate downe among the other knights, whose fortune proued as effectuall as the first, to their owne disgrace, and great torment of the languishing Prince. The Kings and auncient Princes seeing the young knights could do no good, put themselues in deuoire, each one conceiuing so well of himselfe, as if their fortune serued to ende the aduenture, their peeres should carrie the honour,

and

and they be remoued for euer by their Ladies: but their vaine conceit and deſire to accomplish an impoſsibilitie, much abuſed them, ſo that they shamefully remained fruſtrate in their intents, and the paines of the enchaunted Prince greatly augmented, who thus ſpake to them. Truly my Lords, it is the cuſtome of your auncient and audacious opinions, to extoll your loues and valour: but for any thing I ſee, your olde peeres haue much leſſe merited amorous mercy, then the indiſcreete and inconſtant dealing of theſe yong Princes. Then ſeeing that no other anſwere to proue his vertue, deliuering many greeuous ſighs, he ſayde. Vnhappie wretch that I am, howe much more had it beene to my eaſe and benefit, if the Queene of Tharſus (whome I ſo heynouſly offended) would haue contented her ſelfe in her reuenge, to cauſe me be peecemeale torne in ſunder, then thus haue deliuered me into this vnſupportable vexation, the ende whereof will neuer be accomplished, ſeeing that in this honourable Court of my Lord the Soldane, I finde none can giue me comfort.

Palmerin hearing the lamentation of this amorous martyr, fell into a profound imagination, and after he had long regarded Ardemia, whoſe liuely reſembled his Miſtreſſe Polynarda, ſaide within himſelfe. Ah ſweet Madame and onely miſtreſſe, vouchſafe at this inſtant to aſſiſt mee, for by your ſuccour I ſhall nowe make proofe of my faithfull and inuiolable loyaltie, which neuer in ought offended you, if not at Dutace in affecting Laurana, whom I ſimplie thought to be the Lady, who was ſo often promiſed in my viſions. But ſeeing my thoughts neuer tended to effects, as alſo that I was deceiued in your name: that ought not be imputed to me for any treſpaſſe, and therefore diuine Goddeſſe bee fauourable to me. Then ſurpriſed with ſodaine ioy, he began againe earneſtly to beholde the Princeſſe Ardemia, who imagining her ſelfe onely beloued of him, caſt forth a bitter ſigh, turning to Alchidiana, ſaide. Ah Madame and my deere Couſin, what great fault hath this

cruell

cruell Queene committed, appointing her Magique in such sorte, as loyall and faithfull Ladies maye not be suffered herein, for deliueraunce of this yong and beautifull Prince: doubtlesse hee should sooner receiue helpe by them then by Knights, for much more loyally doe they loue, then men, and are in their affections firme and constant. Alchidiana, who felt her selfe touched with this intricate furie, whereof the faire Archemia complained, suddainly coniectured, whereto her sighes and faultering speaches tended, which rayled priuate conceit, and such a vehement attaint of iealousie, as she would not answere any woorde, but feigning to smell some discontented sauour, turned her face the contrary way. Palmerin looking round about him, and seeing no one would meddle with the auenture, fell on his knee before the Soldane, craueing leaue [illegible] to trie his fortune, which he graunted, and in a [illegible] time. For thy weapes to the fight, and in such [illegible] must thou teach the, or none, that all the honor may fall to thy share. Then Palmerin hauing his eye fixed on her, who in her armes did put vppon his onely affiance, exalting his mind with an entire sighe, secretly said.

My mirrour of excellencie, although my bodye be farre distant from you, yet am I in spirit daye and night in your presence, being so confidently assured of your loue, that is no iote inferiour to mine, which heart if thought makes me thinke you present before mine. Wherefore my sole Soueraigne and Gouernesse of my life, you shall neuer receiue the honor, that by the vertue of your faithfull seruice vnto you ought to haue: for I hold my selfe to what to you, so sincere and pure, as neuer must answerable fancie selfe repaye so good deserning. When laid he hand on the burnished Steele, which he tooke from his head to rashe, as though he enchauntment at all had taken it: and then traced the bellicous heate of Maurice, and from his mouth came such dreadfull and fierce clamours, as euery one present delighted to heare them. The Prince so ioyfull as could bee for his deliuerance, assayed well

well be coniectured, prostrated himselfe at Palmerins feete, and with vnspeakable ioy thus said. Most noble and fortunate Knight, how much am I bound and indebted to thee: right happie was the howre of thy byrth, but much more happie my iourney to see thee: let my word suffise, I so far deliuer my selfe yours, as my selfe, my Subiects, my possessions, or whatsoeuer else is mine, I freely offer to your disposition. Palmerin, who euer bare the most noble minde of a Knight, was displeased that so great a Prince shoulde honour him with such reuerence, wherefore with great humilitie hee take him vppe in his armes, causing him to sit downe where before hee did: but the Soldane and all his Lords greatly amazed, not so much at his courtesie, as his gracious fortune, did him all the honour could be deuised: But he faithfull of this euergr[illegible], kneeled down before Maulicus, shewing by [illegible] that himselfe was altogether vnworthie of such honor, but his Mistresse, to whome that rich Crowne worthily appertayned, which he presenting the Soldane, kneeled downe to kisse his feete, but Maulicus would not suffer him, and taking him vp by the hand, said. Sir knight, we heartily thanke you for the great pleasure you haue done vs, promising you by the faith of a Prince, that this Crowne shalbe kept in our Treasurie, in testimonie that we had in our Court, the most loyall and honourable among all Knights. In recompence whereof, we giue you this Citie; with all the appurtenances thereto belonging; and to morrowe will we put you in possession thereof. Vnto that it pleaseth the immortall powers, and their great Prophet Mahomet, to deliuer you such, whereof you are worthie: for I sweare by their high and immortall name, we will make you the greatest in all our kingdoms. Palmerin louely gentile gesture returned his thankfulnesse, signifying that he would haue neither Cities nor castles, but that it sufficed him to be one of his knights: notwithstanding, the Prince by importunate meanes gaue him rich gifts, and by his fauor found more then fiue monethes.

CHAP.

Chap. VIII.

How the fayre Princesse Ardemia, enduring extreame passions and torments in loue, made offer of her affections to Palmerin, which he refused: wherewith the Princesse (through extreame conceit of greefe and despight) suddainly died.

HAllye may be coniectured, the great pleasure of the two Ladies, Alchidiana and Ardemia, beholding the man whome they loued as their liues, to haue the honour of the enchaunted crotone: for each of them seuerally perswaded her selfe, that he had thus aduentured in honor of her loue. And as they returned from the hall to their chamberes, Alchidiana came and tooke Palmerin by the hand, and walking on with him, thus spake. My gentle knight, how are you to bee regarded aboue all other? I know not why the Gods should deprine you of speache, except that in all things, this onelie excepted, you should be perfectly resembled to the. Oh how happie is shee, that might aduenture to make you her Seruant, doubtlesse, if in her appeare so singuler perfections, as apparantly shew themselues in you: well might it be reputed a rare contemplation, when the celestiall bodie stoode gouerning their humaine affections, hath vnited you in so amiable alliance.

The Gentlemen that attended on the Princesse, greatlie maruelled at this priuate familiaritie: but she well vnderstood in her affections, as he giuall modestie bade

now forgotten, and careleſſe of regarde, openly ſhewed her deſires. Thus were theſe two Ladies now, much more amorous of the dumbe Knight then before: ſo that they were not well, but eyther in his company, or thinking on him. Alchidiana remaining ielous of her Cozin, ſeemed not to loue her as ſhe was wont, but deuiſed all the meanes ſhee could, that ſhe might be ſent to her Fathers Court againe; yet ſhe that little made account thereof, ſought opportunitie to bewraye her loue to Palmerin, and by hap ſeeing Alchidiana in the Gallerie, conferring with two of her Ladies, ſhee entred alone into her Cozins Chamber, where ſitting downe on the bedde, ſhee compaſſed many imaginations, howe ſhe might diſcouer to the dumbe Knight, the ſecrete fire that was kindled in her breſt. So long ſhee ſtaied there, till Palmerin came, becauſe about that time hee was wont to viſite the Princeſſe Alchidiana, Ardemia ſo glad hereof as could be poſſible, ſuddainlie ſtarted vppe, and ſaluting him with more then common reuerence, taking him by the hand, and cauſing him to ſit downe by her vpon the bedde. Then enflamed with wonderfull paſſions, ſurpaſſing Paſiphaes deſire to the luſtie Bull, when ſhee mette him in the wood made by Dedalus, ſhee beheld him with ſuch a pierring countinaunce, as the leaſt glimſe whereof, was able to confounde the reaſon of the moſt conſtant perſon, as the aſpect of the Sunne in the ſigne of Leo, both the eyes of the beholders, and offoze to warme the coldeſt complexion, although it were an Eunuche himſelfe in her preſence. Then deliuering three or foure bitter ſighes, fetcht from the verye bottome of her heart, as cruell as ſtriuing pangs of death: ſhe toke a rich Diamond from her finger, and put it on Palmerins, with theſe words.

Sweete Freende, and onely comforte of my ſoule, let me intreate you to weare this as an argument of my loue, thereby to knowe, howe well you eſteeme of mee, aſſuring you, that I am ſo deuoted yours, as if you vouchſafe to beſtowe me the fauour and honour, by iourneying to the Court

of my Father with mee, I neuer will haue any Husband but you, and there shall such account be made of you, as wel beseemes a Knight so noble and vertuous. Ah diuine defence of my life, and more worthie to bee loued then I one himselfe, misdeeme not of these speeches so aduenturously vttered, by a yong Ladie and vnmaried: for the loue I beare you is such, as I am constrained (forgetting the decent regard of a bashfull Virgin, whonaturallie is shamefaste) to esteeme of you heereafter, and as is conuenable to mine estate. Then seeing the Gods, the place, the occasion, and the time, permits me to bewraye, that which I dare not otherwise manifest: haue then faire Knight some pittie on mee, and let mee enioy assurannce of grace, for which I liue in ceaseleste tormentes. With which wordes shee embraced him, and sealed so many sweete kisses on his hand, as apparantly deciphered her earnest affection.

Palmerin amazed at this strange accident, because shee was a Pagan, and contrary to him in faith, that making no answeare, but following the example of chaste Ioseph, who refused Zephira Wife to Putiphar, great priuoste to the King of Ægipt; started from her suddainlie, and moued with displeasure, departed the Chamber, thinking in himselfe, that such occasions more ouer-rule the hearts of men, then all other matters that might bee deuised, and rashly the practises of hellish Pluto. Then calling to his Ladie for assistannce, said to himselfe. Ah sweete Mistresse, succour now your seruaunt, for I rather desire a thousand deathes, then to violate the chaste honor of my loue, or to giue that fauour to this Lady which is onelye youres. Alchidiana, by chance seeing Palmerin when he entred her Chamber, and perceyuing him now to depart againe: imagined presentlie the truth of the cause, wherefore entring the garderobe in which was adioyning to her Chamber, shee closely stoop and hearde all that had passed, and at his comming forth stayed him in this maner.

Not without great cause (good Knight) diddest thou take

the

the fatall Crowne from the head of Maurice, for in thee is more firmneſſe and continencie, then is in the diſloyall Ardemia, vnchaſte deſires and villanie: but in vnfitte time did ſhee rip open her vnmaidenlike affections, for I will publiſh her ſhame to euery one, and cauſe her to be leſſe eſteemed then a knowne offender.

Palmerin fearing that in her choller ſhe would doo no leſſe then ſhe ſaid, fell on his knee before her, intreating her by ſignes to forbeare, otherwiſe it would be his death. She ſeeing him ſo faire and gracious, and thus to humble himſelfe at her feete, qualified her diſpleaſure, promiſing to keepe it in ſecret. So Palmerin withdrewe himſelfe to his Chamber, leauing the two Ladies nowe togither: but Ardemia agreened at the dumbe knights refuſall, would not reueale her wrong to Alchidiana, (who ſo ſone as Palmerin was out of hearing) thus began. Why? ſhameleſſe Ardemia, thinkeſt thou thy beautie of ſuch value, that the Knight, to whome my Father and I haue done ſo great honours, would leaue vs, and depart with thee? truſt me thou art farre from thine account: for if thou dauntſt to doo him ſuch honor in thy Fathers Courte, as his nobilitie deſerueth, it conſiſteth in my power to exalt him more in one howre, then thou canſt doo in a thouſand yeers, mightſt thou liue ſo long. I did neuer thinke that ſuch audacious and incontinent tempting a man, could any way enter thy heart: but if ſuch bee thy diſpoſition, thou oughteſt rather to abide in thy Fathers Courte, where thou maiſt haue leyſure to followe thy baſe affection, with ſome of thy varlets or youthes attending on thy Father, then to offer the occaſion heere in my Chamber. Hence, hence, forth of my preſence, for I will not keepe company with ſuch an intemperate Woman. What regard haſt thou of thy great lineage, or the place from whence thou art diſcended? Yea, what comfort will it be to me when I ſhall heare, that a Ladie, iſſued of the blood royall, ſhould bee more ſhameleſſe and impudent then a ſtrumpet, a villaine, or an high way begger?

begger? Many other such like hard speeches vsed Alchidiana, all which grieued her not so much, as to bee despised of him, whom she reputed as passionate for her loue, as shee was for his.

These high words of the Princesse, caused the Ladies attending on Ardemia to enter the Chamber, which made her then breake off, because she would not haue eyerie one knowe the matter: and they seeing their Mistresse so sad and discomforted, brought her to her owne Chamber, where on her bedde shee sorrowed so impatiently, as euery one feared she would iniurie her selfe, and faine shee would, but that their presence hindered her: therefore shee deferred it till better opportunitie. And because shee had spent the most part of her yonger yeares, in reading the workes of Poets, as wel Greekes as Arabians, she remembred the mournfull Tragedie of Biblis, which caused her to frame a Dittie, that she had translated from the Greeke poesie of Sapho, into her vulgar speech: and turning towardes her Ladies and Gentlewomen, she began in this maner.

The lamentable Dittie of Ardemia, dying for loue.

Mvse not (fayre virgins) at Ardemia,
Although her end be hard and dolorous:
For death is pleasant as mine elders say,
To any Ladie sometyme amorous.

For as the Swan in cold Meander *glide,*
By mournfull notes foretelles her speedy death:
So my complaint doth bid me to prouide,
For sweetest loue makes hast to stop my breath.

The ill that endleſſe and vnceſſantly
Torments my heart, is fayre and choyſeſt beautie:
And this vnhappie awkwarde deſtenie,
Falles to my lot through ſpotleſſe loyaltie.

For fond conceit that ouer-rulde my wit,
More wretched then fayre Biblis *maketh me:*
And the I loue more ſtonie hard is knit,
Then Caunus, *who could ken no courteſie.*

Yet Biblis *oftentimes could eaſe her heart,*
By ſweete deuiſing with her lonely freend:
But he I honor, recks not of my ſmart,
Nor will vouchſafe one gracious looke to lend.

And as her ſorrowes cheefely did ariſe,
Becauſe the ſecrets of her loue were knowne:
So I reueald, each one will me deſpiſe,
VVhich death can ſtint ere it too farre be blowne.

Vnhappie wretch, that could not this foreſee,
And be more chary of ſo choyſe a thing:
But all too late I wiſh the remedie,
Therefore my folly doth due ouerdon bring.

If loue that is eſteemde a power diuine,
Vnto his Seruaunts giue ſo ſharpe reward:
VVhat merit may vile hatred then reſigne,
Vnto his vaſſayles that his Lawes regard?

Oft haue I heard mine auncient elders say,
That such as loue not, are vntoward hie life:
Yet doth my loue imagine my decay,
And throwes my hope into whole worlds of strife.

And yet the paynes I wish for my mischaunce,
May not be valued with my present woe:
For to compare them is meere dalliaunce,
And neither sence or reason should I showe.

Life is to me lothsome and burdenous,
All pleasure seemes to mee tormenting hell:
Ah poore refused, and abused thus,
Must thou needes die for louing all too well?

O sacred Venus, patroneesse of loue,
In this distresse wilt thou not pittie me?
And thy fayre Sonne that thus his shaft did proue,
Will he forsake me in this ieopardie?

If you forsake me in this iust request,
And will not fauour what you did procure:
Giue leaue to him that bringeth all to rest,
And he will ease the torments I endure.

You fatall Sisters that haue spunne my thred,
And now thinke good it should be cut in twaine:
Fulfill the taske as you are destenied,
And let my heart abide no longer paine.

Come

Come ſweeteſt death, expected too too long,
Ende all the euils vnhappie loue begun:
If thou delay, I challenge thee of wrong,
Haſt then good death, that loue and life were done.

Her complaints thus finiſhed, ſhee commaunded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and being alone by her ſelfe, ſhee againe began to conſider, the rigorous refuſall of Palmerin, the conceit whereof greeued her ſo extreamely, as alſo the reproachfull wordes of her Cozin: that making a conſcience of her ſorrowes, and raging with extreamitie of this deſpight, brake the vaines of her heart in ſunder, and the arteries of her bodie, as the bloud iſſued forth at many places aboundantly, and therewithall in ſhort time ſhe was ſtrangled.

The next morning, her cheefeſt Lady that attended on her, and loued her exceedingly, came to the bedde ſide to ſee how ſhee fared: but finding her dead, and ſo beſmeared with her owne bloud, gaue ſuch a loude ſhrieke, as Alchidiana and her Damſelles, affrighted at the noyſe, ranne in all haſte to the Chamber. The Princeſſe knowing the cauſe of this miſchaunce, was maruellous ſorrowfull, aſſuring her ſelfe, that the wordes ſhe ſpake in her anger, occaſioned this bloudie ſtratagem. And the rumor of this miſhap was ſo ſone ſpread through the Palace, as all the Ladies, Damoſelles, Knightes, Squires, and other, came to beholde the harde fortune of Ardemia. What lamentation was made on all ſides, is not to be expreſſed: eſpecially the Ladies attendant on Ardemia, and her Brother Guillaran, who brought her with him thither: but her Gouernelle, not able to endure the burthen of her heauineſſe, without feare or dread of any, thus openly complained. Ah ſweete Princeſſe Ardemia, the flowre of beautie, howe deare haſt thou bought this precious gift: for I knowe aſſuredly, that for

this

this cause onely thy death happened: vnhappie was the houre, when thou didst leaue thy Fathers Court, to accompanie the Princesse Alchidiana. After her mones and the funerall pompe accomplished, the Soldane erected for her a most beautifull Tombe, with a sumptuous Cazonet on the toppe thereof, being vpheld by two inestimable Pillers of engrauen and guilded Alablaster, the like whereof were neuer seene, since the first King of *Greece*. Yet was hee ignorant in the cause of her death, and Palmerin, not imagining whence this inconuenience did arise, was so sorrowfull for the death of the Princesse, as day and night hee mourned for her, and at length remembring her wordes to him, and doubting his vnkindnesse to be the cause of her death, sayd within himselfe:

Alas faire Princesse, must I (at the first motion) driue thee to dispaire: had I dissembled a little, or temperized the matter, thou hadst not fallen into this extremitie, but my onely wilfull indiscretion, is cause of thy losse. O Female sexe, howe are you subiect to carnall passions: Yet needs I not wonder at this present mishappe, for from the beginning of the worlde, the Woman hath beene so suddein and voluntarie to the effect of her desires, were they good or euill, but especially in the action of loue: as neyther feare, honor, shame, torments, no nor death, could diuert her from her vndiscreete fantasies. Herof beare record thy permnestra, Myrrha, Deianira, Scylla, Phedra, Thisbe, Oenone, Phyllis, Salmacis, Hero and Dydo, whose deathes were procured onely by lauish loue. O diuine wisedome, that hast suffered me to fall into this luckelesse accident, protect mee from any further disaduantage: seeing thou hast taken her hence, who gaue some ease to mine affections, in that so liuely shee resembled my sweete Polinesse, whome I desire to serue with continuall loyaltie. I reckon perchaunce my selfe, that this loue was not accompanied with vertue, and that for my good it hath so chanced: forgette it or not then, but so enable me, as in such badde occasions I shall not

not

not from my deetie. And ſuch is my confidence in thy promiſes, as no temptation ſhall prevaile againſt me: but this captiuitie once diſcharged, I hope to direct my courſe pleaſing in thy ſight, and to performe ſuch gracious ſeruice, as thy name ſhalbe exalted and glorified for euer. So long continued he in this ſilent contemplation, as Alchidiana perceiued him, which greatlie diſpleaſed her: but fearing any way to offende Palmerin, ſhee durſt not ſaye what ſhee thought, liuing in hope, that her Coſin being dead, ſhe ſhould now compaſſe the effecte of her deſires. Ardemia enterred in her honourable Tombe, Guilharan her Brother with his traine, and the Ladies that attended on his Siſter, returned into Armenia, where great ſorrowe was made for the death of the Princeſſe, and the renowne of her beautie, blazed the report of her death through euery region.

Chap. IX

How Amarano of Nigrea, eldeſt ſon to the king of Phrygia, vnderſtanding the death of the faire Princeſſe Ardemia, who was newly promiſed him in mariage: made many grieuous lamentations for her loſſe. And how Alchidiana diſcouered her amorous affections to Palmerin.

SOone was ſpread the repoꝛte, of the ſtrange death of the Princeſſe Ardemia, ſo length it came to the hearing of Amarano, eldeſt ſonne to the king of Phrygia, the moſt hardie & redoubted knight of his eraye: as well for his great prowes and deedes of Armes, which he before that time accompliſhed in Aſia, as for his affable nature

nature, bertue and courtesie. This yong Prince, being in the King his fathers Court, and hearing commended beyond all other Ladies of the East, the faire Ardemia Daughter to the King of Armenia, at the verye sounde of the Trompe of this blazing Goddesse, and setting the newes downe for true, from her affecting speech, he became so amorous of her, as he had no content but in thinking on her. Hereupon, he sent his Ambassadours to her Father, to request her in marriage, whereto right willingly he condiscended, and nowe at the instant, when he intended to go visite her, newes came to the Court of her admirable death, which for a while was concealed from him, because each one doubted the conceit thereof would cause his death. For they knowing the love he bare her to be so vehement, as hee understanding her strange kinde of death, they thought it impossible, but it would arise to very scandalous inconveniences, yet in the ende he hearde thereof: but to sette downe heere the griefe, teares and complaints of this yong Prince, is more then I am able: but it therefore suffise you, that his sorrowes were such, as every houre his death was likewise expected. It was likewise told him, howe through the envie of Alchidiana, she dyed, and that (for certaintie) shee was one of the cheefest causes thereof: which moved him then into such an alteration, as hee swore by the great Prophet Mahomet, to revenge her injurie, so that the Soldane should for ever remember the daunger in suffering so great a treason. In conclusion, he intended to take with him, two hundred chosen Knights, all clad in mourning for the greefe of their Maister, and foure of his Brethren, Knights of great hardinesse and so well they journeied, as they came within twentie miles of the Soldans Court. But that wee may not too farre swerue from our intent, Alchidiana, (you shall (as you haue hearde) for the departure of Guilharan and his companie, from thence so about he sought all the meanes she could, to conferre with Palmerin alone at her pleasure. And labouring thus in her lamenting passions, with his com-

mon

mon to all louers, such account she made of her beautie and riches, as she imagined that Palmerin would not disdaine her: but rather would repute himselfe happy, to haue that at his pleasure, wherein so many Kings and great Lordes had beene deniyed. And in this opinion, the next time that Palmerin came to her Chamber, she beganne with him in this manner.

Now Syr Knight, what thinke you of the death of Archemia, who so falsely would haue seduced you to goe with her hence? did shee not commit great treason against mee if shee had preuailed? but right well is shee rewarded, and as I desired. Thinke then no more of her presumptuous follie, nor the ridiculous conceit of her vaine loue, which shee made her pretence, to cause you forsake my Fathers Court: where you haue receiued so many speciall honours, cheefe-lie of his Daughter, who loues you derelie, and intends to make you Lord ouer all her possessions. Beleeue me Sir Knight, if hitherto I deferred to acquaint you herewith, it was in respect I doubted her: but now shee being gone, esteeme henceforth of mee as your owne, and to begin this alliance, I honour you with all that is mine, and my selfe to be disposed at your pleasure. For my heart which is onely subiect to you, applyes it selfe to your lyking, and can with nothing but what you will commaund. How long haue I desired this happie day? howe often haue I condemned and despised my selfe, in not daring to breake the seale of my affections, which nowe I haue aduentured to your knowledge? As for that which now troubleth mee, is the want of your speech, which the Gods haue depriued you off, being enuious of your manifolde perfections. Alas my Lord, why did they not endowe thee with that benifit, that in declaring my desires, thy answeres might returne reciprocall pleasure.

Some in their loue delight themselues, with embracing, kissing, and such ceremoniall behauiour: as for mee, amorous, priuate and familiar conferences, I repute a chiefe

content.

content. Yet hath Loue one shaft in his Quiuer more pleasing then all these, being the onely argument of each others resolution: in respect whereof, I commit my honour into your protection, prizing, esteeming, and chusing you aboue all men in the world beside. Palmerin exceedingly abashed at these vnseemelye speeches, knewe what signes to make for his answere, and hauing recourse to his onely comforter, lifting his eyes to heauen, thus priuately inuocated. My God, deliuer me from this enemie, and suffer me not to fall in consent to this temptation, for I thinke her a Deuill incarnate, and sent to deceiue me. Impossible is it that a maiden, by nature modest and bashfull, would let slip such effronted words and audacious. The conceit hereof so vexed and offended him, as the Princesse feared he would haue dyed: not with conceit that like hap might come to Alchidiana, as did to Ardemia, but because he should so wickedly sin against his owne soule, and falsefie his loue to his sweetest Mistresse. Yet knowing that this sadnesse would not satisfie the Princesse, he feigned to sowne, his colour changing in such sort, as one would haue iudged him past recouerie. Alchidiana was so grieued hereat, as shee could not imagine what to saye: but seeing that Palmerin seemed not to vnderstand her, and before had by signes still reuealed his meaning, saide. By our great God, it may well bee said, that this man is a huge lumpe of flesh, which the deuill hath enchaunted to torment me withall, or else some other shadowe and resemblaunce: for he refuseth what all men desire, yea, and often despayre, because they cannot attaine it. But fearing least her ends would imitate her Cozins, or that the dumbe Knight should die in her presence, shee durst presume no further: but threwe her selfe downe vppon a Pallet, not able to speake her stomacke was so enraged. Which Palmerin perceiuing, arose out of his feigned traunce, and giuing a great sighe, departed the Chamber, and went to his owne. The Princesse seeing him gone, began to weepe and lament very greeuously, and in midst of

her

her melancholy, fell into these speaches. You Gods, how can you suffer one so contrary to nature, as is this dumbe knight, to liue among men? Can you behold that he whom I deliuered frō death, brought into ỹ grace of my father, and to whom I haue done more honour then had hee beene mine owne Brother, will not regarde me: but against all reason, disdaineth, refuseth, maketh no reckoning of my dolours, and setteth at nought my earnest intreaties? Ah vndiscreete and careleste Girle, thy folly at this time to much ouerruled thee, that knowing thine owne estate and high linage, wouldest submit thy selfe to loue one vnknowne to thee, and of whom thou canst haue no answere, more then of a senceless stocke or stone. If I can now learne to hate thee, it will be some comfort to me: but the more he mindeth mee, the more am I deuoted to his loue. Then againe she contrayed her selfe in this sort. Yet seeing it is so, ingratefull wretch that thou art, I will cause thee (ere it be long) torepent thy follanie. In this anger she continued all the day, not comming forth of her Chamber, intending thereafter vtterly to despise him: but the first time she saw him againe, she reputed him so louely, faire and gracious, that (to vse) thee could not wish him any harme, but loued him much better then before. Yet to couer her owne inconstancie, shee sent him no more presents, nor did him such honors as she was accustomed, which Palmerin well perceiued: but hee could dissemble it in such sort, as the Princesse hardly might decipher him. For he liued in hope of the so sweete promise which hee had made to his deceased Father, to sende his Brethren to Constantinople, in whose company hee might trauaile thither, and so escape the Warres and Deadly Iniuries.

Chap.

Chap. X.

How Amarano Prince of Nigrea, came to the Soldans court, to accuse Archidiana, as causer of the death of the fayre Princesse Ardemia her Cozin.

During the time that the Princesse Archidiana vsed meanes to loue Palmerin the Prince Amarano of Nigrea, came within a dayes iourney of the Isle of Delphi, where he remayned to refresh himselfe a little, & he sent from thence an Ambassage to Maulicus, giuing aduertisment of his comming to his Court, to accuse one that was neare about him. The Ambassadours arriued, and their message vnderstood by the Soldan, who answered, that he should haue what iustice he would demaund for to the Prince Amarano (quoth he) and the meanest of his people, shall haue reason to complaine, and to him of them that shall offende the same greatly punished. Altogether the answere was the Soldane at those tymes, considering the distaunce betweene Delphi and Nigrea, could not (as he supposed) that some euill disposed the Prince more his aduersary: Notwithstanding (quoth he to the Ambassadours) that your Lorde may stande in no doubt of treason, you shall haue our safe conduct to giue him safe passage, presently be proclaimed throughout the Citie, by sound of Trumpet, the safe comming of the Prince into his Realme. Those Ambassadours returned with their answere to the Prince, who vpon all these things came to the Citie, and there presented himselfe before the Court, and before the

the Princeſſe Ardemia, and if hée made ſuch lamentations, when hée but heard of her death, what iudgement may bée ſet downe of his moanes, béing nowe at the Sepulchre of his beſt beloued. Ah inconſtant Fortune, quoth hée, why wouldeſt thou not permit mée to ſée her liuing? Ah Ardemia, accompliſhed with admirable beautie, great was her ſinne, who enuying thy perfections, procured thy cruell death: yet this is my comfort, that I ſhall come time inough to reuenge thy vnſerued mishap, and he that dare gainſay mée, with her the authour of thy tragedie, ſhall receyue ſuch condigne punishment, as ſhall remaine for euer in memorie.

These complaints deliuered with exceeding sorrowe, his Brethren perſwaded him, that ſuch behauiour beſéemed not ſo great a Prince: therefore he ſhould reſerre thoſe offices to effeminate perſons, who make a God of their ſlight paſſions, as for him, hee ſhould thinke on nothing, but his mortall reuenge. Amurano aſhamed of his owne folly, mounted on Horſeback, and came to the Walles, where hee and his Brethren entred armed, and the Prince béing a man of goodly perſonage, had ſo ſtearne and fierce a countenance, as he was generally reputed a warlie Knight, and his Brethren verie little inferiour to him. He being come into the preſence of Maulicus, ſaluted him with great reuerence, and not kiſſing his hande as the ſeruants accuſtomed, becauſe he was not his Subiect, neyther came for peace, but matter of fight and death, after ſome words, in that the ſome ſemblance of his greéfe ſomewhat impeached him, he began in the Soldane in this maner.

Mightie Lord, and redoubted Monarch of Asia, béing aſſured of the equall iuſtice which you eſtéeme to all perſons without exception, I doubt not but you will puniſh the paſſie abuſing in your Court, be his ſo hie calling neuer ſo great, who by diuerſe meanes hath ſo much diſhonoured me, for whoſe reuenge I implore your hie, in your noble pre-

tue, I haue left my Countrey, and aduentured into your presence, to accuse your Daughter Alchidiana, whom (to please you) to call before this assemblie, I will charge, that she by false and spightfull hatred, as a most cruell and disloyall Ladie, trayterously murthered her Cosin the Princesse Ardenia!! And because this villainie hath hitherto beene concealed verie secret, in respect it could not easily be verified: I am here readie to proue in open fielde, against any of your Knights that dare maintaine her cause, howe the treason before rehearsed, was committed by her: in reuenge whereof, she ought to be rewarded with sharpe and shamefull death.

The Soldane marueyling at this accusation, said. By the reuerence of all our Gods, Prince Amarano, I cannot be perswaded, that it could at anie time enter my Daughters thought, to perpetrate an offence so abhominable: but because reason commaundeth that I do iustice, I will send for her, promising you, that if she be found culpable in your accusation, she shall haue such punishment, as your selfe shall rest contented therewith. Then he commaunded two Kings to goe fetch the Princesse, who being come, satte downe by her father, her accuser not deigning to salute her, or once to moue from the place where he satte. This day had Maulicus, for the better defence of his person, caused fiue hundred armed Knights to attend on him, the greater part whereof (seeing the pride of the Prince of Nigrea) would furiously haue runne vpon him, saying, that he should repent his follie: but the Soldane offended therat, caused a Herauld presently to proclayme, that on paine of death, no one should harme or offende the Prince, nor anie in his companie, and whosoeuer did otherwise, should presentlie die for breaking his commaundement: then framing his speeches to the Prince, sayde. Amarano, now must thou behold my Daughter before thee: disburden the greefe of thy minde to her, and iustice shall be done thee to thine owne desire. Imagine, quoth the Prince, that such as

knowe you Madame Alchidiana, will not a little marualle, ſeeing you accompliſhed with ſuch gracious beautie, that you ſhould ſo farre forget your ſelfe, as to commit treaſon. But becauſe a matter ſo vnlikely, demaundeth as hard a proofe, I will auerre with mine owne perſon in Combat, againſt any one that dare ſupport your quarell, that you are guiltie in the accuſation alreadie alleaged, and principall cauſe of the death of the Armiman Princeſſe your Cozin. To reuenge ſuch famous iniorie, I haue forſaken my countrey, trauelling night and day, and haue preſented my accuſation before your Father, with this condition: that if your Knight ſhall bee vanquiſhed, you are to bee puniſhed as a cauſe of ſuch weight requireth. If it be my fortune to bee foyled, and your Champion victor, I ſhall yelde my ſelfe as conquered, and demaund no better recompence, for it can not greeue mee to remaine with her bodie, whoſe derie remembraunce keepeth me aliue: this ſaid, he went and ſatte downe againe. The Soldane who was a man of great wiſdome, and well conſidering the matter, ſeeing the accuſer perſiſt ſo confidently in his woordes, knew not what to anſwere. Yet as a vertuous Prince, he ſpake to his Daughter in this maner. Alchidiana, you haue heard the ſpeeches of the Prince, aduiſe your ſelfe well of your anſwere: for which of you both ſhall be found attainted in the cryme, be it Leſe Maieſtatis, or other kinde of treaſon, ſhall be puniſhed as the cauſe requireth.

Chap.

Chap. XI.

Howe Palmerin seeing that none of the Soldans Knights would aduenture for Alchidiana against Amarano, enterprised himself her cause in combat. And how the Queene of Tharsus sent him a sumptuous helmet.

ALchidiana hauing heard the accusation of Amarano, and that he had spoken so slanderously of her in the presence of the Soldans: incensed with marualous anger and disdaine, returned him this answere. Amarano the most rash and vnaduised Knight that euer I sawe, I wonder howe thy folly could make thee so audacious, to come and accuse me of treason (against all truth) before my Father and his Nobilitie. But thy speeches well noted and considered, shew nothing but careless youth, arrogancy, and to vainglorious conceit: chiefly in this, that thou armed cap a pe, and accompanied with so many well appointed Knights, commest in this sort to molest a poore maiden, who neuer to thee or thine committed any offence, but all seruiceable honour, especially to her, on whose behalfe thou offerest the combat. As for the valour thou reputest in thy selfe, that maiest which this slaunder doth encourage thee withall, concerning thy hardinesse and resolution of heart, thou oughtest rather oppose against a Knight able to answere thee, then a sely Virgin, who hath no weapon but her honour wherewith to defende her selfe. I confesse I am a Ladie, but not traiterous or false,

as thou auoucheſt, yet of ſo noble courage, aſwere I of thy ſere, thou neuer ſhouldeſt depart this Hall, before I had that conſpyring head from thy ſhoulders, to witneſſe thy falſhode and maleuolent ſpirit. Notwithſtanding, as I am, ſo pleaſe my Lorde and Father, with a Kitchin cudgell I ſhall let thée know, that thou doteſt in thy ſpéeches, and againſt thine owne conſcience chargeſt me, with the murder of my Cozin. Examine thy thoughts, what likely reaſon might induce mée to ſuch an offence? If thée was fayre, thanks to our Gods, mine owne talent is ſo good, as I néede not enuie her beautie. If thée made account of her rich dowrie, I béeing ſole heyre to the Signories of the Soldane, might iudge my ſelfe farre beyond her, being deſired in mariage by many Kings and Princes, whereof I am well aſſured thée neuer had the like. I knowe not then what cauſe ſhould anie way induce me, to requeſt her death. But what néede I make ſuch proteſtations to thée? ſeeing that by ſome one of my Fathers Knights thy pride will bee abated, and I reuenged of the iniurie thou haſt done me. Amarano not anſwering her a worde, ſpake to the Soldane in this ſort.

It is not decent my Lord, that a Prince or Knight of qualitie, ſhould ſtay on the wordes of a Woman ſo little conſiderate, who more by anger then vertue, thinkes to reproue and annihilate a true accuſation. Wherefore, according to the agreement heere determined, cal for the knight that dare vndertake the quarrell of your daughter, to whom I will maniſeſt in plaine Combat, that what I haue, ſaid, is trueth: and if he bee vanquiſhed, your Daughter Alchidiana, and he ſhall bee burned togither, as the greatneſſe of the offence well deſerueth: contrariwiſe, if Fortune denie mée ſucceſſe, I will requeſt no other iuſtice, then what ſhall pleaſe you to appoynt for me. Maulicus ſeeing that well he could not denie the Prince, though to his greéfe, pronounced the ſentence, that his Daughter that day ſhould preſent a Knight, to ſuſtaine her cauſe, according to his condi-

stone alleaged. This hard prescription, made neuer a Knight willing to aduenture the Combatte, so much they feared Amarano, for the great report they heard of his prowesse, but stode all silent, as though themselues were condemned to death. Alchidiana seing the courage fayle of so manie Knights, whom shee esteemed for men of great account, knewe not to whom shee should haue recourse: and therefore ouercome with exceeding sorrowe, but that her Ladies assisted her, had twise or thrise swoones before her Father. Palmerin beholding her, and knowing that his refusall was greater cause of Ardemiaes death, then the iniurious wordes of Alchidiana, pitied her estate, and hauing before his eyes the loue she bare him, the great honours was done him for her sake, and the pusillanimitie of the Soldanes Knights, was so moued, as forgetting all daunger, and his dissembled dumbnesse, whith hitherto hee had so cunningly obserued, as though he had beene borne in that Countrey, hee thus began in the Arabian tongue. My cowardly captiues, vnworthie henceforth the name of Knights, how can your hearts endure, that a proude and presumptuous Prince shall come into your presence, falsely to accuse your Ladie and Mistresse, and not one of you daring to defende her right? By the celestiall powers, well may you be accounted pourtlesse men, and (in suffering this wrong) to be depriued of all noble titles, and to bee solde in the market as slaues and villaines. Thinke you the Prince Amarano is come hither for anie other intent, then to make tryall of his great hardinesse? Can you be destitute of reason, and so easily abused, as to thinke that the Princesse Alchidiana, whom nature hath so worthily enriched with beautie, and with whom no other may make comparison, could be prouoked to murther Ardemia, for this onely occasion, because she was faire? And you Lord Amarano, for a matter so slender, haue you enterprised to blame a Ladie so vertuous, as is the Princesse Alchidiana? I accept the Combat on her behalfe, auouching, that shamefully and with-

without reason you haue accused her, behold me ready likewise to maintaine in open fielde, that falsely and maliciously thou lyest in thy throate: in witnesse whereof, there is my gage, and I beseech your highnesse assigne vs presently Iudges, that may discerne the issue of our Combat. I take thy offer, quoth the Prince, and before the Sun set, will giue thée the payment that belongs to such a frollicke companion.

Who can now imagine the ioy of Maulicus and his Daughter, seeing him whome they reputed dumbe by nature, thus to recouer his speech? assuredly they were all so amazed, that they thought Mahomet had come from the clowdes to performe this miracle. The Soldan thus surprised with vnspeakeable comfort, forgetting the maiestie of his person, caught Palmerin in his armes, saying: Ah, good knight, howe may this bée? dreame I? or doeth but my fancie delude me with your speech? O Mahomet, forever bée thou praysed for this great grace. By the highest God, I am more ioyfull of this good fortune, then had I gained the fayrest Iland in the Mediterranean Sea. Now will I dismay no longer of my Daughters fortune, seeing that you take her quarrel in hand, and for her sake will combat with Amarano: with all my heart I graunt you the Fielde, and thinke that my Daughter will not denie it. But tell mé, noble Friend, howe you haue so happily recouered your speech. Palmerin abashed that hee had so forgotten himselfe, knewe not what excuse to make, nevertheless, seeing none there was no remedie, and that the Time thereone could not bée recalled, imagined some likely similitude of his suddaine speech, saying: I promise you, my Lord, that the certitude of your Daughters innocencie, and the great griefe I conceyued, seeing your Knightes so cowardly and faint in courage, mooued mée into such choler, as the Catarro, which of long time hath hindered my speech, dissolued it selfe, and with greater my tongue libertie to reueale, what I was enforced to bewraye before by

signes.

ſignes. And this is not a thing altogether ſtrange, for I haue herefore read in Hiſtories, that a Knight called Æglé Samien, dumbe from his byrth, when one of his companions would vſurpe the honour of a victorie, which iuſtly appertained to him, was ſo enraged and incenſed with diſpleaſure, as that very paſſion, with the helpe of the Gods, reſtored his ſpeech. And thus hath it happened to mee, for which I honour their names with immortall thanks, not ſo much for my ſpeaking, as that I may now declare my earneſt affection to do you ſeruice, and fayre Alchidiana your Daughter, to whome I am ſo greatly indebted, for the manifolde honours ſhe hath done me without deſert, as I ſhall neuer be able to recompence. Ah my noble friend quoth the Soldane, this liberall offer for the defence of my Daughters honour contents me in ſuch ſort, as both ſhee and I reſolue to requite your paines. Amarano amazed at the braue diſpoſition of Palmerin, but ſpecially at the great honour Maulicus did him, knew not well what to thinke: and did not feare and reproch ouer-rule him, I thinke hee would haue deferred the Combat till another yeere. Notwithſtanding, to couer his new opinion, he bethought him of a pretie ſubtilitie, and ſaide. I beſeech your Maieſtie to tell me of whence this dumbe Knight is, to whome our Gods (by miracle) haue reſtored ſuch pleaſing language. It is neceſſarie that I know what hee is, and whence he is deſcended, becauſe the fight being enterpriſed for two ſuch Princeſſes, as ſometime was fayre Ardemia and your Daughter preſent: if hee be not the Sonne of a King, as I am, hee may not be permitted the Field with me. Amarano, anſwered the Soldane, I know not what hee is, for till this time he hath continued dumbe in our Court: to him therefore you ſhall reſerue your demaund, for this opinion I holde of him, as hee will anſwere you nothing but truth. but if you go about to craftily to vncouer your falſe, euery one may iudge that in you which but ill becomes the mind of a noble man, that is, to bee double in your ſpeech. And

(which

(which is more) bee beeing a Knight as good as your selfe, you may not refuse him, because you demaunded the Combat against any Knight in my Court, and in your challenge made no exception. Perswade your selfe (quoth the Prince) that if hee be not the sonne of a King, hee shall not enter the Fielde against mée: therefore if hee bée none such, hée hath not to meddle with Armes in this cause, and so the fight on his behalfe is finished. If thou make such doubt, said the Soldane, aske him the question thy selfe, I hope hee is able to resolue thée in these subtill cauils and sophisticall questions.

During this contention, there entred the Hall a fayre yong Damosell, bearing betweene her handes a goodly Helmet, the richest and most beautifull that euer was seene, and falling on her knées before the Soldane, with such gracious salutations as stood with her dutie, shee demaunded which was Amarano of Nigrea, who had accused his Daughter, and which was likewise the dumbe knight, who enterprised her defence. Maulicus without any other inquisition, shewed them both to her, whereupon the Damosell arose, and comming to the Prince, thus began. Amarano of Nigrea, the Queene of Tharsus my Lady and mistresse beeing certaine that this day thou wouldest be in this place, sent mée hither to aduertise thée, that the dumbe knight is of higher linage then thou art, and such a one he is, as the greatest Lorde or Prince may not compare with him in bountie. And if thou wilt knowe the certaintie of his descent, more then any other as yet doth: shee aduiseth thée (for thy profit) to desist from the Combat whereto thou hast challenged him, in defence of thy false accusation against Alchidiana. And further shée doth admonish thée, that if thou dost not as shee commandeth, the knight late dumbe, surpassing all other in knightly chiualrie, shall ouercome thée, and thou shalt not bee able to stande against him. Damosell, quoth the Prince, you may answere your mistresse, that ouerlate shee sent me her counsell, and I am not accu-

stomed

tomed to giue credit to such sorcerers: besides, I will not lose mine honour at the simple wordes of a Woman I knowe not. And it doth not a little content mee, that this knight is such an one as hee should be, wherefore, being so sure of his bounty, I am the more desirous to Combatte with him, to make experience of his renowne: yet this I still maintaine, that what I haue spoken is true, and thereon wee will presently enter the Feeld, so please the Soldane to giue consent. Maulicus seeing the day was too farre spent, adiourned it till the day following, wherefore the Prince withdrew himselfe to his lodging, reposing great confidence in his owne strength, and after his departure, the Soldane taking Palmerin by the hand, sayde. I knowe not my Lorde how I may acknowledge the honour you do my Daughter, whom I esteeme as mine owne selfe: but if the Gods afford me life, I will deuise some rich recompence, as I hope shall returne your owne content. Then the Damosell sent from the Queene of Tharsus, approching to Palmerin, presented him the Helmet, saying. Noble and vertuous knight, the Queene saluteth you with this token of her good will, in remembraunce of your speciall loyaltie, whereby you deliuered the Prince Maurice, for which she so much remaineth yours, as you shall command her any seruice hence forward, albeit she could haue wished him longer torment, that proued so vnfaithfull to her. She likewise desireth you to weare this Helmet in fight with Amarano, for it will greatly auayle you, and more then any other: for such is her hope, that after you know this present seruice, you will not deny her one request, which one day shee intendeth to craue of you. Palmerin taking the Helmet, answered.

Fayre Virgin, most humbly thanke the Queene on my behalfe, and tell her that whersoeuer I am, she shall finde mee ready to fulfill any thing shee will commaunde. The Damosell departed, and made such speede, as in short time she came to the Queene her Mistres, whom she acquainted

with her whole message: whereof she was very joyfull, especially of Palmerins great courtesie, whom she beganne to affect very greatly.

Chap. XII.

How Palmerin entred the Combat with the Prince Armamo no of Nigrea, whom he slew, and the great honors the Soldane and his Daughter did him.

THe Princesse Alchidiana hearing the words which the Queene of Tharsus tenofell reported before the Soldane her father, seeing likewise glad that Palmerin was of so noble parentage, and so renowned in the region farre thence distant, began to love him more extreamely then ever she did before, and resolved with her selfe, that seeing for her sake hee undertake the Combate, hee bare her more secret affection then hee durst bewray, and in this opinion shee practised howe to conferre with him againe, which this day shee could not compasse, because hee was continually with the Soudane. But when Palmerin take his leaue for that night, the Princesse had a little leysure to thanke him for his honorable kindnes, and how glad she was that the Gods had restored his speech againe. Soone after she sent him a most sumptuous golden Armour, desiring him (for her sake) to weare it in the Combate: which Palmerin thankfully accepting, assured the messenger that hee would sufficiently reuenge his Ladies iniurie. In meane time, the Soldane commanded his Knight Marshall to see the field prepared

in

in readineſſe, and the ſcaffolds for the Ladies prouided, and to haue two thouſand Armed men in place, for defence of his owne perſon. All which the next morning was duely executed, the Soldane appointed two Kings, and Amarano his two brethren, Iudges of the field: who going to their tent, and all the nobilitie to their appointed places, expected nowe the iſſue of the fight. The Ladies came to their ſtanding, among whom Alchidiana ſhewed like fayre Veſper among the other ſtars, and ſome after came the two Combattants, ſo brauely and richly appointed, as nothing wanted that could be imagined, eſpecially Palmerin, before whom a King bare his Helmet, and the great Admiral of Aſſiria his Sword, and ſo brauely did her mannage his Horſe, with ſuch ſightly behauiour and gallant countenance, that each one iudged her had learned his knowledge before he came thither into Turkie: and cauſed Maulicus to perſwade himſelfe, that the victorie was deſtenied to him. In the ende, that they might the ſooner begin the Combat, the Iudges tooke their ſeates, commaunding ſilence through the field, which was peſtered with wonderfull reſort of people: and then the Heraldes fulfilling their charge, gaue liberty to the Champions to doo their deuoire. Palmerin claſping his Helmet, gaue the Spurres to his Horſe, and encountred Amarano with ſuch furie, as they were both diſmounted headlong to the grounde: but Palmerin aſhamed to be ſo ſpyed before the Soldane, recouered himſelfe quickly, and aduaunting his ſhield, gaue Amarano ſuch a ſound ſtroke on the head with his Sword, as made him ſtagger in great amazednes. Notwithſtanding, his courage and agilitie was ſuch, as well declared her had followed thoſe affaires, ſo that the fight was ſo fierce and cruell betweene them, as in many yeres before the Aſſirians ſaw not the like: for Amarano was the moſt hardie Knight in all thoſe parts, yet Palmerin aſſaulted him with ſo many ſharpe charges, as he made him forget his cunning points of defence, and with head and ſhoulders to auoide his

ſtrokes.

stroke. Which when the Princes two Brethren beheld, they were maruailously abashed, for they imagined that through the East parts, no Knight might bee founde to equall him, wherefore one of them sayde. I thought my brother would haue dispatched this companion at the first encounter, but seeing he hath held out so long: no doubt hee is more expert in Armes, then wee at first made account of him.

The two Kings were somewhat moued with these words, willing him to be silent, vntill such time as the end was determined. Amarano hearing what his brother had spoken, offended with himselfe because hee could not ouercome Palmerin, began to encourage himselfe, and albeit hee was sore wounded in many places on his body, yet he followed his intent so nobly, as taking his sword in both his handes, he stroke Palmerin so violently on the Helmet, as made him set one of his knees to the ground to saue himselfe. But hee perceiuing that if he had many such blowes, it would returne his disaduantage, intended to play double or quitte, and remembring the honour of his Mistresse Polynarda, he ranne with such valour on Amarano, as cleauing his Shelde in two peces, cut away a great parte of his arme. The Prince feeling himselfe so maimed, began to faint, hardly enduring to defende his enemies stroke, which Palmerin perceyued, and chased him about which way him listed, first here, then there, where best the Prince had hope of safetie: but all these delayes little auayled him, for Palmerin left not till he got him downe, when Amarano thinking to helpe himselfe, drewe a little pocket Dagger, and therewith thrust Palmerin vnder the short ribbes, which wound so moued him, as renting his Helmet from his head, immediatly smote it from his shoulders, Palmerin being then so glad, and well disposed, as though he had but now with entred the fielde, take the heade of his enemie by the haire, and presented it to the Princesse Alchidiana, saying. Madame, I now thinke my selfe acquites of the

promise

promise, which I made to my gracious Lord your Father, for here is that conspyring head that first accused you: bethinke your selfe therefore, if there be anything else to bee done for you, because I remaine heere ready to accomplish it.

The Princesse exceeding ioyfull for this worthie victory, answered. Truely my Lord, you haue done so much for mee, that although my Father, my selfe, and all my friendes should bequeath our liues to your seruice, yet could wee not recompence the very least of your noble courtesies, chiefely this one, surpassing all the other, and beyonde our abilities to remunerate. Yet let me intreate you to carrie the Traytours head to the Iudges, that they may censure my innocencie in this slaunder, and whether the accuser hath not receiued consigne punishment. Which he did, and threw the head before the Princes brethren, whose greefe exceeded measure for their brothers ill fortune, and taking vppe the head with the body likewise, they caused it to bee honorably conueied forth of the fielde. Immediatly was Palmerins Horse brought him, whereon he mounted, and was conducted with great pompe by the two Kings that were the Iudges, and other mightie Princes, as well Califfes, Agaz, as Taborlanes, to the gate of the Pallace, where the Soldane (to doo him the greater honour) attended in person his comming, the like hee neuer did before to any King or Prince, how mightie soeuer hee was, and therefore his Subiects marueiled not a little hereat. Palmerin would haue done him reuerence on his knee, but he would not suffer him, for taking him in his armes, he thus sayd. For euer (gentle Knight) be the honour of thy victorie against our enemie, and vs false accuser of our Daughter, for which I account my life to bound to thee, that all the dignities and riches I am able to giue thee, may not countervaile thy vnspeakeable deserts therefore I will remaine so much at thy disposition, as I and mine shall be at your commaund. So taking him by the hand, he conducted him to his Chamber,

where

where himſelfe holpe to vnarme him, commaunding his Chirurgions to be ſo carefull of him, as of his owne perſon. Thus leauing him to haue his woundes dreſſed, he returned to the great Hall, where hee found his nobility attending his comming, to whom he ſayd. What think you my Lords of our ſtate, if our Champion had bene ſoyled? I had bene the moſt forlorne and abiect Lords in all Aſſiria, to haue bene forced to do iuſtice on myne owne Daughter. But thanks to our Gods, hee deliuered me from that danger, therefore marualle not, if (beyonde my cuſtome) I welcommed him with reuerence and honour: for one that renewmeth himſelfe by vertue and proweſſe through the whole world, ought to be ſo entertained, rather then ſuch as line in vayne pompe and glory, whiſpering deceitfull tales into Ladyes eares. Neyther can you (in my iudgement) honour him ſufficiently, becauſe my Daughter and mee hee hath ſhielded from death, repulſed our ignominious ſlaunder, and ſlaine our falſe accuſing enemy, to make vs liue in perpetuall fame and memory. The moſt part of them well noting his wordes, and confounded with the remembrance of theyr ſhame, when they durſt not enterpriſe the Combat for their Lady, knew not what to anſwere, but fearing to grow in further offence, ſought how to change his minde to ſome other talke.

Alchidana being all this while in her Chamber, prepared her ſelfe to goe viſite Palmerin, not knowing how to ſhape her courſe, for freſh bewraying of her ſecrete affections: for the Goddeſſe Iuno, when ſhee ſtoode before Syr Paris for ſentence of her beautie, was not more ſumptuouſly adorned then the Princeſſe. Now beginns ſhee to diſpute in her thoughts, the honourable graces of Palmerin, his nobilitie ſo farre renowmed, his knightly proweſſe and magnanimitie, whereof herſelfe had ſo good experience, as ſhee reſolued neuer to haue any other Husband. Then demaundes ſhe of her Ladies, how ſhe might recompence her Knight, if her head-tyre ſtoode orderly, if her locks of haire

were

were tressed as they ought, and if her garments were braue enough. For conclusion, the louely Mayden knew not how to dispose of herselfe, to gaine his loue shée so earnestly longed for.

In this equipage she goes to sée her Friend, and in his Chamber shée findes her Mother, who hindered her languishing Daughter, from discouering her sickneſſe to him, that onely had the power to helpe her: wherefore liuing in hope of some better opportunitie, for this time she smothered her gréefes so wel as she could, finding other talke with her Ladies, least her mother should suspect her.

Chap. XIII.

How the brethren of Amarano, would haue buried his bodie in the Tombe with Ardemia, which Alchidiana would not suffer, but constrained them to carrie him home againe into his Countrey.

AMarano thus slaine, his Brethren) according to his charge thus giuen them, before hée entred the Combat) toke his bodie, and with great mourning they brought it to the Princeſſe Ardemiaes Tombe, thinking to burie him there with her: but Alchidiana aduertised héereof came presently and intreated her Father, that hée woulde sende an Herauld to the Brethren of the vanquished Prince, to charge them not to leaue the bodie of Amarano in his Dominions, for if they did, he would cause it to be burned as a Traytor deserued. Moreouer, that they themselues should depart within foure and twentie houres,

on paine of the daunger ſhould enſue by their default. For good Father (quoth ſhe) if you ſhould permitte their boldneſſe, it will be great blame and diſhonour to you: in that it is commonly knowne, with what great pride and arrogancie he came to your Court, thinking to iniurie your good report, and eyther to ſhut mée from your preſence for euer, or elſe with open ſcandale to ende my life. The Soldane well regarding her wordes, willingly graunted her requeſt, whereupon the Princeſſe Brethren were certified of the Soldanes pleaſure, by a Trumpet: whereat they marualled not a little: but ſéeing they could no way remedie it, they ſaid. Herauld, it is reaſon that your Lord ſhould bée obeied within his owne territories, neuertheleſſe you may ſay vnto him, that the crueltie he ſhewes to a dead bodie, is verie great, and againſt all equitie, which he héereafter happilie may repent. So opening the Tombe againe, they toke forth their Brothers bodie, and the Princeſſe Ardemiaes likewiſe, conuaying them into a Litter of Cipres, to kéepe them from corrupting, and thus returned with them to Phrygia, where the Princes death was greatly lamented, but chéefly by the aged King his Father, who ſéeing his Sonne dead before him, after many dolorous paſſions, thus complained. Ah Fortune, howe cruell doſt thou ſhew thy ſelfe to the mightie, as well as the meaneſt? Ah my Sonne Amarano, too déere haſt thou bought thy loue to Ardenia. Wretched and diſpiſed olde man, howe vnfortunate art thou among all other? For when thou perſwadeſt thy ſelfe to haue ioy and comfort by thy Sonnes, thou findeſt the chéefe cauſe of ſorrowe and diſcontent. O death, thou ſuffereſt me to impotunate. Yet if the Soldane had graunted thée buriall, where thou diddeſt deſire it before thy death, the leſſe had béene my gréefe. But ſoone ſhall I cauſe him repent his hard dealing, and reuenge thy death with ſufficient requitall. The ſecond brother to Amarano, named Gramiel, ſéeing his father in ſuch extreame heauineſſe, aſſayed by all meanes he coulde to comfort him:

promi-

promising in the presence of all his Knights, with all possible spéede to reuenge his Brothers death, and so did all the fiue Brethren solemnly bowe togither. Which spéeches did somewhat comfort the aged King, who commaunded the bodies of the two louers to be taken from his presence, and for a perpetuall memorie of his Sonnes death, he caused a sumptuous monument to be made of marble and Porphire, whereon was grauen the cause of their vnhappie death. All this while, Gramiell, who vndertooke his Brothers reuenge, gaue charge to the people round about him, as also to the Kinges and Princes of Suria, who were then enemies to the Soldane, to prepare themselues in readinesse, so that within a Moneths space, hée had assembled a power of fiue thousand hardie Soldiers, himselfe béeing appointed leader and generall ouer them. In this sort they tooke themselues to the Feelde, hoping to ruinate the Soldanes Countrey with fire and swoorde: but they were better entertained then they expected, as hereafter shall bée largely discoursed.

Chap. XIIII.

Howe Alchidiana ouercome by vehemencie of her loue, offered her selfe to Palmerin as his wife, and of the aunswere he made her.

REmembring what hath past in the chapters before, we may not forget, how by the message of the Quéene of Tharsus sent to the Soldanes Court: Alchidiana (who began as it were to despise Palmerin) was constrained to renue her loue: thus conferring with her selfe, that if so

great a person as the Queene of Tharsus, commended, esteemed and honoured him, hauing neuer seene him, the better meane had she, beeing dayly in his companie, to practise the furtheraunce of her earnest desires. Shee therefore continually awayted opportunitie, to discouer the fire newly raked from the embers, and which day and night consumed her with languishing: but so well it came to passe, that not many dayes after the Combat with Amarano, hee came to visite her in her Chamber, right ioyfull of the talke hee had with the Soldan, as concerning the prouision of his strength, to goe ruinate the Citie of Constantinople, which gaue him hope of his returne to Allemaigne. Alchidiana, hauing courteously saluted him, and shewing better countenance then before shee did, caused him to sit downe by her, and soone after began in this sort.

I desire you, Sir Knight, by the reuerence you beare your Gods, and the faythe you owe to her, for whose loue you tooke the enchaunted Crowne from the Prince Maurice: to tell me your name, what your Parents be, and of whence you are. For I sweare to you by the honour of a Princesse, that the guerdon you shall receyue in so doing, is my heart, hauing once conquered those desires that long haue tormented me: intending to make you Lorde of my selfe, and all the possessions of the Soldane my Father, without anie sinister meaning, you may beleeue mee. Consider therefore good Knight, that without feare or dissimulation, I haue tolde you what nerest concerneth mee, if then you desire not my present death, make aunswere as honourable duties requireth, ballancing in your owne thoughts, howe vehemently the impressions of loue haue touched me: in respect that now I haue tiuise for your sake, exceeded the limits of mine owne regard, whom bashfulnesse should protect from such boldnes. And if patiently I endured your sharp repulse when last I bewayed the state of my loue: thinke it was caused through mine owne good conceit, that beeing denyed the liberty of speech, you did not perceyue the extremitie

of my passions. But seeing our Gods haue beene so fauourable, as to restore the thing was earst taken from you, and likewise hath brought you into her companie, who loues you dearer then her owne life: shew not your selfe so hard of nature, to flie the howre that Loue and Fortune presents you withall. Therefore my onely beloued Lorde, in recompence of your sharpe Combat with proud Amarabo, receyue me as your wife, whom you haue worthily deserued.

Palmerin seeing himselfe assayled by so faire an enemie, who could soner bring in subiection an other Hercules, then euer did Iole, and as easily giue life to a statue of Marble, as Venus sometime did, at the request of Pigmalion the Caruer: was in marueilous affliction, hauing before him, on the one side, feare to offende God, on the other, the loyaltie he ought his Mistresse, and then the immediate death of Alchidiana, if she denied her. In the ende, remembring what the Soldan had spoken, concerning his voyage to Constantinople, he deuised by this meane to make her such answere, as she should rest contented, and neither God nor his Mistresse be offended, he thus began. Vertuous and most excellent Princesse, thus I am assuredly perswaded, that there is not any Monarce or Prince so noble in all Asia, but might reckon himselfe among the happiest, in respect of your perfections and inualuable riches, to espouse you as his wife. By farre greater reason, I that am poore, a Knight errant, vnknowne, and whose life you haue saued, may say, and name my selfe aboue all other in fortune. But knowing my selfe so simple, and of so slender deseruing towardes you, I esteeme it impossible for the Gods, and nature likewise, to lift mée to so wonderfull degree of happinesse. Wherefore, seeing the cause such, and greater then I can desire or imagine: likewise that it is rebellious to your commaundement, doubtlesse I were vnworthie any fauour of Fortune, and to bee esteemed among the most vngratefull Knights in the worlde, if in anything I

ſhould diſobey your pleaſure. My reaſon is, that you (béeing reckoned as chéefe among the moſt perfect and accompliſhed Ladies) deigne ſo much to abaſe your ſelfe, as to make mée Lord of your loue, which hath béene deſired by ſo many worthie perſonages.

For theſe cauſes, moſt gracious Miſtreſſe, I am bound to loue you aboue all other Ladies liuing, which henceforth I hope to doo, and loyally to ſerue you with my vttermoſt endeuours. And as I ought (ſwéete Madame) to loue none but you, ſo is my dutie to hold your regard in chéefeſt commendation: therefore will I with ſuch ſecrecie, as ſo honourable a conqueſt will permit, conceale this extraordinarie grace. And had I not this morning made promiſe to your Father, to accompanie his power to Conſtantinople, there to reuenge the death of your deceaſſed vncle Gamezzio, ſome ſhould our loue ſort to wiſhed effect, and I gather that ſwéet flower, which aboue all other would beautifie my Garland. Notwithſtanding, my hope is ſuch, that in this voyage I ſhall do ſuch ſeruice to the Soldane your Father, as at my returne hée will recompence mee to your content, and good liking of his Princes and Subiects: which may no way nowe bee moued, leaſt his minde otherwayes buſied, ſhould conceyue diſpleaſure againſt me, and ſo all our fortune for euer ſquandered. In this reſpect (ſwéete Madame) if euer hereafter I ſhall doo you ſeruice, let me intreate you to patience till my returne, reſoluing your ſelfe in the meane while, that I am more yours then mine owne, and dedicate my life to your gracious ſeruice. As concerning the reſt of your demaund, my name is Palmerin d'Oliua, and what my Parents are, the Queene of Tharſus within theſe three daies will tell me more, then hitherto I could vnderſtand by any, when you ſhall vnderſtand more of my eſtate and Country alſo; but ſo farre as I yet gather by mine owne knowledge, my diſcent is from Perſia.

This excuſe hée made, becauſe Archidiana ſhould not ſuſpect him to bée a Chriſtian: and with this aunſwere ſhée

was so ioyfull and contented, as nothing was able to inspyre more cheerefull life into her languishing soule, which Palmerin perceyuing, and the better to continue her in this opinion, verie often he kissed her hande in signe of his affectionate obeysaunce, and in this sort hee departed to his owne Chamber, leauing the Princesse triumphing of her conquest.

Ye was no sooner come into his Chamber, but solicited with the remembraunce of his Ladie Polinarda, hee imagined how she blamed him with mournfull complaints for his late promises: which thought so diuerslie afflicted him, as he spent all the rest of the day in teares, and as shée had béene present, humblie requesting her to pardon what had past him, in respect hée did it not willingly, nor gaue anie consent with his heart thereto, but dissembled the matter, least the Princes by his denial should fall into despayre: and rather then he would violate his solemne vow to his gracious Goddesse, hée would aduenture on infinite dangers. Yet did this feigned answere to Alchidiana greatlie availe him, and caused him to bée more honoured then euen hée was before: as also to bée continually accompanied with her presence, whose onely delight was in dayly beholding him.

Chap. XV.

Howe the Soldane hauing determined to ſend his armie to Conſtantinople, would elect Palmerin his Lieutenant generall: which he refuſed, intreating him to giue the charge to the olde King of Baliſarca.

NOw was the Soldan continually mindfull of the promiſe hee made to his deceaſſed Father Miſos, to reuenge the death of his Brother Gamezio: wherefore ſeeing all his dominions in peace, and that hee had with him the valiaunt Palmerin, hee continued to leuie a mightie Armie, to fulfill that which daylie called for. And hauing prouided a huge number of Galions, Foyſts, Galyes and other veſſels, he ſent abroade to aduertiſe all the Kinges, Princes, Califfes, and Toborlanes his Subiects, of his will and pleaſure: who likewiſe gathering their forces togither, were numbred to bee aboue an hundred and fiftie thouſand fighting men. All this while the Soldane ſo fauoured Palmerin, as he had beſtowed on him diuerſe Dukedomes, which he made but ſlender account of, becauſe hee continually expected time to ſee his Polynarda. Alchidinia likewiſe building on his paſſed promiſes, daylie preſented him with many rich gifts, and practiſed all the deuiſes ſhee could to pleaſe his fancie: for ſo deuoutly did the Princeſſe loue him, as ſhee rather deſired her owne death, then to giue him the leaſt occaſion of diſlyking. And Palmerin by fayre and affecting ſpeeches, perſwaded ſuch ſetled opinions in her, as ſhee holds his promiſes with greater

greater pertinacie, then euer did any Logitian maintaine his Aristotle. By this time were the men of Armes come from all places, wherefore the Soldane calling to Palmerin, beganne with him in this manner. Syr Palmerin, considering how much I am indebted to you, my affections are so resolutely perswaded, that I esteeme of you as you were my Sonne, and much more then I am able to vtter: not so much for seruices you haue done mée from time to time, as for the incomparable déedes of armes and chiualrie, which makes you honoured through the whole world. Hauing nowe determined to sende my forces to Constantinople, my onely hope I repose in you, and well it liketh mée that you beare the office of my Lieutenant Generall, and principall gouernour of the Kings and Princes in this erpedition. Therefore my noble and approued good Friend, vsing your wonted magnanimitie and discretion, my people shal think well of my appointment, referring the honor of their victorie, to the generall hauocke and confusion of their enemies.

Nowe I perceiue (my gracious Lord) answered Palmerin, that by your manifolde fauours and courtesies, you would deprine mée of acknowledging mine owne duetie: notwithstanding, in respect it is your pleasure, I would aduenture the vttermost of my life for you, which I cannot with greater honour lose, then in your noble seruice. Yet, may it be spoken within compasse of your highnesse controll, me thinks you should rather giue this charge to the King of Balsarca, a man wise, experienced, and farre more skilfull in Armes then I am. Beside, your people hauing a man of their owne nation for their head, will obey him more willingly, and serue with much more cheerefull courage, then vnder him whom they know not, but onely by your Princely and liberall bountie, which hath borne such, that from the meanest estate, where fortune held mée as altogether despised, your Maiestie hath lifted mee to the highest earthly honour. Thus speake I, dread Lorde, do

not

not gainſaying your commaundement, but for this conſideration, that taking this honourable charge, the Souldiers may mutinie againſt me, and ſo your ſeruice be altogether diſappointed.

And thinke you (quoth the Soldane) that my people will be more obedient to the King of Baliſarca then to you? Yea doubtleſſe my Lord, ſaide Palmerin, that is my opinion. Know then, quoth the Soldane, that for this counſell you haue giuen mée, my loue is nothing diminiſhed towardes you: for I ſée by this noble regarde, how deſeruedly you gaine the fauours of Kings and great perſonages: it ſhall be therefore as you haue appointed. This counſell gaue Palmerin, not for any good he wiſhed to Maulicus, or the King of Baliſarca, but (deſiring nothing more, then the ruine and generall deſtruction of theſe Heathen hounds, ſworne enemies to Chriſt and his ſeruants) to ridde himſelfe of that charge, which would bring him ſo great and ſhamefull report, to fight againſt his Lord and maker: therefore premeditating on all theſe inconueniences, he but expected the meane to gette foting in Chriſtendome againe. Maulicus thus contented with his aunſwere, the King of Baliſarca was appointed generall of his Armie, yet he gaue commandement that Palmerin ſhould bee reuerenced among them, as the ſecond perſon to himſelfe, and on paine of death none to offende him. As all this ſtrength was readie to take ſhipping, newes came to the Court of Gramiell and his brethren, what ſlaughter and ſpoyle they made through all Aſſiria, whereat the Souldane béeing greatly offended, ſéeing his prouiſion againſt Chriſtendome thus chaunged, came to Palmerin, and ſayde. My Sonne, what thinke you of our enemies? What ſhall I do to theſe followers of their Brother in pride? I pray you counſell mée in this neceſſitie. Palmerin perceiuing his deſire preuented, was ouercome with marualous paſſions: yet to hide his diſcontent from the Soldane, he thus anſwered. Séeing it hath ſo fallen out my Lord, that without any ſummons our ene-

mies

mies haue presumed vppon vs, I thinke it most expedient that your Armie prouided in so good readinesse, beginne first with these arrogant inuaders: for I doubt not, their attempt béeing so trecherous, and the courage of our men so resolute, but they shall déerely buy their presumptuous aduenture. A matter soone begunne, will bee as soone ended, and our shipping readie, wee may afterwarde set forwarde to Constantinople, for this will bee a good whetting to our stomackes, to deale with our enemies of greater multitude. This counsell was accepted, wherefore it was immediatly proclaimed through the field, that euery man should be readie to depart within thrée daies.

Chap. XVI.

How the Prince Olorico, sonne to the King of Arabia, came and offered his seruice to the Soldane, bringing with him fiue hundred armed Knights, and of his entertainment.

SOmewhat before the Soldanes Armie was readie to departe, the Prince Olorico, eldest sonne to the King of Arabia, came to the Court, and with him fiue hundred Knights, so hardy, braue, and comely personages, as both for the Court and the warr, better might not be imagined. This yong prince reputed among the most valiãt of his time, hearing report of the rare beauty of Alchidiana, vnder colour of offring the Soldane his assistance, determined to behaue himselfe so brauely in his court, that by his liberalitie and honorable actions, he would obtaine the Prin-

cesse

ceſſe to his Wife, wherefore beeing come to the Court, and hauing done his obeyſance to the Soldane, hee began in this maner.

Right mightie Lorde of all Aſſiria and Paleſtine, hauing of long time heard your great forwardneſſe to the encreaſing of our faith, cheefely of the laſt honourable counſell you held, to reuenge the death of your famous deceaſed Brother Gamezio, whom our Gods nowe entertaine at their celeſtiall banquets: I toke my ſelfe to trauaile, with aduiſed reſolution to doo you ſuch ſeruice as might ſtande with my abilitie, and your pleaſure to commaund. And for I now beholde, that my arriuall is in a time ſo fortunate, I celebrate theyr names with immortall thankes, aſſuring your Maieſtie ſo farre to ſtretch my endeauours, as the ſonne that is bounde by dutie to his Father. The Soldane who had heard great report of his bountie and valour, his Father likewiſe beeing one of his friendes and confederates: after he had made him very gracious welcome, thanked him for the ſuccour he brought him, and henceforth he would not eſteeme of him as a ſtranger, but as his Sonne and moſt eſpeciall Friende. All this while Palmerin noted the behauior of the yong Prince, and iudging by his complexion that hee was of better nature then the other Aſſirians, began to affect him, ſo that after the Soldane had giuen them all the good night, Palmerin accompanied the Prince to his Chamber, where they could deuiſe no other conference, but of this new and warlike enterpriſe, which made Olorico demaunde of Palmerin, if hee ſhould go in thoſe affaires. That will I verily (quoth he) if ſickneſſe or priſon do not withhold mee. Let me intreate you then, ſayde the Prince, to doo me ſo much honour, as to accept me for your companion. Whereto Palmerin right ſone condiſcended, and then began ſuch a league of amitie betweene them, that it endured to the death, as you ſhall reade hereafter. But becauſe it was nowe late, they toke their leaue of each other till the next morning, when Maulicus would haue

Olorico

Olorico dine at his Table with Palmerin, where wanted no prouision that beséemed so great a person, béing now set forth in most rich and honourable pompe. The Tables being withdrawne, the Prince began the daunce, thinking to sée faire Alchidiana: but hée was deceiued, for she kept her Chamber in her amorous opinions, and would not be séene till the appointed day, when the Armie should make shewe in open field.

This day the Soldane went to order the battaile, and to appoint the wings and squadrons, which made Alchidiana likewise take delight to walke abroad with Palmerin, who was now in maruailous sumptuous Armour, bearing a shéld of Sinople, with a barre of Gold figured therein, signifying his inward ioy, that in so short time he should get from these barbarous and vnchristian hethounds. Before them went two yong Lords bareheaded, and behinde a great number of Ladies and Knights, so rich in apparrell as could be deuised. Being thus brought to their Palfrayes, Palmerin beganne to carrire and braue with his Horse before the Princesse, who take no little delight in her supposed louer, and riding along with him, fell into many discourses, nothing tending to Religion as I gesse, but such deuout seruice as loue teacheth his Schollers. In the midst of their communication, came the Prince Olorico, so altred with his affection to the Princesse, that they which haue felt like assaults, might easily iudge the cause of his passions. Hauing made two or thrée humble reuerences to her, he offered to kisse her hand: which shé would not permit him, excusing the matter so modestly, and wishing his welfare as her owne, that he imagined himselfe greatly fauoured.

Palmerin regarding the afflictions of this newcome louer, and that hé might giue him the better meane, to deuise with her so priuately as he desired, turned his Horse to the other side of the Princesse, thus speaking to her. What thinke you (Madame) of the gentle succour which my

Lord

Lord Olorico hath brought your Father? beléeue mée, the courteſie is ſo ſurpaſſing great, as your ſelfe ought eſpecially to thanke him, if it were but for his forwardneſſe, in qualifying the haughtie courage of Amaranos brethrē. Doubtleſſe (quoth ſhe) his companie is to be eſtéemed, and among tenne thouſand Knights, hardly may bee founde ſo braue men as is in his troupe, in recompence whereof, I will not denie the Prince any thing, that hée with honour will requeſt of me. Olorico perceiuing this ſodaine inuention of Palmerin, returned him many thanks, and after the accuſtomed diſſimulations vſed in ſuch cauſes, albeit Loue had for a while depriued him of ſpéech: earneſtly beholding the rare beautie of the Princeſſe, he thus began. Madame, although I ſhould ow to my Lord your Father all the ſeruices that a Knight is able to yéelde his gracious patrone, yet the very leaſt of theſe fauours, which it hath pleaſed your excellencie to beſtowe on mée, may bee reckoned for much more then deſerued recompence. Wherefore béeing perſwaded that my ſeruice is placed in your good conceit, I ſhall not henceforth feare to put my life in hazard, ſo much I deſire to ſée theſe preſent promiſes accompliſhed: whereof you Sir Palmerin, béeing eſtéemed among the moſt famous perſons liuing, ſhall beare mée witneſſe, when time graunteth conuenient opportunitie. I haue promiſed nothing, ſayde the Princeſſe, but what I will right gladly accompliſh, requiring nothing but your good opinion, which ſo many choyſe Ladies haue heretofore deſired. And I demaund no better pay (quoth the Prince) then her gracious fauour whom I deſire to pleaſe. Thus beguiled they the time, till the Armie marched forward in array, which they faire and ſoftly followed, till tenne Pages belonging to the Princeſſe, leading tenne goodly Courſers moſt richly caparaſoned, came before them. Another Page brought a ſéemely Launce, the bandrole whereof was the Princeſſe colours, and a Golden Shéeld, wherein was portraied the head of Amarano, holde vppe by the haire by a Knights

hands,

hands signifying the victory of Palmerin against him: the Shéld béeing bordered rounde about with Pearles, Rubyes, Emeraulds, Crisolites, and other precious stones of inestimable value, then beganne the Princesse thus to Palmerin.

My noble Friend, in this warre I desire you to bée my knight, and for my sake to beare this Launce and Shéld, that the proude Brethren may see the shame of Amarano. And such is my hope, that as you serued the eldest, so will you deale with the other, while one of them remains aliue. These Horses likewise for the warre I bestow vppon you, they beeing accounted the very best in Turkie, and these will serue you well when you are in fielde: our Gods bearing mée witnesse (faire Friend) that did not my estate hinder me, and the regarde of mine honour withhold me, with right good will would I beare you companie, to sée your noble and knightly deedes of armes. And this I dare boldly say, that Hipsicratea neuer followed her Husband Mithredates with greater affection, were he on sea, or on lande, on Horsebacke, or on foote, then I could doo the noble Palmerin d'Oliua. Notwithstanding, though my body may not be there, yet shall my spirit bee continually present, to comfort my languishing life, which will be but a shadow of death to me till your returne. But because I sée many eies are fixed on vs, all the Kings likewise taking their leaue, of my father, I will leaue you to the protection of our Gods who send you happily and right soone againe. These words were coupled with such sighs and teares, as shee had fallen from her horse, but that one of her Ladies of honour stayed her.

Palmerin after hee had with great kindnesse thanked her, kissed her hande, saying. Perswade your selfe (swéete Madame, your shéld shall be shewne in such place, where his Brethren that detract your honour, shall easily sée it, though but little to their aduantage. Thus tooke they leaue

leaue of each other, and Olorico likewiſe bad the Princeſſe farewell: then doing their dutie to the Soldane, followed the armie, leauing him and Alchidiana ſorrowfull for their departure.

Chap. XVII.

How the prince Olorico being with Palmerin in his Tent, demaunded of him if hee loued the princeſſe Alchidiana, and of the anſwere he made him.

THeſe two Princes Palmerin and Olorico, conferring ſtill as they rode, with what greefe and ſorrow Alchidiana parted from them, and falling from one imagination to another, they concluded to lodge together in one tent. And becauſe Palmerin was the better e more richly prouided of all things neceſſarie for the field, Olorico was the more glad of his companie: ſo the day being ſpent, and the Tents pitched in a goodly plaine, Palmerin inuited the Prince of Arabia to ſuppe with him, for the Soudane had appointed him ſuch honourable prouiſion, as better hee could not for his owne ſonne. The Tables withdrawne, and ſpending the time a while at Theſſe play, they went to bed, where Olorico (not able to ſléepe) beganne in this manner to his friendly companion.

Moſt fortunate Palmerin, howe much more could I wiſh to reſemble you, then the greateſt King or Lorde in the worlde, to be likewiſe beloued of her, who in beautie, good grace, and ſweete ſpéech, hath not her like. And becauſe my

my good Friend and Brother, I haue noted the speciall loue of the Princesse Alchidiana towardes you, let me intreate you to tell me, who shee is you aboue all other leue, and intend to make your espoused Wife: bowing to you on the word of a Prince, whosoeuer it bee, to conceale it with secrecie, and to dissuade my selfe from my loue newly begunne for your sake, albeit I died therefore. For your noble minde and braue gentilitie, hath gained such soueraignitie ouer me, as all other pleasures whatsoeuer I despise, onely to haue your companye and fauour. Thus qualifying the passions, which day and night doo secretly torment mee, I will sette downe such order, as my Father shall not neede to send his Ambassadours, nor imploy any of my Freendes to demaunde her for mee: albeit for this onelye cause, I left my Countrey in such sort as you haue seene. Palmerin hearing the wordes of the yong Prince, and perceiuing him wounded with her loue, whom he desired to be furthest from, smyling said. My Lorde Oliueo, I sweare to you by the honour of my knighthode, I neuer thought of the loue which you demaunde, nor haue I any desire to followe that humour. But true it is, that I would doo so much for her, as a knight may for his Ladie, for so shee well deserues, her fauour and gentle behauiour woorthye farre better abilitie: wherefore my deare Freende, if you will beleeue me, giue not ouer your intent, but practise to gaine her to your Wife: and I promise you that I will so moue the matter to the Soldane and her, as happilie maye effect the end of your desires. Yet let me intreate you to continue so iust a Freende to her, as her high calling well deserueth: otherwise I had rather die the death, then once to speake a word on your behalfe. These newes so cheered the Prince, as embracing him manie times, and returning him manifold thanks, he said. Assuredlie my noble Freend, I am greatly beholding to my father, who gaue me my present being: but much more owe I to you, because my estate had now ended, but that your gracious speeches called me againe to

life. My ſecond ſelfe, hauing thus loſt my libertie, I deſpaire of attaining what you haue promiſed, and endure a death more then mortall: but that you breath hope of ſucceſſe into me, aſſuring mée of immediate felicitie and ioyfull dayes hereafter, which no father, but ſo good a freende was able to do. After other ſuch like ſpeeches, the Prince ſlept, but Palmerin touched in another ſort, was ſolliced with the remembraunce of his loſt freendes: and perceiuing his companion ſlept ſoundly, he began thus to deliuer his ſorrowes. Ah vnfortunate and wretched Palmerin, how can thy mind ſo long beare this yoke of ſeruitude, onely ſtanding in feare of death? Haſt thou ſo forgot thoſe two perfect louers, Trineus and Agriola, with thy true freend Ptolome, not knowing whether they bee aliue or deade? what? wilt thou not ſearche for them? The Emperour of Allemaigne, hath not hée good cauſe to complaine of thée, yea, and to blame thée, if his ſonne be not returned? Dareſt thou preſent thy ſelfe before him? Ah touch of loyaltie, faire Agriola, how iuſtly mayſt thou call mée thine enemie, inuenter and firſt motion of thy miſfortunes? O wretched and miſerable that I am, for leauing thée ſo diſcourteouſlye, I well deſerue a million of torments, farre worſe then thoſe exerciſed by the cruell Dyoniſe on the Scicilians. Nor coulde they be ſufficient to expiate my hainous guilt, in that forgetting thée fayre Princeſſe, I liue in daylie delights among theſe Moores and Tartars. But were I ſuch as I ought to bee, mindfull of a fault ſo foullie committed, I ſhoulde not liue one houre in reſt or quiet, till I had found my deereſt Freendes againe. Ah diſloyall Traytour, how canſt thou thus waſte thy time heere ſlothfullie, knowing the great and continuall trauails, thy Ladye and Miſtreſſe endureth for thée? But I vowe to God, this warre finiſhed, I will not abide in the Soldanes Courte tenne dayes, but intende to ſette forwarde to ſée the Jewell of of my welfare. And were it not to my perpetuall diſcredit, as alſo that I ſhould be iudged a fayntyng coward, I would begin my iourney preſently.

Thus

Thus all the night continued Palmerin such like complaints, considering his Friendes misfortune and his owne, with such deepe impressions, as thence forward hee lived in marueilous melancholie, and would not delight himselfe, as before hee was accustomed.

Chap. XVIII.

Of the Combat betweene Palmerin, and two of Amaranoes, Brethren, whom he valiantly ouercame, and killed

FOllowing the true discourse of our historie, the King of Baliſarca, Lieuetenant generall of the whole Armie, caused the next morning to bee proclaimed by sound of Trompet, that euery man should attend on his Enſigne: and not go robbing and forraging the Villages, on paine of death to be inflicted on the offender. So marching on in good array, in short time after they encamped themselues before a citie, where the enemies kept themselues in garison: and planting themselues there for their aduantage, the next morning they determined to giue the assault. All ỹ night they were ordering the maner of their batterie, the Pyoners making Trenches, and such defences as are requisit in warlike occasions.

Euery thing in due and perfect order, at Sun rysing they begaune to assaile the Cittie rounde about: following their intent with such courage and alacritie, as with scaling Ladders and other Engines, in lesse then two houres

they gotte vpon the walles, and (in deſpight of their enemies) entred the Cittie, murdering and expulſing the Phrygians, and ſharing the ſpoyle among themſelues. All other Cities, Townes and Villages, that were taken by the enemie, within fiue dayes after were recouered, they not daring to withſtand the Soldans power. Gramiell, Amaranoes eldeſt Brother amazed hereat, hauing vndertaken to reuenge his Brothers death, with his men betooke himſelfe to open Fielde, determining to giue the Aſſirians, battaile, and that way to make triall of their fortune, in which reſolution they came within halfe a dayes iourney of theyr enemies.

The King of Baliſarca aduertiſed hereof, diſlodged immediatlie, taking aduauntage of a little Mountaine, which was in the open ſight of the enemie. And Palmerin who deſired nothing more then the fight, that hee might accompliſh his promiſe to the Princeſſe Alchidiana, when hee receiued of her his rich Shealde and Launce: perſwaded the Generall, that hee ſhould the next morning ſummon the Brethren of Amarano, that within foure and twentie howres, they ſhould depart the Soldanes confines, or elſe endure the daunger of the Sworde. The King of Baliſarca aduiſing hereon in counſaile, founde it verie neceſſarie and expedient wherefore calling his Sonne, Sir Palmerin, and the Prince Olorico, hee committed the charge thereof to theyr preſent diſpatch. They being come to the Armie of Gramiell, were immediatly conducted to the Princes Tent, who was then deliberating with his Brethren, and other Captaines of the Armie. So ſoone as he vnderſtode the arriuall of theſe Amballadours, he cauſed them to come before him, and their meſſage being deliuered, the Phrygian Princes, who were of meruailous haughtie diſpoſition, anſwered, that they would not obey any ſuch commaundement. Moreouer, they intended to chaſe thence the Soldanes Lieuetenant, euen to the verie Gates of his owne Cittie: for that (contrarie to all equitie) hee withſtoode the burial of their Brothers

body

bodie in his kingdome. Guereſin, Seruant to the King of Baſſarca, could not ſuffer ſuch iniurie to his Lorde in his preſence, wherefore he ſaid: that the Soldane had done them no wrong, but receiued their Brother and his traine with greater honour then they deſerued, and that none of them ſhould haue the like againe. So went he forth of the Pauilion, Gramiell and two of his Brethren following him, whereof the one had beene in Affrica with his Brother Amarano: who ſeeing Palmerin, that all this while kept himſelfe without the Tent, and marking his Sheild, wherein mockage was painted his Brothers head: he knew him immediatlie, and in great rage pulling himſelfe by the haire, ſaid.

Villaine that I am, how can I ſuffer in my preſence the Traytour that murdered my Brother? Bold and preſumptuous catiſe, how durſt thou aduenture before mee, thus to deride me with thy villainie? Truſt me, ſaide Palmerin, I dare come before thée with better aſſurance of my ſelfe, then thy Brother had when he entred Combat with me. Wherefore, if thou be ſuch a Gallant, as thou wouldeſt haue me iudge thée by theſe brauadoes, and likewiſe haſt any ſtomacke to reuenge thy Brothers ſhame: Arme thy ſelfe, and an other of thy Brethren with thée, and come to me in place conuenient, where I my ſelfe will iuſtifie to you both, that Amarano was worthilye ſlaine, and as ſuch a falſe accuſing Traytour well deſerued. I deſire nothing more, ſaide Orinella, for ſo was hée called that gaue theſe hotte ſpeeches, but my Brother ſhall not deale with thée, till I haue tried my fortune alone: and if I faile of my purpoſe, then ſhall he afterwarde Combat with thée, this prouided, that thou aſſure mée from any in thy companie, but thine owne perſon. That will I vppon my knighthoode, ſaid Palmerin, thou performing as much on thy behalfe: yet I thinke before the ſport be done that thou wilt wiſh thy ſelfe with thée. Thus Palmerin, Olorico, and Guereſin withdrewe themſelues, Orinello and his brother

preſently going to Arme them. and accompanied with manie Knights, came into the field, Palmerin likewiſe as readie as the formoſt, came in with a good traine of Souldiers hee had brought with him, leaſt any treaſon ſhoulde bée wrought againſt him. Olorico, ſhewed himſelfe greatly diſcontented, becauſe hée might not accompanie his Freende in the Combat: but Palmerin perſwaded him, that more néedefull occaſions were reſerued for him, which ſhould returne him greater honour, and whom he ſhould court in better ſort then euer he did, the Ladies of Arabia. Gramiell being verie richly armed, woulde néedes come ſee his Brethrens Combat, which hée had good hope would ſort to their honor: but Palmerin ſéeing Orinello readie to the carrire, encountred his enemie with ſuch puiſſance, as his Launce paſſing through his boyd, cauſed him fall dead from his horſe without mouing eyther hand or foote.

Hauing performed his courſe, hee returned to take his Launce out of his enemies body, ſtriking him with the great Trunchion ende on the ſtomacke, to ſée if any life was left in him: but ſeeing his ſoule was departed to Lucifers Pallace, hée coutched his ſtafe to receiue the other Brother, who met him with ſuch ſtrength, as he was well néere diſmounted, yet in the ende hée was ſent after his Brother, though manie hardie ſtrokes firſt paſſed betwéene them. Hereupon was ſuch a ſuddaine crie on all ſides, ſome with ioy, and other with ſorrowe, as made the ayre reſound their voices. And I thinke that the Greekes when they receiued their libertie by Quintus Flaminius, made not the like clamour: when (as Valerius rehearſeth) the Byrds fell from the ayre with the furie of their cries. In the meane while, the King of Baliſarca, hauing heard hereof, came into the Fielde, accompanied with manie Lords, and conducted Palmerin with great honour and tryumphe backe to his Tent: eſpeciallie the Prince Olorico, who exceéding ioyfull for the good fortune of his companion, embracing him, ſaide. Ah gentle Palmerin, how bráuelie haue you accompliſhed your

promiſe

promise to the Princesse: the like successe heauen graunt you in labouring my cause. Beleeue me good Prince, quoth Palmerin, so well will I imploye my selfe in that action, as I hope you shall haue cause to thanke me. Now to returne to Gramiell, he caused his Brethrens bodyes to be conuaied thence, and embalmed them in two Chests of leade, referring their Funerall till his returne: and with the teares in his eyes, he thus began to encite his people. Not knowing howe (my louing Freendes and Countreymen) to animate your mindes sufficiently, with remembraunce of the tirannie, exercised by the Soldane on the bodye of my Brother and your Prince: vnhappie occasion presents you with a fresh memory of reuenge, seeing these two yong Princes, the beloued Sonnes of your King, so shamefullye slaine in your presence. For this cause, deere Freendes, that each of you may take a newe couragious spirite, to morrowe to encounter these effeminate Assirians: let vs all be resolute togither, and cause them to vnderstand, that you, who haue lead your liues in the Deserts of Affrica, much better know how to mannage Armes, then such loyterers in their Mistresses Chambers, who can do nothing but before their Ladies.

Hereupon two hundred Knightes aduaunsed themselues before him, swearing and vndertaking, to bring *Palmerins* bodie to him the day following: and therefore all that night they prepared themselues, strengthening their Shældes and Armour, and all other things necessarie for the fight, thinking the next morning by Sunne rysing to bid them battaile, these knightes inuenting to ambush themselues, as you shall heare. Palmerin beeing brought thus honorablye to his Tent, called for the Chirurgions to visit his woundes, which they founde so easie to bee cured, as they assured him of spædie recouerie. Hee then summoning the whole Counsaile togither, aduised them, that in his opinion hee thought it expedient, to dislodge that place about midnight with bag and baggadge, and so to coast the Mountain,

feigning a fearefull departure. For (quoth hée) the enemie aduertiſed of our retyre, will imagine that we deſpayre of our ſucceſſe, by reaſon of the death of the two ſlaine Princes.

Thus our diſſembled flight, will cauſe them diſorderlie to purſue vs, which we will ſuffer, till eſpying our aduantage: when returning valiantly vpon them, I dare gadge my life we ſhall eyther kill them downe right before vs, or at leaſt driue them to a ſhamefull foyle. This deuiſe was generallie allowed for good, and at the howre appointed was executed. By chaunce this morning Gramiell came among his menne verie earlie, and vnderſtanding the Soldans power was departed with ſuch ſilence: preſentlye cryed alarme, charging all his men to followe them, for he doubted they woulde enter a Cittie néere at hande, which was ſo ſtronglye fortefied, as they ſhould neuer entiſe them forth to ſkirmiſh, therefore he deſired to preuent them of that helpe.

Héereupon the Horſemen galloped after them amaine, crying: vpon them (my Frendes) vpon them, the day is ours. Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, the King of Baliſarca, Guereſin his Sonne, with a thouſande men at Armes, ſéeing howe they were diſordered: returned vppon them, and made ſuch a ſlaughter among the Phrygians, as the Field was couered all ouer with their bodies. Gramiell, ſéeing, that of the firſt ſallie not one came backe againe, ſette forward with his battaile, wherein hée had a thouſand Horſemen, and furiouſlye runnning on the Soldans power: by miſfortune hée mette with the Prince Olorico, to whome he gaue ſuch a cruell ſtroke on the head, as had almoſt ſette him beſide his Saddle. Olorico greatly diſcontented héereat turned valiantlie towards his eneme, and betwéene them continued a very daungerous fight: but in the ende, Gramiells Helmet béeing cutte from his heade, hee beganne to deſpayre, when Olorico following his intent, noblie at one blowe ſmote his heade from his ſhoulders. This miſhap was ſéene by one of his yonger Brethren, who running

fiercely

fiercelie with his Launce against Olorico, was suddainlye preuented by Palmerin, in that hée stroke him beside his Horse, where hee was troden to death with the trampling of the Horses.

Then came forth the two hundred sworne Knightes from their ambush, who had vndertaken Palmerins death, and him they hemde in so subtillie, as hée was brought into very great daunger. Which the Prince of Arabia beholding, made way through the thickest to assist his Frende, after whom followed Guerelin with an hundred Knights: without which supply, both Palmerin and Olorico had béen slayne, for their Horses were killed vnder them, and they enforced to fight on foote. But when they beheld this fortunate succour, their courage nobly increased, and then beganne the sharpest encounter, for the winges on eyther side approched, the Archers and Crossebowes likewise, sending their Arrowes as thicke as hayle among them, so that the battaile endured till darke night. Then the Brethren sounded the retraite, for which the King of Balisarca was not sorrie, hauing so ouertrauailed himselfe that day, as he could no longer sitte on Horsebacke: notwithstanding, before hée woulde enter his Tent, he saiue the Fields assured, the watch placed, and all the Houldiours planted in good order.

Chap.

Chap. XIX

How the Brethren of Gramiell, with all their traine, tooke themſelues to flight, and how Palmerin ſuddainly purſued them with his power, and tooke them priſoners.

IMmediatlie after that theſe two Phrigian princes had thus ſoũded the retrait, and conſidered how they had loſt fiue of theyr brethren, three in ſingle fight with Palmerin, and the other in the battaile, the greateſt part of their power likewiſe almoſt vtterly diſmaid: to know the certaintie of their ſtrength, they commaunded a deuiſion to bee made of the whole and wounded, and ſeeing how ſmall their number was, they concluded not to ſtay in any place, til they came to the Realme of Paſmeria, whereof Maurice was King, and their kiſeman, from whom Palmerin tooke the enchaunted Crowne, where they thought to ſupply their want, with men actiue and able to Armes.

The next day, the king of Baliſarca raunged a thouſand men in order, to giue a freſh aſſault on the enemie: but he was ſuddainlie aduertiſed by his eſpiall, how the Phrygians were fledde. He not a little glad of theſe newes, ſent word to *Palmerin* thereof, who though he was ſore wounded, Armed himſelfe, commaunding his Captaines to prouide fiue thouſand men preſently, to goe ſee the certaintie of theſe tydings. With this ſtrength he ioyned the Kings power, and ſo went to the enemies Campe, where they

found

found no resistance, nor any but such as laye grieuously wounded, of whome hee enquired which way the cowards were fled: which the poore Souldiours reporting to him, hée vowed to followe till hée ouertooke them. The resolution agréede vpon, betweéne the King of Balisarca, and him with tenne thousand light Horsemen hée determined to pursue them: and the King to staye there with the rest of the Armie, to recouer the Townes againe to the Soldane, which before had béene taken of the enemie, and to bee in readines with assistaunce, if he shoulde happen to stande in any néede.

While Palmerin made election of his company, a horseman was dispatched with these newes to the Soldane, how the enemies had béene foyled, and of their flight. The messenger beeing come before Maulicus, and the Letter open and read, how valiantly Palmerin dealt with his enemies: before all his nobility, the Soldane sayde. By all the Oracles of Delphos, I may well perswade my selfe, that wheresoeuer Palmerin is for vs, wee are assured of the victorie. The Princesse hauing heard these newes, sent for the messenger, and after shee vnderstoode by him, howe Palmerin bare her Shéelde in the face of her enemies, and had slaine in Combat two of Amaranos Brethren: shée was meruailous ioyfull, and rewarded the Messenger so well for his paynes, as for euer hée might extoll the bountie of the Princesse.

The Messenger dispatched againe with the Soldans Letters, brought speédie aunswere to the King of Balisarca and Palmerin, of their packet: wherein the Soldane hartylie thanked them, desiring them to followe theyr fortune. Palmerin vnderstanding the will of the Soldane and Alchidiana, and howe they desired him to pursue the Brethren of Gramiell: determined to set forwarde next morning, aduertising the Prince Olorico thereof, that hée might put himselfe in readines. But notwithstanding all theyr dilligence, their enemies gotte before them into Pas-

meria

meria, where they reſted theſelues, in hope to be aſſiſted by their Cozin Maurice. And he was giuen to vnderſtand, how the dumbe Knight named Palmerin, followed them: wherfore he commaunded them to depart his Realme, for hee would not ayde them againſt his deereſt Freende. This repulſe droue them into great diſpayre, yet ſeeing they coulde not helpe it, they were conſtrained to make a vertue of neceſſitie, and ſo ſecretly as they coulde deuiſe, by little and little ſtole toward their owne Countrey. Maurice hearing how Palmerin was come into his Realme, rode three or foure daies iourney to meete him, and entertaining him with exceeding honor, offered himſelfe, his people and ſubſtance to his ſeruice. Palmerin verie thankfull for the Princes kindneſſe, woulde nothing but certaine Horſſes of him, becauſe diuers of his owne had miſcarried. By this time were the Brethren entred the confines, which belonged to the Admirall of Tharſus, where they had done verye much harme, by exactions and great miſuſing of the people. This Admirall was a verie gentle Knight, and named Alfarano, which ſeeing what iniurie they did him, and vnderſtanding that they had beene conquered, and now ſtodde without ame place of aſſuraunce: leuyed an hoſte of hardie Souldiours, wherewith he intended to keepe a ſtraite, through which they muſt of neceſſitie paſſe, being ſo narrowe as they could paſſe but two togither: and no way elſe coulde they eſcape him, except they woulde climbe the tops of the Mountaines.

In this place lay the Admirall ambuſhed, with ſo manie men as he thought conuenient, and within three dayes after, Palmerin with his power came to aſſiſt them. The Phrygians hauing heard hereof, were greatlie amazed at this vnexpected aduenture, and had no other helpe but to climbe the Mountaine, where in Wholes & Caues they were glad to hide themſelues: and there they continued fiue or ſixe daies in ſafetie, albeit they were readie to die for want of ſuſtenaunce. Palmerin foreſeeing the inconueniencie of the

place, and that they could not escape him, nor needed hée anie further to followe them: caused the Mountaine to be enuironed on all sides, thinking the ende hereof woulde bée such, as indéede it afterward proued to be. For these poore distressed menne, hauing neyther foode or other prouision, came forth of their Caues, and assembled togither on the side of the Mountaine, where entering into conference of their estate, some gaue counsaile to goe fight it out, but other (better aduised) would not consent thereto, for better is it (quoth they) to yéelde our selues to the merry of our enemies, then to aduenture our fortune where no hope of successe is to be expected.

Héereuppon they concluded, and the two Brethren of Gramiell were the first that vnarmed themselues, and comming in this manner to Palmerins Tent, thus they began. Noble Knight Palmerin, more fortunate then any man in the world, we, Brethren to the renowmed Prince Amarano, whom thou hast with thine owne hand slaine, and three other of our brethren likewise, whereof the noble Orinello deserueth speeche, all sonnes to a King, and themselues heeretofore worthy accomplished Princes, though nowe foyled and consorted with the deade: we (noble Lord) more certaine of thy clemencie and courtesie, then any successiue ende of a battaile so vnreasonable and desperate, come to yéelde our bodies and goods to thy disposing, desiring thee to pittie our estate, and regarde the works of Fortune, to whom thou art Subiect as well as we. Beside, that the more shall greater persons bée praised for honorable fauour, then by vsing rigour and vnnaturall crueltie, which maketh them euery where hated and despised. When Palmerin sawe them so humble, considering his owne estate, and how time might frowne on him, returned them this answere. Now (my Lords) haue you donne wisely, to laye by Armes, and submit your selues, for otherwise your destruction was at hande. Notwithstanding, in respect you haue thus yéelded your selues to me, I entertaine you into my safe defence,

assuring

allurīg you peace with the Soldane, so that you sweare your faithfull loue, and do him homage. So gaue hee them in keeping to one of his Knights, whome hee especially trusted, & returning to Alfarano, in recompence of his wrongs and losse sustained by the Phrygians, gaue him all theyr spoyle, and the raunsome of all the Knightes taken prysoners. The Admirall humblye kissing his hand, desired him to rest himselfe in one of his Cities, which was within fiue or sixe miles of the place: which gentle offer Palmerin would not refuse, because he was sore wearied with trauaile: wherefore by the Admiralles appointment, the Pallace was prouided for Palmerin and his Friends Olorico.

Chap. XX.

How the Queene of Tharsus came to see Palmerin, in the Citie belonging to Alfarano her Admirall, where by the meane of an enchaunted drinke, shee accomplished her pleasure with him.

HEre our History willeth vs to remember, how in our former discourse was mentioned, that the Queene of Tharsus sent a rich Helmet to Palmerin, and at the Damoselles returne, was acquainted with his singular composed feature, rare courtesie, and Knightly chiualrie: the reporte whereof, caused her amorously to affect him, and in such vehemēt maner, as she determined her owne death, vnlesse she might enioy his louelie company.

Which the better to compasse, shee discouered her de-

sires

fires to a cunning Magitian, hée by whose meanes she sent the Helmet to Palmerin: who gaue her such an enchaunted powder, as Palmerin drinking it in wine or otherwise, should sone after become so forgetfull of himselfe, as the Queene might accomplish whatsoeuer shée desired. He likewise did reueale to her, the seuerall loues of Palmerin and Olorico, which tale made her more earnest in following her intent. And vnderstanding his arriuall in the Realme of Palmeria, concluded in person to goe see him: furnishing her selfe with all things necessary, both rich Tapestry, and great store of Gold and Siluer plate, habiliments, precious stones, rings and inualuable Iewels. With these shée adorned her Knights, Ladies and Gentlewomen to the vttermost, and when she had finished her traine to her owne liking, shée sette forward with such expedition, as within three dayes shée arriued at the Cittie where he was, but first shée aduertised her Admirall of her comming, that hée shoulde imagine nothing by her suddaine presence. The Admirall so ioyfull hereof as could be deuised, in that by this meane hee shoulde the more honourably entertaine his gueste: acquainted Palmerin and the Prince Olorico therewith, who likewise were exceeding glad of the newes, especially Palmerin, desirous to know by her his offspring.

Therefore in most magnificent order with their men at Armes, and the Admirall Alfarano, they rode to meete the Queene for her greater honour: who by the speciall intelligence was giuen her, knewe Palmerin among them all, in that hee marched formost with the Prince Olorico and the Admirall of Tharsus. Shee regarding in him farre more singularities, then sparing repost had acquainted herwithall: after that Palmerin had saluted her with very great reuerence, as he was not to learne courtlye courtesie, the Queene requited him with a sweete kisse, and thus began. Sir Knight, the fayrest beyond all other that euer I saiwe, well woorthie are you to be estemed among the most happie, being able to winne the loue of Ladies that neuer saiwe

you.

you. Aduiſe your ſelfe well of this great fauour, and what a precious Iewell you receiue of them, in requitall of your ſeruice, or acceptaunce of any amorous contentment. Then wonder not not, (Gentle Knight) if to ſee you I haue left my Country, for beſide your great valour, bountie and loyaltie, which neuer can be ſufficiently commended, your beautie, affabilitie and moſt rare perfections, deſerue not onelye the loue of the greateſt Ladye and Princeſſe, but their continuall ſeruice likewiſe, if they but conſider theyr owne duties. If then your vertues and gifts of nature are of ſuch value and merit, what may ſhee imagine of her ſelfe, who is your onelie Ladie and Miſtreſſe, and aboue all other is honored with your faithfull ſeruice, as well records the memorye of the burning Crowne? Palmerin hearing himſelfe ſo commended by ſuch an excellent Queene, bluſhed with bathfulneſſe, and humbly ſhaped this aunſwere. Madame, ſo far vnable am I, to deſerue the loue and good will you beare me, as neuer will Fortune fauour me ſufficiently, to recompence the leaſt part of this princelie kindneſſe. Yet hereof (faire Queene) you may aſſure your ſelfe, that you haue a Knight ſo forward in your ſeruice, as nothing ſhall with-holde him from executing your commaundemente, though the penaltie of my life were ioyned thereon. Truſt me (quoth the Queene) your behauiour promiſeth no leſſe then you ſpeake off, and if I haue taken anie paine for you, I thinke my ſelfe now thorowlye ſatiſfied: lette it ſuffice you then, that I account my fortune not the leaſt, hauing gayned ſuch place in your good opinion. Theſe and ſuch like ſpeeches paſſed betweene them, till they came to Alfaranos Pallace, where they ſpent the reſt of the daye in diuerſitie of pleaſures: the Queene intreating Palmerin and Olorico the next daye to dine with her in her lodging, whers thee intended honorably to feaſt them. The next day at ten of the cloche, theſe two yong Princes came to ſee her, finding her in a goodlie Hall, which was richlie hanged with cloth of Golde, and therein ſtode a Cupboorde, garniſhed

with

with the most costly plate that euer was séene, for the baset péece was cleane gold, inchased with precious stones, beside diuerse other inestimable strange Cups, and Glasses of Agatha. What their seruice at Dinner was, I leaue to the iudgement of Ladies, desirous of fauour. Yet this I dare say, that the Dishes were so rare and exquisite, and abounding in such plentie, as though thee had them dayly at commaund. The Tables withdrawne, the Quéene toke each of the Princesse by the hande, and sitting downe betwéene them, with a sweete smiling countenance beganne thus.

I pray you gentle Knights, to tell mé which of you is most affected to the seruice of Loue, & followes it with greatest endeuour: gladly would I be resolued by you, albeit I know the certaintie as well as your selues. Madam (quoth Palmerin) if you haue such knowledge of our affections, well may our answere bée excused. Verie true, sayde the Quéene, especially you, of whose loyaltie the Prince Maurice is so notable a witnesse. Notwithstanding which of you doth most mistrust the attainment of her grace, to whom he is most deuoted in loue, let him not giue ouer the pursuit of his desire: but rather let me intreate you to continue your loue with much more feruencie, as to those renowmed Ladies, who by their vertues and graces, doo worthily challenge you from all other: for I dare assure you such a successiue end of your loue, as with especiall content you shall finish your affectionate desires.

If they were ioyfull of this assurance, it is no question to be demaunded, chiefly Olorico, who till then disputed: but now so happily resolued, gaue place to Palmerin, who was desirous to conferre more priuately with the Quéene, therefore in the meane time he serued both her Lady, and Palmerin séeing the occasion so fit, began his tale in this manner. I cannot forget, faire Quéene, when you sent your Page to me at the Soldans court, that after her message deliuered she saide to me, y you were acquainted with further secrets

concerning my eſtate. For this cauſe, I intreate your highneſſe, if you doo not imagine mee to importunate, that it might pleaſe you to acquaint mée with my Father and Mother, for that aboue all other things I moſt deſire. The Queene amazed at this demaund, thus anſwered. Knowe (gentle Knight) that what the Ladie in this matter ſaide to you, as alſo what my ſelfe euen now promiſed you, commeth not from mee, for one of my Knights acquainted mé therewith, hée being the moſt skilfull in the Magical ſciences that is in all Turkie. As now he is returned into his owne Countrey, and no other anſwere could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the moſt loyall redoubted and valiant Prince in the worlde, whom before you haue anie further knowledge of, you ſhall deliuer from death, and that very ſhortly. Beſide you loue a Ladie, who in all perfections of nature, fortune or ſpirit, hath not her equall.

In ſoth (quoth Palmerin) I ſhall account my ſelfe right happie, to deliuer my Father from ſuch daunger, and Heauen I beſéech that it may ſo bée. On theſe tearmes came Alfarano, and the daunting began, which conſtrained them to breake of talke, and ſtep into the daunce, in which delight they ſpent the time till Supper was ſummoned, till which aduertiſement, they were ſo well, as was Ogyer the Dane in Færia. For neuer was Dido ſuch an affectionate auditrice of Æneas, recounting the ruine of the Troians, then was the Queene of Tharſus to Palmerin: towards whō her heart was ſo enthralled, and with ſecret fire ſo waſted and conſumed, as doth the Waxe before the fire. Being ſet at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one ſide, and the Queene and Alfarano on the other, the Waiters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to giue the one the ſléeping and daungerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous & delicate, yet in effect to prouoke forgetfulneſſe. So well did the Ladies diſcharge their office, and the Princes toke this mixed drinke ſo ſubſtantially, as they could hardly forbeare ſléeping at the Table:

wherefore euery one arysing, the Quéene gaue the good night to Alfarano, who presently went to his lodging. Thé were these two sléepie Princes conducted to their chamber, where being in bed, they slept soundly, and the Quéene comming to them, accompanied with those trustie Ladies that wayted at Supper, tooke the Prince Olorico, conueying him to another bed, for he was so charmed as hée could not awake.

Afterward the Ladies departed, and the Quéene went to bedde to Palmerin, whom she abused at her owne pleasure. A matter not to bée esteemed fabulous, in that other haue béene brought into the like case, as well may witnesse Brangiena, who endured these sweet skirmishes, because she should not manifest the Villanie of Ysuel her Mistresse, and Tristram. The Quéene hauing satisfied her vnchast desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place againe, and then returned to her owne Chamber. But now this enchauntment lacking his operation, a fantasie appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Ladie Polynarda, who sayd: Ah Palmerin, disloyall Traytour and adulterer, howe much are they deceyued, that repute thée a loyall and faithfull Louer? Ah wretch vnworthie of so good a name, hauing so iniuriously forgotten mee. Dost thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of heauen: medling with a Woman more brute then brutishnesse it selfe, and thy disloyall treason against my selfe? Be assured, that if thou presently forsake not her companie, I will neuer forget thy fault, but chastise thée continually as a dissembling reprobate. So she departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this iniuria, which she would not heare, but flong away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these spéeches.

Ah vnhappie wretch that I am, thus to lose the gracious fauour of my Mistresse. These words awaked the Prince Olorico, who embracing him in his armes demaunded the cause of his sorrow, but Palmerin was so surprised

with greefe, as he would make no anſwere, but fell from the Bedde in a ſwoune. Oſorico fearing he was dead, cried out for helpe, whereat the Quéene aroſe, and taking her night Mantle about her, came to know the occaſion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin breathleſſe, ſhée called for ſo many preſent remedyes, as extinguiſhed the paſſionate fitte. Palmerin ſéeing the Quéene ſo néere him, clothed himſelfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commaunding all his people to prouide themſelues, for he would depart thence within an howres ſpace. Neither could the earneſt intreaties of the Quéene, nor courteous perſwaſions of Alfarano, cauſe him to ſtay till Dinner time: but his carriage béeing ſent before, and his men attending him, hée came to take his leaue of the Quéene, who verie ſorrowfull for this ſtraunge accident, ſaid to him at his departure. Noble Palmerin, my heart attainted with ſuch extreame gréefe, as the ſight of you doth ſomewhat remedie, expected further hope of eaſe by your preſence: but ſéeing your departure may not bée withſtood, I pray you vouchſafe to weare this Ring for my ſake, and kéepe it ſafely, till my meſſenger bring you another like vnto it. Madame (quoth Palmerin) béeing vnable to remunerate the great honours you haue done me, I will not denie you ſo ſmall a requeſt, that I may the better fulfill the bond of allegiaunce, wherin I ſtande bounde to you while I liue. Go then in the ſafe protection of the Gods, quoth ſhée, for thou haſt left me ſuch a recompence, as all my life time will be ioyfull to mée. Palmerin not vnderſtanding her darke ſpéeches, departed, putting the Ring on his finger, béeing the moſt rich and curious péece of worke that euer was ſéene: for in it was a goodly great Ruble, cutte in facets, ſo liuelyes could be deuiſed, which ſhone ſo brightly, as in the night time it ſparkled great light. The Quéene like wiſe, after ſhe had giuen great riches to the Admirall, returned to her Countrey, leading thence forwarde a verie chaſte and continent life, onely for his ſake, by whom (in ſhort time) ſhe founde her

selfe conceyued with Childe. And at the time appointed, by nature, she was deliuered of a goodlie Sonne, resembling his Father in braue constitution: whome the mother caused to bee named Palmendos, as well in memorie of his father Palmerin, as also of his Graundsire Florendos, from them deriuing his name, as being the onlie flower of Chiualrie. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in all bountie, prudence, magnanimitie, loyalty, liberalitie, courtesie and humanitie: in briefe, he had all the noble vertues that a Child might receiue from his father, as you may at large perceyue in his Historie. But because his deeds as yet serue not to our purpose, we will leaue him growing vnder his mothers charge, and returne to them whom lately we left.

Chap. XXI.

Howe Palmerin, to colour his intended and desirous voyage into Christendome, perswaded the Soldane to sende his Armie to Constantinople, and what followed thereon.

GReatlie desirous was Palmerin to returne towards the Soldane, and therefore would not make his way by Pasmeria, but iourneyed thitherwarte, where the King of Balisarca stated his comming, who came to meet him with all the Lordes and Captaines of his Armie. Thus hauing brought the Country in quiet obeysaunce of the Soldane, with theyr prisoners they returned towardes his Maiestie, sending worde before of

their ſpéedie comming. The Soldane was not a little ioyfull of theſe tydings, as alſo of the fortunate victorie againſt his enemies, wherefore he left the Cittie of Calpha, and determined to méete them at a Caſtell of pleaſure, which hee had lately edifyed, chéefely because hée would ſée the good order of his Armie, which was now conducted in better equipage, then before was wont to bée ſéene in Aſiria. The King of Baliſarca cauſed the captiues to be ledde before, who (by his commaundement) when they came in the Soldanes preſence, threw their Armour to the ground, and thrée times fell on their knées kiſſing the ground, proſtrating themſelues before him with great reuerence. All theſe ceremonies finiſhed, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, with the other Gouernours of the Fælde, came, and kiſſing his highneſſe hande, hée intertained them verie graciouſly: and after he had embraced Palmerin, he would nœdes ryde betwéene him and the King of Baliſarca. In this order rode they on to the Paltace Gate, where his Ladie Lethea and Alchidinia her Daughter, trickt vp in veſtures of ſurpaſſing value, attended their comming: and after the accuſtomed reuerences on all ſides, entered the great Hall, where the Princeſſe taking Palmerin by the hande, before her Father and all his Barons, thus ſpake.

Sir Palmerin, ſo well is your proweſſe and haughtie déedes of Armes knowne to euery one, as my prayſe cannot extoll them to aduauntage: notwithſtanding I dare ſay before my Father, and all his Lords héere preſent, that hée is ſo much indebted to you, as he can neuer returne ſufficient recompence. Theſe words vttered with ſuch affection, were noted by euery one, eſpecially the Prince Olorico, when Palmerin made this anſwere to the Princeſſe. Madame, héere may you behold the Prince of Arabia, one of the beſt knights that euer I knewe, and who hath done more ſeruice to your Father and you in this warre, then any other beſide: for with his owne hande he ſlue Gramiell, who was chiefe leader of the Phrygian Armie. Beſide,

such and so many haue béene his rare exploytes, as no one that I knowe may be equalled with him. And all this hée admitteth to your fauour, wherein hée earnestly desireth to continue, so please you to accept him for your Knight: deliuering this assurance before hand, that hereafter hée will aduenture his life in your cause, whersoeuer it shal like you to commaund him. For this cause (Madame) you may not refuse him, being the man that among all the Assirians, doth best deserue to be your seruaunt. Alchidima, who well vnderstoode to what ende his spéeches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, aduised her selfe well, and returned this answere.

So helpe me our Gods, I know well that the Prince Olorico is so puyssant and renowmed, as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Soldane my Father will not be ingratefull in the knowledge thereof, and that sufficiently I dare awarrant yée. But I desire you faire sir, to tell me howe the Quéene of Tharsus intreated you, and what is your opinion of her? In good faith, Madam, answered Palmerin, shée is one of the most honest and vertuous Ladies that euer I came in companie withall, and to whom I greatly desire to do any seruice. You haue good reason, quoth the Princesse, in that she came so farre to sée you, and discouer her loue: which other coulde as well accomplish, as good, or rather in honor beyonde her, if they might hope of anie ease in their passionate desires. Palmerin feigning to vnderstand her meaning, entred into other kinde of talke, vntill supper time, which finished, each one returned to their Chamber, when the Prince séeing himselfe alone with his Frend, thus sayd. Ah my déere Frende Palmerin, howe worthily may you be sayde to bee without compare, in all perfections that a Knight ought to haue, loue onely excepted? yet herein (if I be not deceyued) you doe for mée agaynst all reason, for a thousand times are you more beloued, then your selfe can loue ante. Notwithstanding, for this default, if so it may hée named, and for the

wordes this day vsed in my presence to Achidinia, I remaine vowed to your seruice: for in truethy you know not the good you did me, supporting my imperfection of speech when I was before my Mistresse. Yet know I not whence such imbecilitie should proceede, if not by being rauished with regarde of her celestiall countenaunce, my ouer laboured spirite forsoke me, and being too much tormented in this languishing bodie, abandoned all the partes sensatiue, placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which neuer could imagine themselues satisfied, contemplating beautie of so rare and especiall estimation. And were it not that my hope onely consisteth in you, comparing my small desert, and the excellencie of my Ladie, long ere this had my soule forsoke her infortunate habitation, which so indiscreetlie fell into these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreate you to let her vnderstand: in that I feare least shee impute my happie alteration, to want of wisedome and ciuilitie. Trust me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my vttermost abilitie, and so much will I do, as one Friend may for another, to discharge my selfe of the promise which heeretofore I made you.

And let me intreate you on mine owne behalfe, to remoue that opinion of spectall loue, which you report the Princesse beares me, being not such as you doe imagine: for (noble Prince, and my deare Friende) you neede not despayre of the benefit whereof I haue so solemnely assured you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next morning, when clothing themselues in their richest garments, they went and gaue the good morrow to the Soldane, who verie honourablie thanked them: and Palmerin espying conuenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you haue sufficient experience, that by the bountie and great fauour of the Gods, you haue obteyned victory against your enemies, to the no little content of your subiects: all which being so happily finished, base were the thought, to feare the perfection of higher enterprises.

There-

Therefore my Lord, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand with your good liking, considering your prouision for the sea is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted with your intent, before we meddle with the Brethren of Amarano, came daily in troupes to offer their seruice: that now you send your Armie to Constantinople, for your answere once heard, right soone will we embarke our selues, and set forward on our voyage. For the rest, I pray you deliuer these prisoners to be vsed as your slaues: but as for the Princes, I thinke (hauing seene the fortune of their Brethren, and their owne badde successe in Armes) that they will serue you with continuall loyaltie. My Sonne, quoth the Soldane, let all bee done as you haue appointed, for such is my confidence in you, that your intent cannot but fort to good ende: wherefore my Gallies and al things readie furnished, depart when you please, hauing first sent your Souldiers abroad.

The Prince Olorico beeing present, offered againe to go in this voyage, with like number of men, as he brought against the Brethren of Amarano: for which the Soldane greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction at his returne, as should agree with his owne content. Alchidiana taking in ill part the words of Palmerin on the Prince Oloricos behalfe, sent for him to come speake with her, which hee did, and finding her very sad and melancholy, hee demaunded if any one had done her displeasure, and what the cause might bee of her pensiueneste. Ah my deere friend, quoth shee, how can I but be agreeued, seeing no one Lady in the world, hath so many contraris fortunes as my selfe: Alas, my heart hath chosen you for my onely Lords and Friend, thinking to finde place worthy my conceite, and that your loue would answere me with the like: but in ought I can perceiue, I am too much beguiled, for you, either as ingratefull or carelesse, vse affecting speeches to me, importing no other ende, but that in learning you, I should take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagine

me ſo mutable and inconſtant, that I will or can loue anie other but you? or that my affection intirely ſetled ſo high, can brooke ſuch a downefall, as to like the man ſo much inferiour to mée? And (which moſt of all offendeth me) not contented to mocke me, in diſdaining my knowne loue, ſo diſcourteouſly would perſwade me to chooſe another? Let all our Gods be iudge, if I haue not iuſt cauſe to complaine of you, albeit I haue greater cauſe to hate and deſpiſe my owne ſelfe: for in that I haue more then deſerued your loue, yet (as too much vnwiſe) I cannot conſider, that in the heart of an ingratefull perſon, loue hath no place of certaine abyding. But ſeeing our gods haue in ſuch ſort ſubiected mee, as (againſt my will) I am conſtrained to loue mine enemie: in vaine were it for me to reſiſt againſt them, that they beholding the vnſpotted loue of the one, may in the ende puniſh the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer ſpéech, ſo many violent ſighs intercepted her, as ſhe was not able to proffer one word more, whereby *Palmerin* enforced, thus anſwered. I beſéech you Madame, croſſe me not with theſe néedeleſſe words, for although the Prince is ſo worthie to be loued, as any man that euer I ſaw: yet were I very much vnprouided of witte, and a méere ſtranger of good conſideration, if I would refuſe that ſpeciall felicitie, then which I can deſire no greater.

I knowe (ſwéete Lady) that you loue mee intirely, perſwade your ſelfe then, that my loyaltie is no leſſe, nor can death make mee gainſay the promiſes I haue made you: and were it not to the great diſaduantage of mine honour, to leaue the honourable warre your Father hath intended, which might procure each one to miſconceiue of mee, aſſure your ſelfe, that I would forſake dignities, Armes, and all, to do you the ſeruice you worthily deſerue: all which at my returne, feare not, ſhal be effected. So well could *Palmerin* diſſemble the matter, as the Princeſſe was ſomewhat better pacified, and taking his leaue of her, returned

turned to the Soldane: before whome he caused to bee brought, the Princes and Lords that were prisoners, and at his request Maulicus gaue them libertie, with this charge notwithstanding, that they should serue him in his warre. Which that they might the better accomplish, he commanded them horse, armour, and all other things necessarie, making all possible spéed could be deuised, that his armie might set forwards to sea.

Chap. XXII.

How Palmerin sailing with the Soldanes armie, was brought by tempest into the Sea of Allemaigne, where hee tooke landing with the prince Olorico.

QVickly Palmein consented to embarke the Armie, desiring the Prince Olorico to accompanie him to the Hauen, to make choyse of the best vessel for themselues: and surueying them all, they found a goodly Carricke, new and very well appointed, wherein many prisoners lay chained, which had béene taken by the Soldanes gallies, and other Rouers of the Mores, of whom Palmerin demaunded what people they were, they answered that they were christians, and had long time liued there in that thraldome. Palmerin not a little glad of these newes, asked of what Countrey they were, whereupon one of them that could well speake the Arabian tongue, answered. Wee are all of Allemaigne, to whome Fortune hath exceéded in cruelties. These words were maruailous welcome to Palmerin, and for which inwardly he thanked his

his God: but the better to diſſemble his ioy, he thus ſpake. This Countrey ſhould ſeeme to be very farre from hence, becauſe I neuer heard thereof before. So finding this veſſell fitte for his purpoſe, hee appointed it for himſelfe and the Prince Olorico, diſcharging all other that were therein, two Knights onely excepted, to whoſe charge hee committed the Chriſtians: cauſing his Horſes, Tents, and all other neceſſaries, to be carried abroad, as well the Prince Oloricos as his owne, accompliſhing euerie thing in ſuch order, as within three dayes after the Souldiers were readie to depart: and nowe the day is come to launch away, when the Soldane and other Taborlanes, accompanied the King of Baliſarca to the Hauen. But the faire Alchidiana would not bee ſéene, by reaſon of her great greefe for her Friendes departure: for when ſhee came to take her leaue of Palmerin in his Chamber, ſhee fell (in a manner) dead at his féete, ſoone after ſhee deliuered theſe lamentable ſpeeches.

This is no common farewell my beloued Lord, which you now take of me, but say it is my very laſt adiew: for my heart perſwades mee that I ſhall neuer ſée you more, becauſe the extremities of my ſorrowes are ſuch, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adiew my ſweete Frende, who in ſtéede of my ioy and comfort, leaueſt me in deſpayre, which neuer can haue ende but by immediate death. God Madame ſay not ſo, quoth Palmerin, for I hope right ſoone to ſée you againe. So leauing her, Olorico and he went towards the Hauen: the Prince béeing ſo paſſionate to leaue her ſight, by whoſe ſweéte lookes his life was maintained: as had not his friendly companion comforted him, vnable was hee to departe the Pallace. But béeing nowe come to the Port, and féeling the winde and ſea ſeruiceable, loth to triſle the time with any longer ſtay, they came to take their leaue of the Souldane, who tooke great care for their contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commending to him the diſpoſition of all his affayres, ſayd. My

noble

noble Sonne and friend, I vowe to you in presence of our Gods, that if you returne hither againe with victorie, with such honours I will endowe you, as shall be sufficient for the whole worlde to talke on. Palmerin humbly kissing his hande, went aboorde, the Marriners hoysing sayle, launched foorthe into the Sea, with such a braue noyse of Drums, Trompets, Clarions, Cornets, Fifes, and other instruments, as though Heauen and earth would haue encountred together. Palmerin thus floting on the gouernment of Neptune, imagined how with safety he might forsake his companie, wherefore he commanded to vnbinde all the Christians. For (quoth hee to Olorico) seeing they are Marriners, and well skilled in the art of Nauigation, they may stande vs in good steede, if time so require, or any sodaine tempest should assaile vs: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sweare their faithfull seruice to him.

The night being come, and he seeing that euerie one slept soundly, called two of the Christians, and in the Allemaigne tongue thus beganne. My Friends, giue thanks to God for your fortune, in that you Christians haue founde one of your faith and religion, who hath good hope shortly to deliuer you from these heathen hellhoundes: therefore set feare apart, and regarde well your Quadrant, if you can compasse any meane to get the coast of Allemaigne. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, answered, that they would accomplish his commandement, and therefore he should repose his trust in them. About midnight, as God would, began a great tempest and blustring of winde, so that in despight of the Pylots and Marriners, the Fleete was seuered in many parts: but the Christians perceiuing that this winde serued well for their auaile, knew so well how to order their course, that in short time they got farre inough from their companie, and thus continued the winde for tenne or twelue dayes, for which Palmerin deuoutly thanked God.

So happily ſtrained Palmerin with his Allemaignes, that one of them at length tolde him they were neere the ſtraites of Gibraltare, for which Palmerin not a little ioyfull, ſaid, that they might paſſe Spaine without any feare, and ſo the ſooner reach Allemaigne. But when they began to coaſt the ſtraight, the Turkiſh mariners were amazed, ſaying that the Chriſtians knew not their courſe, being more then eight hundred thouſand leagues forth of their compaſſe.

Palmerin fearing to be diſcovered before he came to his intent, anſwered in choler, that the Chriſtians knewe their courſe much better then they did, and they to prate no more on paine of their lines: which threatning preſently drove them all to ſilence. Afterwarde they ſayled with ſo good winde, as they toke landing at a Port in Allemaigne, which at this day is called Tolledo, when the Chriſtians ſaid to Palmerin, how that was the place where they were borne, where (if ſo he pleaſed) they deſired their libertie. Palmerin aſſuring them of their requeſt, anſwered that he himſelfe would land there, and therfore went firſt on ſhore, feigning to ſeeke freſh water, and all things accompliſhed to his owne deſire, he cauſed his Horſe to be brought forth, and Olorico's likewiſe, who was importunate to beare him companie. No ſooner was Palmerin on ſhore, but he kneeled downe, giuing thanks to God for his ſafe deliuerance. The Marchants and Marrines of the Citie, ſeeing them whome they thought loſt in the Sea more then tenne yeeres before, were greatly abaſhed, welcomming them home with exceeding ioy, but they anſwered, that they ought rather to thanke the Knight in greene Armour, for hee deliuered vs from the Moores and Infidels, without requeſt of any ranſome.

Olorico amazed at theſe ſignes of ioy, as alſo when he ſawe Palmerin pray, knewe not well what to thinke, which Palmerin preſently perceiuing, and to reſolue him of all doubts whatſoeuer, ſayd. No longer neede I know my god

Lord

Lord and Friende, to hide the affaires and secrets of my heart from you, know therefore that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Empereurs Court of Allemaigne. But that which most of all grieueth me, is, that I am constrayned to forsake your companie, and returne againe to my Lorde, for to much should I offend my God, to go with you to the Soldanes service. Wherefore my louing friend, let me intreate you to holde me excused, swearing to you by the faith of a Knight, that whether else it shall like you to go, I will accomplish your minde in any thing. I intreate you likewise, to entertaine al my Squires and Gentlemen into your seruice, and among them to share all my treasure in the Shippe, because I will haue nothing with me but my Horse and armour. And notwithstanding all this, feare not to present your selfe before the Soldane and Alchidiana: for to them will I write such matter of you, as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honour as euer they did mee. If heauen so fauour mee as I may come to the knowledge of my father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumbe, was onely but to awaite opportunitie, when with safety I might escape thence.

If Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be iudged of him nowe? notwithstanding, hee loued *P*almerin so perfectly, as hee returned him this answere. Although Syr Palmerin, wee are of contrary faith and opinion, yet hath your noblenesse and humanitie gained such priuiledge ouer me, that as you haue long time liued a Christian among the Turks, so for your sake will I liue a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sort as you did, and neuer shall any occasion force mée to forsake you, till you haue found your Father, and know if he be discended of the Soldanes bloud. No honour will it be for me nowe, to returne again to the Assirian Princes, and as for my people, I force not though they go backe againe with my treasure: for on my Knighthood, I will bee no richer then you, nor will

reserue

reſerue any thing with mee, then what belongs to a Knight errant, which is Horſe and Armour. For the reſt, let Fortune do the worſt ſhe can, I hope for all this, one day to be King of Arabia. Then noble friend, be not offended, for I will beare you companie, if death and ſtrong impriſonment doo not withhold mee. Palmerin embracing him, ſaide.

Ah worthie Prince, ſo noble is your minde, and repleate with fidelitie, as perſwade your ſelfe to find me your loyall Brother, and fellow in Armes, neuer to forſake you while I can lift my Sword, ſo pleaſe you to abide with mee. So calling the cheefeſt of them in the ſhip, they ſayde as much to them as you haue heard, commaunding them not to flit from Arabia before they heard ſome other tydings. As for their ſtrange conceit at theſe newes, I bequeath to your iudgements, yet durſt they not gainſay their Maiſters, but launching into the deepe, ſayled backe againe into their own Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Citie, to refreſh themſelues, and the next morning, after they had taken leaue of the Merchants, they deliuered, they ſet forward on their iourney. Continuing their trauaile three daies together, at length they mette a Knight, who ſeeing them armed after the Turkiſh manner, ſayde. Gentlemen, God ſaue ye, if I ſhould not ſeeme troubleſome to you becauſe I iudge you to be ſtrangers, I would gladly knowe if you could tell me any tidings of two Knights, which long ſince left this Countrey. Howe were they named? (quoth Palmerin) Syr ſaide the Knight, one of them is Trineus, ſonne to our dread Lord the Emperour, and the other, the moſt valiant Palmerin d' Oliua. Two yeeres and more ſince they left the Court, without any newes what became of them, ſauing that wee heard they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conuayed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing ſo ſorrowfull for their loſſe, as euery houre his death is expected. May it be (quoth Palmerin)

that

that all this while Trineus is not returned? What danger will noble Allemaigne receiue, by losing their young Prince? Ouercome with exceeding griefe and sorrow by report of these vnhappie tidings, to himselfe he beganne in this maner.

What shall I do? dare I be so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Mistresse? what sufficient excuse can I make for the leue of her brother? Doubtlesse, if it were such a hell to me, to finde the meane for my departure, from that long captiuitie in the Soldanes Court, much more will it be to me now in the search of the Prince, for without him I dare not approch the Emperours presence. While he thus secretly discoursed with himselfe, he became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his senses: which was the cause, that without any further enquirie, the Allemaigne knight departed from them: when Olorico, amazed at this suddain alteration, said. How now Sir Palmerin, what hath moued you to this heauinesse? I beseech you conceale not the cause from me: for if it be by any offence, that the knight offered which spake to you, some shall I deliuer him his penance. Therefore tell me I pray you, for vndoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, vntill you haue acquainted me with the truth. Palmerin knowing how deerly y Prince loued him, and that for his sake he had left Country, parents and friends, reposing on his loyaltie, imparted his loue to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princesse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, aduising him to compasse some secret speech with his Ladie, of whome hee might learne how to recouer her lost brother, and the faire Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following this counsell, pacified himselfe, and kept himselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to any.

Chap. XX.

How Palmerin by the meanes of Vrbanillo his Dwarfe, ſpake with his Lady Polynarda, with whom he ſtayed fiue daies, to recompence ſome part of his long abſence, and to the great contentment of them both.

Vch expedition in their iourney made theſe noble companions, that at length they arriued neere a caſtle, which was foure leagues from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was, diſpoſed to hunting for the delight of the Ladies: but cheefely to expell his owne melancholy, for the leſſe of his ſonne, as alſo to recreate the Princeſſe Polynarda, who ſhadowing the cauſe by her Brothers abſence, lamented continually for her noble Friend Palmerin, of whome ſhee could vnderſtand no tydings, albeit ſhe had trauailed her verie vttermoſt endeuours, which forced her to ſo manie extreame imaginations, as the very leaſt was worſe then death it ſelfe.

The Emperours trayne lodging each way about the Caſtle, hindered our two Knights from any good hoſtage, ſo that they were conſtrained to abide in a little ſimple houſe, where they demaunded of a Courtier that lay there, what time the Emperour would depart thence, who anſwered, that his highneſſe was minded that day to returne to Gaunt, to conferre with the Princes electours of ſpeciall affaires concerning the Empire. Palmerin ioyfull heereof, cauſed his Horſe to bee bridaled, and accompanied with Olorico,

Olorico, went and ambushed themselues in a little thicket, neere the high way where the Emperour must needes passe, to the ende he might beholde his Ladie Polynarda. Palmerin attending her comming who was the onely support of his life, his heart leapt with conceite of his ioy to come, yet trembled likewise because hee durst not present himselfe before the imperiall maiestie, without the noble Trineus.

Soone after, by the Guarde of Archers that came formost, hee well perceiued the Emperour was at hand, when remembring the honors and fauours he had receiued in his Court, the teares trickled downe his cheekes, cheefely for want of his highnesse sonne, who was so especially committed to his trust, then followed the Empresse, and with her the faire Princesse Polynarda, clothed all in black, witnessing by her outwarde habit, the secret sorrowes of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her priuat greefes, yet assailed with a sodaine motion, shee gaue such a sigh as Palmerin easily heard it, which troubled him in such sort, as without the assurance of Olorico, hee had fallen downe from his Horse. Polynarda beholding his sodaine alteration, without any regarde of her Mother, called Vrbanillo the Dwarfe to her, who since his comming from England neuer boudged from her, and to him she sayd. Hast thou heeretofore (Vrbanillo) seene these two knights, which shaddow themselues in the wood side while wee passe by? No trust mee Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) I neuer sawe them to my remembrance. I pray thee, said she, ride to them so fast as thou canst, and demaunde of them from me, of whence they are, and if they can tell any tydings of thy maister, and my Brother Trineus. The Dwarfe, who was more then a Doctor in such affaires, dissembling that his Horse would stale, suffered the traine to passe by, and then rode towards the knights, who were deuising on the Princesse beautie. Palmerin well knowing Vrbanillo, and seeing him come in such hast, was not a little glad, thinking

now he ſhould heare ſome newes of his Miſtreſſe, where-fore he ſaide to Olonco, I pray you let vs goe meete this Horſeman, for I thinke his returne is onely to vs. Nowe was the Dwarffe come to them, and hauing humbly ſaluted them, ſaid, I beſeech you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour, or are ſtraungers, for the Ladie whome I ſerue, is verie deſirous to knowe, and that for matters nerely concerning her, whereof if you can any way truely reſolue her, your rewarde ſhall aunſwere your owne contentment: What Vrbanillo? quoth Palmerin, lifting vp his Beuer, didſt thou not knowe thy Maiſter? Oh Heauen, (quoth the Dwarffe,) praiſed be thy maker for euer for this aduenture. And moued with extreame ioy, he fell at his Maiſters feete, ſaying, Oh my Lord, what comfort will this be to the Princeſſe Polynarda, when ſhee ſhall vnderſtande your preſence? and not without iuſte cauſe: for by this meane is ſhee deliuered from the greateſt torments in the worlde. And that nothing may want to furniſh this long expected ioy, tell me if the Knight in your companie, be the Prince Trineus or no? It is not hee, quoth Palmerin, for it is more then a yeare ſince, that of him, and faire Engliſh Agriola (after that I vnfortunate loſt them) heard anie certaine report. For this cauſe Vrbanillo, it behoues thee to be faithfull and ſecrete, not diſcouering my being heere to any but my Ladie, of whome thou muſt learne, by what meanes I may beſt come to ſee her. The Dwarffe taking his leaue of his Maiſter, turned his Horſe to be gone: but comming backe ſuddainlie againe, ſaide, Is this ſir Ptolome that is with you? Madame Brionella will not be a litle glad to hear of him likewiſe. Nor is it he, (quoth Palmerin) I loſt him in company with the reſt. God will reſtore them one day againe, ſaide the Dwarffe, ſo giuing the ſpurres to his horſe, he galloped till he came to the Princeſſe, who ſeeing him returned in ſuch haſte, knew not well what to thinke: but fearing to be diſcouered by a Knight that accompanied her, determined not to requeſt his tidings, vntill ſhee

came

came home into her Chamber. But neuer was poore Louer in greater agony, when she expected her friend in some priuat place, then was the faire Princesse at this present: wherefore, so soone as shée came to her Chamber, shée called for the Dwarffe, who being come, shée said, I pray thée Vrbanillo, by the reuerend dutie thou owest mée, whence are the two knights, and what answere did they make thée? They are such sweet Madam, quoth the Dwarffe, as when all the men in the world could tell no tydings of, my selfe by happie fortune haue found: for by them I bring you the Key of Paradise, if your self wil but find the meane to enter. Tush, I pray thée quoth the Princesse, iest not with me in this sort, for now is no time of sport or meriment: tell mée who they are I desire thée: Know then fair Madam, quoth he, that one of them is my Maister Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commends him to your gracious fauour, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speak with you, because he wold not be knowne to the Emperor, or any other of ỹ Court. How welcome these long expected newes were to the Princesse, I leaue to the opinion of long absent friends. O heauens, quoth she, doth Palmerin liue, and is so near at hand? now hath my hart his only desired comfort: and such is my hope, that seeing he is come, my brother (by his meanes) shall not be long hence, to such good fortune are all his actions destenied. Presently she ran to tell Brionella these newes, who likewise was exceeding ioyfull, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her Prolome. Whereupon they concluded togither, that Palmerin should the night following come to the Gardein, where first his sweet Amours were sollicited, and by a Ladder of Cords he should ascend their Chamber. This resolution set downe, the Dwarffe departed to execute his charge, when Polinarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deare friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the ioy my heart conceiueth, that was so late in such surpassing heauinesse?

What will my Ladies now thinke, when they behold their Miſtreſſe ſo pleaſant? Let them ſpeake what pleaſe them, (quoth Brionella) ſhould you render them account of your behauiour: yet this I thinke, that your diſcretion is ſo good, when you haue ſeene the onelye comforte for your cares, that you can ſo wel diſſemble your thoughts, as the meſt warie eye can hardly diſcerne you. Well haue you ſaid, (quoth the Princeſſe) if loue could be gouerned by wiſedome: but the pleaſure which the wiſeſt haue receyued by his rules, hath in the ende diſcouered their folly and folly. Such were the ſpeeche betweene theſe two Ladies, attending the night in good deuotion, when each one thought to ſée her Lorde and beſt beloued, that their long ſorrowes might ſome what be qualified.

The Dwarfe being gone on his meſſage as you haue heard, the Knights repoſed themſelues on the greene graſſe till Sunne ſetting, that they might the more couertly enter the Cittie: and the time being come that they would ſette forward, Palmerin ſaid to Olorico. My Lorde, I will take this by waye which leadeth to the Cittie, for I intende before I depart, to heare ſome newes from my Miſtreſſe. Goe which way you pleaſe (quoth the Prince) yet muſt I néedes meruaile at you, that you would bee ſo long abſent from ſuch an excellent Princeſſe: truſt me, Alchidiana is fayre, yet may not ſhee be equalled with your Ladye. The greefes I haue endured, ſaid Palmerin, by my long abſence, are not to be ſpoken off: yet could I no way compaſſe my returne ſooner. By this time they were come to the Cittie, and to a lodging appointed them by Vrbanillo, who being now come to his Maiſter, deliuered the meſſage hee was commaunded. Palmerin vnderſtanding his Miſtreſſe pleaſure, preſently vnarmed himſelfe, and wrapped a ſcarlet Mantle about him, taking his truſtie Sworde vnder his Arme: hée intreated Olorico, to ſtaye there till hée returned, or heard further tydings from him, leauing Vrbanillo in his companie, with charge to vſe him as his owne perſon.

Hée

He beeing come to the walles of Iouelis Paradise, founde the Ladder readie prepared for him, whereby hee made a speedie passage: and finding Brionella there staying his comming, embracing her sweetly, saide. Trust me Ladie, the want of Sir Ptolome your Freende, doth not a little greeue me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring him with me. Ah my Lord quoth she, right happie is your comming: for your presence hath beene heere most of all desired. But albeit shee sette a good countenaunce on this answere, yet were her secret sorrowes innumerable, being deceiued of the comfort shee expected. Palmerin who thought hee stayed too long from his desire, woulde trifle no further time, but entred his Ladies Chamber: who angerly had throwne her selfe on a Pallet, because shee staied to speake with Brionella, then falling on his knee before her, hee offered to kisse her hande, which with dissembling disdaine she would not suffer him, saying. Truelie you shall receiue no fauour of mee, before I knowe certainlie who you are: for I stand in doubt to bee deceiued, and that you are some other then my Palmerin, seeing you haue been so long time from me, and (which is more) would neuer vouchsafe to send to me.

When taking a light in her hand, and earnestly beholding him, hardlie coulde shee sette it from her againe: when welcomming him with an infinite number of sweete kisses, shee saide. Now knowe I well that this is my *Palmerin*: what Countrey might be so daungerous, or fortune so contrarie, that could withholde you all this while from mee? O that it might haue stoode with mine honor, for my selfe to seeke you forth: with good will could I haue endured the trauaile, yea much more then you haue done for mee. How often (considering the daungers of the Sea) hath very death surprised mee? and into how many sundrie opinions haue I fallen, sometime to disguise my selfe into a mans attire, to enter the estate of a Knight errant, and beginne a search which neuer shoulde bee ended, till I founde you? for

For this hath bene receiued as a generall rule, that by to long ſufferance and expectation, one may endure a thouſand deaths: and thinke not but the very leaſt of my afflictions, haue bene of force to depriue my life. Conſider that griefe, deſire, remembrance, languor, ſorrow, hope, ſuſpition, teares, complaints, and other ſuch like paſſions common in loue, continually beate vpon the heart with burning affection: and to ſuch inconuenience their iſſue growes, as the vitall ſpirit is chaſed from the bodie. For Gods ſake Madame, quoth Palmerin, leaue theſe wounding ſpeeches, and ſuffer me to take a litle life, in beholding that which is no leſſe diuine then humane, for my offence deſerues not theſe accuſations. Then diſcouered he all his fortunes paſſed, which drowe the Princeſſe to no litle admiration, when ſhe ſaid.

Beleeue me my Lord, ſeeing that by your meanes my Brother Trineus is loſt, for my loue, and to ſatiſfie your promiſe to my Lord and Father, you muſt needes goe finde him againe. That ſhall I Madame, quoth Palmerin, but before I begin this iourney, let me intreate that fauourable regard: which is the comfort in loue, and vniteth life & ſoule togither, which heretofore you haue graunted, and I hope will not now deny me. What may I iudge (quoth ſhe) of your conſtancie ſince your abſence? for not long ſince I was ſollicited with a viſion, which tolde me that you committed breach of loyaltie with a Queene, to my no litle griefe: although full often I reproued you therefore, to cauſe you forſake that ſinne, when me ſeemed the Queene thus anſwered. Be thou aſſured Polynarda, that although Palmerin eſteeme thee aboue all other, yet ſhall he leaue ſome part of his loue with me. Hearing theſe words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you ſeemed to be moued, and ſo forſaking her, followed me: and herewith I awaked, finding (indeed) my face beſprent with teares, and my heart ouercome with inſupportable griefe. Palmerin abaſhed hereat, remembred what entertainment the Queene of *Tharſus* made him at the Banquet, of her ſundry delights and great fauours for

his

his arriuall, her piercing, amorous, and alluring speeches, wherewith incessantly she did sollicite him: and such was conceit, as he verely perswaded himselfe, that by enchaunted practises she had abused him, whereupon he said. I sweare to you Madame, by the religious vowes of our loue, that neuer did I commit such wrong against you: if the Queene of *Tharsus* of whome you haue spoken, did not one night deceiue me by an enchaunted drinke, which vnwittingly I receiued as I sate at supper, causing me to lose both sence and vnderstanding: and so acquainted her with his dreame that night likewise.

Doubtlesse my Lord, quoth she, considering the extremitie of her affection, she practised some meanes to compasse her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and beleeuing you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and such like speeches, they spent that night, and foure more afterward, all which time Palmerin was kept vnseene in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attiring her selfe in her wonted mourning garments, and shaping her countenance to her former sorrow, shrowded her pleasures past, and thus we will leaue them, returning to our Assirians saying on the Sea.

Chap.

The famous Historie

Chap. XXIIII.

How after the tempest was past, the Soldans Armie assembled togither, & came against Constantinople, where by the Emperours power they were discomfited: & the King of Balisarca, his sonne Guerefin, and diuers other great Lords of Turkie slaine.

THe tempest which had driuen Palmerin on Hercules pillars, after many log and contagious stormes, began now to cease, the Sea being faire and calme, and the windes very quiet, whereupon the king of Balisarca Generall of the armie, in short time assembled togither the most part of his Fleete, and came vpon the Coast of Natolia, where hee attended the rest of his Foystes and Galleyes. And hauing there stayed about fifteene dayes, among all the Shippes that came, hee could heare no tidings of Palmerins Carrick: the long stay whereof caused him to doubt, least he had vnhappily perished in the Sea, and ouercome with excessing greefe, he thus began.

Ah gentle Palmerin, the flower of all Chiualrie, in luckelesse howre didst thou betake thy selfe to the Sea: what answere shall I make the Soldane for the losse of thee, and the Prince Olorico, being so especially committed to my trust? Nowe cannot Fortune bee so fauourable to vs as she would: for by thy losse I vtterlye dispayre of expected victorie. To cut off these bootelesse complaints, he was counselled by the Lords, Knights and auncient Captaines, to sette forward

forward to Constantinople, to discharge themselues of their promise to the Soldane, least in returning without dealing with the enemie, they should be reputed for fearefull & faint-harted Cowards. Setting their sailes to the wind, at length they came to the Bosphor. Now was the Emperour very aged and sickly, having altogether committed the superintendaunce of the Empire, to his sonne Caniano, who had a sonne aged seauenteene yeares, named Carileos. And being aduertised of the comming of so manie Assirians, Turkes, and Moores, hee sent to all the Christian Princes for succour: the greater parte whereof, was there as nowe arriued, with resolute determination, to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours scoutes had espied the enemis to enter the straight, yong Carileos beholding the knightes on all sides, some on the walles, and other in the Fielde, came and kneeled before his Graundfather, earnestlye desiring him to graunt him his Knighthood. For my Lord, quoth he, a better time and occasion cannot be then nowe. The aged Emperour graunted his request, and with the teares in his eyes, said. In the name of God, my Sonne, maist thou receiue thy order, and to the glorious maintenaunce of the Christian faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture so soone.

Presentlye arose the yong knight Carileos, and clasping on his Helmet, was the first that went forth of the Cittie, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand Footemen, to hinder the landing of the enemies: which a great while hee did with such valour, as the Hauen was chaunged with the blood of the slaughtered. The King of Balisarca hearing thereof, commaunded his Archers to their taske, whose shafts flewe so thicke in such multitude, as it were the Hayle that falleth from the Cloudes: and on the other side hee gotte thither thousande men on land, who assayled the Christians so furiouslye, as yong Carileos was slaine, and a great number of noble

persons

personages, which was the cause that the Christians retired to the verie Gates of the Citie. The Prince Caniano aduertised of his sonnes death, and the great daunger wherein the Armie was, issued forth of the Cittie with eight thousande horsmen, and foure thousand hardie Archers, who like hungry Tygers ranne vpon the Turkes, beating them to the earth in such heapes, as twelue thousand of them were slain at this encounter, and the rest repulsed backe to their ships, where many entred for sauegard of their liues, and a great number were miserably drowned in the Sea.

At this mishap the King of Balisarca was greatly enraged, who with his power presently went on shore: the fight enduring so cruell and bloudie three howres space, as neyther side could be reputed likeliest of victorie. In this encounter ended their liues, the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Guerefin, and a great number of Cailiffes and Taborlanes of Turkie: and of the Christians, the Prince Caniano, with diuers other great Princes and Lords, whose deathes are to this day lamented in Greece: yet were the Pagans and Christians so animated one against another, as darke night was the cause of their seperation. When the Emperour vnderstood the death of his Sonne and Nephew, he was readie to die with conceit of griefe: but seeing the necessitie of the time required other matter, then sorrowing teares and vnprofitable lamentations, hee presently dispatched Postes and Messengers, to haften the succour was comming from Christendome. In short time arriued a mightie Christian power, and despight of the Turkes entred the Cittie, when the Emperour presently sent tenne thousand into the Field, and prouided a signall for the other, to set fire among the Turkish Fleete, at what time they receiued the signe from the Cittie. The Infidelles seeing the Christians to sallie abroad, left their Shippes and came to meete them: whereupon the Christians diuided themselues into squadrons, and running furiously on the Moores, Arabies, and Assirians, made such hauocke and slaughter of them,

them, as happie was he coulde best defend himselfe. Then suddainly was the signall of fire made, on the highest steple in Constantinople, to the Emperours power waiting on the Sea: which immediately launching among the Turkish Fleete, sincke the greater part of them, and burned the rest with their wilde fire. When the Turkes beheld this stratageme, and that they were now destitute of any helpe, they beganne to faint: so that at the comming of the Emperour, who came himself vpon them, with a fresh sallie of fiue thousand men, they were all slaine, except a fewe that escaped into Galleyes, that drake from the rest vpon sight of the pollicie. Great was the spoyle gotten by this conquest, which the Christians taking with them, entred Constantinople, where they gaue God thankes for their happie victorie.

But although the Emperour sawe his enemies vanquished, after the Princes were departed that came to his succour, right grieuous was the losse of his Sonnes to him: wherefore his Lordes aduised him, to send for his daughter the Queene Griana, and King Tarsius her husband, and to commit the gouernment of the Empire to him. For the accomplishment of this generall determination, the Duke of Pera was appointed Lord Ambassadour, being one of the most auncient Princes of Greece: who accompanied with many noble Gentlemen, made such expedition in his iourney, as hee arriued in Hungaria, before the King and his Queene Oriana, whose sorrowes may not be expressed for the death of her brother. When they vnderstood the Emperours pleasure, they resolued on their obedience, which caused the King to sende for two of his Nephewes, who were sonnes to the Duchesse of Ormeda his sister, the one named Promptaleon, and the other Oudin, to be his Lieutenants in Hungaria during his absence. Vpon their presence, before the Ambassador of Constantinople the King Tarsius tooke their oathes, for their loyall and faithfull gouernment. But because we must now reuiue matter long expected, as concerning the noble Prince Florendos of Macedon, I am

loth

loth to ſpende any further time in vaine, and will now re-
port what happened at Buda, during the time of this deter-
mination.

Chap. XXV.

How the Prince Florendos of Macedon, accompanied with none but his Cozin Fronato, departed from his Countrey in a Pilgrims habit, iourneying in Hungaria, where he killed the King Tariſius: and how he and the Queene Griana were taken priſoners.

LOrdings, let vs nowe remember how after that Palmerin was departed from Macedon, hauing recouered the health of the olde king Primaleon, father to the noble Prince Florendos, who during the time of Palmerins preſence, was ſomewhat more pleaſant then of long time he had beene, appeaſing his complaints for the Princeſſe Griana, by the happie tidings of the ancient knight, that ſent the ſhield to Palmerin at his knighting. But now Florendos hearing no newes of him, returned to his former heauines, and languiſhed much more then euer he did: ſo that when the Macedonian Princes & Lords preſſed him with continuall requeſt of marriage, that hee might haue iſſue to ſucceede in the Kingdome, hee was conſtrained by their importunitie, to make them promiſe of their requeſt, crauing a yeeres reſpite before, in which time he intended to make a deuout voyage, whereto they conſented in reſpect of his promiſe. Nowe did he not demaunde

this

this time of his Subiects, for any desire he had to bee a Pilgrim, or any superstitious zeale to the Spanishe Leather Cape, Shoes, Frocke, and such like: but for he longed to see his sweete mistresse Griana, whom he serued in heart with such loyall affection, as till death he would not marrie with out her consent and licence.

The day being come that he would depart, he toke his leaue of all the Princes, Lords and Gentlemen, and accompanied with Frenato Father to Ptolome, both caped after the manner of Pilgrimes: mounted on two Palfrayes of small value, and without anie weapons, except each of them a little short Dagger, departed the Cittie, making such haste in their iourney, as they arriued at Buda, where as then the King kept his Court, minding to set forwarde to Constantinople. There were they lodged in one of the best Osteries in the Cittie, and the next morning went to the great Church, where the Queene was euer wont to heare diuine seruice: and so well it fortuned, that at the time these two Pilgrims entred the Church, the Queene her selfe was in the Chappel. Florendos who was marualously disguised, stoode not in doubt to bee knowne: but seeing the Chaplaine had begunne seruice, hypocritically he approched to Aultar with holie deuotion, to the ende hee might the better beholde the Queene. Regarding her sweete countenaunce, he remembring the courtesies he sometime receyued of her, and what exceeding affection as then shee bare him: but now being in the custodie of another, and he out of hope to haue any more gracious pittie, his spirits were so wonderfully troubled, and so manie passionate sighes hee breathed from his heart, as he fell downe in a swoune, that euerie one reputed him for dead. The Queene, who manie times had noted his pitieous lookes, commaunded Tolomestra one of her Ladies, (she that had the charge of her in the Tower of Constantinople, that shee should go vnderstand the Pilgrims disease, and do the best to recouer him againe, which Frenato had done before she came.

Tolome-

Tolomeſtra demanded of Frenata, the cauſe of his ſickneſſe, who anſwered. Madame, we are newly come from the holy voyage of Ieruſalem, and he (who was wont to endure many vehement alterations, which the contrary ayres by the waye doo breede) feeling the freſhe coulenelle of this Church, hath therewith beene ouercome as it ſhould appeare.

My friendes, quoth Tolomeſtra, withdraw your ſelues to the Court, and enquire for the Gallery, in which place the Queene doth daily giue her almes: there ſhall be prouided ſome remedie for you, and I will giue you certaine precious Drugges, which ſhall hereafter comfort you, when any ſuch humour offendeth you. A thouſand thankes (good Ladie) ſayd Frenato, we will doo as you haue commaunded vs. Seruice being ended, they went to the Gallery, whither ſoone after came the Queene, and opening the Caſement of her Windowe as ſhee was wont, ſtood to behold the Almes giuen to the poore Pilgrims. Frenato and his companion had gotten ſo neare the Windowe, that the Queene might eaſily heare any thing they ſayd. After moſt humble reuerence made, Florendos thus began. Moſt excellent Queene, renowned beyond all other Ladies, among ſo many of your daily charities, may it pleaſe you to pittie the moſt poore and miſerable knight in the world: The Queene at theſe wordes knewe him, and was in ſuch feare leaſt the King ſhould know of his being there, as ſhe could hardly ſuſtaine her ſelfe, but ſatte downe on a Pallet by Tolomeſtra, who ſeeing her ſuddaine alteration, ſayd. What ayle you Madame, that your colour changeth in ſuch ſort?

Ah my truſtie friende (quoth the Queene) the Pylgrime that ſwouned in the Church, is the Prince Florendos of Macedon. I pray thee goe to him, and entreate him preſently to depart hence: for if the King come to the knowledge of him, all the worlde cannot ſhielde him from death. For the reſt, will him followe no further, what he loſt by his

owne

owne default: and that the fauour héeretofore graunted, my duetie and honour now forbiddeth mée. Tolomestra entring the Gallerie, saide the message to the Prince Florendos, who vnderstanding this sharpe answere, shed manie teares with greefe, saying. Ah my déere Fréend Tolomestra, desire my gracious mystresse Griana, that in requitall of so manie tormenting passions, which nowe twentie yéeres I haue patiently endured, shée will afford me once to speake with her, and kisse her hand before I depart. Tolomestra brought this answere to the Quéene, perswading her to heare him speake, which shée might do with safetie, vnder colour of requesting to know the marualles of Palestine, with the precious and worthie monuments of the holie Citie.

I am content to graunt so much (quoth the Quéene) but I greatly feare the issue of his spéeches, go then and cause him secretly to enter. Ah gentle habit, where-vnder many doe often beginne their delight, which in the ende proues worse then Tragicall. The two Pilgrims béeing entred, Florendos fell on his knée before his Ladie, and kissing her hand, sayd.

O my God, thy name be praysed through all worldes, permitting mee to kisse these handes so long time desired. Sée héere sweete Mistresse your Florendos, that with such loyaltie hath loued you, and hitherto hath kept the fayth, which hée vowed to you at Constantinople in your fathers Pallace, and which no death can make me falsifie or change, vnlesse you please to suffer me take another wife, wherein I shall satisfie the importunate requests, which daylie the Lords of Macedon make to me for marriage, that I might leaue them an heyre of my linage. Which is a matter so grieuous to me, in that I failed of you to whom I first gaue my fayth, as I resolued neuer to take any other, which I knowe not how I shall performe without losse of my life. As he thought to haue proceéded further in spéeches, and the Quéene hauing not answered one worde, vnhappily the

King entred, which the Quéne beholding, ſwouned with feare. But ſhe was immediately recouered by her Ladyes. When the King ſéing her in ſuch eſtate, and in what ſecrecie the two Pilgrims talked with her, hée gathered ſome ſuſpition, and ouercome likewiſe with the force of iealouſie, ſaide.

Madame, what make you here at this time? and in ſo ſlender companie of Ladies, how dare you ſtande talking with theſe Straungers? I woulde gladly knowe the matter, and what hath made them ſo bold to enter your Chamber? Florendos ſéeing his affaires to growe from badde to worſe, and that his Ladie was ſo threatned, entring into choler, he drew his Dagger from vnder his Frocke, and taking the King by the boſome, ſaid: Tariſius, I will not hyde from thée who I am: it is more then twentie yéeres ſince I promiſed thy death, and nowe I am come in perſon to performe it. With theſe woordes he ſtabde the Dagger to his heart, and downe fell Tariſius dead at his féete: which when the Quéne ſaw, ſhe on the other ſide fell in a ſwonne again. Frenato greatly amazed hereat, ſayde to Florendos. For Gods ſake my Lord let vs ſhift for our ſelues, before this miſfortune bée blazed abroade. Content thy ſelfe, ſayd Florendos, neuer ſhall it bee reported that I left my Ladie to ſuffer for mine offence: or that for the feare of death, which is the ende of all miſhaps, I will endure ſuch intollerable anguiſhes and torments.

Now by ill fortune one of the Pages of honour attended on the King, and hauing ſéene this homicide, haſtilie ranne downe the ſtayres, crying aloude. Arme ye Knights, arme ye, and reuenge the Kings death, who by a trayterous Pilgrime is ſlaine in the Quénes Chamber. Cardino one of the Quénes Squires, her brother that caried yong Palmerin to the mountaine, had no leyſure to take anie other armes then a Sword and Shéelde, wherefore he was the firſt that came to the Quénes Chamber, where hee found Florendos guarding the entraunce, who preſentlie

knewe

knew him, saying. Depart my good Friend Cardyno, vnlesse for the Quéenes loue I shal take thy life from thée. And what art thou (sayde Cardyno) that knowest mee so well? I am thy Frend (quoth the Prince) the most vnfortunate Florendos.

Straunge it is my Lord, quoth Cardyno, that you durst venture into this Court: but take héere my Sword and Shéelde, and defend your selfe, for I thinke you will stande in great néede thereof. In the meane while, I will go aduertise the Duke of Pera of this mishap, he is your good frend, and by his meanes you may haue some succour: for oftentimes haue I heard him say at Constantinople, that he wished you as well as my Lord the Emperour. Dispatch then said Florendos, that thou be not found héere with me, assuring thée, if I may escape this daunger, I will acknowledge this seruice to thine owne content. Florendos armed himselfe with the Sword and Shéeld, whereof hée was so glad, as if hée had béene backed with manie trustie frends: vowing before he died, to make such a spoyle among his enemies, as should remaine for an after memorie. Cardyno went with all diligence to the Duke, and secretly acquainted him with all this misfortune: whereat the Duke greatly amazed, answered. I will do my vttermost for his safetie, because full well he hath deserued it. And so accompanied with many Grecian Knights, he went to ỹ Quéenes Chamber: and thrusting through the throng in despight of them that guarded the doores, hée got to the Chamber. At the entrance whereof he found Florendos defending himselfe with such manly courage, as nine or ten lay slaine at his féete.

The Duke and his men caused the Hungarians to withdraw themselues, saying: that himselfe would not suffer the matter so to escape, for the offence ought to bee punished by iustice, after the truth were knowne and throughlie vnderstoode. Hereupon the kings two Nephewes came in great rage, saying to the Duke of Pera, that the Quéene and the

Pilgrime ought preſently to die. What? quoth the Duke, depart you likewiſe, your willes ſhall not heere ſtande for Lawe, nor is the Queene to bee intreated with ſuch rigour.

So drawing his ſwords, and his Knights likewiſe, reſiſted the Hungarians, ſo that manie of them were ſlaine, vntill certaine Gentlemen came, who loving and eſteeming the Queene, appeaſed this tumult. Then was it agreed vpon, that the Duke ſhould take him into his charge, who had murthered the King, on whom ſuch puniſhment ſhould bee inflicted as the cauſe required: and hereupon the Duke toke his oath before all the companie. In this ſort the Kinges Nephewes were quieted, who preſentlie departed the Chamber, cauſing the dead and wounded to bee conuayed thence, that the people might receiue no further occaſion of offence, and the Duke comming to the Prince *Florendos*, ſaid.

Yeeld your ſelfe to me my Lord, and I will promiſe you on the faith of a Prince, that I will maintaine both your right and the Queenes, whatſoeuer daunger I hazard thereby. If you will not, aſſure your ſelfe, that your bodies cannot ſuffice the villainous furie of theſe people, for they haue confidently ſworne your deathes I know my Lord, (quoth *Florendos*) that you ſpeake the trueth, and I repoſe my truſt on your nobilitie, which is ſuch, as you will not ſuffer anie iniury to the man beeing in your guarde: I yeelde my ſelfe to you, and earneſtly intreate you not to impriſon the Queene, for (on mine honour) ſhe is guiltleſſe. And if any offence hath beene committed, it was by me: yet not without iuſt cauſe, and in defence of mine own life. My comming hither-was, becauſe I am newly returned from Ieruſalem, and remembring the manifold honours, which ſometime I receyued of my Ladie in the Emperour her Fathers Court: in my paſſing by, I was deſirous to do my dutie to her. At the inſtant time I was ſaluting her, the King came into the Chamber, who moued with an auncient hatred, which

you

you verie well know, would haue slaine me, but I preuenting his intent with the ayde of my weapon, bestowed that on him which he wished to mee. I beleeue well what you haue sayd, quoth the Duke, yet must you néedes abide triall in this case.

Frenato perceyuing his Cozin in such daunger, sought about the Chamber for some weapon to defende him: and finding the Kings Swoorde by the Quéenes bed side, shewed it to the Duke, that he might giue the better credite to the Princes woordes. Yet notwithstanding all their excuses, these two Pilgrims were taken into sure custodie, and shut vp both together in a strong Towre, which was verie long before they could accomplish, because in leading them thither, many sought meanes to kill them, and they had done it, but that the Duke verie strongly defended them.

Chap. XXVI.

The sorowfull complaints made by the Queene Griana, seeing her Husband dead, and her friend taken. And howe the Duke of Pera conueyed her to Constantinople, causing Florendos and Frenato to be brought thither by fiue hundred armed Knights.

VErie sorowfull was the Quéene Griana, seeing so manie misfortunes succéede one another, as verie soure her death was expected: and saue she woulde haue committed violence on her selfe, but that Cardyno with diuerse Knights attended on her, that none of the Kinges kindred shoulde

offend her, while the Duke of Pera led Florendos and Fre-
nato to the Tower. At whoſe return, as he thought to com-
fort her, ſhée fell on her knées before him ſaying: Ah noble
Duke of Pera, if euer pittie had place within your heart, for
Gods ſake make an end of my vnfortunate life: and execute
on me (without any fauour) the ſharpeſt rigour of equall
iuſtice, not ſuffering longer life to a woman ſo diſpiſed and
miſerable.

O God, doſt thou permit a happie life, to enioy ſo bad
an end? Thou that onely knoweſt the inward ſecrets of the
heart, ſéeing I ſtand ſuſpected in this treaſon, let my ſpéedie
death deliuer mine innocencie. Ah inconſtant Fortune, that
in my yonger yéeres was ſo aduerſe to mee, how might I
credite thy continuall mallice but by this ſtrange and vnex-
pected accident? Ah gentle Prince Florendos, it was not
for loue that thou cameſt to ſée mée, but for a ſecret hatred
more then deadly, ſéeing that by thée (and that with great
ſhame) I ſhall remaine for euer defamed. Where was that
loyaltie, and the great feare to offend mée, which ſometime
thou ſéemedſt to haue? Knoweſt thou not that in a royall
and noble minde, one onely note of infamie is an extreame
torment? Doubtleſſe, if thou wouldeſt well conſider the
wrong thou haſt done me, thou ſhalt finde it to exceéde all
other worldly iniuries. But I may perſwade my ſelfe,
that my deſtinie was ſuch, for being long ſince by thée diſho-
noured, it muſt fall out for a finall concluſion, that by thée
alſo I ſhall receiue death.

In this maner the Quéene complained, with ſuch ef-
ſuſe of teares and bitter ſighes, as the Duke pitying her
caſe, ſayd. I beſéech you Madame, to endure this miſhap pa-
tiently, ſéeing now it cannot be recalled, and conſider that
theſe teares and lamentations can yéelde yée no amendes,
but rather threaten danger, and will in the ende not one-
ly weaken your bodie, but hazard deſperation. The King is
dead, he muſt be buried: Florendos hath offended, hée ſhall
be puniſhed: your people are wounded, they muſt be cured.

Offende

Offende not then your selfe with these bootlesse regrates: but commaund that the proofe of your innocencie be followed. Hereupon the Duke caused preparation for the funerall pompe, and brought the king to the bed of honor, not without many teares and lamentations of his Subiects. When the obsequies were finished, Promptaleon and Oudin came and exclaimed on the Duke, because hee brought not the Queene and Florendos to open punishment. My friends, quoth the Duke, haue I not heretofore tolde you, that wee must not inconsiderately put such persons to death? let the Councell bee called together, and as they determine I will proceede.

Then were all the Princes and Lordes assembled, among whome the Duke was intreated to speake his opinion, which hee did in this maner. I thinke it conuenient, vnder correction of you my noble Lordes, that the Prince Florendos, and the Queene, ought to bee sent to my Lord the Emperour, and there to haue iustice extended on them, as well for the suretie of your owne persons, as for the conseruation of the Realme. For except iustlie and by probable causes you condemne the Prince Florendos, hardly may you perswade the Macedonian Princes: beside, the Lordes may say, that without hearing hee was cut off, and likewise by his open enemies. Againe thinke you that the Emperour will let passe in silence so great a wrong, to punish his Daughter, and not acquaint him with her offence? Considering this indifferently, you shall finde your selues on eyther side endangered: your goods will be spoyled, your liues endamaged, for hardly can you resist againste such power. So well coulde the Duke sette foorth his discourse, with confirmation of Hystories both auncient and moderne, that in despight of the kings Nephewes it was concluded, how the prisoners should be sent to Constantiople. If they were hereat offended, it is not to bee doubted, but hearing the Counsailes resolution, prepared themselues to goe to the Emperour, determining a sharpe and seuere accusation:

truſting ſo much in their ſtrength and prowesse, that if the Emperour (for proofe of the cauſe) ſhoulde committe it to the Combat, they eaſily thought to compaſſe their intent. So were the two Pilgryms committed to the Dukes Nephew, with an hundred Knights of Greece for their guard, and foure hundred Hungarians, who would needes followe for the loue they bare the Quéene: ſhe being marueilouſlie fauoured in her countrey, for her many vertues, and chiefly charitie.

The Quéene her ſelfe, with the yong Princeſſe Armida her Daughter, and all her Ladyes and Gentlewomen, were committed to the Duke of Pera his charge, and the reſt of the traine that came with him in the Ambaſſade. When the Quéene vnderſtode ſhée ſhould be caried to the Emperour, ſhe was further out of patience then ſhe was before, rather deſiring a thouſand deaths, then to come with this reproach before her father: yet notwithſtanding all her intreaties, ſhee was conueyed into a Litter, and not ſo much as a pinne left about her, for feare of inconuenience.

To comfort her, her Daughter Armida was placed in the Litter, without whoſe compaſſe, ſuch was her griefe to come before her Parents, as ſhe was diuerſe times in daunger of death by the way. But the yong Princeſſe being twelue or thirtéene yeares of age, coulde ſo well comfort her ſorrowfull mother, as her talke expelled many bitter imaginations. If the Quéene was in heauineſſe, wée muſt thinke Florendos griefes nothing inferiour, ſéeing his Ladie led in ſuch ſort, and accuſed of a crime wherein none but himſelfe was culpable: yet made hee no account, being reuenged of his auncient enemie, ſo the Quéene were deliuered, though himſelfe endured the death. But nowe are they come to Conſtantinople, yet not ſo ſone, but the Nephewes of the deceaſſed King were before them, where they had blazed a falſe and moſt ſhamefull reporte. And but for the aduiſe of certaine noble Princeſſe, that

fauoured

fauoured Florendos and the Queene Griana, vpon the trothlesse speeches of these twaine: the Emperour had concluded to burne his Daughter and the Prince so soone as they came, such horrible slaunders had these traytours spread of them. Namely, that the King was murdered, finding Griana committing adulterie with Florendos. At which words the Emperour was so enraged, that like a man depriued of reason, he violently pulled himselfe by the beard, saying.

Ah wretched and infortunate olde man, haue the heauens suffered thy tyrannicall life, that after the death of thy sonnes Caniano and yong Cariteos, thou must see thy daughter conuicted of treason, adulterie, and murder? If I haue had some comfort by my Sonnes, lying now in the Hearse of honour, for maintenance of the Christian faith: doubtlesse this iniurie is so great and enorme, as no ioy or comfort can now abide in mée. Ah my lonely Daughter Griana, whom I had good hope would bee the onely support of mine age, and for that cause sent to haue thy companie: commest thou now with such shame and monstrous report? Florendos, if heretofore against the Turke Gamezio thou didst me seruice, with great wrong hast thou now reuenged thy selfe, taking from mee that good which thou canst neuer restore againe. But let it suffice, that knowing the truth of thy disordered dealing, such shall bee thy punishment, as shall remaine for perpetuall memorie. The Empresse likewise forsaking her Chamber, came and kneeled before the Emperour, desiring him to put Florendos to the first counsell, and he to be dispatched with diligence. At which words the choler of olde Remicius augmented, bes answering.

Madame, for Gods sake gette you gone, for you are the onely cause of my dishonour: and then you beganne it, when you would not suffer the Prince Florendos of Macedon to match with our daughter, but gaue her to your Nephew perforce, and contrarie to her owne liking. The Prince

seeing

seeing him so offended, intreated her to depart, perswading her that the accusers of Griana were her cheefest enemies, and that might easily be gathered by their proude and malevolent detractions, which happily would proue false rather then truth. For if they might heerein speede of their purpose, and theyr accusation passe for currant, the princesse Armida should be disinherited, and themselues be the onely heyres of the kingdome. This was their principall drift, not any deuotion to reuenge their Uncles death, as they in outward shew declared: and herepon all opinions were set aside vntill the next day, when the prisoners arriued.

Chap. XXVII.

How Florendos and Griana were brought to Constantinople, and there were appointed by the Emperours Councell, to purge themselues of their accusation, by the combate of two knights, against their accusers Promptaleon and Oudin.

THe Duke being arriued at Constantinople, immediately caused the Queene Griana and Armida her daughter, to be conducted to the Pallace, by many noble Lords and Gentlemen. When Griana saw shee must needes go before her father, she began again her wonted pittifull complaints, notwithstanding shee was so comforted by the Lordes of Greece, by theyr solemne promise to defende her right, as shee encouraged her selfe, and comming before her Father, fell on her

knees,

knées, and thus beganne. My gracious Lord and father, inconstant fortune euermore hath beene, and still will continue, a most cruell enemie of them of highest calling: and no further néede I speake for proofe of my words, then the Victory of your last warres against the Turks, and the present slaunder of mine enemies against mée. I cannot likewise forget that twentie yéeres and more are nowe expired, since (to my great greefe) I was seperated from you: but with much more exceeding beauines am I now returned, if by my misaduenture you receiue any impeach, or I deserue to lose the name of your Daughter. Therefore my Lord, forgetting the name and office of a Father, let naturall regarde be exempted from me, and exercise on mée tyrannous torments, with the greatest rigour that may be deuised. Yet all too little in respect of my deserts, not for any offence in this matter, as God is my witnesse, but for the suspition of the common and vulgare people, more credulous of the faults of Princes and noble Ladies, then of their discréete and sober vertues. Neuertheless, receiuing death for a matter neuer committed, and with patience, despight of mine enemies, it will redound to my immortall honour.

Vpon these speéches, the Princesse Armida making great reuerence to the Emperor, and with the teares trickling downe her chéekes, saide. Dread Lord, my chéefest desires euermore haue béene to sée your maiestie, but so it falleth out nowe, that in stéede of ioy and pleasure, it is with greéfe, teares, and tribulation. Yet gracious Lord, for the first request that euer I made to your highnesse, I beséech you to credit me, that my mother hath committed no treason, or any dishonour to the deceased King my Father, neither euer permitted any man entrance into her Chamber, but hee whom now the question concerneth, and at that time, I with these other Ladies were present, and are credible witnesses of the whole action. Such efficacie wrought her words in the Emperours minde, as he beganne to dese

the

the accuſation, perſwading himſelfe that it was nothing but falſhood: and louingly taking the yong Princeſſe by by the hand, addreſſed his ſpeeches in this manner to the Queene.

Well haſt thou ſayde, that Fortune hath béene ſo contrarie towards thee, for when my whole hope remained in thée, and that the Crowne of mine Empire ſhould haue béene placed on thy head, thou haſt fallen into ſuch wounding reproch, as both thou and I ſhall be for euer diſhonoured. My Lorde, quoth Griana, vnder correction, and ſauing the reuerence of your Imperiall Maieſtie, neuer imagine the caſe any thing to your defame: if you credite not mine enemies or common report, from whence is engendred all vntruth. This ſpeake I not to excuſe my death, which I know to be the refuge for the deſolate, and ende of al afflictions, but to declare mine owne innocencie, and that mine honour ſhall at length be founde vnſpotted. But now conſider good Father, with what violence you enforce mee to match with the King Tariſius, my heart being ſtill againſt it, and the néereneſſe of linage betwéene vs forbidding it. Nor were you ignorant of my loue to the Prince Florendos, the moſt gentle Knight of Greece, and whoſe only trauaile hither was to make mee his Wife: all this will I not denie, nor can my heart permit to paſſe in ſilence. Notwithſtanding, by your commaundement I was conſtrayned to forſake my beſt beloued, and take the man I was not borne to fancie. After I ſawe it muſt néedes be ſo, acknowledging him my Lord and Husband, and my ſelfe his Wife and Subiect, neither in word or deede, nor ſo much as very thought, did I diſpoſe my ſelfe to any diſobedience, but liued in moſt loyall and honourable ſtate. Verie true it is, that he founde Florendos talking with mee, but I proteſt before Heauen, that it was with ſuch chaſte and modeſt regarde, as the Sister might conferre with her Brother. And ſo little time our talke endured, as I had not the meane to anſwere the Prince, for the King comming in, and pro-

moked

noked with frenzie or wicked iealousie, would haue slaine him, whereby such fortune fell out, as the King receiued what he would haue giuen. For can Florendos bée worthily blamed for comming to sée me, in respect of the long time since our last companie: beside, hauing not forsaken his Pylgrims weede, wherein hee trauailed to the holie Lande, he came to acquaint me with the maruailes in his iourney.

See héere in breefe the whole truth of this Historie, and if the Kings Nephew auouch otherwise, I say (my Lord) they lie falsely. In this respect, as well to protect mine owne honour as the Princes, I humbly desire your Maiestie, that our innocencie may be diseided by Combate: for such is my hope in a rightfull cause, as I shall find some Knight to fight for me. The Lords of the Empire were altogether of the same opinion, and instantly desired the Emperour, to graunt his Daughter her lawfull request: whereto hee answered that he would take counsell thereon, and iustice should be doone her as it ought. Héereupon the Emperour went into his Chamber, and the Quéene was brought to the Empresse her Mother, where the poore Lady was assaulted afresh, for shée was no sooner entred the Chamber, but her Mother thus beganne. I knowe not Daughter how badly thou hast béene counselled, that since the day of thine espousall to the Prince Tarisius, who loued thée so déerely, thou hast continued such hatred against him, that at length thou art become the onely cause of his death.

Madame, quoth the Quéene, you speake your pleasure, but (in regarde of my reuerence to you) I answere, that I neuer thought it. Wherefore I intreate you to forbeare such spéeches, and if you consider all things well, your selfe will be founde in greater fault then I. For contrarie to my solemne promise which I had made to the Prince of Macedon, you compelled mee to marrie with him: and if Florendos had the opportunitie, and in defence of his owne

person

perſon hath ſlaine him, ought you then to im pute the crime to me? With theſe wordes the Empreſſe held her peace, and ſate conferring with the yong Princeſſe Armida: in meane while came the Duke of Pera, who had the Quéene in charge, and conducted her to her Chamber, and afterward (by the Emperours commandement) he ſhut Florendos into a ſtrong priſon.

The next day, *Promptaleon* and Oudin came to the Pallace, where with great and audacious impudencie they came before the Emperour, ſaying. Why haue you not my Lord, provided the fire to burne your Daughter, and her adulterer Florendos? Soft and fayre, aunſwered the good Remicius, bee not ſo haſtie, I finde them not ſo faultie as your accuſation deliuereth: for no other harme was committed then talking together, and becauſe Florendos was diſguiſed, is that a conſequence my daughter muſt die? Nor will I encurre with infamous report, in putting ſuch a Prince to death, without hearing how he can anſwere for himſelfe: you therefore my Lord of Pera, go fetch Florendos, that hee may anſwere to their propoſitions. The Duke obeyed his commandement, and brought the Prince ſo ſpent with extreame gréefe, becauſe hee had cauſed the Quéene into ſuch danger, as hardly he could ſuſtaine himſelfe, but after he had with great humilitie, proſtrated himſelfe before the Emperour, he began in this manner. Moſt mightie Lord and Emperour of Greece, marualle not that with ſuch beauinelle I come before your maieſtie, when in ſtéede of dwing you ſeruice according as my dutie commandeth me, I bring you cauſe of offence and diſpleaſure. Neuertheleſſe, I repoſe my ſelf on your benignitie and princely iuſtice, wherein I muſt intreate you, to haue regard on the Quéene your Daughters innocence, for the fault that is committed, if it deſerue to be called a fault, was done without the Quéenes knowledge, or ſo much as a thought of the matter on her part, before it happened. Moreouer, there is none of ſo harſh iudgement or reaſon, but will conſider

der what familiaritie and friendship, doth passe betweene Princes and Ladies in occasions of honour. Which may serue to answere the cause of my comming to see the Queen, being thereto bound by dutie and honest loue, wherewith in my yonger yeeres I faithfully serued her. And this I did without any iniurie to her honor, much lesse occasion of offence to the King, which hee would needes interprete in that sort, when with so good indiscretion hee came and assailed me.

These are fables, quoth Promptaleon, for the conspiracie and treason betweene thee and the Queene is so manifest, as euerie one knowes it. And if the Emperour doo not this day consumate your liues both together in one fire: he offereth the greatest iniurie that euer Prince did, and before the whole world wee will hereafter accuse him. Darest thou maintaine by Combate in fielde, saide Florendos, what thou with such brauerie affirmest in this Hall? that will I by mine honour, quoth Promptaleon, and let the Knight come that dares aduenture, on this condition, that if I be the conquerour, the Queene and thou may bee burned as ye haue deserued, and the Princesse Armida declared not legitimate, and so disinherited of the Kingdome. Now hast thou reuealed thy villany, saide Florendos, and for the last condition dost thou follow the cause so earnestly, rather then by any matter of truth and equitie: but thou art deceiued in thine intent, and thy death (villaine) shall deliuer assurance of her succession. So please my Lord the Emperour of his grace, to prolong the day of Combate till I haue recouered some health: my selfe alone, against thee and thy Brother, will proone ye false Traytours, and that maliciously yee haue accused the Queene. The Emperour seeing the Prince so weake and sickly, and yet with so good courage willing to defence his Daughters wrong, resolued himselfe that shee was innocent. Remembring then his noble seruices in defende of his Empire, and howe iniuriously he denied him his Daughter: he was mooued in

such

ſuch ſort as he could not refraine from teares, thinking for vengeance of that offence, that heauen had iuſtly permitted the death of Tariſius, wherefore beholding Florendos with pittifull lookes, pronounced the ſentence in this manner. Yon Promptalçon and Oudin, Mephe was to our deceaſed, deare, and beloued ſonne, the King of Hungaria, ſhall maintaine your words in open Fielde, againſt two ſuch Knights, as my Daughter and the Prince Florendos can deliuer on their behalfe, and that within twelue dayes after this inſtant, one of which the Prince himſelfe ſhall be, if he be not furniſhed with another to his liking: alwayes prouided, that the vanquiſhed ſhall be declared Traitors, and attainted of the crime of Leſe Maieſtatis, and ſo puniſhed according to the exigence of the caſe. The two Brethren accepted theſe conditions, being ſo farre ouercome with their owne pride, as they reputed themſelues the moſt valiant Knights of the world. Florendos feeling himſelfe ſo weake of body, would gladly haue demaunded a longer day, but the ſentence being giuen, the Emperour likewiſe promiſing to appoint another knight in his ſtead, he was contented, and committing all to the Emperors pleaſure, was carried backe againe to priſon in ſuch penſiueneſſe, as he was iudged not able to liue til the combat day. The Queene likewiſe was kept in ſure guarde, deſpayring howe ſhe ſhoulde finde a Knight, that would aduenture on her behalfe in fight, becauſe the ſtrength and proweſſe of the Challenger was ſo renowmed. Leauing thus theſe two louers in doubts and feares, let vs returne where we left before, to noble Palmerin, that hee may bring them ſome better comfort.

Chap.

Chap. XXVIII.

How Palmerin hauing ſtaid with his Ladie fiue dayes, in ſo great pleaſure as his heart could deſire, fearing to be diſcouered to the Emperour, tooke his leaue of her, promiſing to begin the ſearch of Trineus and Ptolome.

Olynarda hauing her Frænd in her cuſtodie, would not preſume ſo farre vpon her ſelfe, or the faithfulneſſe of her Ladies, as ſhe would ſuffer him to ſtay there in the day time: and doubting likewiſe leaſt his comming in the night ſhould be eſpyed, committed the whole matter in ſuch truſt to Bryonella, as they perfor'med their loyes without any impeachment. During theſe delights and amourous contentments, which theſe timorous Louers paſſed togither, the Princeſſe among other talke rehearſed to her Frænd, how the King of Fraunce ſent his Ambaſſadours to the Emperour, to treate on the marriage betwéene her and his eldeſt Sonne, as alſo her Brother Trineus with his Daughter Lucemania. And howe importunate the Empreſſe had béene with her, diſcouering what honour and felicitie it ſhould bée to her, to bée Quéene of ſo great a Kingdome as Fraunce is. And truſt mée my Lord, quoth ſhée, I know my Parents are ſo affected to this alliaunce, as if my Brother Trineus were come, I know no meane whereby to excuſe my ſelfe. Alas Madame, quoth Palmerin, herein you may conſider, if the Emperour by violent force conſtraine you hereto, what continuall greefe it will bée to your Seruaunt Palmerin? What tor-

ments? What tyrannous paines of ſtrange conceit, may equall themſelues with the verie leaſt of my paſſions? nor can I any way bee able to endure them. The doubtfull feares of this miſfortune ſtroke to his heart, with ſuch an impreſſion, as hee fell in a ſwoune betweene his Ladies armes, ſhée embracing him with ſuch ardent affection, as the ſoule of the poore tormented Louer, féeling with what equall deſire his Ladie requited him, receiued freſh ſtrēgth into his languiſhing bodie, and béeing come to his former eſtate, the Princeſſe ſaid. Alas my Lord, at the time I ſuppoſed to be in aſſuraunce with you, and to thinke on no imaginations, but new pleaſures and delights, forgetting the regarde you haue long continued, in expectation of the wiſhed fortunate houre, will yée bée nowe the cauſe of my death? Thinke you, that if loue bée ſo violent on your behalfe, it excédeth not a thouſand times more in mée? Beléeue me, you men make your vaunts of the great paſſions, feares and doubts you haue to offende your Ladyes, whom to ſerue loyally you haue eſpecially choſen: but in no wiſe may theſe oppreſſions be compared to ours. Where is hée among ye, who hath experimented, howe great the paine of diſhonor is, and can couer his extreame loue with diſſimulation? What a death is it to conſtraine violence againſt it ſelfe? to containe the piercing eye, and ſubdue an heart ſo affectionate, as bringeth death to the reſt of the bodie: if ſhée ſhewe not ſome part of her deſire, by lookes (the faithfull and ſecrete meſſengers) to him ſhe hath choſen, loueth, and wiſheth? The torment of the will likewiſe, when one dare not come in preſence, nor behold her fauoured, to languiſh, and yet may ſéeke no meane of helpe: all theſe inſupportable miſeries we poore Ladies muſt endure, béeing giuen by nature, or forced for a cuſtome. Wherefore my Lorde, preſent not me with your paſſions, conſidering each thing as it ought, they may not be compared to the leaſt of mine: for loue who hath ouermaiſtred me, reigneth with ſuch reſolute authoritie, as I muſt ſoner die, then offer you anie wrong,

wrong, seeing that as my Lord and Husband I haue elected you, and bestowed those fauours on you which are most desired, to wit, willing obedience, and that (then which) nothing is more precious. Hauing then made you soueraigne of my selfe, the Prince of Fraunce cannot enioy an others mans right. And if my Father vsing his authoritie, shall enforce mée, although it be grieuous to mée, I will tell him what hath happened, and no menaces whatsoeuer shall alter mine opinion.

Palmerin seeing his Ladie so firme and loyall, was not a little ioyfull, thus answering. Doubtlesse my deare and most gracious Mistresse, hitherto I durst presume on my selfe, that by my manifolde loyall seruices, I should one day deliuer recompence, for some part of the honours you haue done mée: but nowe I perceiue, that abounding in your graces, you depriue me of all meanes to acknowledge your bountie, which commonly men desire to shew by their obedience, nor shall I be able to deserue the inestimable value, contained in the simplest worde of your last most honorable promise.

Nowe the Princesse discerning by the Windowe, that Aurora Phœbus his faire Porter, began to let forth the morning light, and prouide way for his Maisters iourney, withdrew her selfe to her Chamber, and quicklie layde her downe by Brionella, who the better to hide her Ladies affayres, dissembled that she had a feuer Quotidian, by which meane shée compassed to kéepe her Chamber, and entertained Palmerin as her selfe desired. All this while Vrbanillo brought newes from the Prince Olorico, who was so desirous to sée the Princesse againe: as hée vowed not to depart the Cittie, before hée accomplished what hée intended. Palmerin who loued him as his Brother, was in great doubt howe hée should safelye bring it to passe: till Bryonella, whose deuises were euer readyest, sayde. My Lord, the man béeing no way able to hurt you, of the lesse importance néede you make the matter: will yée sée howe

we will a little iuggle with the Emperour? Let it be ſayd, that the Prince is Cozin to Vrbanillo, and the cauſe of his comming into his Countrey, was to ſéeke you: then becauſe he vnderſtandes how my Ladie loues the Dwarffe, his Maieſtie (without anie doubt) will ſuffer the two Cozins to take their leaue of her: will not this deuiſe then ſhadow his ſéeing the Princeſſe? Without queſtion, quoth Palmerin, I ſhould neuer haue inuented ſuch a ſubtiltie, be it then as you haue determined, but with great policie, that the Emperour miſdoubt nothing, for if he diſcouer vs, we are ſhamed for euer. Referre it to me, ſayd Brionella, if I diſcribe not their kindred cunningly, neuer beléeue that a Woman can inuent a lie without ſtudie. Brionella conferring with the Dwarffe, layde downe the platforme in ſuch order, as the next day the Prince came before the Emperour: when Vrbanillo on his knée deſired leaue, that hée might depart with his Cozin there preſent, to ſéeke his Maiſter, in whoſe ſearch he woulde trauaile, till he heard certainly of his life or death.

Ah, Vrbanillo, quoth the Emperour, in ſuch a luckie houre maiſt thou goe, as to finde both him and my Sonne Trineus, good leaue haſt thou to goe when thou wilt. But when I beholde you both aduiſedly, verie hardly do you ſéeme to bée Cozins: for if there be anie alliaunce betwéene you, it neuer came by the Fathers ſide: and if it be by the Mother, the one was then married in Barbarie, and the other in Scotland. Why my Lord (quoth the Dwarffe) rather had I die, then tell an vntruth before your highneſſe: and with ſuch proteſtations did the Dwarffe ſwith his tale, as they of greateſt doubt gaue credite to him. Hereupon the Emperour commaunded them to goe take their leaue of his Daughter, willing her to write to her Brother. Hauing obtained what they deſired, they ſtayed not long in returning thankes: but went preſently to the Princeſſe Chamber, where ſhée (aduertized of their comming) ſtaid for them. Honourable ſalutations on each ſide deliuered, a Chayre

was

was brought for the Prince, and he sitting downe by Polynarda, she thus began. Albeit my Lord I am verie loath to forgoe my Seruaunt: yet hauing found him so honest, and for the good will I wish to all his kindred, especially you, who haue enterprised to seeke his Maister and my Brother, I am the better contented to part with him. If the Prince commended her beautie, when being ambushed hee sawe her passe by: what may wee imagine of his opinion nowe? For beholding her, the comfort of her long absent Frende, had called all her beauties together, enriched with so many sweete and amiable graces, as hee coulde not repute her of humaine linage, but rather some Angell discended from heauen, to make the glorie of Palmerin more ample: whereupon, to deceiue the Ladies beeing present, hee returned this answere. Undoubtedly Madame, if I and all mine had spent our soules in your seruice, we should holde our selues sufficiently recompenced, with the princely fauor you afford our Cozin, which he is no way able to deserue. And perswade your selfe faire, Princesse, that if he be your obedient Seruaunt, my selfe am no lesse, in all things that your excellencie shall please to commaunde mee: so that if there were not vrgent occasions to excuse my departure, it would be my onely content to remaine at your disposition. Yet such is my hope, that this greefe shall bee changed into ioy by a speedie returne, when wee shall bring the Prince Trineus and our noble Maister Palmerin. The soner, the better welcome will they be, quoth the Princesse, for therin consisteth my cheefest comfort. And after many other speeches betweene them, she gaue him manie rich gifts, wherewith he helde himselfe so honoured, as if he had gained the Monarchie of Asia: so kissing her hande, the Prince with his newe Cozin, returned to his lodging. Now was it concluded betweene Palmerin and the Princesse, because the Empresse on the morrow would come to see her daughter, that he should depart the same way he came, wherefore the bower beeing come that hee shoulde passe the Wall,

Polinarda thus ſpake. Nowe is the time (my Lorde) that you muſt leaue me, and I be forced to conſent, becauſe there is no remedie: but perſwade your ſelfe, that with this parting begins my ſorrowes. Yet if I knewe where you trauailed, my griefe woulde be the leſſe, and my life prolonged with better hope: but being vncertaine of your way, and knowing what miſfortunes and daungerous perilles, may incounter you in vnknowne Countries, I knowe not howe I ſhall diſſemble my torments. Notwithſtanding, ſweete Frende, if your ſtay be long, ſend Vrbanillo againe, to comfort poore Bryonella, and my ſelfe: for loſing the onely maintenaunce of our languiſhing liues, impoſſible is it but our ſpirits will ſone forſake their miſerable habitations. For Gods ſake Madame quoth Palmerin, neuer talke of ſuch a ſeparation, for the remembraunce thereof, is death to me: and it ſo offendeth mee to ſee you in this perturbation, as I loſe both courage and hope of well doing. Continue then the humour you haue done ſince my comming, that I beholding you pleaſaunt, may be comforted thereby during the ſearch of your Brother, which I hope will bee both ſhort and ſudden. Otherwiſe, before the earth bee readie for mee, I ſhall bee forced to take vp my endleſſe Hoſtage. So after many ſweete kiſſes, and gracious courteſies paſſed betweene them, they toke their leaue each of other, with ſuch effuſion of teares, as the verie inwarde ſoule bemoned their departing. So with his Ladder of Cordes hee gotte ouer the wall againe, and came to the lodging where he left Olorico: then arming themſelues, theyrode away in great haſte, becauſe they feared to bee knowne by any.

Chap.

# of Palmerin D'Oliua

Chap. XXIX.

Howe after Palmerin was departed from his Ladie, there appeared to him one of the Fayries of the Mountaine Artefæria, who declared to him part of his fortunes following. And of a Combat which he and Olorico had against ten Knights.

Great haste in their iourney made these two knights, so that in short time they came into the kingdome of Hungaria, where passing through a great forrest, they ascended a high Mountaine, at what time the ayre béeing calme and cleare, was suddainly obscured by manie darke Clowdes, and such outragious windes and rayne beganne, as they were glad to shrowde themselues vnder certaine Pine Trées néere at hande. Hauing there rested themselues a while, they beheld a verie thicke misse about a Fyrre Trée, and heard withall a verie terrible thunder: and the fogge somewhat clearing, they beheld a comely Ladie vnder the Trée, whereat they were stroke into no little admiration, yet Palmerin desirous to vnderstand the effect of this aduenture, made towards the Trée, when the Ladie began in this maner to him.

Palmerin d'Oliua, meruaile not at this accident, which hath happened onely for thy sake and profite. Heretofore I came to thée on another Mountaine, where I and my Sisters healed the woundes thou didst receiue by the Serpent. At this time I am come to thée, to wish thée followe

thy iourney begunne: aſſuring thée that they whom thou ſéekeſt, are yet liuing, and in the cuſtodie of Turkes and Infidels: but before thou canſt find them, thou ſhalt be deliuered from death by him thou hateſt moſt. And after thou haſt founde this fauour by him, hée ſhall ayde thée in reſtoring from priſon and death, thy beſt and deareſt Frendes: and ſo I leaue thée to thy happie ſucceſſe. Then ſuddainlie vaniſhed the Woman away, and coulde not afterwarde bée ſéene againe, leauing Palmerin verie penſiue for what hée had heard, which he eſtéemed to bée true, becauſe hitherto hée had found no leſſe, all that the Sifters ſayd to him on the Mountaine Artifæria.

Returning to his companie, Olorico demaunded what Goddeſſe had talked with him, and what made him on a ſuddaine ſo chærefull? Truſt me my noble Frend, quoth he, the matter is ſuch, as for all the Golde in the worlde, I would not but haue knowne, which Vrbanillo can better declare vnto you, then I am able: but becauſe wée woulde méete no more ſtrange aduentures in this Mountaine, let vs ſpédily ſet forwarde on our iourney. All that day they rode without any occaſion to ſtay them, and the next day likewiſe till towarde the Euening, when they eſpyed tenne Knights comming before them, the formoſt of them leading a Ladie, who made verie grieuous and pitifull lamentations: whereupon Palmerin claſped his Helmette, deſiring Olorico to do the like, becauſe (quoth hée) for anie thing I ſée, we ſhall haue paſtime with ſome daunger. The Prince did as his Frende requeſted him, and when the Ladie was come ſomewhat nearer them, ſhée framed her ſpéeches to them in this maner. Gentle Knights, for Gods ſake helpe me, for theſe Traitors haue forcibly brought me hither: and to compaſſe their villainous intent, they haue murthered my Huſband and two of my brethren. Palmerin without anſwering one word, approched to him that ledde her, and gaue him ſuch a rap on the pate, with a Mace that hee carryed at his Saddle bowe, as with the ſtroke he fell

dead

dead to the earth, making him sure not to escape, during the time that hee dealt with the other. Olorico had taken his carryze against another of them, whom he encountred so puissantly, as the Knight breaking his Launce, Olorico thrust his quite through his bodie, whereof Palmerin being glad, said.

To the rest noble Prince, for wee are sure two of them can doo vs no harme. With such courage did these Gallants bestirre themselues, as in lesse space then halfe an howre, fiue more of them were slaine: for Palmerin neuer gaue stroke, but either he brake an arme, head, or necke. The two which were left, seeing the hard fortune of their fellowes, would bide no further daunger, but take themselues to flight with all the speede they could. When the Lady sawe her selfe deliuered of her enemies, she came and humbled her selfe at *Palmerins* feete, earnestly desiring him not to leaue her, but that it would please him to conuay her to her Castle neere at hand: whereuppon Vrbanillo alighting, holpe her to mount on one of the vanquished Knights Horses.

By the way shee rehearsed how hee that led her, had of long time loued her, but because he was proude and of euill conditions, her Father could not like of the match, but gaue her to a yong Gentleman his neighbour, who was a verie vertuous and worthie minded Knight. This seemed displeasing to him that was refused, so that he brought nine of his kindred and Friendes with him, and hid themselues in ambush neere my fathers Castle, whereto I haue intreated you to conduct me. They staying there thus vnknowne to any all the night, and the most parte of the day, till mn husband, two of my brethren, and my selfe, take Horse, intending to go hunt at the Riuers side, they seeing vs far inough from any reskew, violently set on vs, killed my Husband and Brethren, and brought me away with them, the Traitour himselfe saying, that after hee had rauished mee of mine honour, he would commit me to the like wage

by

by the Groomes of the Stable, who when they had ſatiſfied their ballainous willes, ſhould put mée to cruell and ſhamefull death.

Beléeue me Madame, quoth Olorico, you are happily deliuered from ſuch violence, and I thinke if all ſuch like Ruffians were ſo ſerued as they are, Ladyes might paſſe through the Countrey ſafely and without danger. By this time they were come to the Caſtle, where (becauſe it was night) the Bridge was drawne, but when the guard heard that the Lady was come, it was preſently let downe, and one of them ranne to the Ladies mother, who fearing ſhée had loſt her Daughter, was now greatly comforted, eſpecially when ſhée vnderſtode, that they which had ſlaine her Sonnes, were likewiſe killed themſelues: and certainely both the Mother and the Daughter reputed themſelues ſo beholding to theſe Knights, as they knew not in what ſort to entertaine them, whereby they might expreſſe their comfort.

Béeing very honourably vſed by theſe Ladies, after ſupper they were conducted to their Chamber, where they repoſed themſelues that night, and the next morning came to take their leaue of the Ladies, to the no little gréefe both of the one and the other. All this day they trauailed without any aduenture, till at length they came to a goodly fountaine, where they alighted to let their Horſes paſture a while: and hauing refreſhed themſelues with certaine victuailes that Vrbanillo had prouided for them, Palmerin laide him downe and ſlept, and Vrbanillo by him, finding themſelues ſomewhat wearie with riding all the day. Olorico being a yong Prince, and deſirous to ſée any ſtrange occaſion, walked about into diuers places, regarding héere and there the ſituation of the Countrey, the Mountaines and goodly Caſtles builded vppon them. Hee was no ſooner departed, but there arriued fiue armed knights, two of them béeing they that eſcaped, when Palmerin ſo nobly deliuered the Ladie, they hauing that night paſt lodged at his

Fathers

Fathers house who ledde the Lady, and which Palmerin first killed with his Mace. And thinking nowe to reuenge themselues, had brought three of his Cosins in their company, and watched at the Ladies Castle the comming forth of the Princes, but their stomackes would not serue them to meddle with them there, wherefore they followed them all that day, till they beheld them seperated as you haue heard.

When they sawe that *Palmerin* slept, one of them (fearing least the noyse of the Horses should awake him) alighted, and drawing his Sword, came therewith to haue slaine him: but by good fortune there arriued a Knight, who had béene hunting there about all that day, and hée cried to him with his Sword drawne. Ah villaine, kill not the man that slæpes. The Traitour séing this new come Knight so braue a person, beganne to be afraide, and therefore slept backe again a little, at what time Palmerin, by the knights crie, awaked, and séing him so nére that thought to giue the mortall stroke, was greatly amazed, sodainely drawing his sword to defende himselfe, not hauing the leysure to put on his Helmet, by which occasion he receiued a small wound vpon his head. The Knight séing the cowardly villainie of them that assailed Palmerin altogether, bestirred himselfe so worthily among them, as hé that gaue the wound died sone after vnder his sword. Whereupon the foure Knights diuided themselues, two against Palmerin, and two against him, who defended themselues so worthily, and had brought their enemies into such danger, as they two that before escaped, séing to what danger the fight would tende, gaue the spurs to their Horses, and galloped away so fast as the horse could pace. By this time the prince Olorico heard the Dwarfes clamours, béing greatly afraide of his maisters death, came running thither with all spéede, when the Knight that had sauled Palmerins life, sayde.

Noble Knight, well may you giue thanks to Heauen,

in

in that your enemies, who thought to kill you ſléeping, are foyled: for if God had not permitted my courſe this way, without all doubt you had loſt your life. But ſince it hath béene my good happe to preuent your ominous fortune, I muſt aduiſe yée hereafter to beware of like hazard: and may it pleaſe you to accompanie me to a Caſtle within two miles diſtance, your entertainment ſhall be good, and your wounds cured by a Ladie very expert in Chirurgerie. I accept your offer gentle Sir, quoth *Palmerin*, with right good will, as well to haue your friendly companie, as to ſhéelde you from any other ſuch like villanies, who happily may ſéeke your harme for this noble fauour. So they rode on altogether, Palmerin remembring the wordes of the Fairie Ladie, and could not imagine who the knight ſhould be that had ſo honourably preſerued his life: this made him more to maruaile, that hée ſhould be his enemie, whom (to his remembrance) hee had neuer ſéene in any place before.

To put him from theſe cogitations, Olorico aſhamed of his abſence in ſuch a néedfull time, came to Palmerin with theſe wordes. Certes my noble Friende, I am hencefort h vnworthie to beare armes, ſéeing that in ſuch daunger I left your companie: vnhappie that I am, might not former experience teach me what ſodaine aduentures do often happen to Knights errant? what puniſhment may be ſufficient for my hainous offence? Leaue ſuch ſpéeches to Women, quoth Palmerin, for if we knewe before what would happen afterward, neuer ſhould we fall into any inconueniences, but it is ſufficient that we haue ſo well eſcaped, and let God haue the glorie for ſo happie deliuerance. By this time they were come to the Caſtle, and entring the baſe Court, the Seruants came to take their Horſes to the ſtable: meane while the Knight himſelfe went to aduertiſe the lady of the other knights arriual, ſaying. Faire Leonarda, I pray you vouchſafe the beſt honour and entertainment you can deuiſe, to two Gentlemen I haue héere

brought

brought with me, for I imagine by their rich armes and courtly behauiour, that either they are Princes, or discended of very honorable parentage. Truste me my Lord, quoth she, for your sake I will endeuor my selfe to welcome them as they ought.

And comming into the hall to salute them, after many courteses deliuered on either side, the Lady seeing Palmerins armour besmeared with bloud, by reason of the wound he receiued on his head, saide. I feare my Lord you are very sore hurt, therefore the soner it be seene to, the better ease you shall finde. Heereupon her selfe holpe to vnarme him, and afterward brought him into a goodly Chamber, where when shee had staunched his bleeding, and bound vp the wound, he was laide in a marualous rich bedde prouided for him, she promising within ten dayes and lesse to restore him so well, as he would at pleasure trauaile without any danger.

For this kindnesse Palmerin returned her many thanks, and because hee might the better rest without disturbance, shee caused euerie one to depart the Chamber, her selfe likewise courteously bidding him good night. Palmerin beeing alone, loked rounde about the Chamer, to see if by any armes of deuise, hee might knowe the Knight that so happily deliuered him: at length, hard by his bed side he espied the Sheeld of Frysol, with the Sunne painted therein, which hee well remembred to be his deuise, whom for Polynardaes loue he hated, according as you haue heard in the former part of this Historie, which when he beheld, the teares trickling down his cheekes, he thus began to himself. I perceiue that the lady which saluted me on the mountaine is of excellent knowledge, for though the Knight bee my cheefest enemie, yet for the honorable kindnesse he hath this day shewed me, I wil forget all former iniuries, and loue him henceforth as hee were my brother, and what I could neuer compasse by rigour and force of Armes, I will nowe seeke to conquer by loue and courtesie. While he continued

these

theſe priuat ſpéeches, Fryſoll opened the Chamber doore, and entred to bid Sir *Palmerin* good night, who not a little glad of his comming, ſaid.

I pray you Sir knight, by the honourable loue you beare to Chiualrie, to tell me your name, and if héeretofore you were neuer in the Realme of England? My name, quoth the Knight, which hitherto I neuer hid from any man, is Fryſoll, and two yéeres I remained in the Realme you ſpeake of, with the Duke of Gaule in his Court. You remember then a Knight, ſaide Palmerin, with whom in leſſe ſpace then twelue dayes together, you had two ſeuerall Combats? Very true, quoth Fryſoll, and ſome good reaſon I haue to remember it, for the fight on my behalfe was ſo dangerous, as but by the fauour of a Lady and a Squire, I neuer had eſcaped with life. Nowe haſt thou in thy cuſtodie, ſaide Palmerin, the man that did thée ſuch wrong, no more an enemie, but for euer thy bowed, true, and truſtie Friend: and by the order I haue receiued, there is no man this day liuing, that ſhall withdraw me from thy friendſhippe, becauſe thou better deſerueſt it then any Knight in the worlde.

And hath by my meanes, quoth *Fryſoll*, the onely flower of Chiualrie béene deliuered from death, and the reſolute hatréd betwéene vs, united nowe with loue more then brotherlike? in happie howre went I on hunting this day, and fortune could neuer honour mée with more deſired ſucceſſe. For confirmation of this new alliance, bee ranne and called Leonarda, Olorico, and the reſt, and before them all kiſſed *Palmerin* in the Bedde, to ſeale the perpetuall league of amitie betwéene them. Then was recounted their aduentures and hatred paſt, whereat euery one greatly marualled, ſéeing this ſodaine change to ſuch ſurpaſſing loue.

Fryſoll alſo rehearſed, how after the rape of Agriola, the Duke Crenus his Lord, went to the Court, where hee aduiſed the King to purſue his Daughter, or to ſende him

in

in search of her, whereto he could not any way perswade the King. Moreouer, howe his Maiestie would haue kept him still in his seruice, whereto he might not graunt, for the promise he made the Ladie that came thither, whome after hée had brought to her Castle, hee trauailed by the Emperour of Allemaignes Court, where hée certainely vnderstood that Trineus and Agriola were not as yet there arriued, nor could any newes bee heard what became of them.

Yet during all these spéeches, he concealed all his owne noble déeds of chiualrie in England, Allemaigne, and other places: so vertuous and debonarie was this gentle knight, coueting in nothing to extoll himselfe. He forgot not likewise to report how that Lady cured him of a long and grée-uous disease, for which hée had so giuen himselfe to her seruice, as for euer he vowed himself her knight. Palmerin not a little contented with this discourse, said. I thinke the King of England would not sennde his Shippes after his daughter, remembring her happinesse to come, béeing nowe the espoused wife to Lord Trineus, and the honour thereof haue béene alreadie séene, but that the tempest of the Sea was to much their enemie. Then declared hée their troublesome time on the Sea, in what manner he lost them, and how he now trauailed to finde them againe. Since fortune hath so appointed (quoth Frysoll) that this loue and friendship should bee begunne betwéene vs, to continue the same I will beare you companie, and will not forsake you till yée haue found them, may it like you to accept me for your companion.

If it like mée: quoth Palmerin, you néede not doubt thereof, and rather you then any man that I knowe, for which noble kindnesse I thinke my selfe most fortunate. In this manner beganne the concorde betwéene Palmerin and Frysoll, which continued with vertuous and perfect constancie, as in the Chapters following you shal perceiue. Thus sojourned these Knights, there louingly togither, till

Palmerin

Palmerin being recouered and able to beare armes, they departed thence, leauing the poore Lady Leonarda in great beauineſſe, becauſe her friend Fryſol left her ſo ſoone.

Chap. XXX.

How Palmerin, the prince Olorico, and Fryſoll, went to Buda, thinking to finde the Court there, where beeing arriued, they heard newes howe the prince Florendos was taken, whom they went to ſuccour with all diligence at Conſtantinople.

FYſol, becauſe he would not haue his Ladie Leonarda too much diſcontented, made promiſe of ſpéedie returne to her: which woords ſomewhat pleaſing her, he departed with his two friendes, and ſuch quicke haſt they made in their iourney, and within fiue daies after they arriued at Buda. There were they aduertiſed of the Kings death, whereof the Prince of Macedon was accuſed, and the Quéene likewiſe: for which cauſe they were as priſoners conuaied to the Cittie of Conſtantinople.

At theſe tydings Palmerin was very diſpleaſant, wherefore he ſayde to his companions, Beléeue mée good Friends, my heart will neuer be in quiet, till I haue béene before the Emperour, who ought to bée an indifferent Iudge to Florendos, and hée is the onely man of the woorld, to whome moſt gladly I would do any ſeruice: therefore let vs make haſt to Conſtantinople, to the end we may ſuccour him, if he ſtand in any néede of our ayde. I am ready, quoth Fryſoll,

and

and let vs sette forwarde when you please. Herewith hee remembred his father, to whom the Crowne by right appertayned, if Tarisius deceased without anie heire: where to (by this meane) hee might attaine right soone. Perswading himselfe with assuraunce hereof, hee was now more earnest to be gone, and hastened his companions in such sort, as they came to Constantinople, two daies before the appointed time for the Combat. As they entred the Cittie, they met a Knight riding on hunting, whome after they had saluted, Palmerin questioned with all: if hee knew any thing of the Prince *Florendos* his misfortune, & what the Emperor intended to doo with him. Sir, quoth the knight, the Emperour hath resolutely set down, that the Prince and his daughter shall receiue their triall by Combate, against the two Nephewes to the deceased King: and furnished they must bee of their Champions, before the limitted time of ten dayes bee expired, and nothing else as yet is doone, to my knowledge. I thank you good Syr, quoth Palmerin, it is happie the matter is no further forward. So leauing the knight, they praunced merrilie into the Cittie, and because it was too soone to take vp their lodging, they rode to the Pallace, to knowe at full the certainetye of the matter: thus beeing all Armed, except their Helmets, which their Squires carried after them, they made a seemely shew as they rode, in that they were all three of one stature, and verye beautifull young Princes, they were especially noted, and followed by many Knights and Gentlemen, who imagined such persons went to the Pallace, for other matters then Courtlie daunceing.

These three companions beeing entred the great Hall, which was hanged rounde about with blacke veluet, in signe of mourning, they meruailed what might bee the occasion thereof: wherefore *Palmerin* falling on his knee before the Emperour, and hauing humblye kissed his hande, thus spake, Most renowmed Monarch of the worlde, my Freendes heere and my selfe, within these fewe dayes, as

we trauailed through the Realme of Hungaria, were aduertiſed that you keepe in priſon the Prince of Macedon, whom ſo pleaſe your Maieſtie to vouchſafe) I woulde gladlie ſée, in reſpect that hée is my Lord, as for the deſire I haue to deale in the Combat appointed, if it like him to make choyſe of me.

The Emperour perceiuing Palmerin ſo faire, modeſt, and couragious, began with himſelfe to conceiue well of him: and imagined that his Sonne Caniano was againe receiued, ſo néere did he reſemble him in countenaunce, ſtature, and all proportions of the bodie, wherefore hée returned him this anſwere. It ſhall not in ought diſpleaſe mée, my Freende, to let you ſée him, to the ende you may conceiue no ſuſpition of iniuſtice. So calling a Gentleman Vſher, commaunded him to conduct the Knight to the Towre where the Prince Florendos was: afterwarde enquiring of the Prince Olorico and Fryſoll, what the Knight was that ſo hardily did enterprize the Combat. Deare Lord, quoth Fryſoll, he is called Palmerin d'Oliua, a Knight (in my iudgment) of the verie higheſt qualitie in the worlde. Then hée and the Prince Olorico, rehearſed the prowéſſe and déedes of Chiualrie by him accompliſhed, in France, England, Allemaigne, Bohemia and Turkie: which being heard by a Bohemian Knight then preſent, he came to Fryſoll, ſaying.

I pray you Sir, is this that Palmerin who kild the Serpent on the Mountaine Artifæria, and brought the water from the Fountaine, which healed the good King Prymaleon Father to Florendos? It is he Sir quoth Fryſoll, and no other. Then dare I ſay, gracious Lorde, quoth the Knight, that you haue ſéene the moſt valiant and vertuous Gentleman, that euer came in Thrace. Hereuppon he diſcouered the noble victorie he obtained in Bohemia, againſt the two Gyants Darnaco and Mordano, whome hée ſlew before his worthy Combat on the behalfe of Dyardo, Coſin germaine to the King and fayre Cardonya; againſt the

Count

Counte of Ormeque and his Cozins, in the Companie of Prince Adrian, and Ptolome. Hereat were all the Princes and Knights present amazed, so that the Empero; himselfe saide.

Well maye Florendos nowe aduenture the tryall of his cause, hauing the onelye Champion of the woride on his side: and in this manner they deuised of him, till his returne from the pryson againe. Palmerin entring the Tower, Florendos was astonied, because no person was wont to come see him: but chiefely when he sawe him on his knees to him, vsing these speeches. Alas my Lord Florendos, how greeuous to mee is your imprisonment? in vnhappie time did you knowe him, that hath caused you to bee so ill intreated. I pray you my Lord comfort your selfe and take courage, for here may you beholde your Seruaunt Palmerin: who will be hewed in a thousand peeces, but hee will deliuer you from this miserie. Florendo;, whose eyes and face were greatlie swolne with incessant weeping, onelye with the sorrow hee conceiued for his Ladie, knowing him to bee the same man indeede: was so exceeding ioyfull, as infinit embracings and kissings, woulde not serue to bewraye his comfort, for such gracious welcomes, reuerence and courtesie he vsed, as Palmerin (bashfull to bee vsed with such honour) saide.

Vnseemelie is it my Lord, that you should thus much abase your selfe to mee: for (vnder correction) it ill agrees that the Maister should honour the Seruaunt. The poore Prince could not but still holde him in his armes, and with teares and meruailous affection, thus answered. Ah Palmerin, mine onelie hope and comfort in trouble, where hast thou beene? what fortune hath kept thee so long from mee? My deere Freende, howe manie vrkesome thoughts haue I endured, expecting thy comming? so that when I saw thou didst not returne, and I could no way heare what was become of thee: the verye conceite of thy absence had neere slaine me. Then careless what became of my selfe, being

depriued of my loue and honour of my life, I am fallen into theſe miſeries farre exceeding death: which Fortune I ſée hath permitted, becauſe I am perſwaded that thou muſt deliuer me from all miſhappes, and by thée ſhall I attaine my cheefeſt deſires. Ah happie and fortunate howre, well worthie for euer to be celebrated with tryumphes, finding thée the onely cauſe of my good, whome long ſince I feared was conſorted with the dead: but ſeeing thou art now ſo happilie come, acquaint me with the fortunes that ſtaied thée thus long, for very deſirous am I to knowe them. Palmerin was ſo greeued to ſée him in ſuch weake & ſickelie eſtate, as hée could hardlie make any aunſwere, yet ſtriuing with himſelfe, ſaid.

My noble Lord, the time requireth now other occaſions, hereafter ſhall I tell you the whole diſcourſe. Graunt mée I beſeeche you, without further intreating, that I may enter the Combat in your name, againſt one of thoſe Traitours who haue accuſed you: for ſuch is my hope in God, that I ſhall ſpéede luckilie, and bring him to the end ſuch a villaine deſerues. With all my heart, quoth the Prince I am contented, aſſuring my ſucceſſe ſo well in your vertues, as if fiue hundred of my Knights did enter the fielde for mée. And to the ende that without feare or doubt you maye take my cauſe in hand, I ſweare to you by the liuing God, that ſince Tarſius eſpouſed Griana, I neuer ſawe her, till when the King came and found me with her: which was ſo ſhort a time, as ſhe had not the leyſure to make mée any anſwer. True it is that I kild the King: but howe? I did it in reſpect hée was mine enemie, and abuſed my Lady and lawful wife. What though they were eſpouſed togither? the mariage was not to be allowed, in that it was done againſt her will: ſhe béeing (as I haue ſaid) my Wife, by ſolemne ſpéeches before God married to me. It ſuffiſeth, ſaid Palmerin, I haue enough. You ſhall likewiſe vnderſtande my Lord, that I haue brought with me another Knight, who will gladlie aduenture the Combate on the Queenes behalfe,

halfe, and such a one he is, as the other accuser will scant dare to stande against him: wherefore let mee intreate you to comfort your selfe, expecting our happy and fortunate successe.

Florendos falling on his knée, gaue thanks to Heauen for this luckie euent, and hauing an indifferent while conferred togither: after Palmerin had aduertised Frenato, of his Sonne Ptolomes health, and that in short time hee had good hope to finde him, he returned to the Emperour, to whome making great reuerence, he saide. Now my gracious Lorde, I come to vnderstand your answer. I pray you sir Knight quoth the Emperour, holde me excused, if I haue not welcommed you, as your nobilitie, bountie and hyghe Chiualrie deserueth: but after the Combat is ended, which for my part I graunt ye, what hath wanted now shall bée supplyed, so that your selfe shall rest contented. I thanke your Maiestie for this extraordinarie fauour, said Palmerin, and séeing the Prince hath committed his cause to my fortune, I beséech you send for the Kings Nephewes, that the appointed daye may not bee preuented by any further delayes. And if the Quéene your Daughter be not prouided of a Champion, this Knight (poynting to Frysoll, my beloued Frende and companion, shall vndertake her cause, in that he came hither for no other businesse: and such good experience haue I made of his valour and hardinesse, as if by knightlie Chiualrie her right may be defended, assure your selfe my Lord, this is the man. I thinke, said the Emperor, she is not as yet determined of anie one, albeit full many haue made offer of themselues: and for wee will expect no further, this Knight shall be preferred before all that come. I humbly thanke your Maiestie for this fauour, answered Frysoll: yet would I bee loth to presume too farre, beséeze I vnderstand the Quéenes pleasure. The Emperour caused him to bs conducted to the Quéenes Chamber, and his two companions with him, who desired to see the Ladies: where being entred, Frysoll humbly vpon his knée, began

in this manner. Right noble and excellent Quéene, so far through Christendome, is spread the report of your rare vertuous and integritie of life, especially your innocencie in the crime wherewith you are accused: as from farre Countreyes I am come to be your Knight, if you will vouchsafe me such honour as to accept me. Assuring you, that vnder your commaundement, and in the companie of my noble Friend, who vndertakes the Combat for my Lord Florendos, right willing am I to aduenture life and credit. Alas Gentle Knight, quoth the Quéene, this offer proceedeth from your courtesie and bountie, not by any vertue on my parte deseruing: for too contrarie hath Fortune euermore sette her selfe against me. But verie ingratefull might I bee accounted, and neuer be reckoned among Ladies of regard, if hauing taken such paines for me, I shoulde not accept you for my Knight, especiallie in so vrgent occasion. Therefore I entertaine you into this seruice, and I desire of God, that you may be as easilie deliuered from the charge you take in hand for me, as my conscience is cleere from the faulte wherewith I am accused.

I hope Madame quoth Frysoll, that my Lord your Father shall ere long perceiue, your loyall, perfect, and pure nobilite, which neuer can keepe companie with seruile and detestable treason. All this while Palmerin beholding the Quéene, seeing her swéete face so stained and blubbered with teares: moued with naturall remorse, was constrained to turne his head aside, to hide the teares that trickled down his cheékes.

The Quéene likewise regarded him so earnestlye, as when she beheld him weépe, she imagined that one gaue a violent pull at her heart: which shee dissembled so well as she could, determining not to demand the cause thereof, vntill such time as the Combatte were finished. So taking their leaue of the Quéene and the Princesse Armida, they returned to their lodging till the next morning, when the Emperour sending for them to the Pallace, where Prompt-

taleon

taleon and Oudin ſtaied their comming, the Emperour himſelfe thus began. Now Promptaleon, heere maiſt thou behold two yong Knights, who ſpeake the contrarie of that thou haſt reported: wilt thou yet maintaine that my daughter hath committed treaſon, and hath beene diſloyall to her Husband, thy deceaſed Vncle? I will my Lorde, quoth he, and ſweare by my Baptiſme, for that cauſe ſhe ſhal die the death: and if anie dare vndertake the contrarye, I am readie to prooue it by force of Armes. I thinke it conuenient, ſaid Palmerin, my God Lord, that no Combat ſhould be graunted, without the preſence of the accuſed. Immediatelie Florendos and Griana were ſent for, and being come before the Emperour, Palmerin ſaid to the Prince: How ſaye you, my Lorde, doo you permit in maintenance of your right, that I giue theſe falſe accuſers ſuch diſcipline, as their wicked and treacherous dealings deſerue? I doo, (quoth the Prince) and Heauen proſper thee in thine enterprize. What ſaye you Madame, quoth Fryſoll to the Queene, doo you affords the like to me? Shee aunſwered as Florendos before had doone, whereuppon Palmerin thus ſpake to the accuſers.

We two Knights will maintaine, that you both are Traitours, and that by couetous and greedie deſire of rule, and to enioy the Kingdome, you woulde (againſt all right) diſinherit the yong Princeſſe Armida: for which cauſe you haue ſhameſullie accuſed the Queene her Mother, to haue committed murder, and more then that, charge her with diſloyall lubricitie. For if the Prince Florendos talked with her, when the King founde him in her Chamber: it was in no other ſort then honor allowed, and according to the dutie of honeſt loue, wherein all Princes are bounde to their Ladies. Beſide, if your King was ſlaine by the Prince, it was in defence of his owne life, and in repelling the iniurious ſpeeches he gaue him: to approue what I ſay, wee preſent our gadges to the Emperour, ſo pleaſe him to receiue them. The like did the two Brethren, deſiring his

highneſſe to appoint the Combat preſentlie, in the wide and neceſſarie place before the Pallace. For (quoth they) wee will teache theſe vaine-glorious Strangers, the price of ſuch iniurious ſpeeches, ſpoken to thoſe that know how to correct them.

I thinke (quoth Palmerin) thou ſhalt neede to teache thy ſelfe: but if thou haſt learned anie newe dexteritie, practiſe it well thou art beſt, for I can tell thee the time will require it. The good Emperour Remicius commaunded ſilence, and taking the gadges of theſe foure Knights, bad them goe arme themſelues, ſaying hee woulde ſee the ende thereof before he toke any ſuſtenaunce. The Duke of Menſa, and the Counte of Redona, auncient Princes of Greece, were appointed to bee Iudges of the Fielde: who commaunded two hundred knights to Arme themſelues, for aſſurance of their owne perſons.

Chap. XXXI.

Of the noble Combat in the Cittie of Conſtantinople, by Palmerin and Eryſoll, againſt the two Nephewes of the deceaſed King of Hungaria, whome they vanquiſhed, by which meane the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana were deliuered.

PRomptaleon, and Oudin being departed the Hall, Palmerin and Friſoll taking their leaue of Florendos and the Queene, whom the Emperour cauſed to be ſhut vppe in their priſons againe: went to their lodgings to Arme themſelues. The Duke of Mecæna, an honorable

noꝛable pꝛince, diſcended of ẏ moſt ancient race in al *Greece*, with many other great Loꝛds went after them: and when they were Armed, the Duke would nædes beare Palmerins Launce, and the graund Squire attending on the Emperoꝛ, caried Fryſols. In this maner came they to the place appointed foꝛ the Combat, where the two Bꝛethꝛen were alreadie ſtaying foꝛ them, the eldeſt thus beginning in mockage. Beléeue mée Knights, foꝛ men that ſhewed themſelues ſo hardie in a Hall, mée thinks you haue beene very long Arming your ſelues.

I thinke you came on your ſaddle Mules to the Fields entraunce, foꝛ feare of falling to hurt your ſelues: but ſoone ſhall ye be taught better hoꝛſemanſhippe I warrant ye. If there were in thée ſo much wiſdome and exercíſe of Armes, aunſwered Fryſoll, as are high woꝛds and bꝛauing behauiour, it would bée a little better diſcerned then it is: notwithſtanding ere wee haue done, I thinke they that came firſt into the Fielde will tarrie laſt héere, vnleſſe ſome bodie foꝛ pittie carrie them out befoꝛe. Héerewith the Trompets ſounded, and the Heraldes commaunded the Champions to doo their deuoire, which was the cauſe, that theſe hotte woꝛds were chaunged into dædes: and running fiercelie againſt eache other, they encountred with ſuch puiſſaunce, as Palmerin caſt Oudin foꝛth of his ſaddle, with a verie great wound on his left ſide, and Promptaleon was receiued by Fryſoll ſo roughlie, as he fell backwarde on the crupper of his Hoꝛſe, becauſe hé was lothe his Bꝛother ſhould fall without companie. The two Bꝛethꝛen, enraged to bée thus foyled at the firſt, came with their ſwoꝛds dꝛawn to kill their aduerſaries Hoꝛſes: ſo that they were conſtrained quicklie to alight, when they aſſayled eache other with meruailous furie, foꝛ either ſide expected victoꝛie, the one in hope of a kingdome, the other to ſaue their Freends liues.

Strange was it to beholde this violent fight, yet the two Bꝛethꝛen ſeemed vnable long to holde out, foꝛ theyꝛ

Armoꝛ

Armor was ſo cut and mangled, and themſelues ſo driuen forth of breath, as hardly they coulde ſuſtaine themſelues: ſo that Promptaleon deſired Fryſoll to reſt a while, who moued with anger, thus anſwered. Nay Traytor, now ſhall I teach thée how to defende thy ſelfe, and not one minute will I graunt thee to trauerſe with mée: but will ſend thy ſoule to the Father of thy villainie, vnleſſe with ſpéede thou denie thy ſlaunder. With theſe words he laid ſo many ſounde ſtrokes on him, as at length hee fell downe deade at his feete, which when Oudin perceiued: hee threwe his Sworde at Palmerin, and caught him faſt about the middle, thinking that way to get him downe, but Palmerin ſhifting away his fact, cauſed him fal on his backe, and without attending for his reuolt, noblye ſtroke his head from his ſhoulders.

So comming to Fryſol, he aſked if he were wounded. No my Lord (quoth he) I thanke God, the greateſt wound I haue cannot withholde me to doe you further ſeruice, if ſo be you haue anie néede. Then putting vp their Swords, they demaunded of the Iudges, if any thing elſe remained to be done, for deliueraunce of the priſoners. Nothing worthy Lords, anſwered the Iudges, and them will the Emperour nowe deliuer, with all poſſible ſpéede. The good Remicius heartilie thanking God for his victorie, ſente a Knight to the Champions, with requeſt to come and lodge in his Pallace, as alſo that they ſhould preſently come ſpeake with his Maieſtie: yet could not the Meſſenger make ſuch haſte, but they were come forth of the Fielde, the Duke of Mecæna and the Prince Olorico bearing them companie.

When the Knight had ouertaken them, hée ſaide. Returne worthie Knightes to my Lord the Emperour, for hee would conferre with you, and haue your wounds attended by his owne Chirurgions. So turning again to the Pallace, they entred the Hall, where the Emperour meeting them, ſaid. Right welcome are ye my noble Frendes, who haue

ſo

so happilie defended my Daughters honor: for whose sake I shall make ye such recompence, as shalbe hencefoorth an encouragement to all Knights, to aduenture the Combat on the behalfe of anie distressed Ladye Imediatlye in theyr presence, by sounde of Trompet hée caused to bee declared, that the Prince Florendos and the Quéene Griana, were innocent of the trayterous accusation, and therefore in open Fielde bad they should bee deliuered: commaunding likewise his most expert Chirurgions to giue diligent attendaunce on the wounded Knights, causing them to be lodged in the most statelie Chambers of his Pallace. Afterwarde, hée suffered the bodies of the vanquished to bee buried, giuing expresse charge on paine of death, that none of the knights of Hungaria should depart from Constantinople, without his leaue: because hée woulde while they stayed there, prouide for the gouernment of the kingdom, as appertaining to his yong Daughter the Princesse Armida. The Empresse was so ioyfull for the deliueraunce of Griana, as shee had sone forgotte her Nephewes misfortune: the Quéenes Ladies likewise were not a little glad, but aboue all, the yong Princesse Armida, her comfort could not be expressed, that her Mother was so graciouslie defended: and now the Duke of Pera, who hadde the Prince Florendos in custodie, fetching him forth of prison, said. My Lord thanke God and the Knights that fought the Combat for you: for by theyr meanes the Emperour declareth you absolued and set at libertie.

The Prince lifting his eyes to Heauen, thus began. Ah my God, how happie is the man that trusteth in thy mercie: doubtlesse, he that beléeueth in thy promises, shall neuer perish. Noble Duke, in all mine afflictions I haue euermore founde your speciall fauour: but if God prolong my life, I will not be vnmindfull of your gentlenesse. In soth my Lord, quoth the Duke, for so good a Prince, any honest minde would gladlie endeuour himselfe: and if I haue pleasured you in anie thing, I did no more then my dutye, which

which christian amitie requireth of each other. So taking him by the hand, hee brought him before the Emperour, when falling on his knees, the Prince thus spake. If heertofore dread Lord, both I and my people gaue our selues to trauaile, and aduentured desperate hazard in your defence: at this time I count my selfe sufficientlie recompenced, seeing your displeasure qualified, and the hard opinion you conceiued against me, chaunged into princely and honorable iustice.

Syr *Florendos*, aunswered the Emperour, when I remember the wrong you did my Daughter, leauing such a scandalous report of her, at the first time you came to this Cittie, I thinke you worthie of the sharpest death. But placing mercie before rigorous iustice, I am desirous to let you knowe, that it liketh me better to be loued then feared: forgetting quite the offence against our person, the murder of our Sonne, without any regard to the murmur of the people, whose ignorance cannot consider of Princes mercie. Nor will I staine mine aged yeeres with mine owne proper bloud, or the death of a Prince so noble, whereby I shoulde leaue to my following posteritie, as a Trophe of my life, an endlesse memorie of tirannous crueltie: but rather shall my cheefest aduersaries stop their mouthes, with remembrance of my clemencie and princelie bountie, as your owne conscience shall well witnesse with me. You therefore my Lorde, the Duke of *Pera*, see that the Prince Florendos be lodged in the best place in our Cittie, and keepe him companie vntill his traine shall come from Macedon. With great humilitie the Prince kissed the Emperours hande, acknowledging his manifolde and princelie courtesies: desiring the Duke likewise before his departure, that hee might speake with the two Knightes, Frysoll and Palmerin.

Being brought to their Chambers, the embracings and gracious courtesies hee vsed to them, I am not able to vtter, and verie loth was hee to parte from them, but that

he

hée woulde no way preiudise theyr health: wherefore giuing them the good night, he was conducted to his lodging, leauing Palmerin verie sadde and pensiue, remembring what the Quéene of Tharsus had saide to him, howe hée should deliuer his Father from death, before he could know him, which was likewise confirmed by the apparition of the Ladie to him, vnder the name of his best and dearest Frendes.

O that the Heauens did so fauour me, quoth he, that I were the Sonne of the Prince Florendos and Quéene Griana, then woulde I imagine my selfe the happiest man in the world. Yet can I not forget, that the Fayries tolde mée on the Mountaine Artifæria, that one daie I shoulde bee Lord of all Greece: but God is my witnesse, that I couet not such honor and preferment, were it not for the loue of my Ladie, to the ende her Father might not dislike of our contract. And hence will I not depart before I vnderstand the truth hereof, and to what ende this aduenture will happen. Frysoll on the other side, he deuised how to make himselfe knowne to the Emperour and Empresse: because he had good hope when himselfe might bee knowne, that his Father Netrides shoulde enioy the Kingdome of Hungaria. The Prince Florendos likewise coulde take no rest, for his great desire to recouer the Quéne Griana. Such were the passions of these three Princes, eache one liuing in hope of good successe, which happens according to their expectations, as you shall reade hereafter.

Chap.

Chap. XXXII.

How the Queene Griana with the yong Princeſſe Armida, went to viſit Palmerin and Fryſoll, and howe the Queene knew Palmerin to be her ſonne, to the no litle ioy of the Emperour and the Prince Florendos.

TWo daies after the deliueraunce of the Prince Florendos, the yong Princeſſe Armida deuiſing with the Queene her Mother, ſaid. Me thinks gracious Madame, we are to be reproued of ingratitude, in that we haue not as yet viſited the poore wounded knights, conſidering how greatly we are beholding to them: I beſeech you let vs this morning go ſee how they fare.

Alas Daughter, anſwered the Queene, hast thou the heart to bring me among ſuch perſons, when I am laide to bee the cauſe of thy fathers death? Then the Princeſſe breaking foorth in teares, replied. Beleeue me Madame, if you remember your ſelfe well, you are in as litle faulte as I am, and ſo hath an honorable victorie declared: but had you beene anye way culpable therein, yet nowe you ought to comfort your ſelfe, hauing had ſuch a famous proofe of innocencie. In ſigne whereof, and to declare your thankfulneſſe to thoſe gentle knights: it will bee counted a ſpeciall point of courteſie, to viſite them that ventured for you. Go we then, ſaid the Queene, ſeeing you thinke it ſo neceſſarie, and are ſo deſirous. So accompanied with manie Ladies, clothed

clothed all in mourning blacke, they went first to Frysoll, greatlie thanking him for the paines hée had taken, putting his life in daunger, for the conseruation of their honors. Not to mée Ladie answered Frysol, ought you giue these thanks, but to him that onelye giueth strength to man: and if from my byrth I had continually trauailed in your seruice, yet your graces are such as I shoulde neuer deserue to bee reckoned among your meanest fauorites. The yong Princesse thinking her selfe greatlie bounde to him, woulde not giue him good morrowe with so little talke: but sitting downe on the bedde by him, taking him by the hand, began againe thus.

I knowe not Sir Knight, how the Quéene my Mother will proceede in requital of your noble seruice, for mine owne parte, not forgetting howe the Traytours threatned me, whom (to their endlesse shame) you haue vanquished and slaine: I find my selfe so indebted to you, as it far excéedeth my power, to guerdon you with answerable recompence. Frysol perceiuing the yong princesse affection, whom Loue had caught somewhat within his reache, knewe immediatlie by her sober bashfull lookes, the cause why so manie sighes were coupled with her words, himselfe likewise suddainlie sicke of the same disease, returned this aunswere. Madame, if Fortune the Frend to your happinesse, would fauour mée so much, as the enterprise done by your commanding, might sorte to an ende fitting my desire: I shoulde then accounte my selfe more then sufficiently gratified in this, that the act is agréeable to your liking, and the fauourable countenaunce of such a Ladie, is more then so meane a Knight as my selfe can merit. Beside, from the daye that the high renowme of your prudence and gracious beautie, assured me of those exquisite gifts, wherewith nature hath plentifullie enriched you: I toke such a religious bowe of bondage on mée, as (considering your high calling, and my selfe so far inferiour) I shall neuer obtaine the fauour of libertie, if your benignitie, exceeding all things elfe, graunt

mée

me not that speciall grace. The Quéene loth to trouble this forme of confession, withdrewe her selfe into Palmerins Chamber, where (as it fell out) shee founde no bodye but himselfe: by which occasion, remembring the loue she bare to Florendos, after shée had humblie saluted him, shée thus began.

Beléeue me gentle Sir, your knightlie Chiualrie hath shewed it selfe of such desert, as the Prince Florendos, for defence of whose honor, you haue not feared to aduenture your life, your daungerous woundes well witnessing the same, shall neuer deuise sufficient satisfaction. For in my iudgement it may well bee said, that goods, honor and life, hath beene restored him by your noble magnanimitie. Madam, quoth Palmerin, these wounds that for these two dates haue made me keepe my Chamber, thankes be to God are not so daungerous, as if occasion were offered, either for you or my Lord Florendos: but full well could I bee séene therein, to purchase entertainment into your gracious conceite. The Quéene then sitting downe in a Chaire by him, and viewing him verie earnestly, his lockes of haire kept down by a gorgious wrought Cap, embroidered with Saphires and small Emeralds, shée beheldе the mole on his face like a Crosse, which made her remember that her Son had the like, and in the selfe same place, when Cardyna tooke him from her and caried him to the Mountaine. Hereupon she tooke greater occasion to regard his countenaunce, and imagining him verie much to resemble the Prince Florendos, immediatlie shée perswaded her selfe that hee was her Son. Which conceit moued her to such alterations, as of long she continued silent, though Palmerin (in meane while) demaunded manie questions of her. These changes ouerruled by reason and discretion, shée commaunded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and to goe accompanie the yong Princesse Armida: they beeing no sooner gone, but shée began in this maner.

Let me request Sir Palmerin, to know your Parents

and

and the name of the Countrey where you were borne. Palmerin somewhat amazed at this demaund, was nowe in the midst of his onely desire, vertilie perswading himselfe that the Quéene was his mother, wherefore he thus aunswered.

Madame, I sweare to you by my faith, that I knowe no Ladie this day liuing, to whom I woulde willinglie reueale more then to your selfe: but so contrarie was Fortune to mée in mine infancie, that as yet I could not get anie knowledge either of my Father or Mother, nor of the Countrey where I was borne. Yet thus I haue béene certified, that I was nourished on a Mountaine not farre from this Citie, which is called the Mount of Olines, where (as I haue béene many times tolde) my Foster-father founde mée in rich swadling cloathes: and more then this, so please you to credite mée, cannot I bewray of whence or what I am.

O heauens (quoth the Quéene) how greatly am I bound to prayse your infinite bountie and pittie, for so safe protecting mine infant, whom I forsoke so cruelly? Ah gentle Knight, sée héere thy Mother, euen shee that commaunded thou shouldest bée carried to the Mountaine: and the Prince Florendos, whom so lately thou diddest deliuer from death, hée (noble Palmerin) is thy Father. Notwithstanding my Sonne, I desire thee by the reuerent loue thou beareſt mée, to conceale secretlie what I haue sayde, vntill I gaine the meane to discouer my shame to the Emperour: yet such a shame, as neuer came greater good to thy Mother: nor can I nowe account the déede sinfull, in that my fortune hath brought mée such an honourable Sonne. So rauished with ioy was both the Mother and the Sonne, as neither coulde expresse their inward contentation, for such was their alteration as they reputed for an illusion or dreame, what was most certaine indéed: such wonderfull comfort brought this vnexpected chaunce, wherewith the greateſt indowments of honour or riches may not bee compared. Béeing in this

 extasie,

extaſie, the Mother for her Sonne, and the Sonne for his Mother: Palmerin hauing now againe recouered his forces, ſayd.

My God I render thy name immortall thanks, in that I driue my breath from ſo noble and vertuous perſons, as alſo for graunting mée knowledge of them in a time ſo fortunate: forbeare then (good Mother) to miſce me of any thing, for I will diſcourſe the matter in ſuch ſort to the Emperour, as forgetting all things paſt, hée ſhall receiue both the mother and ſonne with greater ioy then you can imagine. But to the ende (Madame) you may be more certaine of your ſonne, ſée héere a Crucifixe of Golde, which was tied about my necke when I was founde, and hath of long time béene kept by the moſt perfect Lady in the world. The Queene knowing it right well, after ſhée had kiſſed it manie times, anſwered. Aſſuredly my ſonne, it is the verie ſame that my ſelfe tied about thy necke, when I was in the greateſt greefe that euer diſtreſſed mother might bée: to ſée her infant violatelie rapt from her, ſo ſoone as Nature had brought him into the world. But if my miſhap as then ſurpaſſed all other womens: yet now is it recompenced with ſuch a fortunate heure, as no Ladie may compare her felicitie with mine. Ah, my ſonne, by thée are my ſorrowes chaunged into ioy, my diſpaire into content, and from death it ſelfe am I brought againe to life: for if my husbands hard hap made me deſpiſe life, now may you be aſſured how much I deſire it.

Then declared ſhée, how to ſaue the Prince Florendos life, whoſe faithfull loue brought him to ſuch extremitie by ſickneſſe, ſhe aduentured her honor for his ſafetie, and entering the paradiſe of loue, beſtowed that ie wel on him, which ſhe moſt of all eſteemed. And ſo maiſt thou (quoth ſhée) report to the Emperour, yet in this manner, that not by carnall impudicitie I ſo conſented: for God is my witneſſe, that notwithſtanding the perill wherein I ſawe him, no perſwaſion could cauſe me yeeld him that eſpeciall remedie,

before he had first solemnly vowed marriage to mée, which against all right was broken by the Emperours commaundement.

Madame, quoth Palmerin, Florendos is of such valour, and his honorable actions so well receiued among men, that albeit he had made you no such promise, yet reason may excuse you in this matter. But if by promised faith, and to saue the life of so gentle a Knight (who happilie by your refusall might haue miscaried) you honoured the Temple of Loue with so sweete an offering: among people of good minde, it ought rather to bée tearmed a vertue, then anie bad affection or vnlawfull lust. And therfore, Madame, comfort your selfe, for shortly I hope to assure your peace with the Emperour: and séeing I haue you for my mother, and the Prince Florendos for my Father, I séele my selfe frée from any gréefe or vexation, assuring you, that I will driue it to no further delay, but this morning will I confer with his Maiestie.

The Quéene béeing fearefull, that her long stay should cause anie bad opinion, hauing killed her sonne, gaue him the good morrowe, and so went to her Chamber, where shée found Cardyna her Gentlewoman, to whom she shewed the Crucifixe her sonne had giuen her, saying. Tell me, I pray thée Cardina, dost thou remember that herefore thou hast séene this Crucifixe, and in what place? Beléeue me, Madame, quoth shée, I thinke I haue séene it before nowe, but in what place I am not certaine? Why? forgetfull creature, knowest thou not that this is the Crucifixe which was tied about my sonnes necke, when thy selfe did carrie him to the mountaine? In good faith, the Knight is hée, who fought the Combate for my Lorde Florendos. Nowe sée the great mercie and bountie of our God, who preserued his life then, and from infinite daungers hath defended him hitherto. Notwithstanding, bee thou secret, and on perill of thy life reueale it to none, vntill the Emperour my Father be acquainted therewith. Cardyna was so ioy-

full héereof, as ſhée muſt néedes goe preſently to ſée Palmerin, and finding the Chirugians with him viſiting his woundes, ſhée fetched a gorgious Mantle of purple Velvet broydered round about with Pearles, Diamonds and Rubies, as wel might beſéeme the greateſt Monarch to weare. As Cardina holpe him to put on this Mantle, ſhe noted the marke on his face, which ſhe remembred ſince the time of his birth: and in this maner goes Palmerin chéerefully to the Emperour, whom he founde conferring with his Lords and Barons, but his preſence cauſed them breake off talke, imagining him the comelieſt perſon that euer they ſawe. The good olde Emperour Remicius, reioycing to ſée him in ſo good and able plight, demaunded of him howe he fared? Right well, quoth he, I thank God and your highneſſe, readie to aduenture on any occaſion ſhal like you to commaund me: and now am I come to aduertiſe your Maieſtie of ſuch matters as will not a little glad ye in the hearing, ſo pleaſe your grace to vouchſafe me priuate audience. Hereupon the Emperour commaunded euery one to depart the Hall, and they béeing nowe alone, Palmerin thus began. Dread Lord and mighty Emperour, till this time haue I frequented the Courts of manie Kings and Potentates, without deſire of requeſting anie thing, vntill this preſent: when faine would I requeſt one boone of your Maieſtie, the grant whereof ſhall returne you both profit and honor. My noble Friend Palmerin, anſwered the Emperour, what euer thou pleaſeſt, demaund, and on my worde it ſhall bée graunted.

Palmerin with humble obeyſaunce kiſſing the Emperours hand, ſayd. In ſoth, my Lorde, all that I haue to requeſt, is onely to deſire your highneſſe, that all offences committed by the Prince Florendos, and Madame Griana your Daughter, may not onely be forgotten, but alſo forgiuen. For thy ſake Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, I forgiue all their offences whatſoeuer. Pray it then pleaſe your Maieſtie, quoth he, to remember, howe when Florendos came

to

so doe you seruice during your warres against Gamezio, because you vented to giue him your Daughter, hee was so sicke, as euerie howre his death was expected: It then so fortuned my Lord, the Princesse your Daughter, acquainted with the cause of his sickenesse, to giue him some comfort, as also to defend so good a Prince from death: by gracious speeches shee gaue him such hope of her loue, and such (for trueth) as before they parted, a solemne promise of marriage was concluded betweene them. I know not the conditions of their agreements, but it seemed the Articles consisted on no difficult accorde, for each reteyned of other the sweete desires of loue, in so much as that night was I begotten. And for a trueth, my Lord, I am the Sonne to the Prince Florendos, and Madame Griana your Daughter, who (as I vnderstand) by the Empresse perswasion, against all right you compelled to marrie with the Prince Tarsius. Florendos, notwithstanding my Mothers wrong was beyre great, hath continued so loyall, as he would neuer accept anie other for his Wife, nor as yet will, but onely her. Nowe my Lord, that this matter may not seeme a fantasticall inuention, I can resolue you of the place of my byrth, which was in the Tower, where my Mother remained prisoner by your commaundement, vnder the charge of a Ladie named Tolomestra: who to defende your daughters honor, caused me to be carried to a place not far hence, which is called the Mount of Olines, from whence my surname is likewise derived, & in that place was I found by a Countrey peasant vnder a Palme Tree, who in signe thereof named me Palmerin d'Oliua. My sorrowfull Mother, hoping one day to see me againe, diligently noted diuerse markes I haue, and hung about my necke a golden Crucifixe, which this day I gaue her againe: and by this marke [illegible] like a Crosse, shee well remembers me to be her Sonne. In this respect my Lord, that your Daughters offence, was occasioned by true and faithfull loue, and hauing likewise promised to forgiue all causes of displeasure: graunt my father

nowe at length to enioy his lawfull Wife, that I being their Sonne, may not bee eſteemed as illegitimate, the doing whereof will renowme your name for euer, and long tryed in ſo manie afflictions, ſhall be crowned with his long and deſired reward.

The Emperour amazed at this ſtrange diſcourſe, could not imagine what anſwer to make: wherefore having ſtien a prettie while ſilent, lifting his eyes to heauen, he thus began. O mightie King of Kings, onely good and full of mercie, I render thy name euerlaſting thankes, for thy gracious regarde to the diſtreſſed Empire of Greece: for though in our laſt warres thou tookeſt away my Sonne Caniano, thou haſt at this inſtant ſent me another, who well hath learned to defend this ſtate, from the proude inuading Gouernour of Turkie. Ah my Sonne Palmerin, right well do I beleeue what thou haſt ſaid. And albeit thou hadſt not ſhewen ſuch probable arguments, yet dooſt thou ſo perfectlie reſemble my Sonne Caniano, as eaſily may be coniectured whence thou art diſcended. Whatſoeuer thou demaundeſt my Sonne, is already graunted. And with theſe words the teares trickled downe his milke-white Beard, ſuch was his inward earneſt conceyt of ioy: and imbracing Palmerin in his armes, he called his Lords, who marueiled not a little at this euent, and thus ſpake the Emperour. Behere my Friendes your liege Lorde and Soueraigne, the Sonne of my Daughter Griana, and the Prince Florendos, how may you applaud the bountie of Heauen, prouiding for you ſuch a noble Prince? The Lords all wondering at theſe ſpeeches, came and entertained him with manie ſignes of honour: ſo that it is not regiſtred in any auncient memorie, that euer King or prince had ſuch ſuddaine and gracious [illegible].

By this time theſe newes were ſpredde through the whole Pallace, and the Empreſſe hearing thereof, ſent one of her Squires for Palmerin: when the Emperour taking him by the hand, brought him to her Chamber, ſaying. Be-

here Madame your Sonne, who by your meanes hath long time beene banished our Court: hereafter looke hir be better vsed.

The Empresse surprised with incredible ioy, louingly embracing him, said. Welcome my Sonne, forget my heynous offence, when I would not suffer thy Mother to enioy the Prince Florendos, which fault Heauen hath reuenged with the death of my three Nephewes, whereof I nowe make no reckoning, seeing God hath sent vs such a gracious comfort. The Emperor on the other side welcommed the Quéene his Daughter, which as yet he had not done since her comming from Hungaria. Lay by (quoth he) fayre Daughter, these blacke garments, the witnes of your inward mourning, and decke your selfe presently in reioycing habits: for now before all my Lords of Greece, will I haue you espoused to the Prince Florendos. So departed the Emperour and the Princes, leauing the Quéene with her Ladies, who disrobed her of her mourning garments: his Maiestie commaunding Palmerin to go séeke the Prince of Macedon his Father, accompanied with all the noblemen of the Court.

In the meane while, he caused all the ornaments of black to bee taken downe, and the Pallace to bee hanged with sumptuous cloth of Golde: and gaue in charge to the Empresse, that the Quéene, the Princesse Armida, and all the Ladies, should adorne themselues, as to receiue the verie greatest Prince in the worlde. Likewise he saide to all his Knights. Reioyce my good Freends with mée: for God tooke away my Children, and hath double restored them: for those that bée dead, hée hath raysed vs more. Palmerin hauing with him all the Emperours Knights, went to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, and by the way the Citizens of Constantinople, Nobles, Marchants, and Artezans, welcommed him verie honourablie, making bonfires and Garlandes of tryumph, in euerie stréete, crying. Welcome to this noble Cittie our newe Lord and Maister: and such

thereſull delights vin they ſolemnize the time withall, as though it had beene the feaſt of Chriſtmaſſe. Palmerin & his traine being come to the Princes lodging, found two ſquires at the Gate, ſent thither by the Emperour, the one holding a horſe verie richly eparaſſoned, and the other coſtly garments of cloath of Golde, which he cauſed to be brought vp after him into the Chamber, where falling on his knee before the Prince, he ſaid.

Nowe come I my Lord to kiſſe your hande, not as I have done heeretofore, but as becommeth a ſonne to his Father: for I am your ſonne, begotten on the Queene Griana, whom the Emperour will nowe beſtow on you in marriage. Florendos was ſo ravniſhed with theſe ſpeeches, as hee was readie to ſwoune betweene Palmerins armes: but at length fetching a great ſigh, ſaide. O celeſtiall Soueraigne, what am I, whom thou ſhouldeſt ſo reſpect, and lift to ſuch ſurpaſſing happineſſe? Alpuge Florendos, not long ſince the moſt wretched among men: what man may nowe compare with thy fortune, having ſuch a knight to thy ſonne, and ſayre Queene Griana to thy Wife? Come my ſonne, quoth hee, embracing Palmerin, for it is no reaſon to ſtay, when ſuch happie newes hath ſent for vs. And credit me, the verie firſt time I did beholde thee, my heart was ſolicited with greater ioy then I am able nowe to expreſſe, which ever ſince made me coniecture, that there was more betweene vs then frendly alliaunce. Then was hee cloathed in the rich garments ſent by the Emperour, and his Cozin Grenato in like maner: ſo comming on horſebacke, the Duke of Pera rode on his right hande, and his ſonne Palmerin on the left, with many Princes, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, ryding both before and behind them. In this maner came they to the Pallace, where the Emperour himſelfe ſtaied their comming at the Gate: and after they were alighted, the Prince making humble reuerence to his Maieſtie, thus ſpake. Mightie and redoubted Lord, I knowe not how to render ſufficient thanks, in that your

highnes is pleased to honor me with your daughter, which is the thing I alwaies desired. Notwithstanding, I hope to shew such deserts hereafter, as neither shee shall be mis-contented, nor your maiestie repent your gentle gift. Noble Lord, quoth the Emperour, well haue you deserued her, and mine Empire with her, in respect of your worthy sonne Palmerin, whome all Europe, Asia, and Affrica honours. Wherefore in the presence of all my Lords I will giue her to you, deferring the day of solemnitie, vntill the states of Macedon come, therefore Sonne Palmerin go for your Mother.

Presently hee departed, the Dukes of Pera and Mecon with him, and soone they returned, bringing with them the Empresse, the Queene, and his Sister the young Princesse Armida, whom hee had schooled with such gracious speeches, as shee had now forgotten her displeasure towardes the Prince Florendos, for the death of the king her Father. There openly in the Hall, by the Archbishop of Constantinople, the Prince Florendos and Griana were affianced together, to their no little contentment, as also to the good liking of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, who spent the rest of the day in ioyfull disports and triumphs.

Chap.

Chap. XXXIII.

How Fryſoll declared to the Empreſſe, that he was ſonne to her Nephew Netrides.

All this pleaſure of the Princes and lords of Greece, for ſo many ioyfull and vnexpected accidents, might not be compared with the pleaſures of the Prince Olorico and Fryſoll, who would nowe no longer keep his bed, in reſpect of his ioy for the good fortune of his friend, wherefore putting on his garments, and accompanied with Olorico, he came downe into the great Hall, as the Prince of Macedon was betrothed to his Ladie, when Palmerin ſtepping from al the reſt, welcommed them with very gracious courteſie. After they had beene generally ſaluted, Fryſoll came before the Empreſſe, and on his knee began in this manner.

Moſt excellent and gracious Madame, may it pleaſe you pardon mine offence in ſhedding the bloud of your kinſman. Notwithſtanding, as the Law of iudgement and reaſon exhorteth me, of two euilles I choſe to take the leaſt: ſo did I rather thinke it good to bathe my handes in the bloud of mine owne Couzin, then permit him (by the Prince *Florendos* offence) to ſuffer open violence. This ſpeake I Madame, as being the Sonne to your Nephew Netrides, whom long ſince his eldeſt Brother diſinherited, and baniſhed him his Countrey to a little Caſtle, where at this time he remaineth in good diſpoſition. Now iudge which of theſe euents is moſt admirable, that of your noble ſonne

Palmerin

Palmerin, or this which I haue now rehearsed. But may it be (quoth the Empresse) that my Nephew Netrides is yet liuing? and can it be possible that thou art his Sonne? Trust me Madame, saide Frysoll, I haue tolde you truth, and by Gods leaue you shall haue more ample proufe therof within these fewe dayes.

Hereuppon the Emperour, the Empresse, Florendos, and Palmerin, with inexplicable reioycing, embraced Frysoll, not a little extolling theyr fortune, that such hardie knights were discended of their linage. Then Frisol rehearsed before them all, the three Combats hee had with Palmerin, and what great honour he wonne at the Tourney in France, which report greatly contented the Prince Florendos, hearing the honourable Chiualrie of his sonne, nor would hee forget to ioyne therewith, his conquest on the Mountaine Artifæria, with his Combats both in Bohemia and Durace.

At these reports the Emperour somewhat amazed, side before all his Lords. I beléeue my Friendes, that the marualous rare fortunes of these two Cozins Palmerin and Frysoll, with the strange aduentures they haue finished in their youth, promise greater matters in their following yéeres. Then an auncient Knight of Hungaria, who was named Apolonio, said to the Emperour, how in time past hee had béene Page to the Father of Tarisius, by which meane hee knew Netrides right well if hee might sée him. And if he be yet liuing, quoth hée, in regard of his manifolde princely vertues, the Realme of Hungaria néede no better Gouernour, nor will the people themselues mislike of so good a change. Wherefore, may it so stande with your highnesse pleasure, to grant mée companie beseeming the cause: I will do my dutie in the search of him, and bring him hither with mée to the Court. Willingly the Emperor consented thereto, and like order toke the Prince Florendos, that Cardyna with her Bzethren and other Gentlemen, should go to the Mountaine of Olines, and enquire

for

for Gerrard Palmerins foster-father, Marcella his Wife, and Dyofena their Daughter. Palmerin seeing all things sort to so good ende, falling on his knee before the Emperour and his Father, saide. Seeing it hath pleased God to make me knowne for your Sonne, I will not conceale a matter from you, which concerneth mee very nerely, and although it be of great importaunce, yet will I not further proceede without your aduise. So discoursed he all his seuerall apparitions, while he continued with his supposed Father, whereby he was prouoked to go seeke the lady, who by fatall destenie was promised him: nor did he hide his troubles in her search, but therewith bewrayed that her name was Polynarda, daughter to the Emperour of Allemaigne, and his Wife by solemne vowes passed betweene them. He declared moreouer, how he trauailed to find the Prince Trineus, whome hee lost on the Sea with the Princesse of England, and them hee would recouer againe, in respect of his faithfull promise to his Ladie. Notwithstanding, quoth he, if you thinke it conuenient, I would gladly sende to aduertise the Emperour and my Lady his Daughter of my present good fortune, that his Maiestie may confirme our priuate agreement, because I doubt the Prince of Fraunce, whose Ambassadours haue beene there to conferre on the matter, may otherwise preuent me of mine onely choyse. In like manner, if Netrides shall be founde to bee made King of Hungaria, and the Princesse Armida to be bestowed in marriage on Syr Fryfoll, who is such a Knight in my iudgement, as well deserues one of the chiefest Ladies in the world.

So God helpe me my Sonne, quoth the Emperour, no reason were it to disappoint what thou hast so well contriued: for seeing things haue beene fore-pointed by fortune, meere folly it is for men to contraire them. And because I haue heretofore heard, that the Emperours Daughter is the flower and choyse Ladie among all other, whose vertues challenge the man beyonde compare in Chiualrie: I

will

will sende mine Ambassadours to the Emperour, as well for the perfection of the marriage, as to comfort her in her despayres, with certaine assurance of our health and welfare, and so shall your intended trauaile not bee hindered. Notwithstanding, before you begin your iourney, you shall receiue the homage of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, as their liege Lord and supreme Gouernour, which béeing done, I will likewise take order for my Nephew Frysoll, so soone as his Father shall come to the Court. Then calling for the Maister of his Horse, commaundement was giuen for spéedie dispatch of messengers to all parts. So leauing the Emperour busied in these affayres, Florendos and Palmerin went to the Quéene, who causing them to sitte downe by her, after shee had very graciously welcommed them, sayde.

I pray you tell me, which of vs three is most beholding to Fortune, the Father, the Mother, or the Sonne? Doubtlesse, who so considereth the condition of our aduenture, will finde it such, as seldome hath the like béene séene héretofore. And in sooth my Lorde Florendos, the grieuous torments I haue endured since the losse of my Sonne, and my great disloyaltie towards you by breach of my promise, I iudge may bee equalled with the burthen of mine offence. Neuertheless, if you estéeme not your selfe satisfied, let your noble regards excuse what nature hath perfected, which is, to endure much more then as yet wee haue done. Madame, answered Florendos, in time of ioy remember not our passed misfortunes, but thinke what now is done, our gracious starres haue graciously furthered and limitted to this end, that my loyaltie, with the bountie and prowesse of our sonne, should be laid open to euerie iudgement. Héere had the Prince occasion to rehearse his afflictions in loue, endured twentie yéeres space and more for her sake, which Palmerin hearing, either fearing to offend them, or induced by modest bashfulnes, he went to his Sister the Princesse Armida, whose thoughts hee sounded by such subtilties and dissimula-

diſſimulations, as he found the effect of her deſires, which was to enioy Sir Fryſoll to her Huſband. Ye not a little contented herewith, confirmed her choyſe to be commendable, ſealing the aſſurance thereof with an honourable report of his knightly dædes of Armes. Then the Emperour called for the Duke of Mecæna and the Counte of Reſort, as alſo his principall Secretarie, whom hee commaunded to write to the Emperour of Allemaigne, touching the marriage of the Princeſſe Polinarda and his ſonne Palmerin, ſhadowing the ſecret agreement betweene themſelues, and committed the reſt to the diſcretion of the Ambaſſadours.

The Letters ſealed with his great Signet, was deliuered to them that had the charge of this meſſage, who could not ſo ſpædily departe from Conſtantinople, becauſe the winde and weather was not nauigable. Now had Palmerin promiſed Fryſoll that he would ſpeake to the Princeſſe his ſiſter, and ſolemnely reſolue vpon their marriage: wherefore (meeting with this earneſt Leuer) hee thus laboured to pleaſe him. Truſt me Cozin, I haue ſo ſurely imprinted your eſpeciall generoſitie in my Siſters minde, as the carracters can neuer be defaced, but remaine more perfect by your ſpædie marriage. Fryſoll rauied with theſe newes, as all pretenders of loue may well imagine, offered to kiſſe his hande, which Palmerin would not ſuffer, whereupon hee thus proceeded. Ah my Lorde, howe am I more and more indebted to you? right wiſe was hee which ſaide, that affabilitie and liberalitie are continuall companions with nobleneſſe and magnanimitie. And though by al my ſeruices I cannot deſerue the honour you do mee in accepting me for your Brother, yet am I ſo faithfully vowed yours, as the honours of my Father nor loue of the Princeſſe your Siſter, can ſeperate mee from your companie, vntill you haue founde your long deſired Friende Trineus. And for this cauſe my Lord, I earneſtly intreate you to haſten Apolonio towards my Father, for I will ſende him to

the

the place, where he shall be assured to finde him. Palmerin prayed thereto immediatly, and so laboured with the Emperour, that the Letters were deliuered, and the oathes taken of all the Hungarians, they were sent home into theyr Countrey, with a Lieutenant appointed to gouerne them vntill the comming of Netrides, to whom Feysoll wrote the truth of all his fortunes, with earnest request of his speedie presence.

And to enduce him to the greater haste, hee feigned that many Princes laboured for the Crowne of Hungaria, and were in likelihood to obtaine it: all which was but to enioy the faire princesse Armida. The same day Florendos sent to the King his Father at Macedon, that hee should send the choicest states of his Realme, against the day that Palmerin should be sworne the Prince of Greece.

Chap. XXXIIII.

How Cardyna the Gentlewoman attending on the Queene, accompanied with her Brother and diuers other Squires, brought Gerrard, his wife and daughter to the Court, and what entertainment Palmerin made them.

CArdyna, with those that were commanded to kepe her company, in short time came to Gerrards house, whom shee found sitting at dinner with his familie. The good man was at first amazed, seeing such courtly personages enter his house, a matter esteemed rare among ỹ persons dwelling on the mountaine;

taine: but ſéeing they came in decent and modeſt ſort, not proffering any diſcourteſie, he entertained them very friendly, when Cardyna taking him by the hande, ſaid. God Father, are you the man that is called Gerrard? I am the ſame quoth he, gentle miſtreſſe. You are then the man, anſwered Cardyna, that I ſéeke, and therefore I pray thée tell me what thou didſt with a Childe, that twentie yéeres and more ſince, thou foundeſt in ſwadling clothes vnder a Palm Trée on this Mountaine: for certaine I am that thou didſt take him home with thée to thy houſe? Ah miſtreſſe, quoth the good old man, you haue killed my heart in remembring me of him, whom I loued déerer then any of mine owne. The infant of whom you ſpeake, I founde not farre hence vnder a Palme Trée, for which cauſe at his Baptiſme I named him Palmerin. From that time forwarde, I nouriſhed him as hée had béene mine owne Sonne, till hée came to tall ſtature, and as he grew in yéeres, ſo did hee in vertuous and noble qualities, which made him not a little beloued in theſe parts, for when hee attended my Cattell, he toke pleaſure to courſe the Wolfe, Hart, Beare, Bore, and Lion, and oftentimes would kill them when him liſted, which none of mine owne Children durſt at any time aduenture.

Ah ſweéte Miſtreſſe, when I remember his many ſeruices, the dutifull reuerence and loue hee bare mée, I am readie to die with conceite of greéfe, that it was my ill hap ſo ſone to loſe him. Yet came not this miſfortune alone, for mine eldeſt Sonne, who loued him as he had béene his owne Brother, immediately went after him, and yet could I neuer heare any tidings of them. Notwithſtanding Miſtreſſe, if you know of whence hée was, I can ſhewe you all the clothes wherein I founde him. I ſhall be contented to ſée them, quoth Cardyna, but what will ye giue the partie that can tell ye where he is? Gerrard at theſe wordes fell on his knée before her, and with the teares trickling downe his graie beard, ſaide. By my troth miſtreſſe, if it ſhall like

you

you to doo me so great pleasure, of all my substance I will giue yée the one halfe: or all my heard of Beastes, which ye saw feeding on the Mountain as ye came, besides my continuall seruice while I liue. Gramercies Father, sayd Cardyna, but call for your Wife and Daughter, and then shall I tell ye newes that well content you. As for him, whose friendly Parentes you were so long time, hée is nowe at *Constantinople*, and is the Sonne of Madam Griana, daughter to the Emperour: who commaundeth you thrée to come to the Court, that she may content ye for nourishing so well the noble young Prince. The olde man exceeding ioyfull, without ordering his affaires, or appointing his Seruaunts their course of labour, saide to his Wife and Dyofena his Daughter.

Make ye readie presently in your best garments, and let vs goo see that noble Gentleman: for all the Golde in the world cannot make me staie, nowe I haue heard so happie tidings. The good woman and her daughter, trickt vp themselues in their countrey fines, and taking the rich swadling clothes, sette forward to *Constantinople* so merely, as sometime did the foster Father of Paris, Alexander, his Wife, and their Daughter Pegasis, when they brought the Cradle and acoustrements of the infant royall, to the Cittie of *Troy*, after he was knowne by his Father king Priam, and Quéene Hecuba his Mother.

Palmerin being aduertised by one of the Ladies of Honour attending on the Empresse, that Cardyna had brought Gerrard, to prouoke greater contentation, he would needes goe meete him, and so went downe into the Court, accompanied with many yong knights lately come to the Emperours seruice. Gerrard seeing this goodly troupe, among them all knewe Palmerin perfectly, wherefore alighting from his Horse, and without giuing him in charge to any Page or Lackie, ran and fell downe at his feete, but Palmerin staying him in his armes, said. Father Gerrard and my deare friends, the God of Heauen be [illegible] praised, in

that by bringing me to the knowledge of my Parentes, I haue the meane to ſatiſfie your paine and trauaile for me, ſauing my life in my yongeſt yeares, and nouriſhing me to the ſtate of diſcretion.

Ah my Lord, quoth Gerrard, I thinke in all the world is no man ſo happie as my ſelfe, hauing defended from perill ſo noble a perſon, therefore needeleſſe is it to make offer of money for your nurriture: in that I prize your golde and ſiluer leſſe then droſſe, ſuch is my content to ſee you ſo well. Palmerin likewiſe, whoſe match might not be founde in courteſie and nobilitie of heart, louingly welcommed Marcella, and her daughter Dyofena, walking along with them vp into the Pallace, where in this ſort hee preſented them to the Emperour. See heere my good Lord, they that from mine infancie, with exceeding kindneſſe and loue nouriſhed mee: let mee therefore intreate your Maieſtie ſo to conceiue of them, as their paines and charges may be ſufficiently requited. The Emperour taking great pleaſure to beholde them, ſaide they ſhould continue in the Court with him, commaunding them to bee brought to his daughters Chamber, who entertained them verie graciouſly: but when they came to vnfold Palmerins little pack of cloathes, hardly can you imagine the inwarde ioyes of the Mother. For Tolomeſtra well knew the Scarlet mantle, which her ſelfe had all embroydered with curious knots of Gold, and all the other prettie trinkets, ſaying. Doubtleſſe Madame, it cannot bee but that Palmerin is your Sonne: for well I knowe hee was wrapped in theſe cloathes, when Cardyna carried him hence to the Mountaine. Then did Gerrard diſcourſe before all the Ladies, in what manner hee founde yong Palmerin among the Trees: not forgetting to report euery thing, from that day till his departure without his knowledge.

Many ſweete ſmiles did the Queene intermedle with her forced teares, hearing the ſundrie daungers her Sonne had endured: and for the great loue ſhee bare to Marcella,

she made her one of the Ladies of her Chamber, and gaue Dyofena a worthie dowrie to her marriage. As for Gerrard himselfe, the Emperor made him one of his cheefest Barons, and dubbed his Sonnes Knights, who proued afterward of hardie courage, as hereafter in the Hiſtorie you may perceiue. This done, the Emperour brought Florendos and Palmerin into his Treasurie, saying. My friendes, take, beare away, all is yours, dispose thereof as you please: furnish your selues with all needefull thinges, against the day of my Daughters marriage. Giue bountifully to the poore Knights, that they may likewise prepare themselues in readinesse, all which will redound to your perpetuall honour.

In sooth my Lord, answered Florendos, it is against all equitie and reason, that during your life I should presume so farre: well worthie were I of the sharpest reprehension, to usurpe that, which by right appertaines to him who gaue me life and honour. When the Emperour sawe hee could not perswade them, hee sent a sumpter Horse loaden with Golde, to the Prince Olorico and Eryfoll: beside diuers other Jewels of inestimable value, that they might the better furnish their estate, against the solemnitie of the *Macedonian* Prince. On which day, these two Knights determined a Tryumphe at Armes, for the loue of their friende and companion Palmerin: who the same day should bee sworne Prince, and sole heire to the Empire. Vpon this occasion, and by his highnesse commaundement, the Heraldes were sent abroad to publish the Tourney, which should endure tenne dayes togither: with the excellencie of the prize to them, that should beare the honour of the Iouſt each day. These disports so prouoked the Lords of *Greece*, as neither King, Duke, Countie, Barron, or Knight, that was able to mannage Horſe and Armes, but repaired to *Conſtantinople*, in such troupes, as though a new world had bene to be conquered.

Chap. XXXV.

Howe the Knight that Florendos ſent to Macedon, rehearſed to the King Primaleon the effect of his charge: and how Palmerin entertained his fathers, Princes and Knights.

FLorēdos hauing ſent one of his knights to *Macedon*, in verie ſhort time ẏ Meſſenger arriued at a Caſtle of pleaſure, where as then the King remayned for his delight, with the Princeſſe Ariſmena his Daughter, to expell ſuch contagious thoughts as daily troubled them, for the abſence of the Prince, of whome they coulde vnderſtande no tydings. The knight beeing come into the Kinges Chamber, where his Maieſtie ſatte deuiſing with his Daughter: and ſetting his knee to the grounde, in this maner beganne his meſſage. Right high and mightie King, I bring you the very ſtraungeſt tidings, yet repleate with ioy and ſpeciall comfort, whereof your Maieſtie neuer heard the like. My Lorde the Prince Florendos your Sonne, with humble dutie ſaluteth your excellencie, and the faire Princeſſe Ariſmena his Siſter, certefying you, that the aduenturous knight Sir Palmerin, euen hee by whoſe meanes your health was recouered, is his owne Sonne, begotten on the princeſſe Griana, Daughter to my Lord the Emperour, to whom hee is nowe betrothed, by the conſent of all the Princes of the Empire, and Sir Palmerin your Sonne ſhall be Emperour, after the deceaſe of his noble Grandfather. The good king Primaleon

leon olde and decrepite, was so surprised with these newes, as he imagined he heard some fantastical illuding voice, rather then matter of trueth and certaintie: with which inwarde oppressing conceite, his weake estate not able to support it selfe, beeing ouercome with ioy, doubt and suspition, as hardly could Arismena his Daughter keepe life in him, so often hee swouned with hearing this reporte, yet at length taking the Knight by the hande, he sayde. My good Frend, God I trust will blesse thee with honour and prosperitie, for bringing mee the tidings I haue long desired. Nowe may I well say, that neuer ante Princes age was more beautified with happinesse, then mine is, hauing my Sonne allyed in such an house, and another Sonne excelling all the Knights in the worlde. But if the Heauens vouchsafe me so much grace and fauour, that I may once see him before I ende this life, it will be such sufficient content to mee, as then I force not though I liue no longer. Then calling for one of his Secretaries, to reade the Letters his sonne had sent him, and hauing heard the contents thereof, commaunded present dispatch of Messengers, to aduertise the Lords and nobilitie of his Realme, who likewise were so glad of these newes, as each one prepared himselfe against the day appointed. The King hauing written Letters to his Sonne, as also to Palmerin, whom he entreated to come and see him, gaue them to the Messenger, and withall such an honourable gift for his paynes, as well might content a greater personage. He returning to Constantinople, effectually discharged his answere: and Palmerin reading his Grandfathers Letters, vowed to fulfill his requeste, and afterward to follow the search of Tryneus.

Now the day beeing come, when the Lords of Macedon should set forwarde to Constantinople, they came to take their leaue of the King, who began to them in this manner. Ah, my good Frends, God is my witnesse, with what good will I would beare you companie, if my ages

yéeres did not forbid me: neuertheleſſe, let mée deſire yée to behaue your ſelues in ſuch ſort, as if I were in perſon with ye, and honour Prince *Palmerin* no leſſe then my ſelfe. So creating the Duke of Pontus his Lieutenant in this Ambaſſade, becauſe hée was a braue and comely yong Prince: bequeathed them to happie fortune in their iourney, commaunding a Knight to poſte before them, that *Palmerin* might be firſt aduertiſed of their comming. On the ſame day as they ſhould arriue at the Cittie, Palmerin accompanied with the yong King of Sparta, the moſt ſubtill and ingenious Prince of his time, (as well inſtructed in the manners and conditions of the auncient Kings his predeceſſours, eſpecially imitating couteous Viſſes) and diuerſe other yong Princes and Knights, rode to méete the Lords of Macedon, at the Gates of the Cittie. There alighted all the Lords to kiſſe his hand, which hée would not permit them to do: but raſking himſelfe likewiſe from his horſe, embraced them all one after another. And mounting on horſebacke againe, entered the Cittie, which was ſo plentifullie ſtored with Knights and gentlemen againſt the tryumph: as the Prince Olorico and Fryſoll were appointed by the Emperour, to ſée the Lords lodged according to their eſtate, and to erect Tents and Pauillions without the Cittie, where the reſt of their traine might be decently entertained.

This choyſe made the Emperour of theſe twaine in this matter, becauſe in all his Court were not two more courteous Princes: beſide, they were the onely men in the world, for affable and gracious entertaining ſtraungers. All this buſineſſe ended, and *Palmerin* deuiſing with the Quéene his Mother, Fryſoll béeing in his companie, ſawe her enter the Chamber, to whom hée had vowed his ſeruiceable deuotions: wherefore feigning ſome occaſiõ at the window where the Princeſſe ſtood, he went and ſtood by her a prettie while, and at length entred into theſe ſpeeches. Madame, as yet in all my life I neuer requeſted any thing of a

Ladie,

Ladie, and now would I gladly moue one ſute to you, (as to her that is the onely Miſtreſſe of my heart) if I ſhould not ſeeme ouer-bold in this petition: aſſuring you, that hauing obtained this fauour of you, you ſhall not commaunde anie thing, how difficult ſo euer it bee, but I will gladlie enterpriſe it for your ſake. Beleeue me, Sir Fryſoll, anſwered the Princeſſe, you ſpeake but reaſon, demaunde then what you pleaſe, and you ſhall obtaine it: becauſe I holde this opinion of you, that you will not requeſt any thing, that ſhall in ought be preiudiciall to mine honour. A thouſand thanks god Madame, ſaid Fryſoll, this houre I hope hath beaded mée good fortune, and this is my requeſt, that you would ſo much honor me, as to permit me enter the Tourney vnder the name of your Knight, becauſe I would enterpriſe nothing but by your commaundement. And this (in my iudgement) is ſuch an eſpeciall fauour, as I durſt not preſume to ſolicite you withall, without the graunt my Lorde your Brother Palmerin made mée: with this addition, that according to my deſerts in the Tourney (if you can ſo fancie) to accept me as your Lord and husband. With theſe wordes the Princeſſe was touches to the quicke, in that her deſires were that way addicted: and her colour chaunging with her priuate conceyte, thée ſhadowed ſo artificially as thée could, and with wordes fearefull and trembling, thus anſwered.

In ſoth my Lord, neuer was I mooued with any ſuch ſute heretofore: but my Brother may ſo farre commaunde mee, as what liketh him I would be loth to gain-ſay. As for your demaund, to enter the field vnder the name of my Knight, with right good will I graunt it: aſſuring you therof with this Iewell, which henceforth ſo pleaſe you to weare, ſhall remaine as a token of my loue to you. So taking a goodly Emeralde from her finger, kiſſing it, with great courteſie gaue it him. Nowe am I ſure Madame, quoth Fryſoll, to haue part of the prize, ſeeing I ſhall aduenture in your ſeruice: nor is this ring of ſo little value, but when in the

Combat I ſhall behold it, my forces will be redoubled, and newe life enter my fainting ſpirit. Moreouer I dare ſay, that neuer did the King of Giges bring him more honour, then this will to mée: for his could not profite or aduantage him, but onely by beeing inuiſible. On the contrary, I haue no pleaſure but in your preſence, nor ſhall I thinke my ſelfe at better eaſe, then when among Launces and Swordes I may labour for your loue. Then entred the Empreſſe, with other Ladies newlie come to the Court to ſée the Iouſts: which brake of their talke, wherefore taking leaue of each other, they departed the Chamber.

Chap. XXXVI.

Howe the Duke of Mecæna, and the Counte of Reifort, arriued at Allemaigne, at the Emperours Court, and after theyr Ambaſſage diſpatched, the Emperour ſent backe with them to Conſtantinople, the Duke of Lorraine, and the Marqueſſe of Licena, as his Ambaſſadours.

NOwe is the day come, when the Fléte appointed for the Ambaſſade to Allemaigne, ſhould depart, wherefore beeing furniſhed with all things neceſſarie for their voyage, the winde and Sea likewiſe verie ſeruiceable: came to aduertiſe Palmerin thereof, to knowe if he would commaund them any further ſeruice.

Palmerin walked with them to the Hauen, and by the way gaue a Letter to the Duke of Mecæna, ſaying, Worthy Duke,

Duke, present my humble dutie to my Lady Polynarda, and giue her this Letter, whereof I pray you bring mee an answere. And pleased God that I might go with you, neuer could any voyage better please me: therefore lette me intreate you returne so soone as possible may be. The Duke promised to accomplish his desire, and taking leaue of each other, they went abroade, where hoysing their sayles, with a merrie wind a way they went, and arriued in Allemaigne soner then expected. When they were come on shore, they sent a Knight before to the Emperour, that hee might bee acquainted with their comming, yet could not his Maiestie but marualle at this Ambassage, because in all his time he neuer had the like, and therefore thought this strange occasion would sort to as strange an ende. At length, to doo them the greater honour, he sent all his Knights and Gentlemen to receiue them, who conducted the Duke of Mecæna and the Counte of Reifort to the Pallace, and afterwarde to the presence of the Emperour. When the Duke entred the Chamber, hee saluted his Maiestie with great reuerence, yet not kissing his hande, because he came from as great a state as hee was: afterwrd he beganne in this manner.

Mightie and redoubted Monarch of Allemaigne, the most high and excellent Emperour of Constantinople my Maister, vnderstanding the losse of your Sonne Trineus, greete th you with health and continuall happinesse. Giuing you to vnderstande, that within these fewe daies such good fortune hath befallen him, as in all his life time hee neuer had the like. And albeit in his last warre with the Turkes and Powes, he lost both Sonnes, Nephewes, and many great Lords of his kindred, and since that time hath beene troubled with the hard hap of his daughter Griana, Queene of Hungaria, and the sodaine death of her Husband the King: yet hath his Maiestie changed all these greefes into ioy, by knowledge of the good Knight Sir Palmerin, whose renowme liues as wel in Heathenesse as in Christendome,

being

béeing now found Sonne to my Lord the Emperour, and therefore created ſole heyre to the Empire. And the noble Prince Palmerin on his behalfe, humbly ſaluteth your imperiall maieſtie, béeing the Lord to whom he is moſt affected in ſeruice, ſo that to finde out your Sonne Trineus and the faire Agriola Daughter of England, whom two yéeres ſince and more hee loſt in the Eaſt Seas: he abandoneth all honorable preferments, vntill his trauaile ſhall be finiſhed: and he hath brought him hither before your highneſſe. And hauing alreadie ſearched in many Kingdomes, at length hée vnderſtood that they were liuing and in health, alſo that himſelfe ſhould in the ende recouer them, hée thought it neceſſarie to acquaint you herewith, becauſe he doubted of your extreame ſorrow and heauineſſe. The Emperor aſtonied to heare the good fortune of Palmerin, as alſo the loſſe of his Sonne Trineus, could not ſubdue his paſſions, which mooued the teares to trickle downe his chéekes, with conceit of ioy and gréefe together: yet ſhadowing his alteration ſo well as he could, thus replyed. In truth my Lorde Ambaſſadour, I alwaies imagined by Palmerins worthie actions, that he was diſcended of noble or royall linage, and greatly it contenteth me, that he ſo happily hath founde the houſe of his diſcent, expelling altogether (conſidering his promiſe and protteſte) what hath béene long imprinted in my heart, conſidering the loſſe of my Sonne Trineus. For ſo fauourable are the heauens to Palmerin, in all his enterpriſes and admirable aduentures, as one may imagine, that deeds of honor and account are reſerued onely for him, cheefely the recouerie of my Sonne, which I hope hee will effectually bring to paſſe. And truſt me, not without great and ſufficient reaſon, doth the Emperour your Maiſter repute himſelfe happie: this onely good fortune béeing of force enough to diſcharge his mind of all ſorrowes and cares, that former occaſions mooued him with all. Now know I howe to recompence his princely kindneſſe, honoring me with ſo good and happy tidings, but that it may pleaſe him to ac-

cept

cept of mee hereafter, as his louing Brother and faithfull Friend. Nother thing my Lord (quoth the Duke) doth his Maiestie desire, and to beginne this amitie and alliance betweene you, hee requesteth that if his Sonne Palmerin hath heretofore founde such fauour in your eyes, you would now confirme it, by giuing him to wife the Princesse Polynarda your Daughter, whom he will not marrie vntill he haue brought home your Sonne Trineus. As for the other conuentions of the marriage, this Letters shall certifie you: so kissing them, hee deliuered them with very great reuerence.

And her shall he haue with right good will, sayde the Emperour, for a fitter husband can shee not haue: I thinke likewise her selfe will consent thereto, for the good opinion she had of him while he remained in our Court. But because I will not displease the King of Fraunce, who in like manner requesteth her for his Sonne and heyre, I will conferre with the estates of the Empire, and then deliuer you certaine answere. So the Ambassadours withdrew themselues to their lodgings, and the Emperor caused the Letters to bee read before all his Princes and Lordes, who could no way mislike of this marriage, and therefore great ioy was made through the Empire, in hope the Prince Trineus should soone be recouered. These ioyfull newes sone spreading through the Court, at length were brought to the Princesse Polinarda in her Chamber, who not able to conceale her sodaine ioy, ranne to Bryonella, saying. Sweete friende, nowe maist thou reioyce with me, in that our loues are nowe assured vs, whereof before wee vtterly despayred. Ah my Bryonella, Heauen hath now confirmed our fortunate successe, in that my Palmerin is founde to bee the Emperours Sonne of Constantinople, whereof he hath certified my Lord and Father by his Embassage, and howe Palmerin hath heard tydings of my Brother Trineus, whom shortly he will bring home againe, yet not without thy Ptolome I hope. Therefore (my onely copartner in

loue

loue and feare) let vs abandon all greefe and ſorrow, which greatly may prejudice our health and welfare: and nowe diſpoſe our ſelues to a contented reſolution of life, attending our long deſired fortune. God graunt it may be ſo, quoth Bryonella, yet my minde perſwades mee that wee ſhall not ſee them ſo ſoone as you weene. The Emperour hauing conferred with the Lorde of Allemaigne, who very well allowed the marriage of his daughter with Palmerin: determined to ſend to the Emperor of Conſtantinople ambaſſadours, for perfect confirmation of the marriage. And by generall conſent, the Duke of Lorrayne and the Marqueſſe of Licena, were choſen for this preſent Embaſſage. Which being doone, the Emperour went to the Empreſſe Chamber, and ſent for his Daughter Polynarda, who was ſo ioyfull of theſe happie newes, as ſhe could ſcant imagine how to diſſemble her content, when ſhee ſhould come in her Fathers preſence, yet ſhadowing it from any open ſuſpect, after ſhee had ſaluted her Father with great reuerence, the Emperour, thus ſpake.

Daughter, you haue hitherto refuſed ſo many noble offers, as hardly can I permitte to moue you with any other: yet once more will I trie you againe, in hope you will ſtand vpon no more refuſals, but ioyne with me in opinion, as beyonde all other beſt beſeemes you. The man of whom I ſpeake, is noble Palmerin, of whoſe honourable behauiour you haue ſome knowledge, and for no other cauſe hath the Emperour ſent his Ambaſſadours, aduiſe your ſelfe then what you anſwere, for all our nobilitie allow the match, and thereto haue generally ſubſcribed their conſent. The Princeſſe couering her inwarde ioy with modeſt bashfulneſſe, thus anſwered.

If heeretofore my good Lorde, I excuſed my obeyſance to your commandement, eſpecially for taking a huſband, it was onely for the promiſe I made to my Brother Trineus: but nowe ſeeing it is your pleaſure, and the good lyking of al the eſtates, as alſo that the marriage ſhall not be

solemnized till my Brothers presence: I will not disobey your commaund, assuring your Maiestie, that more content am I to match with him, then any other you named heretofore. And this one speciall cause, that he laboureth to bring home my noble Brother, which Heauen graunt hee may: otherwise can I not marry, without verie great impeach to mine honour.

The Emperour well perceiued by the grace of her answere, and her countenance nolve nothing sadde or melancholie, that shee was nothing offended with this motion, wherefore he said. Happie may I count my selfe faire daughter, that among all the Christian Princes you haue chosen such a Husband: therefore apparell your selfe to morrow in the best sort you may, for then shall my Lordes the Ambassadours see you. So departed the Princelle to her Chamber, and no more speeches were vsed till the next day, when the Emperour sent for the Ambassadours of *Constantinople*, and in the presence of the principall estate of the Empire, ratefied the mariage between Palmerin and his daughter. And for further confirmation thereof, promised to send his owne Ambassadours with them, to satisfie (on his behalfe) the Emperour, Florendos and Palmerin. For which exceeding gentlenesse, the Duke of *Mecana* (in the Emperours name) thanked his Maiestie, earnestly entreating him to dispatch them thence so soone as might bee, because their charge was to returne with all possible speede. This resolution absolutely sette downe, the Emperour (for the greater honour) caused them to dine with him at his owne Table, and grace being said by the Lord Almoner, the Duke of *Mecana* desired his Maiestie, that hee might see the Princelle Polynarda: whereof hee made promise so soone as Dinner was done, when taking the Duke of *Mecana* by the one hande, and the Countie of *Reifort* by the other, brought them to the Empresse Chamber, where they founde the Princelle in such sumptuous ornaments, and accompanied with such rare grace and exquisite beautie, as they iudged

iudged her rather an Angell then anie earthly creature. And greatly was the Duke abashed at such a singular spectacle, not knowing how to frame his opinions: but hauing humbly saluted the Empresse, came to the Princesse, and on his knee reuerently kissed her hand, with these speeches. Let it not displease ye faire Madame, that I vse this honourable dutie to you: for I do it in this respect, as to the gracious Ladie and Empresse (hereafter) of *Constantinople*.

By this meane hee secretly conueyed Palmerins Letter into her hande, for which the Princesse gaue him many deuout thankes, which were coupled with such magesticall gestures, as neither to Nero or *Galba* were done the like, no not by Constantine himselfe to the Pope. And though the Dukes words had raised a sweete blush in her cheekes, yet could she with such choyse answeres excuse the same, as gaue greater countenaunce to all her behauiour. Then turned the Duke to the Emperour, and smiling, saide. Trust me my Lord, nowe do I verely beleeue what hath heretofore bene told me of the Prince *Palmerin*, that hee is an especiall Iudge of the beautie of Ladies, for in mine opinion, hee hath chosen one without a second: and of her may truly be affirmed, what the Poets described of Helena, tearming her the Goddesse of beautie. With this rare Princesse to be matched an Husband so famous, well may be saide, the couple to be without compare: for the faire formed Paris may not be equalled with *Palmerin*. So the Ambassadours departing, the Princesse withdrewe her selfe to her Chamber, where reading her friends Letter, her ioyes and pleasures redoubled, because shee might now boldly credite her fortune.

And before she would forget the inuention her spirite offered, shee presently wrote an answere: earnestly entreating him to hasten his returne, to abreuiate her languishing desires, which nowe made her life but a shadow of death. Hauing close sealed her Letter, shee sent it to the Duke by

one

one of her most trustie Ladies, with diuers other rich gifts and presentes. The Duke of *Lorraine* and his companie readie, departed thence with the Ambassadours, and winde and weather seruing so well, they arriued at *Constantinople* the day before Florendos his nuptialls. Newes being brought heereof to the Court, Palmerin accompanied with many Princes and Knightes, went to the Hauen, and at the landing of the Ambassadours, Palmerin embraced the Duke of *Lorraine*, and the Marquesse of *Cicena*: and so ryding to the Pallace, beguiled the time with diuers discourses, where among, the Duke of *Lorraine* thus spake. Syr Palmerin, I alwayes did imagine, that those straunge aduentures atchiued by you, during the obscuritie of your yonger yeares, would in the end reueale your honourable parentage, and make your name for euer immortall: and were the Prince Tryneus with you now, for the verie best condition in the world would I not leaue your companie. Gentle Duke, answered Palmerin, if I did not perswade my selfe, how greatly I should comfort your minde, by recouering your Prince Tryneus: I should account my life so vnhappie, as presently I would desire my death. God graunt quoth the Duke, that you may finde him againe, for that will bee the greatest good that euer came to our Empire: considering the vertues, magnanimitie and speciall chiualrie, which is as currant in our yong Prince as in any other. And thus they spent the time till they came to the Pallace, where the Duke of *Lorraine* after hee had saluted the Emperour and the Princes, deliuered the message committed to his charge. Wherewith Palmerin was not a little pleased, considering what he had read in his Ladies Letter, which discouered the sorrowes shee endured for his absence: but being assured of her firme loyaltie, as also that shee was now promised him in marriage, his cares were the lesse, commaunding the Duke to be lodged neare his owne Chamber, that he might the better conferre with him of his Mistresse, whom he loued as deare as his owne life.

CHAP.

Chap. XXXVII.

Howe after the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana, were eſpouſed togither, Palmerin was ſworne Prince and heire of Greece and Macedon, by the conſent of the Lords of the Empire and the Realme.

THe Ambaſſadours of *Allemaigne* being now come, the Emperour was aduertiſed thereof, and conſidering that the Princes of *Thrace* and *Macedon*, had expected their preſence for the ſpace of fiue dayes, it was appointed, that on the morrow the Prince Florendos & Griana ſhould be married. And the day being come of this long deſired wedding, ſhee was cloathed in ſuch rich and coſtly garments, as though ſhe had bene ſtill a virgine. But heere to ſet downe the ſumptuous veſtures of her, her husband, the Emperour, the Empreſſe, with diuers other Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, alſo the ſolemnities and ceremonies, both at the Church and at the Pallace, would waſte a great deale of time in vaine, and without any pleaſure or profit to the Readers, and therefore I will let it paſſe vnder your conceit, and ſpeake of ſuch things as are moſt needfull.

After that the Prince Florendos and Griana were eſpouſed by the Patriarke of *Conſtantinople*, the whole traine returned to the Pallace, where before the Gate was erected a goodly Theater, hanged rounde about with cloth of Golde, and therein were ſet manie Chaires and Canapies of eſtate. There was the Prince Palmerin placed in

the

the cheefest seate, the Emperour and Florendos on the one side, and the Empresse and Griana on the other: then was Palmerin sworne Prince of Greece, with all the obseruations in such causes accustomed, by all the Lords of the Empire, from the Emperor himselfe to the verie meanest Gentleman. In like sorts did the states of Macedon, his Father Florendos first beginning, the Duke of Pontus next, and in the selfe same order as the Imperialistes had done. This done, the Tables were couered, and all the Princes placed according to their dignities: the Emperour and Empresse at the cheefest, the newe married couple at the second, and the Prince Palmerin at the third: so consequently the Kings, Princes, Dukes, Marquesses, Counties, and all the rest in order. As for the magnificence of the seruice, the royal order obserued, the Trymphes, Momeries, Masques, and dauncing: would but fill paper with needlesse reports, in that your iudgements can conceiue thereof sufficientlie. But the Tabels beeing withdrawne, the noble Gallants went and Armed themselues, and entred the field which was appointed without the Cittie, and furnished with Scaffolds and standings for the Lords and Ladies, where the afternoone was spent brauelie at Tylt and Tourney, with daintie chiualrie performed by Frysoll, Olorico, the King of Sparta, the duke of Pontus and many other knights. When night was come, and Supper ended, the Bride and Bridegroome were honorablye brought to their Chamber, and Florendos beeing alone with his Ladie, thus begamne. Ah sweete Madame, how manie sorrowes haue I endured, in expectation of this long desired houre? but hauing at length compassed my wish, I holde my selfe sufficientlie satisfied: giuing credite to the auncient prouerbe, That true loue neuer wanteth his reward, and that which I thought woulde haue beene my death, hath now returned me greatest honor and profit. In sooth my Lord, answered the Queene, I was euermore perswaded of your loyaltie: but where necessitie ruleth, reason hath no place. And if by the exterieur action

I haue bene diſloyall to you: yet my heart, which firſt of all I gaue to you, neuer diminiſhed in will to loue you firmelie. For which Tariſius verie often reproued me, notwithſtanding in the ende, and by the ſufferaunce of God I think, he receiued the rewarde, that the vſurper of another mans right deſerueth. But why ſhould we (my Lorde) call now to memorie things paſt, or remember matters which breed nothing but heauineſſe? it is for you to excuſe mee, and for my ſelfe to loue and honor you. All the points of theyr former diuorce debated betweene them, to ſuch effecte theyr pleaſures ſorted in the end, as that night ſhee conceiued with a Daughter, which proued to bee beyond all other in beautie. On the morrow the Prince Palmerin entred the Liſts royall, becauſe this daye he deſired to Iouſt: before him went the cheefeſt Princes of Greece on foote, and fiue Trompets to make him waye: he managing his Horſe with ſuch loftie voltages, as euerie one delighted to behold him. After he had done his reuerence to the Emperour, hee gaue the ſpurres to his horſe to encounter Fryſoll: but when they came to meete, Fryſoll threwe by his Launce and would not touch him. The like did the Prince Olorico and diuers other Knights, whereat Palmerin ſomewhat angry, ſtroke his Launce into the ground and brake it: and cauſing himſelfe to be vnarmed, went vp to the Emperour in his ſtanding, to ſee the paſtime of the other Knights, and hee was no ſooner come, but the Empereur thus ſpake to him. Bee not offended my Sonne, becauſe you haue vnarmed your ſelfe without tryall of the Iouſt: for the Knightes haue done as beſt beſeemed them, not to aduenture on their Lord and Maiſter. But if you would ſo faine haue ſome ſporte with them, you muſt hereafter diſguiſe your ſelfe from being knowne: otherwiſe I ſee you ſhall but loſe your labor. When Palmerin heard theſe words, to the ende hee might ſomewhat delight the Emperour and the Ladies, eſpecially ſuch as neuer ſawe his behauiour in chiualrie: hee was determined the laſt day of the Tryumphe to come ſuddain-

lie among them, and Armed in such sorte as none shoulde knowe him. In breefe, now is the last daye come, and the Emperour vnderstanding that Palmerin woulde enter the Lystes disguised, went to his standing, and Palmerin secretlie entring his Chamber, found there a White Armour, such as the yong Knights was accustomed to weare, which his Dwarfe had there prouided for him: Armed himselfe presentlie therewith, and mounted on a Horse of the same colour, entred the Fielde on the assailants side, because he had heard, that this daie the King of Sparta would encounter the Duke of Pontus, Frysoll, Olorico, and other of the most gentle Knightes in the companie. The Emperour knewe Palmerin, among all the rest, and said to Florendos: what thinke you (Sonne) of the white Knight? Do you know him? No my Lorde, quoth the Prince, I know not what hee is but me thought hee entred with a iollie countenaunce, it now remaines to see what hee can do. At the encounter, Palmerin vnhorsed the Prince Olorico, afterward the Duke of Pontus, and fiue other Knights in his companie: then hauing broken his Launce, the Emperor sent him another by a Squire, willing him (for his sake) to imploy it as he had done the other, but hee would make no answer because he feared to be knowne. Now was Frysoll much offended at the Prince Oloricos misfortune, wherefore hee would reuenge his Frendes cause: but the king of Sparta, esteemed a hardie and approued knight, kept betweene them, and being cast from his horse, was so hurt with the fall, as he was caried forth of the Field to his Chamber. Then *Frysoll* gaue spurres to his Horse, and encountred Palmerin with such puissaunce, as hee made him loose his styrrops, and had hee not caught holde about his horse necke, hee had fallen to the ground: but Frysoll, his fortune was so bad, as his Horse stumbling fel down, and his Maister vnder him, whereuppon the Emperour said to Florendos, that the Knight in white Armour was his sonne Palmerin. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Prince, his fortune is

good if it be hee, and well may he be eſteemed the worthieſt in the companie. The duke of Lorrayne hearing their talke, ſaid.

Meruaile not my Lorde that Prince Palmerin hath ſo good ſucceſſe, for in Allemaigne haue I ſeene him doo much more then this, and ſo much, as my Lorde the Emperour hath beene conſtrained to commaund them giue ouer. Palmerin ſeeing himſelfe Maiſter of the Fielde, departed as ſecretlie as hée came thither, and ſo did the Emperour, Florendos, Griana, and all the other Ladies, among whome the yong Princeſſe Armida was moſt penſiue for her Frendes miſfortune, ſo that by her countenaunce her inwarde affections might eaſilie bee diſcerned. But on the morrowe, when Palmerin ſent for all the Knights of name with whome he had Jouſted, and euerie one knewe that hee wonne the prize of the laſt daies Tryumphe: the ſorrowe of the Princeſſe Armida was conuerted into pleaſure, reputing it an honor to her Knight to bee vnhorſſed by her Brother.

When the Emperour vnderſtoode that Palmerin was ieſting with the Knights, hée came into the Hall, and taking him by the hande, merrilie ſaide. See heere my Frendes the white Knight, whome you all were ſo deſirous to knowe, but if you finde your ſelues agreeued with him, you muſt laye the blame on mée: for I was the onely cauſe of this enterprize, to the ende that hauing made open proofe of himſelfe, you all might witneſſe his valour and bountie, who after me deceaſe muſt be your Lord and Gouernour.

Nowe were all the Knightes well contented againe, eſpecially the Prince Olorico and Fryſol: who though hée was ſomewhat bruſed with his Horſe falling on him, came and embraced Palmrin, ſaying. In ſooth my Lorde, the ſtrength of your arme and Launce yeſterdaye, hath giuen vs good experience of your vertue: yet our deſire to reuenge our companions foyle was ſuch, as had you beene

our

our Father we shoulde not haue knowne yée. It may bee (said Palmerin) that yee made no reckoning of the knight, who handled ye in this rough manner: or that you thought him not worthie to beare a Launce, because you refused to Iouste with him the other daye. A kinde floute (quoth Frysoll, perceiuing how Palmerin iested) and queintlie deliuered, is this your recompence to the knights that Frendly spared you? If I had knowne so much before, I should haue eryed quittance with you before wee parted. These words Frisoll spake in such sorte, as Palmerin imagined he was in choller: wherefore he thus answered. God brother I pray you excuse mée, if in doing my deuoire I haue offended yée: when you please I will do penaunce for it, if it be but to please her, who cannot hide her good will towardes you.

Hereuppon all the three Frendes embraced togither, taking leaue of each other till the next morning, when a newe Tourney was begunne againe, and continued for fiue daies togither: the honour whereof (to make shorte) happened to Frysoll, vntill the last daye, when a strange knight came into the Fielde, and brought one with him resembling a Giant in stature, who with a Turkish Bowe and enuenomed arrowes, sleiue and wounded verye many. So that Palmerin seeing the spoyle of his Frendes, was constrained to go Arme himselfe, and defying the Giant, ouercame both him and the knight that brought him.

Some haue reputed this Giant to be a Monster, in forme of the Centaures that encountred Hercules at the nuptials of Hippodamia: but such rediculous follies are not heer to be inserted, and though the Spaniard in his Historie affirme it, yet carries it no likelihode, wherefore leauing such impertinent discourses, let vs procéede as occasion doth lead vs.

Chap. XXXVIII.

How the aged Knight Apolonio, found Netrydes, father to Fryſol, and brought him to Conſtantinople, where hee was made Gouernour generall of Hungaria: and how Fryſol eſpouſed the Princeſſe Armida.

APolonio hauing receiued Fryſols Letters, and a briefe direction for his iourney, to the place where he ſhould finde his father Netrydes: followed his intent with ſuch diligence, as he came to the Caſtle where hee remained, and founde him ſitting at the Gate, being newly returned from hunting in y Foreſt. No ſooner had Apolonio beheld him, but he preſently knewe him; whereupon feigning that hee & his company were Knights errant, ſalluted him, and demaunded if he woulde giue them entertainment for that night, becauſe they knew no place of lodging neare at hand. Netrydes, who was euer of a moſt noble mind, welcommed them verie courteouſly, commaunding their horſes to the ſtable, and themſelues to be honourably feaſted at ſupper. All ſupper time, Netrydes verie earneſtly eyed Apolonio, perſwading himſelfe that hee had ſeene him before: and Apolonio likewiſe well regarded Netrydes, neither daring to queſtion with other for feare of miſconceit.

In the end, Apolonio thoroughly reſolued that this was the man hee ſought, and ſeeing two yong Gentlemen ſitting at the Table by him, hee thus begunne. I pray you Sir tell me, are theſe two Gentlemen your Sons? They are Sir, anſwered

answered Netrydes Haue you not one more (quoth Apolonio) elder then these? Then Netrydes remembred his sonne Frysol, whom he iudged to be dead because of his long absence: wherefore breathing forth a verie great sighe, saide. In truethy Sir, I knowe not whether I haue one or no; for it is long since I lost mine eldest Sonne by great misfortune, and hetherto heard no tydings of him, nor know I whether hee is liuing or dead. By what mishappe I pray you Sir, quoth Apolonio, did you loose him? Whereupon Netrydes discoursed the whole circumstaunce, in selfe same manner as Frysol had reported: whereby he was now assured that Frysol was his sonne, and so without dissembling any longer, said. I can resolue ye my Lord, that hee is yet liuing, and in very good disposition. O my God (answered Netrydes) if these newes may be true, then am I the most happie Knight in the world. And so are you, said Apolonio; for hee is liuing, recouered of the disease hee had when hee departed from you, and is nowe one of the most esteemed Knights in all *Greece*: so that hauing deliuered the Queene Griana from prison, which victorie hee obtained in the company of noble Palmerin, against the two Nephewes of king Famius, hee is found to be neare kinsman to the Empresse. For which cause he hath sent, and I am expresse hither come, to bring you with me to Constantinople, to the ende you may receiue your owne by right, I meane the principall regiment in the Realme of Hungary. Ah Heauens, answered Netrydes, for euer be your prayses, in reuealing the wrong my Brother did, when causelesse he banished me my native Countrey: but that I may bee resolued in one doubte, I praye ye tell me, were ye not sometime of my Brothers Court? Yes truelie answered Apolonio, and to your Father I serued as a Page in his Chamber, nowe in respect of the manifolde courtesies I receiued at your hands, for euer I vowed my selfe to doo you anie seruice, desiring you with all possible speede to hasten your departure: for I greatlie doubt lest he shall not else finde your

ſonne at the Courte, becauſe hee determineth to iourney with Palmerin, in the ſearch of Trineus the Emperours ſonne of Allemaigne.

Hereupon Netrides leauing the charge of his houſe to one of his Cozins, departed with his Wife and his two ſonnes: making ſuch ſpeedie diſpatch in their iourney, as not manie daies after the Tryumph, they arriued at Conſtantinople. Whiche when Fryſoll vnderſtood, hée went to meete them: being accompanied (for the greater honour to his Parents) with Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and manie other yong Princes. There were manie ſalutations and welcomes, giuen with great ioy by the ſonne to his Father, Mother, and Brethren, and by the Parents likewiſe to their ſonne, with ſuch exceeding ſignes of loue, as you can better conceiue, then I expreſſe. After all theſe courteous greetings, they went to the Court, where began a freſh occaſion of ioy, betweene the Empreſſe and her Nephewe Netrydes: ſhée then embracing him in her Armes, thus ſpake.

Ah my noble Nephew, how haue the Heauens bleſſed me with ſpeciall fauour, in ſuffering me before my death to ſée my cheefeſt Freendes, whom I was out of all hope to behold againe: eſpeciallie you, whoſe long abſence from your Countrey, hath rather deliuered imagination of your death then life. Neuertheleſſe, it is the prouidence of the higheſt, that after all the troubles you ſuffered in your youth, you might receiue the recompence in your age, by the knightlie honour and bountie of your linage. In ſooth Madame ſayd Netrydes, not ſo pleaſant to mée is high preferment, as that I liue to ſée my ſonne againe, for hauing contented my ſelfe in my little Caſtle, with a life free from offence and ſolitarie, I did account it to exceede all other: but nowe ſeeing in my declining yeeres, the God of Heauen hath thought good that I might profit his people, the thought were baſe and abiect in me to make refuſall. So long were they deuiſing on theſe and other matters, as the

good

good night beeing giuen on all sides, the Emperour caused these newe come Frendes to bee conducted to theyr lodgings.

But on the morrowe when Palmerin came to bid the Emperour good morrow, he thus began. You knowe my Lord, that a Common wealth without a heade and Gouernour, (as for example) is the Realme of Hungaria, cannot long endure without seditious tumults or rebellion: wherefore, vnder your Maiesties reuerende regarde, I thinke it expedient that my Sister Armida shoulde bee giuen in mariage to Sir Frysoll, because in nobilitie of minde and perfection of iudgement, hardly may so good a Knight be found, nor shee enioy a fitter Husbande, and so may the Realme lineallie discende, from Netrides nowe aged, to his noble sonne.

The Emperour liked well of this aduise, wherefore the same day were Frysoll and the Princesse Armida espoused togither: to the good lyking of all, but especially of the louers themselues, whose secrete desires were now effectuallie requited. After the feast was ended, Netrides instituted Gouernour of Hungaria, departed with his wife and Sons to his Kingdome: where hee was receiued very honorablie by his subiects, who had not forgot their former loue to him: and the vnnatural dealing of their king his deceased brother,

Chap.

Chap. XXXIX.

How Palmerin tooke his leaue of the Emperor, his father and mother, to follow the ſearch of the Prince Trineus.

CErtaine daies after the ſolemnitie of this honorable mariage was ended, betweene Fryſoll and the yong Princeſſe of Hungaria, Netrides likewiſe gone to his ſeate of gouernment: all the Lordes and Princes of the Empire, except ſuch as continuallie abode in the Emperors Court, returned to their owne homes, ſaue only the ſtrange knights that came to the tryumphs, except the king of Sparta and the Lords of Macedon. Wherefore Palmerin nowe remembring his promiſe to his Ladie, and how long he had ſtayed ſlothfull at Conſtantinople, determined to departe, and vnderſtanding that his Father was with the Emperor, came to them with theſe ſpeeches.

My gracious Lords, it is now three monethes and more, that I haue remained heere by your commaundement, contrarie to the promiſe that I made my Ladie: wherfore (by your leaue) I am nowe determined to departe hence, before the Duke of Lorrayne returne backe againe, that hee may aſſure my Lord the Emperour that I am gone to ſeeke my Freendes. My Sonne quoth the Emperour, vnwilling am I thou ſhouldeſt leaue vs ſo ſone, but if the matter may not be contrarved, in reſpect you are bounde to her by faithfull promiſe, who aboue all other deſerueth loy-

all

all seruice: I neither maye or will gaine-saye you, but intreate your returne so soone as may be. You shall therefore take with you a good companie of Knightes, who may prevent anie sinister occasions, which your trauaile in strange Countreyes happilie may offer: that my hart enioying life by your presence, may once more see you before my date bee expired.

I beseech you my Lord answered Palmerin, greeue not your selfe by my absence which shall not be long I hope, neither will the multitude of Knights auaile in my enterprise, for more by fortune then by force of Armes must the aduenture bee finished. Do then as you thinke good answered the Emperour, in meane time I will cause provision for your traine. Palmerin hauing now licence to depart, perswaded *Frysoll* so earnestlie as hee coulde, to abide at Constantinople, as well for the loue he bare his Sister Armida, as because he was loth to depart the new maried couple: but all the circumstances he could vse, might not perswade him, for his religious vowe to his Freend, exceeded his affection to the Princesse: so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death shoulde seperat their companie. Palmerin seeing Frysoll continue in his former amitie, and that the desire which conquers all men, coulde not preuaile in his noble minde: reioyced greatlye thereat, determining to recompence his princelie kindnesse, if Fortune did not contratie him in this enterprised iourney. And fearing least anie newe occasion should arise to delaye this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperor of Allemaigne and his Ladie Polynarda, honoring his highnesse Ambassadours with manie sumptuous gifts. Hauing nowe ordered all his affayres, and euerie one beeing ready to mount on horsebacke, hee came to bid the Queene his Mother farewell, for well he knewe, that if shee could any waie hinder his departure, his iourney should be soone preuented. The Queene with motherlie loue embracing her Sonne, saide. Ah my Sonne, hast thou beene so short a time

with

with me, and wilt thou now leaue mee? truſt me it is a point of great vngentleneſſe, to deale ſo hardly with thy mother: but ſeeing the Emperour and my Lorde haue giuen their conſent, my gain-ſaye will bee to little purpoſe. And nothing would it auaile mee to ſette before thine eyes, the inconſtancie of Fortune, her ſleights and trecherie, commonly againſt great perſons: when they are in the waye to proſperitie, honor and renowme. Therefore my ſonne, I committe thee to the protection of Heauen, deſiring thee to regard mine honor, which by thee ought to be defended, and now may runne in daunger of common reproche, in that the vulgar ſort iudge after their owne humeurs, not according to the qualitie and eſtimation of vertue. For this cauſe let thine returne be the ſoner, as thou tendereſt my life and thine owne good.

All which Palmerin promiſed to do, and ſo comming downe into the Court, founde there the Emperour and his Father mounted on horſebacke, who bare him companie two miles from the Citie: where after many courteſies betweene them, the Emperour and Florendos returned to the Courte againe, where the Duke of Lorrayne ſtayed their comming, when taking his leaue likewiſe, went aborde, and ſayled with ſo good a winde, as in ſhort time he arriued in Allemaigne, where hee was gratiouſly welcommed by the Emperour, and eſpecially by the Princeſſe his Daughter, to whome he reported the honorable behauiour of Palmerin, and howe he was ſworne Prince of Greece and Macedon. Hereof was ſhe ſo ioyfull, as neuer coulde ſhee be ſatiſfied, with the diſcourſe, making many demaunds to the Duke, as well of the Tryumphes, Tourney and diſports, as alſo of the marriage celebrated at Conſtantinople: whereto the Duke returned ſuch fitte anſwers, as nothing wanted to extoll her Frendes honor, yet without anye occaſion of iealouzie to the Princeſſe, whereto amorous Ladies are commonlie ſubiect.

But nowe returning where wee left before, you muſt

note

note, that Palmerin béeing departed the confines of ỳ Empire, entred his Fathers Realme, where in euery Cittie he was entertained with great tryumphing: especiallye in the Cittie of Hermida, where the Merchaunt dwelt that was Palmerins Maister, for whom he sent, but hée was aduertised by his Wife, that her Husband was gone to the Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherefore he gaue her manie rich gifts, and Letters for his Maisters frée enfranchise and libertie. At his departure from thence, he came to the place where Vrbanillo his Dwarfe was borne, whose father was there liuing a poore auncient Knight, and his Sister of as tall stature as Vrbanillo, whom Palmerin (at her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople to his Mother. And for the honor of the order his Dwarfes Father had receiued, hée gaue him the Village wherein he dwelt, and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in possession thereof, who not a little commended the discréete and liberal mind of the Prince.

From thence he iourneyed to the chéefe Cittie of Macedon, where remained the aged King his Grandfather: but how the Cittizens entertained him, and what honorable Tryumphes were made at the Court, I list not hére sette downe, because it would be more tedious then benificiall. As for his Aunt the Princesse Arismenia, shé at his comming mette him in the base Court with all her Ladies: and as Palmerin fell on his knée before her to kisse her hande, she stayed him in her armes, saying. God forbid Sir Palmerin, that the Knight of the greatest fame in the world, should reuerence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but rather am I bound by duetie to honor you, as the man by whose especiall vertues, our linage is this daie crowned with perpetuall memorie.

Fayre Aunt, answered Palmerin, if before I knewe you to be my Fathers Sister, I deuoted my selfe to your seruice, with much more affection shall I desire to followe it nowe: wherefore suffer me (sweete Madame) to kisse your hand,

hand, as being the Ladie to whome I rest continually bounden. I beseech you my Lord, quoth the Princesse, to pardon me, for neuer shall Macedonian Maiden be so reproued, but that she well knowes her dutie to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Dukes of Pontus and Mecæna, and the Prince Eustace, whom the Princesse welcommed with exceeding honor. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin said.

I vnderstand Madame, that the king your Father is crazed and sicklie: if it be so I am verie sorrie, I praye you therefore let vs goe see howe his Maiestie fareth. When you please my Lord, quoth the Princesse, for I thinke if heeretofore hee receiued health by you, Fortune may at this time affoord the like: and yet (as I haue read) there is no remedie for troublesome age, but onelie death it selfe, which is the Gate to immortalitie, and endeth all diseases whatsoeuer. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princesse going to the bed side to her Father, saide. My Lorde, see heere the good Knight Palmerin your Nephew, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome? Well know I that he is right welcome to your Maiestie, were there no other cause then the happye recouerie of your former health, which his aduenturous trauaile heeretofore brought ye.

The good olde King, whome the palsie caused to shake and tremble: raysed himselfe vppe a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weake and feeble voice, thus spake. Come neere my noble Sonne, that these armes halfe deade may embrace thee, and my lips now drie and withered, may once kisse thee before I die. So holding him betweene his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for euer be thy name honored and praysed, in vouchsafing me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweete death, the ende of all miseries, and beginning of felicitie, now art thou welcome, forbeare not thy stroke, in that I haue now seene the honorable defence of my Subiects hereafter, yea such a worthie

Freende

Frende for them, as neuer had they the like. Ah my Son, howe derelie ought I to loue thee? how gracious hath thy remembraunce beene of mee? yet feele I my selfe so weake and feeble, as nature cannot prolong my life three daies. Alas, I knowe not which of vs twaine hath greatest cause to reioyce: eyther the Father seeing his Sonne, euen when he is readie to leaue him, or the Sonne finding his Father attending his comming before he giue vp the ghost. I hope my good Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leaue vs so soone, therefore take a good heart, and that no doubt will prolong your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, vnweldie age hath so weakened my body, and euen dried vp my vitall blood, as longer I may not liue: and had not hope to see thee lengthened my languishing daies, thou hadst found my bodie breathlesse, which yet sustaineth feeble life, onely by thy presence.

Now that I may leaue this worlde with content, and trauaile with better quiet to mine ende: tell mee (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning thy Father Florendos, with the perfect discourse of thine owne fortunes. Then Palmerin rehearsed euery circumstaunce, both of his Fathers deliuerie, howe hee had maried the Queene Griana, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

Chap.

Chap. XL.

How the aged King Primaleon of Macedon, graundfather to Palmerin, dyed, and how the King of Sparta eſpouſed the faire Princeſſe Ariſmen, Siſter to the prince Florendos,

NOt two dayes had Palmerin ſtayed in the Court of his Graundfather, but the aged king reſigned his life to the celeſtiall powers: for which cauſe all ỹ triumphes ceaſed, and generall ſorrow entertained for the loſſe of their good king. Ariſmena who ſo reuerently loued her father, as in his life time ſhe would not match in mariage with any one, becauſe it was his will it ſhould be ſo: neuer ſhewed her ſelfe diſconted therewith, but her Father beeing now dead, ſhee committed the whole affayres of the Realme to the Counte Roldin, one appointed for that office by generall good liking. With ſuch honorable pompe was the funerall obſequies executed, and the Princeſſe gracious behauiour therein ſo eſpecially commended: as the young King of Sparta became amorous of her, & diſcouered his mind to Palmerin, intreating him ſo to fauour the cauſe, as he might make Ariſmena his Queene.

Palmerin verie ioyfull of the Kings motion, in that he was one of the cheefeſt eſtates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings requeſt, and what an honor it was to her to be ſo matched. Nor was the Princeſſe heart ſo colde by her Fathers death, but ſeeing the yong beautifull King

loued

loued her so well, it began to warme againe: so that considering her owne estate, being nowe in yeares past foure and twentie, shee made some excuses by her Fathers late decease, But Palmerin perceiued by her modest yeelding lookes, that the heart consented, although the mouth was loath to vtter it. Wherefore the next day they were espoused togither, by which meane the King was more affected to follow Palmerin, as he determined before hee came from Constantinople, as well for the great kindnesse he found in him, as for his fauour in furthering him with the ende of his desires.

Now was the King more importunate on Palmerin, to accept him for his companion in his trauaile, who at length condiscended, although he imagined that his Aunte had rather haue her newe Husbande tarrie with her. The day being appoynted for their departure, Palmerin continued with the King of Sparta, that hee should sende Arismena to Constantinople, there to stay his returne with her Brother Florendos. For her safe conduct thither, all the cheefest Knights that came thence with him were chosen, except the Prince Eustace Son to the duke of Mecæna. And Palmerin fearing his voyage would be longer then hee expected, commaunded Vrbamillo his Dwarfe to returne to the Queene Arismena: and if I stay (quoth he) longer then a yeare from Constantinople, go then to Allemaigne with this Letter to comfort my Ladie, and take with thee thy Sister, whom I sent to the Queene my Mother,

The Dwarfe (although he had rather haue gone with his Maister, then attend on Ladies) not daring to gain-say him, returned with Arismena, who in short time after arriued at Constantinople, where the Prince Florendos very ioyfully receiued her, being not a little contented that shee was toyned in marriage with the King of Sparta, yet his Fathers death hee tooke verie heauily. How welcome she was to the Emperour, the Empresse, and Queene Griana, I doubt not but you can sufficiently imagine, who continu-

allie comforted her till her Husbands returne. Before Palmerin departed from Macedon, he eſtabliſhed all things in due and decent order, creating the Counte Roldin Lieutenaunt generall for the Realme, commaunding as dutifull obeyſaunce to him, as to their ſouereigne Lord the King his Father. Afterward hee toke order that his shipping might be ready, becauſe he would delay no longer the ſearch of Trineus.

Chap. XLI.

Howe Palmerin and his companions ſayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by, Olimaell Admirall to the great Turke: and their fortunes in Greece, where Palmerin ſaued Laurana the princeſſe of Durace.

ROldin eſtabliſhed in the gouernment of Macedon, and the Ship readie which Palmerin had appoynted, hee went aboord with his vowed Frendes that would not leaue him, vz. Fryſoll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Euſtace ſonne to the Duke of Mecæna. Theſe fiue hauing ſworne the ſearch of Trineus, committed themſelues to the mercy of the winds and Seas, not knowing where they ſhould firſt take landing. Hauing thus ſayled fiue or ſeuen dayes togither, and the Seas nothing rough or tempeſtious: they went vp on the decke to ſee if they couide deſcry any shore. And as they were deuiſing merily togither, they ſuddainlie eſpyed a great Fleete of Ships, which with wind at will made apace towards them: but becauſe

you

you shall vnderstand of whence and what they were, attend the sequell and you shall be resolued. The Lord Olimaell, as ye haue read in the former part of this Historie, after he had giuen the Princesse Agriola to the great Turke, entred into so great credit, as in recompence of his gift, he was made high Admirall of Turkie; so that being renowmed for a Knight of Peerelesse desert, the Turke gaue him the charge of his great Armie, wherewith he should continually disturbe the Christians. This Olimaell was Generall of this huge Fleete descried by Palmerin, wherat somewhat amazed, he called one of the Pilots, demaunding if hee knew the ensigne of whence they were. The Pilot had no sooner beheld them, but he presently saide they were Turkes, and no way there was for themselues to escape, because he saw fiue light Gallies were made out to hem them in, and the rest came mainly vpon them. But Palmerin as a Prince experimented in daunger s, thus spake to his companions.

Noble Frendes, where Knightlie force or hemmie cannot availe, it were meere follie to vse it, we are but fiue and all in one vessell, and faire wee cannot flie before we shall bee taken: I thinke it best therefore that wee vse sound dissimulation, and so expect when Fortune will better teach vs the way to recouer our losse, and reuenge vs on our enemies to their confusion. Withdraw your selues, and leaue me alone to talke with them, because I can well speake the Arabian language. Yet thinke not that cowardise or feare of death makes mee vse these speeches: for in an action inuincible, hardinesse and knightly prowesse will bee esteemed as follie and indiscretion. Haue then patience my good Frendes, I hope that all shall turne to our good. No sooner had he ended his speeches, but he heard the Captaine commaund them to yeeld, or else they should die. Die? quoth Palmerin, that goes verie hard: assure vs our liues and we yeeld, otherwise not. I promise thee, said the Captaine, neither thou nor thy companie shall haue any harme.

So ſeazing vpon the ſhip, they brought it to the Admirall Olimaell, preſenting to him all the Knights they tooke therin; for which he hartily thanked them, ſaying.

Tell me Gentlemen and diſſemble not, are ye Turks, or Chriſtians: Sir, quoth Palmerin, ſeeing Fortune hath beene ſo contrarie to vs, you ſhall vnderſtand truly what we are. We are Chriſtians and poore Knights, ſearching aduentures to gaine honour and profit, in ſome Princes ſeruice be he Heathen or Chriſtian. And becauſe we can not now ſhew you what we are able to do, ſo pleaſe you to ſuffer vs enioy our libertie, and graunt vs the benefite of our Armour, we will promiſe you loyall and faythfull ſeruice. Olimaell, who was by nature ſterne and auſtere, ſeeing theſe fiue Knights ſo young and braue accompliſhed perſons, imagined their aſſiſtaunce would greatlie auaile him: wherefore he thus anſwered. Gentlemen, if you will ſweare to me by your fayth, that you will not depart from me without my licence, but will loyally imploy your ſelues in what I ſhall commaund, you ſhall haue your Armour againe, and I will not vſe you as my ſlaues and priſoners, but as my honeſt companions and friends. Which oath they all tooke to him, wherefore they were immediately armed againe, and remained in the Galley with Olimaell, who ſeeing their armour ſo rich and coſtly, eſteemed them to bee of noble blood, and therefore cauſed them to be verie honourable intreated.

So ſailing on, at length they came neare the great Citie of Albania, when Olimaell commaunded two or three Foyſtes, to goe vnderſtand in what eſtate the Citie was, who were aduertiſed by certaine Frenchmen, that the people were vnprouided of anie fortifications, ſo that winning the Port, the whole Citie might eaſily be conquered. Theſe tydings cauſed them forcible to enter the Hauen, where ſetting all the Shippes on fire, they went on ſhore, and murthering the Warders of the Gates, tooke the Citie at the firſt aſſault, when Palmerin and his noble

Frends (to their great sorrow) declared howe well they could skill of such affayres. The Citie was ouercome, and the chiefest Citizens therein taken prisoners, the Turkes following their fortune, marched further, and came to the Cittie of Durace, where the faire Princesse Laurana abode, of whom Palmerin sometime was amorous: when he imagined by her excellent beautie, that it was shée who so often solicited him in his dreames. Palmerin béeing there come on land, presently knewe the Countrey, wherefore hée sayd to his companions.

I nowe perceiue déere Frends, that fortune forceth vs from ill to worse, this speake I in respect of this Cittie, agaynst which wée must be compelled to fight: and not manie yéeres since, with the price of my blood I laboured to defende it. But because the Dukes Daughter is so good a Ladie, as in my heart I reuerence and honor, I beseech you euery one imploy your selfe, to preserue her and her Ladies, and demaund them of the Admirall for our part of the spoyle.

While Palmerin thus conferred with his Frendes, Olimaell vnderstoode by certaine prisoners, that the Cittie was verie slenderly defended, therefore no great maistrie to winne it quickly. Yet at their first assault they were so valiantlie repulsed, as Olimaell and his men began to despaire of victorie: wherefore hee made open protestation, that hée who first could enter the Cittie, should haue anie bone of him hée woulde request. Palmerin ioyfull of this promise, caused fiue scaling Ladders to be sette agaynst the wall, whereon hée and his Frends ascended, and on the wall cryed, the Citie is ours: wherewith the people within were so dismaied, hauing endured a long and furious skirmish, as they all fledde out at the further Gate. The Turkes then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and entering the Citie, put olde and yong to the Sword. But Palmerin and his companions feigning to pursue them that fled, ranne strait to the Pallace, at the entraunce whereof

they found many Moores, who had taken the Duke, wherefore they went to finde the Princeſſe Laurana, who ſate in her Chamber, well neere deade for greefe, becauſe ſhee heard that her Father was ſlaine. Her ſhee committed to the cuſtodie of the King of Sparta, Fryſoll, Olorico, and Euſtace, deſiring them to comfort the Princeſſe, in that neither ſhee or her Ladies ſhould fall into the Tyrants power, and ſo comming to Olimaell, on his knee he began in this manner. You knowe my Lord the promiſe you made to day, by vertue whereof becauſe I firſt got ouer the wall into the Cittie, for my ſhare I requeſt the Dukes Daughter, and for my Frendes that followed mee, her Ladyes and Gentlewomen: for other ſpoyle of the riches and treaſure we deſire not.

Olimaell graunted his demaunde, charging his people on paine of their lines, not any way to offende the Ladies. In this manner was the Princeſſe ſaued, whereupon the Duke of Pontus preſently went to her, and taking her by the hand, acquainted her with this ioyfull newes, whereto ſhee thus replied. Can it bee poſſible that Palmerin, who heeretofore ventured his life in my fathers defence, againſt the Count Paſſaco of Mecæna, ſhould now become ſo familiar among Turkes and Moores? Hath hee ſo forgot his honour to God, that himſelfe is not onely a vaſſaile to the enemies of his faith, but doth likewiſe ſeeke their deſtruction that ſerue Chriſt Jeſus? Be ſilent good Madame, anſwered the Duke, for if his name be knowne, we all periſh: what hath beene done, is for the ſafetie of your life, and our owne likewiſe, which hee hath obtained of the Generall of the Armie.

With theſe words ſhe was ſomewhat pacified, and the old cinders of loue, which nowe began to ſpreade abroade, cauſed her to returne this anſwere. In ſooth, my Lord, ſeeing I am become Palmerins priſoner, I thinke my honour in better aſſuraunce, and my Fathers death is the leſſe greeuous to mee, in that this matter may ſort to better effecte

then

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to her, who intreated her to keepe all things secretly, for hee would endure a thousand deathes, before shee should be any way dishonoured. In time (quoth he) wee may be deliuered from these Hell-hounds: as for you and your Ladyes, the Admirall hath openly commaunded, that you be reuerently vsed.

A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, and seeing matters are so come to passe, yet do I reioyce that I fell into your power. The Citie of Durace left in the same state as Albania was, the Turkes went all aboord, taking no prisoners thence, but Laurana and her Ladies, whome Olimaell intended to giue to the great Turke. So passing along the Coast of Thessalie, they spoyled many Cities on the Sea side, toke the King and many noble men: so that nowe they were stored with a number of Christian prisoners. Now Olimaell feared, that the Christian Princes hearing what spoyle he made in their Dominions, would raise a mightie power against him, wherefore hee gaue charge to his Pilots, to order their course towards the Citie of Tubant, where as then the great Turke kept his Court.

The King of Thessalie, three dayes before his taking, sent his Queene (who was great with Childe) to one of his Castels, a good dayes iourney from the Sea: but when shee heard her Husbandes misfortune, the greefe shee conceyued caused her presently to fall in trauell, when shee was deliuered of a goodly Daughter, named Francelina. At this time the three Magical Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin on the Mountaine Artifæria, and one of them afterwarde in his going to Buda, made their aboode in an Isle thereby named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophie) heard how the King was taken, and should be kept in perpetuall prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which was newly borne: they concluded to frame such an enchauntment, as mauger the Turke and his power, as hee

that would not deigne to kiſſe his ſhoe, ſhould be deliuered from impriſonment. Hereupon the yongeſt of theſe three Siſters, went to the Caſtell where the wofull Quéene remained, where ſhé was verie honourablie entertained, becauſe the Quéene deſired to know, if the King her Huſband was dead or aliue, and if any hope might be expected of his deliuerance.

The Damoſell Enchauntreſſe aduertiſed the Quéne, that in departing with her Daughter Francelina, the King her Huſband ſhould enioy his libertie, and in time to come, ſhe ſhould be maried to one of the beſt Knights of the world. Wée néede not doubt that the Quéene was héereat amazed, yet the loue of the Mother to her infant, cannot conquer the loue of the Wife to her Huſbande, which among all loues is the moſt honeſt and loyall: ſo that in hope to frée him againe, on whom depended her health and welfare, ſhé gaue her Childe to the Damoſell, intreating that ſhé might be vſed as beſéemed the Daughter of a King, and as the ſwéete beautie of the infant deſerued. Shé returning to Carderia with the Childe, made her Siſters verie ioyful by her comming, who there nouriſhed the infant till ſhé was three yéeres olde, when the beautie of the yong Princeſſe beganne to ſhewe it ſelfe, as fayre Cynthia doth among the Starres.

Nowe did the Siſters incloſe her in a ſtrong Tower, made of purpoſe for young Francelina, wherein was the moſt gwdly Garden in the worlde, there was ſhé attended by her Nurſſes, and fyre waiting Gentlewomen: and ſuch enchauntments were impoſed on the Tower, as no man ſhould euer ſée her, vnleſſe he were the beſt Knight of his time. The entraunce into the Tower was verie ſtrayte and narrowe, barred vppe with a great Gate of yron, and guarded with two furious Lyons. Ouer the gate ſtode a huge Image of Copper, holding a mightie Mace of Stéele, wrought by ſuch cunning, as if anie Knight but he that was deſtenied to end the aduenture, ſhould aſſay to enter, barely

might

might be escape to returne againe. Moreouer, the conquerour should not demaund the first demaund of the princesse, which was the deliuerance of her Father, and for this cause the Sisters enchaunted the faire Francelina, whose victorie wee must yet forbeare, proceeding where wee left before.

Olimaell beeing thus on the Sea, laden with Christian spoyles and prisoners, at length entred the port of the great Cittie of Tubant, where hee made such a cheerefull noyse of Drums, Trumpets, Clarions, and Cornets, as though the greatest Monarch in the worlde had come to take landing. The great Turke marualling at this sodaine melodie, sent one of his Knights to vnderstand the cause, who beeing certified by Olimaell, what great victories hee had obtained against the Christians, and the number of prysoners he brought with him, returned to the Pallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall Olimaell was come, and had brought with him great spoyles from the Christians: where among (quoth hee) is a Christian King in person, many worthy Knights and Gentlemen, and a young Princesse of incomparable beautie. Not a little toyfull was the Turke at these newes, wherefore comming into his great Hall, where the imperiall seates of maiestie were erected, himselfe sate downe in the one, and faire Agriola of England in the other, expecting the comming of Olimaell, who in tryumphant manner set forward with his prize, brauely mounted on a lustie Courser sumptuously caparasoned, and aduaunncing his sword drawne in signe of victorie. Beeing come to the Pallace, Olimaell saluted his Lorde with great reuerence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prisoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest captiues one after another to kisse the great Turks foote, then commaunding them to be carried thence, he began in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most highand

mightie Monarch, that this victorie gotten on the Chriſtians, enemies to our Gods, hath bæne obtained onely by your fauour, therefore it is good reaſon that the principall head of this enterpriſe, the great and chæfeſt honour ſhould be done. The witneſſe hereof are the treaſures preſent, and theſe priſoners abyding your mercie, who from the very meaneſt to the higheſt, ſhall humble themſelues at your maieſties foote. When very many had done their reuerence, and the King of Theſſaly ſhoulde next follow, who though his handes were pinniond behinde him, yet had a Crowne of Gold on his head to ſhewe what hee was: although he ſawe himſelfe in the Traitours power, and Olimaell had commaunded him to kiſſe his Maiſters foote, boldly made this anſwere. Nor will I ſo much diſpleaſe my God, vncircumcized Tirant as thou art, in ſuch ſort to abaſe my ſelf, being a king, and adminiſtratour of iuſtice to faithfull Chriſtians, to kiſſe the foote of the moſt naſtie and vncleane creature in the world, profaning the worſhip which I onely owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my life from mee, but not to conſtraine me do the thing wherein conſiſts my damnation, and a thouſand deathes I will endure, before I yelde ſo much as in thought to thee. Villaine (quoth the Admirall) darſt thou ſpeake ſo vnreuerently in the preſence of my Lorde? did not my regarde of him withholde mee, ſoone ſhould I ſeperate thy curſed head from thy ſhoulders. With theſe words he gaue the King ſuch a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knées to the ground.

Ah Traytour, quoth the King, well haſt thou ſhewen the nature of a villaine, that without commaunde ſtrykeſt a King captiue, and vnprouided of Armes: but might it ſo pleaſe thy Lorde, in open Fielde will I prooue thee a diſloyall and vnchriſtened Curre, that thus abuſeſt the blood royall. The great Turke ſeeing the King ſo moued and angrie, the blood likewiſe trickling from his noſe and mouth: commaunded him to be carried thence, to one of the ſtrongeſt

Caſtles

Caſtles in Natolia, where he ſhould be encloſed without any companie, that his captiuitie might be the more greeuous to him.

When the King of Theſſaly was departed, Palmerin approched, leading the Princeſſe Laurana by the hande, hee and his fiue companions beeing Armed, except their Helmets, Gantlets, and ſwords, whereat the great Turke marualling, demaunded of Olimaell why hee ſuffered them to be armed? My Lord, quoth hee, theſe fiue Knights were the firſt prize I toke, who (after they had giuen me their oathes) haue done ſuch ſeruice to your Maieſtie, eſpecially this, pointing to Palmerin, one of the beſt knights that euer I ſaw: as full well do they deſerue libertie, which in recompēce of aduenturing their liues in your ſeruice, vnder your highneſſe correction, I promiſed them. By Mahomet, anſwered the great Turk, for thy ſake I likewiſe confirme it, and if hereafter they will abide with mee, I will make them greater then euer they were. While the Turke was making theſe promiſes, Agriola hauing well noted Palmerin, knew him, and with the ſodaine conceit thereof was readie to ſwoune: but ſtaying her ſelfe on her Chayre, ſaid. O ſole bountie, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and my thoughts beguiled? At theſe words Palmerin knewe her, which before hee did not, by reaſon of her ſtrange diſguyſed apparrell: yet thought hee beſt to conceale his inward ioy, leaſt crooked fortune ſhould now againe preuent him.

The great Turke ſeeing Agriola looke ſo pale and wan, ſtarted from his Chayre, and taking her in his Armes, ſaid. Alas Madame, hath any ſodaine ill befallen yee? hath any one in this companie offended yee? By our Gods, if I knew him, preſently ſhoulde he die the death. The Princeſſe trembling with feare, ſeeing Hippolyta was not preſent, ſpake thus in Engliſh. What will my Lorde and Huſband Trineus ſay, if hee be in this companie, ſeeing I haue ſo diſloyally forſaken him, and thus (though God knowes

perforce)

perforce) in ſtéed of him, haue taken the enemie to him and our faith? Yet one comfort haue I, that this Infidell hath not carnally knowne me, for which perfection I thanke the heauenly maieſtie. At theſe ſpæches Palmerin was ſo glad, as the feare of death could not withholde him, but in the ſame language he thus anſwered.

Feare not good Madame, Trineus is not in our companie, but ſo pleaſe you to ſay I am your Brother, you may happily ſaue my life and practiſe your deliuerance. The Turke miſdoubting by Palmerins perſwading, that hée had cauſed this ſodaine alteration, imagining him to be her huſband of whom he had heard her talke ſo often, in a great rage ſaid: Knight, how durſt thou preſume my Ladies preſence, knowing the ſight of thée would any way diſpleaſe her? By the Prophet Mahomet thou ſhalt immediately die, that all ſuch audacious villaines may take an example by thée.

Agriola knowing the Turks cenſures were very peremptorie, and commonly no ſoner ſaide then executed, embracing him, thus replied. Ah my Lorde, do not the thing in haſte, for which afterwarde you will be ſorrie, for I aſſure you on my honor, the Knight that ſpake to mée is my Brother, and hath left his Countrey onely to finde me, and him I do loue ſo effectually, as if you put him to death, impoſſible is it for me to liue afterward. When the Turke heard her ſpeake with ſuch affection, qualifying his anger, ſaide. I promiſe ye Madame, for your ſake hée ſhall haue no harme, but bee entertained with loue and honour, conditionally that you forgette this melancholy, and henceforth ſhewe your ſelfe more pleaſant: for in ſéeing you ſad, I am more grieued, then if I had loſt the moitie of dominions. In ſoth my Lorde, anſwered Agriola, now ſhall I be merrie, ſéeing you intende to loue my Brother, for greater good cannot happen to me then this gentle entertainment, and henceforth ſhall I tread vnder foote, the ſad remembraunce of my Countrey and Parents, hauing him with me, by whom

I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turke arising from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompanie Agriola, and the other fiue Knights hauing kissed his hande, hee went to his Chamber, commaunding Olimael (for his greater honor) to vsher Agrola, who as she went, thus spake.

Beléeue me Admirall, if I was offended when thou broughtest me prisoners hither, thou hast now made mée sufficient amendes, in that by thée I enioy my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to sée againe. Alas Madame, quoth he, little did I thinke him to be such a one, for had I: his visage should haue béene much better, which fault I hope hereafter to recompence. I commend him to thy countesie, sayde Agriola, let him and his friendes haue all things they want, according as my Lorde hath appointed. So taking her leaue of them, she entred her chamber, where she and Hypolita conferred with Laurana, of all her fortunes passed, and the aduentures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions by the Turks commaundement, lodged néere the Pallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly Horse with costly furniture, thinking by these meanes to conquere Agriola, and purchase that of her which he long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, sayde. Right well may you be Brother to my Lady Agriola, in that your beautie and complexion deliuers great likelihood, séeing then our Gods haue permitted that for her comfort you shoulde be brought hither, perswade her I pray yée, that she be no longer repugnant to my will, for could I haue a Child by her, I would thinke my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth. Beside, I would haue you forsake the follie of your Christianitie, and yeelo your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours, and you shall see how our Gods will fauour you, likewise what great good you shall receiue therby. My Lord, quoth Palmerin, I will labour with my Sister so much as lies in me to doe as for your Law, as yet I am vnacquainted therwith, but when I shall find it to be such as

you aſſure mee, eaſily may I bee drawen thereto, and ſo ſerue you with ſuch loyaltie, as ſo great an eſtate doth worthily deſerue. I confeſſe my ſelfe likewiſe greatly bounden to your maieſtie, in that you haue accepted my Siſter as your Wife, and to mee a poore ſlaue giuen life and libertie, which I beſéech you alſo graunt to the Marriners, in whoſe Veſſell it was my chaunce to bée taken, in ſo doing ſhe may be greatly moued by your magnificent libertie and mercie.

The great Turke preſently gaue his conſent, cauſing their ſafe conduct to bee openly proclaimed, ſo Palmerin and his Friendes humbly departing to their lodging, the Turke went to Agriolaes Chamber, where ſitting downe by her, he thus began. Now ſhall I perceiue Madame, how much your Brother may preuaile with you: for hée hath promiſed me ſo to order the matter, as you ſhall graunt my long deſired ſuite. My Lord, quoth ſhée, my Brother ſhall command me nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your requeſt, it is not in my power, but in the hande of God, who defendeth me as beſt him pleaſeth. Nor can I change the opinion I haue held ſo long, though by hauing my Brother with me, I enioy farre greater content then I did before.

It ſufficeth me, ſaide the Turke, to ſée you ſo well pleaſed, and as for your Brother, that you may perceiue howe well I loue him, before one moneth be expired, I will make him the cheefeſt Lord in my Court, next mine owne perſon: ſo kiſſing the Princeſſe, he departed to his Chamber. The day following Palmerin ſaide to his companions. You ſée my friendes, how friendly Fortune ſmileth on vs, but leaſt ſhee change, as euermore ſhe is wont, wee muſt practiſe ſome meanes to eſcape from theſe Turkiſh infidels. Beſide, ſeeing wée haue founde the Princeſſe Agriola, I hope Trineus is not ſo ſecretly hidden, but we ſhall heare ſome tydings of him. Other will I thereforе enquire, if ſhe know what became of him and Ptolomie whē we left them:

in meane while you may closely conclude with our Marriners, that they be euer readie at an houres warning, for I hope we shall set hence before eight dayes be past. Palmerin went to Agriolaes Chamber, and there by good hap hée found her alone, whome after he had humbly saluted, the Princesse thus spake to him. My noble friende, you must be carefull howe you speake to me, especially before the aged Lady you saiwe here yesterday, for shee vnderstandeth all languages, and if we be discouered, there is no way but death, therefore when you sée her with me, conferre rather with Laurana, and say to her what you would haue mee know, because shee is a Lady both vertuous and faithfull. No lesse (Madame) haue I alwaies found her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beseech you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaires, for shée is daughter to one of the most gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Trineus, after that so vnhappily I departed from you. The Admirall Olimaell, quoth shée, came with his Gallies so soone as you were departed, who toke vs, and then seperated vs in sunder, scant permitting me to speake to him or Ptolome, nor knowe I what is become of them. It sufficeth then Madame aunswered Palmerin, that I haue founde you, for on you dependeth the life of Trineus, who shall not long (I hope) bee concealed from vs, therefore aduise your selfe on the day when you will departe, for I haue a shippe readie to carrie you from this seruitude. Thanks be to heauen quoth she, for so good fortune, I will be so readie as you shall not stay for me. Now entred Hippolyta, who brake off, they talke to other occasions, where we will leaue, and returne to the Prince Trineus.

Chap.

Chap. XLII.

How Trineus beeing enchaunted into the ſhape of a Dogge in the Iſle of Malfada, there came a Princeſſe of the Moores, who requeſted him of the aged Enchauntreſſe, to whom he was giuen, and what happened to him afterward.

I Thinke as yet you remember, without repetition of the former diſcourſe, in what manner the Knight, Cozin to the Admirall Olimael, to whome the Prince Trineus was giuen, arriued by tempeſt in the Iſle of Malfada, and how he with his people were tranſformed into diuers ſhapes of Beaſts, among whom Trineus bare the likeneſſe of a goodly Dogge. Beeing thus diſguiſed, a yong Princeſſe named Zephira, Daughter to the King of the ſame Countrey, came to demaund counſell of the aged Enchauntreſſe Malfada, for the cure of a certain diſeaſe, which by ſtrange aduenture happened to her in this manner.

This yong Princeſſe one day beeing pleaſant in her Fathers Court, among many of her waiting Ladyes, entred a goodly Garden, which abounded with great diuerſitie of ſweet flowers, and after ſhee had walked a prettie while in an Arbour of Muſke-roſes, ſhee eſpied a Gilli-flower, which ſeemed ſo faire and beautifull in her eye, as ſhee was prouoked to goe crop it from the ſtalke. Hauing this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by miſfortune) a venemous worme was crept, ſhee tooke ſuch delight in ſmelling it,

it: as her breath drewe vp the wourme into one of her nosethrilles, not being able to get it out againe. So the venome and poysome of this little wourme, engendred a putrifaction and other like wourms, which gaue a smell so filthy and lothsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her Father not a little agreeued at this mischaunce, sent for the most skilfull Phisitions, to see what remedie might be deuised: but all their paine and trauaile was in vaine, for the disease continued still without any amendment. In the end, the King fearing it would change to a Canker incurable, and hauing heard what straunge actions the Enchauntresse Malfada perfourmed, sent the Princesse Zephira to her, where shee being arriued without anie daunger, because she would not hurt anie inhabiting in the Isle, declared to the Sorceresse the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchauntresse answered, that shee could giue her no remedie, and hardly should she finde any at all: except it were by an ancient Knight, who remained in the Court of the King of Romata and Grisca, Realmes subiect to the Soldane of Persia, and the knight was named Muzabelino. The Princesse was so displeased at this answere, seeing her intent frustrated, as shee would receyue no sustenaunce: wherefore walking in the Fields to represse her anger, and so to the Sea-side, where the Ships lay confused, shee beheld the Dogge which was the Prince Trineus, and so farre in liking was shee with him, as she desired the Enchauntresse to giue him her, and hauing obtained her request, returned to her Father, who lay sicke in one of his Cities called Nabor, whereof the whole Realme bare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his Melancholie conceit so stroke to his heart, as with in three daies after he died. Hauing made his Testament before his decease, hee gaue his Daughter as her portion a Citie called Elata, one of the greatest and surest strength in

the Realme, with all the ſignoryes belonging thereto. To Maulerino his yongeſt Sonne, he gaue an other like poſti-on, which was a dayes iourney diſtaunt from Elain. After the Kings funerall rytes were ſolemnized, the Princeſſe with her brother Mulerino, went to their owne poſſeſſions, doubting the furie of the Prince Tyreno, their eldeſt Bro-ther, who alwayes had ſhowen himſelfe proude and con-tentious.

Shée béeing thus in quiet by her ſelfe, toke no other pleaſure then in playing with her Dog, becauſe hée ſeemed verie ſubtile and politique: ſo that ſhée prepared a Couch for him at her beds féete. Tyreno béeing crowned King af-ter his Fathers deceaſſe, began greatly to deſpiſe that his Siſter ſhould enioy the fayreſt Cittie in the Realme: for which cauſe hée practiſed all the meanes he coulde to put her to death. And that he might the better compaſſe his pur-poſe, hee ſecretly ſent a Meſſenger to the maiſter of the Princeſſe horſes, that if hée woulde kill or poyſon his Bro-ther and Siſter, hée would giue him thirtie thouſande Se-raphes, and make him gouernour of Elain. The wicked noble man, grédie and couetous, ſéeing the large promiſe of the Tyrant, conſented thereto: ſo that one night the Prin-ceſſe béeing aſléepe, hè entred her Chamber with his Sword drawne, there to haue murthered her, and afterward the Prince her Brother. Trineus, who had loſt nothing be-longing to a man but badly ſhape and voyce, ſéeing the Traytour enter his Ladies Chamber with his weapon drawne, ſtarted vp preſently, and ſetting his two foreféete on the villaines breaſt, bit him ſo cruelly by the face and throate, as he being vnable to helpe himſelfe, was conſtrai-ned to crie out alounde. With this noyſe the Princeſſe awa-ked, and her Brother likewiſe, who lay in the next Cham-ber, comming in haſte to ſée the cauſe of this outerie, and knowing the Traytour, beate him ſo ſore with the Pom-mell of his Sword about the ſtomacke, as in the end enfor-ced him to confeſſe his treaſon. Whereat Maulerino not

a little maruailing, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, smote his heade from his shoulders. In the morning he appointed such guarde in the Cittie, as no straunger might enter without great examination. The Princesse knowing howe her Dog had saued her life, loued him afterwarde so tenderly, as shée would feede him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might giue him anie sowe. Héere will we likewise pause a while, and declare the deliuerance of the Princesse Agriola.

Chap. XLIII.

Howe the great Turke became enamoured with the Princesse Laurana, by means wherof he was slaine, and Agriola deliuered.

PAlmerin being vpon a day in his Chamber with his Companions, practising some meane for the deliuerance of Agriola: the Princesse Laurana of Durace, came to them, framing her spéeches in this maner. Gentlemen if any of you be desirous to deliuer vs from this cruell enemie, who holdes vs in this thrall and bondage, I haue deuised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke the most luxurious and vnchast man in the worlde, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made loue to me, so that to compasse mine entent, I haue made him promise within thrée dayes to graunt his request. In this time I haue intreated the Princesse Agriola to shewe him the most disdainefull countenaunce that may bée, which shée hath faithfully promised,

miſed, and for this cauſe hath ſent mee to you, to conuay hence all the riches he hath giuen yée, and which ſhée her ſelfe will likewiſe ſend ye: ſo that when the houre is come for me to fulfill his pleaſure, one of you béeing priuilie armed, ſhall in my place murther him, in reuenge of the ill Chriſtendome hath ſuſtained, by the laſt vnhappie voyage of Olimacll, who determineth verie ſhortly, as I vnderſtand, to goe ſpoyle the Iſle of Rhodes. Palmerin very glad of the Princeſſe notable inuention, thus anſwered. Becauſe (Madame) I lately promiſed the Turke, not to depart his Court, but to kéepe him companie, when he denied his Admirall, that I and my companions ſhoulde go with him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to ende this worthie reuenge, therefore one of you (my Frendes) muſt reſolue to performe it. In meane while, you Madame Laurana may returne to the Turke, pleaſing him with faire and frendly ſpéeches: for if neuer ſo little ſuſpition bée gathered, not one of vs can eſcape with life. Feare not, ſayde the Princeſſe, I will vſe the matter ſo carefully as you can deſire, right well knowe howe to enflame his heart with queint lookes, coy diſdaines, faint dealings, and other ſuch like ceremonies vſed in loue, as feare not you to proſecute the ſtratageme, in that a beginning ſo good, muſt néedes ſort to a ſucceſſiue ende. The yong Duke of Pontus, who began to growe affectionate towards the Princeſſe Laurana, ſayd.

In ſooth my Lord, ſo pleaſe you to commit the charge héereof to me: ſo well hope I to execute the ſame, for her ſake that did ſo worthily inuent it, as I dare warrant to deſerue no reproch thereby. For my firſt earneſt to gentle Loue, ſhall be ſo gracious, as in qualifying the vnlawfull heate of our enemie, I will binde my ſelfe neuer to loue anie other: and her faith receyued, if I bring not his head to Madame Laurana, let mée bée accounted as one of the moſt fleſhfull Knights that euer bare Armes. Aduertiſe mée therefore of the place and houre, and doubt not of my faith-

full

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all beganne to smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Beléeue mee noble Duke, considering your youth and braue disposition, I knowe no one in this company more méete for the Princesse Laurana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed houre shall come, you will bée a little more angrie with the Turke then her, if she haue you in that subiection as it séemes she hath. Yet let vs not nowe trifle the time in vaine, when such waighty occasions commaundeth our diligence.

So returned Laurana to the Princesse Agriola, acquainting her with the Knights determination, when not long after, the great Turke entred the Chamber, accompanied with *Palmerin* and the King of Sparta, & that he might the better speake to her hée so earnestly desired, hée caused Palmerin to sit betweéne him and Agriola, then turning to Laurana, he began to deuise familiarlie with her. Which when Palmerin and Agriola perceiued, the better to beguile him, hée made a signe to the King of Sparta, that hée should enter into some talke of hunting: wherat the Turke presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to the window, with these speeches. Mistresse of my heart, and the very fairest creature that euer mine eyes beheld, will ye graunt the request I made to you yesterday? Sée you not what great honour I haue done to Madame Agriola? Notwithstanding, if you will loue me, I will make you my Wife, that I may haue issue by you to succéede in my kingdome, and your honours shall be nothing inferiour to hers. And though she still denie me the fauour, which with long and continuall pursuite I haue desired: yet doe you consider my greéfe, and if in short time you vouchsafe me no pitie, the extreame afflictions I endure for your loue, are rated at the price of my life. God forbid, quoth Laurana, that so great a losse shoulde come to the Orientall Empyre by me, rather will I forget the accustomed regards of mine honour, to bée accepted in your grace and fauour. And the

cauſe that made me deferre ſo long from this anſwere, was the feare I haue of Madame Agriola, and her Brother, to whome I was giuen by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

But to the ende, my Lorde, that none of them may ſuſpect our loue, I thinke it conuenient that Hyppolita, who alway lyeth in your Chamber, remoue her ſelfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her ſhall you commaunde to giue me the Key of my Ladies Chamber, which hitherto ſhée hath vſed to carrie. By this meane may I the more ſafely, and without ſuſpition of any one, come in the night to fulfill your deſire. The Turke imagining he had gayned the Princeſſe loue indéede, was not a little ioyfull, wherefore he ſaid.

Sweete Ladie, you ſhall haue the Key as you requeſt, nor ſhall ſhe longer lodge in my Chamber, whom you feare ſo much. Moreouer, this night will I perſwade Agriola, that I féele my ſelfe not halfe currant: and therefore to kéepe her ſelfe in her owne Chamber, and ſo may you come boldlie to me this night. If any man chaunce to méete yée, ſay that I ſent for you: and if they dare bee ſo bolde as to hinder your comming, in the morning ſhall my Janizaries put them to death, whatſoeuer they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a ſtone of inеſtimable value, hee gaue it to the Princeſſe, ſaying. Holde Madame, take this as a pledge of my promiſe: for which Laurana humblie thanking him, thus replied. My Lord, I ſée Agriola, hath foure or fiue times earneſtlie noted you, I thinke it good therefore that we breake off talke, aſſuring you, that I will not faile at midnight; when euerie one is faſt a ſléepe, to kéepe my worde, and in the Mantle which you ſent mée yeſterday, I will couertly enter your Chamber, conditionallie that you kéepe your promiſe to mée afterwarde.

Doubt not thereof, ſaid the Turke, and ſo taking his leaue of her, went preſently to his Chamber, where finding Hyppolita, he commaunded her to take thence her bed, and

carrie,

carrie it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the Key from her, hée sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who hauing it in her hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

Howe say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it should bee? the Turke moued with pittie of our straite imprisonment, hath giuen me the charge of Madame Agriola: for by his Page hath he sent me the Key of her Chamber, and Hyppolita shall lodge nowe among other Ladies. And because this night the action must bee fulfilled, doo you aduertise the Duke of Pontus, that at midnight he faile not to come, to vse drunken Holofernes as he hath deserued. Palmerin and the King of Sparta, praysing God, that their affaires went forwarde so luckily, returned to their lodging, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterwarde they rehearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore, quoth hée to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armour secretlye to Agriolaes Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta, and my selfe. Meane while, Frysol, Olorico, and Eustace, see that all our baggage be conueyed into our shippe, which may safely be done without suspect, considering what great multitude of Souldiours are embarquing, and therefore prouide all things readie against our comming. The houre being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse Chamber, where the Duke was immediately Armed, except his Helmet, which he left on the Table, couered with the Mantle whereof Laurana spake, putting on the attyre the Princes wore vppon her heade, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the dark he might be reputed rather a woman then a man, and being readie to depart about the practise, he saide to Palmerin. I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conduct the Ladyes before to the Porte: for if in mine attempt I should happen to faile, yet should you lose but the

worſt in your companie. So importunate was hee with them to follow his aduiſe, as he cauſed them to depart preſently to the Hauen, where they were ioyfully welcommed by Fryſoll, and the reſt, without mœting anie by the way to hinder them. When the Duke ſaw himſelfe left alone, and now he was to diſpoſe himſelfe to his intent, falling on his knée, he thus ſpake.

O my God, that ſuffered the mightie Holofernes to bée beheaded by thy Seruaunt Iudith: affoorde me at this time the like grace, and giue mée ſtrength to woorke his death, who is the greateſt liuing enemy to Chriſtians. This ſaid, hée went to the Turks Chamber, where he found the doore readie open, and approching the bed, the Turke (who verilie thought it was Laurana) raiſed vp himſelfe, and taking him by the arme, ſaid. Welcome, ſweete Ladie, for verie long haue I expected thy comming. Ah Traitour, quoth the Duke, I am not ſhe thou lookeſt for, regarde of honour will not ſuffer her to ſinne in ſuch ſort. With which woordes hée ſtabbed him to the heart, and ſmiting off his head, wrapped it in the Mantle that Laurana gaue him: ſo going to Agriolaes Chamber, and clapping on his Helmet, went preſentlie to his Frendes, whom hée founde in prayer for his good ſucceſſe, and throwing the head into Lauranaes lappe, ſaid.

Madame, hée that was ſo importunate for your diſhonour, as a witneſſe of his loue to you, hath ſent you his head here by me: wherwith I preſent you ſo deuoutlie, as henceforth I dedicate my life and ſeruice to your diſpoſing. A thouſand thanks my Lorde, quoth the Princeſſe, this vertuous act hath made mée ſo conſtantlie to bée yours: as in anie thing that toucheth not the impeach of mine honour, I remaine with my vttermoſt endeuours to pleaſure you. As the Duke would haue replied, the other knights came to looke on the head, which when they had caſt into the Sea, they preſently hoyſed ſaile, and before day had gotten farre enough from the rode.

In the morning, as the marriners came from theyr Gallies towardes the Cittie, they espied the head floting on the water, and taking it vp, shewed it to their companions, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadfull, the mustaches drouting out like stiffe bristles, and the locks of hayre hang straggling downe, they knew not what to thinke, and one of them hauing well marked it, saide.

By all our Gods, if I be not deceiued, this is the head of my Lord the great Turke, at which words all the other began to scorne and mocke. Hyppolita seeing faire Phoebus let forth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agriolaes chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the chamber likewise dispoyled of many things, she doubted immediatly that they were fled, whereof to be resolued, she went to the great Turks Chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, saide. Why enter ye not? the howre is past, and my Lorde is not yet risen. Lady, quoth they, as yet hee hath not called vs, and you knowe as yesternight he forbad our entrance till we were called: it may bee hee slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented to take his rest. I feare, quoth she, some other matter then sleepe doth hinder his calling you, so thrusting open the doore, and entring the Chamber, sawe the blood dispersed on the ground, and the headlesse truncke hanging beside the bed, with which sight they made a verie pitifull outcrie, whereat many noble men and Gentlemen came, who likewise beholding what had happened, ioyned with them in sorrowfull complaints. Soone was the report of this murder blazed through the Cittie, so that Olimaell hearing thereof, ranne thither with all haste, where he was no sooner presēt, but Hyppolita thus began, Ah Olimaell thou broughtest the Traytours hither that haue slaine my Lorde, and by thy meanes hath this treason bene committed. By all our Gods, sayde one of the Turks Nephewes present, it is true, but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother,

and

and the other Knights to eſcape, thou villaine ſhalt abide it dearely. So drawing forth his Semitarie, killed Olimaell therewith, ſaying. Such be their reward that trayterouſly betray their Soueraigne: mine Vncle of a poore Ianizarie made the his cheefe Admirall, and thou for his kindneſſe haſt requited him with death, but now thy villainy is worthily recompenced.

Olimaell thus ſlaine, his men ranne furiouſly on the Turks Nephew, and ſlew him, with fiftie Knights beſide that defended his quarrell, and had it not beene for an auncient Baſſo, who with an hundred Souldiours came to part them, they were in danger of a greater ſedition, becauſe they ſawe none purſue Palmerin and his companions.

The Baſſo that had thus pacified this tumult, by promiſes perſwaded the Ianizaries, and prevailed ſo well with them, as the ſame day he was proclaimed yonger Brother to the Soldane deceaſed, and great Emperour of Turkie. Many iniuries did he to Chriſtendome afterwarde, in reuenge of his Brothers death, which yet we will forbeare, to rehearſe what happened to Palmerin and his companions being on the ſea.

Chap.

Chap. XLIIII.

How Palmerin and his companions mette two Turkish Ships, from whom they deliuered Estebon the Merchant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malfada, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow hee made for his mishap.

Aurana was so ioyfull, that shee had so fortunately escaped the Turks hands, & beside was so reuenged of hir theefest enemie, as nothing could yeld her greater contentation: but howe much more would shee haue reioyced, if shee had knowen the slaughter at the Pallace? As she sat discoursing hereon with Palmerin and the Duke of Pontus, Frysoll being aloft on the decke, espied foure ships comming towards them with full saile, whereupon he called to his companions, that they shoulde presently arme themselues. For (quoth he) I see two Rouing Shippes, and they haue taken two other, or els my iudgement fayleth: let vs therefore labour to withstand them, least we sustaine a further danger.

No sooner had he spoken these words, but they all put themselues in readinesse, so that when the enemie drew with them, and many entred the shippe, thinking it was yelded, they had a sharper entertainment then they expected, for not one escaped aliue that came aboord, but either were slaine or thrown into the Sea. In breefe, they ouercame both the Pirates, and left not one aliue to carrie tydings hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin farthe-

the

the Cabins, to ſée what priſoners the Pyrates had taken: he eſpied his maiſter Eſtebon the Merchant of Hermida, and his two ſonnes by him, with two other Merchants, chained by the handes and necks, in like ſort as the poore ſlaues are in the Gallies, whereupon he ſaide. Truſt mée Maiſter, hee that put this coller about your necke, was little acquainted with your honeſt humanitie. So looking vp and downe for the Keyes that opened the locks of the chaines, hee eſpied a Turkiſh mariner, who fearefull of his life had hid himſelfe, to whom he ſaid. By God villaine, if thou ſhewſt me not quickly where the Keyes are, I will ſende thy ſoule after thy fellowes. Spare my life moſt noble Knight, cryed the Turke, and I will giue ye not onely the Keyes, but alſo ſhew you ſuch ſecrets heere within, as no other now but my ſelfe can ſhew ye, wherein is infinite wealth and riches.

Diſpatch then, ſayde Palmerin. The Pyrate fetching, the Keyes, opened the locks, toke off their chaines, and brake the manacles bounde about their handes, when Palmerin lifting vp his eyes to Heauen, ſaide. Thanks to my God, that ſo happily ſent mee to ſuccour Eſtebon, by whoſe meanes I came to the knowledge of my Friendes and Parents, and who firſt gaue me horſe and armour for knightly ſeruice. Eſtebon hearing Palmerins wordes, marueiling not a little, fell on his knée, ſaying. I beſeech you my Lorde to tell me your name, to the ende I may be thankfull to him, by whom I haue eſcaped the cruell Infidels, and receiued ſuch an vnſpeakeable benefit. Why maiſter, quoth Palmerin, know ye not me? I am your ſeruant Palmerin, who you firſt prouoked to follow armes by your liberalitie, and euer ſince haue I followed that profeſſion, and nowe haue requited ſome parte of your kindneſſe. Ah my noble Friende Palmerin, ſaid old Eſtebon, ſuffer me to kiſſe thy hande, for if heeretofore thou didſt deliuer me from the Lions throat: what may I ſay of the daunger from which I am nowe defended? An happie houre was that knightly furniture

giuen, and with successefull fortune haue you imployed them, but may it please ye to goe with mée, I will prouide you of all things necessarie, and giue you my Vonnes héere to be your Seruant.

The King of Sparta séeing Estebon vse such zealous spéeches, saide to him. Father, you are very much deceiued imagine you the sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople, a simple Souldier? your age (Father) makes you forgette your selfe. At these wordes the goodlie man somewhat astonied, excused himselfe to the King, and turning to Palmerin, saide. Alas my Lorde, in not knowing you otherwise then one of my seruants, I haue offered your excellencie very great wrong, and great hath béene my desert of punishment, vsing the great Lorde of Greece so vnreuerently. But pardon my boldnesse, noble Lorde, and let mine ignorance excuse the offence committed: for vnwittingly did I fall into this error. Content thy selfe good maister, quoth Palmerin, in nothing hast thou offended mée, but if thou wilt returne to thy Countrey, these vessells belonging to the Moores, and all the treasure in them, will I frankely bestow on thée. Ah my Lorde, answered Estebon, since Fortune hath so happily brought me into your companie, so please you to lisence me, loth am I to departe from you, for such store of Théeues and Robbers are on the Seas, as hardly can I escape their handes aliue. And sorrie woulde I be, saide Palmerin, that you or these merchaunts shoulde any way miscarrie, though perhaps your Wiues would gladly haue ye at home: but this I must tell ye, that I cannot returne to Constantinople. I shall be contented, saide Estebon, to stay your good leysure, for a poore life is better to mée in this companie, then welthie possessions among mine enemies.

Héereuppon, Palmerin commaunding all the riches in the Moores Shippes to bee conueyed into the other, sette sare on the vessels, and hoising sayle, rowe on merrily. Within three daies after arose a mightie winde at Northeast, which

which carried them with ſuch violence, as the Pilots told Palmerin they were nowe come on the borders of Perſia, and very neere the Iſle of Malfada, where they arriued before the Sunne ſetting. They ſeeing the Countrey ſo faire and delectable, would needes goe on ſhore to refreſh themſelues, for the Ladies were ſo diſtempered with the rough ſtorme, as they were very deſirous to recreate themſelues a little.

Palmerin not able to ſhun this fatall chaunce, went on ſhore with his friendes and the two Princeſſes, all the other likewiſe ſpeedily followed them, where they had not long ſtayde, but they were all diuerſly enchaunted. The two Ladyes were transformed into the ſhape of Hindes, the other to Dogges, Wolues, and Leopards, all of them running with ſuch ſwiftneſſe, as though the furies had ſtood to chaſe them: but Palmerin could not be enchaunted, by reaſon of the gift hee receiued of the three wiſe Sibbers on the Mountaine Artifaxia, whereat hee greatly greeued, for ſuch was his impatience thus to loſe his friendes, as hee entred into theſe lamentations.

Ah peruerſe and vnconſtant fortune, how diuers and daungerous are thy trecheries? Ah ſtepmother ſo cruell, why doſt thou not exerciſe thy rage on ſimple and forſaken ſoules, but on ſuch as exceede in honour and vertue? Doubtleſſe my ſinne hath cauſed this miſhap, when I perſwaded my friendes to goe againſt their Chriſtian Brethren, onely by feare of my wretched life. As he ſtode thus complayning, hee beheld the Ladie of the Iſle with her Seruants, comming to take the ſpoyle of their bootie, whereof being ioyfull, and thinking by her meanes to finde ſome ſuccour, he ranne apace towards her, and falling on his knee, thus ſpake. Alas noble Ladie, if euer power had pittie to moue ye, inſtruct me howe to recouer my companions, and two worthie Ladies tranſformed into brute Beaſts. Malfada ſwelling with anger, to ſee that he was not likewiſe enchaunted, anſwered, Wretched Knight, accurſed bee

they

their power that defended thée from my incontations, line not thou in hope to finde any remedie héere: for these enchauntments are of such strength, as they may not be vndone, but by the most skilfull magitian in the world, which thou art not I am well assured, and therefore dost thou but lose thy labour. But because by mine art I cannot be reuenged on thée, some other meanes will I séeke for thy destruction. You therefore my Seruants, lay handes on him, and carrie him to the darkest of my prysons, that his following dayes may be spent in greatest miserie. Vncourteous and despightfull, quoth Palmerin, are these speeches, especially comming from one that vaunteth of her knowledge, nor can they bee measured by loue or charitie, and therefore shall I chastise such bad creatures, as refuse a matter no way hurtfull to themselues, but wherein their owne honour might be discerned. With which words hee smote her head from her shoulders, and valiantly buckling with the other, in the ende left not one to carrie report of this massacre: afterwarde hee fell into this lamentation againe in this manner.

Vnfortunate Palmerin, séest thou not how mishap will neuer leaue thée? for where thou thoughtest with comfort to finde thy Brother Tryneus, nowe hath Fortune ouerwhelmed thée with a whole world of mischaunces. Ah noble Agriola and gentle Laurana, two of the most modest Princesses that euer the earth bare, howe may you iustly blame me: bringing you from where you liued in honour, in this accursed place to bee transformed to brute Beastes. Neuer did Circes deale so cruelly with Grillus, and other Souldiers to the wise Vlysses, as this villainous elce hag hath doone with me. Had you yet beene altered to Lyons and Tygers, you might haue defended your selues from the cruelties of other Beasts: but this damned Sorceresse hath transformed you, to the most fearefull and timerous among all other creatures, and therefore subiect to euerie inconuenience.

Ah loyall companions, who loued me déerer then your Father or Brother: from the Turks which cherished you with such kindnes and loue, haue I brought you to the cruell and mercileſſe Malſada. My noble Friende and Brother Fryſell, what now will auaile thy haughty Chiualrie? And gentle Prince Olorico, who for my ſake forſoke countrey, Parents, Friendes and all: how maiſt thou iuſtly condemne me of infamous reproach? What anſwere ſhall I make to mine Aunt Ariſmena, for her noble huſbande the King of Sparta? And vertuous Duke of Pontus, a Knight of high and eſpeciall qualitie; greatly maiſt thou blame thy fortune to bee acquainted with mé. Not forgetting the magnanimious Prince Euſtace, how can I excuſe thy hard hap, to the good olde Duke of Mecæna thy Father? Had it pleaſed the ſoueraigne Creator of all things, that among you my ſelfe had taken the ſtrange ſhape, my quiet would haue béene the better, to accompanie you with miſhappe, as I haue done in good fortune. Ah ſweéte Siſter Armyda, little thinkeſt thou what offence thy Brother Palmerin hath committed: and gracious Miſtreſſe Polynarda, what torment will this bee to your heauenly thoughts, when you ſhall vnderſtand the ſumme of my ill ſucceſſe? Wandering along in theſe mones, he came to the Enchauntreſſe Caſtale, where at the gate he ſawe two Damoſelles, who humbly ſaluting him, ſaide. Welcome Sir Knight, héere may you repoſe your ſelfe if you pleaſe. Alas Ladys, quoth he, it is nowe no time for me to reſt, becauſe the Ladie of this place I thinke, béeing the moſt ingrate and deſpightfull woman that euer I ſawe, hath depriued mé of all my ioye and comfort: but I hope I haue ſo well paide her for her paines, as hereafter ſhee ſhall do no further harme. Yet if any of you haue béene ſo well inſtructed by her, as to finish the deuelliſh coniurations, and will accompliſh it, or tell me, if by force they may bee reduced to their former ſhapes, who remaine enchaunted héere in this Iſlande, for euer will I bee her Knight, and will preferre her in honour be-

yond all other of her race. The Damosels (who thought their Ladies cunning had brought them thither, that shee might abuse him, and afterwarde transforme him as was her custome) beeing amazed at this aunswere, thus spake. Accursed villaine, of an euill death maist thou die, whom our Mistresse by her knowledge cannot transforme, now knowe we that thou hast murdered her: but assure thy selfe to finde vs thy two most mortall enemies, and though we can change thy Freendes to their former shapes, yet in despight of thy villainie, wee will not, nor shalt thou knowe how it may be donne.

Auaie strumpets, quoth hee, get yee going, or I will sende your soules after your Mistresse: and were it not a disgrace to mine honor, to defile my hands with the blode of such wicked creatures, by heauen I would cutte yee as small as flesh to the pot. Then came a knight forth of the Castell, who embracing Palmerin, said. My Lord Palmerin, what fortune hath brought you into this accursed Iland? Palmerin seeing such strange euents succeede one an other, knewe not what to imagine: but at length returned this answer. You must hold me excused Sir, for in truth I knowe ye not. Why my Lorde, quoth the knight, haue you forgotten Dyardo, whose life you defended in the king of Bohemiaes Court? By heauen, said Palmerin, I could not call you to remembraunce, but tell mee good knight, what aduenture brought you hither? for my chaunce hath beene so vnfortunate, as the rehearsall would bee most dolorous. Then Dyardo declared, howe the king had sent him with some small assistaunce, to pursue fiue Foystes of Moorish Pirats, who had donne manie iniuries to his subiects. And, quothe hee, after I had long time chased them, fiue other Galleyes came, and ioyning with them, tooke mee, and slue all my men.

At length, by tempestuous wether we were cast on this Ile, where we landing to seeke fresh water, all the Moores were changed into Harts, Dogs and Boares: but the Ladie

sparing me in regard of amorous desire, hath kept mee in this Castle a yeere and more, abusing mee at her owne pleasure, and neuer could I compasse any meane to escape hence againe, for if I had but made offer neere the Gate, by forcible strokes haue I beene beaten backe, yet not able to discerne who smote me.

Your hap, quoth Palmerin, hath beene verie harde, but her cursed head lying on the shore side, perswades me hereafter she shall doo no more harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so skilfull in her Science, as wee may winne to doo vs some good? Not one, answered Dyardo, therefore am I lothe you should staie long heere, in doubt of further daunger. I will then, saide Palmerin, goe seeke such a one as shall ende these enchauntments: and because you shall not be iniuried by ante in the Castle, wee will make them fast in prisons till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the stable, where Dyardo gaue Palmerin a lustie Courser, and taking leaue of him, set forward on his iourney.

Chap. XLV.

How Palmerin departing from the Isle of Malfada, came to the Court of the Princesse Zephira, shee that kept Tryneus transformed: where he was entertained, to ayde her against her eldest brother, who vexed her with dayly troubles.

SOone as Palmerin had thus left the Isle of Malfada, and hadd day likewise passed a very dangerous riuer, at night he came to a little village, where taking vp his lodging, he fell in talke with his host in y Arabian tong, if he knewe any one

that

that was expert in Nigromancie. I knowe none, quoth the Hoste, but an olde Ladie in an Iſlande harde by, to Whome our Princeſſe not long ſince went, for remedie of a ſtrange diſeaſe wherewith ſhe is tormented. Where abideth your Princeſſe? ſaide Palmerin. Not paſt thirtie miles thence, (quoth the Hoſte) in a Cittie called Elain. Perhappes, quoth Palmerin, by her I may be better reſolued. So bidding his Hoſte good night, withdrewe himſelfe into his Chamber, where many imaginations paſſed him concerning the Princeſſe Zephira.

It may bee, (quoth hée within himſelfe) that the Enchauntreſſe vnable to helpe her, hath yet aſſigned her to ſome man more expert in that diuelliſh Science: who compaſſing her health, happily may giue mée ſome counſell to amende my miſfortune. In this opinion the nert morning he rode to the Cittie of Elain, heauie and ſadde, yet in hope of comfort: and as hee came neare the Cittie, hée was encloſed with two or three hundreth light Horſſe men, whome the Prince Maulerino Brother to Zephira had there ambuſhed, to taſte all auaunt-currers and Knights paſſing by them. Yet obſerued they theſe conditions, that who ſo would take the Princes paie, and ſweare faithfull ſeruice, ſhoulde ſuſtaine no harme: but ſuch as refuſed ſo to doo, were carried into the Cittie, their Horſſe and Armour taken from them, and they encloſed in ſtrong priſon. Theſe Moores were amazed to ſée Palmerin ſo richly armed, and much more beholding him ſo brauely mounted, wherefore they ſaid to him.

Yéeld your ſelfe Sir knight, and ſweare to maintaine our Princeſſe quarrel: or elſe be aſſured thy death is preſent. The condition is very harde, ſaid Palmerin, but for I haue heard the wrong offered by the king to your Princeſſe, I will ſuſtaine her cauſe, not as a priſonrr enforced hereto, but of mine owne good will, as all knights errant are bound by dutie, to defende the iuſt quarrell of diſtreſſed Ladies. Preſently was Palmerin brought to the Princeſſe and her

Brother, who were conferring togither about theſe earneſt affaires: when the Knight that conducteth Palmerin, ſtept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus ſpake. See heere my Lord, a Knight latelie taken, whome wee haue found honeſt and courteous, we haue ſuffered him to remain Armed, and commit him to your opinion. While the knight continued theſe ſpeeches, transformed Trineus, who laye at the Princeſſe foote, ſeeing Palmerin with his beuer open, ran and leaped on him, whining and fawning on him ſo louingly, as euery one greatlie merualled thereat. In breefe, they might diſcerne by cries, colling about his legs, and pittifull mourning, that faine he would haue ſpoken, and ſhewed his loyall Freende his inward complainings. The Princeſſe merualling at this ſtrange occaſion, ſaid. I thinke (Sir Knight) my dog knowes you, for ſince Malfada gaue him me, I neuer could ſee him ſo faune on anie body. In ſoth Madame, anſwered Palmerin, to my remembraunce, I neuer ſawe your dog before this preſent. Hereupon ſhee called him to her, and made many meanes that hee ſhoulde come to her, yet would he not leaue Palmerin, but ſhaking his head, ſtill whined to his Freende, as crauing aide and ſuccour at his hand, wherewith the Princeſſe moued, thus ſpake.

I praye thee Knight conceale not any thing from mee, for I perſwade my ſelfe, that thou haſt beene heeretofore ſome Freende to the Enchauntreſſe Malfada, ſeeing my dogge is ſo loth to come from thee. Let mee vnderſtand the truth I praye thee, and if thou likewiſe wilt aſſiſt mee againſt my cruell Brother, thou ſhalt be honourablye vſed, and thy ordinarie paye redoubled. Madame, anſwered Palmerin, heere may you beholde the moſt diſtreſſed Knight liuing, and a Chriſtian, whoſe harde fortune hath beene ſuch, as arriuing in the Enchauntreſſe Iſle whereof you ſpake, I haue loſt fiue Freends, my true and honourable companions, and with them two Ladies, who in all vertues may not be equalled. Yet haue I reuenged their loſſe on the olde

hagge

hagge and her seruaunts, whose breathlesse bodies remaine for foode to the foules of the ayre. And because I heard (fayre Princesse) your selfe was not long since with her, for councell in some vnhappie fortune befallen you, faine woulde I knowe, maye it please you to graunt mee so much fauour, if shee assigned you to anie other more skilfull then her selfe, by whom you not alone shall finde remedie, but my tormenting greefes maye likewise bee comforted. Good Knight, aunswered the Princesse, the Gods themselues will trauaile to helpe thee, and it may be I haue learned of her, by whose death thou hast reuenged the wrong of manie noble persons: some hope of further good, to ease those passions which thy speeches bewray. True it is, that I stayed with Malfada the space of eight daies, yet not learning any thing of her worthie the rehearsall, this onelie excepted: she tolde me that in the kings Court of Grisca and Romata, remained an auncient Knight named Muzabelino, by whome (if my maladie were curable) I should finde helpe, and by no other man whatsoeuer, so did she extoll him beyond all other. And had not the king my Father died some after my returne, and my iniurious brother euer since molested mee, long ere this had I gone to that skilfull man, whome I meane to finde, so sone as I can bring my troubles to anie good ende. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince Maulerino, seeing Malfada is deade, Muzabelino maye finish all the enchauntments: but during her life, neither he nor all the Magitians in the world were able to compasse it.

As for the kingdome of Romata, it is very farre from this Countrey, the greater will your paine and daunger be in trauailing thither. Right pleasant will the paine bee to me, said *Palmerin*, so may I recouer my deerest Frends againe: and for you sweete Madame will I aduenture my life, eyther to winne you peace with your Brother, or a happie victorie by his death, that wee maye the sooner sette forward to Romata.

A thouſand thankes good Knight, quoth the Princeſſe, and this day ſhall we knowe what our Brother intendeth: if peace, it is welcome, if warre, we muſt defend our ſelues ſo well as we may. Still did the dogge cling about Palmerins feete, ſo that hee demaunded of the Princeſſe, if ſhee brought him from the Iſle of Malfada, for doubtleſſe, quoth he, I thinke it is ſome Knight tranſformed by that cruell woman, who heeretofore belike hath knowne me. At which words the dog howled exceedingly, when Palmerin toke an oath that hee would ſearche all the worlde ouer, to finde ſome meane to bring him to his former ſhape, that hee might know from whence this loue proceeded. The next day the king Tyreno aſſaulted the Cittie, who was ſlaine in the battaile by Palmerin, ſo afterward was Maulerino crowned king of Nabor, and all the Countrey enioyed their former quiet: whereupon the Princeſſe Zephira gaue Palmerin her dogge, who requited her with many gracious thanks, becauſe he greatlie ſuſpected, that it was his frend Trineus tranſformed into that ſhape: but now let vs returne to the ſoldane of Babilon, vnderſtanding how his Armie was diſcomfited at Conſtantinople.

Chap.

Chap. XLVI.

Howe one of the Nephewes to the King of Baliſarca, brought newes to the Soldane of his vncles death, the foyle of his Armie, the loſſe of Palmerin and Olorico. And how the Princeſſe Alchidiana bought Ptolome, whom ſhe greatly honored for Palmerins ſake.

THe King of Baliſarca, (as you haue heard before) being ſlaine, his Armie diſcomfited and al his Galleys burnt before Conſtantinople, one of his Nephewes that kept the ſtraight of ỳ Boſphor, with two foyſts, leaſt any ſuccour ſhould come that way to the Chriſtians, by one Galley that eſcaped, hearde all this miſfortune: wherefore making haſte backe againe fearing to be taken, at length arriued in the Soldans Kingdome, where not ſtaying long, hee poſted to the Courte, and to the Soldane reuealed all that had happened. When the Soldane heard how his Armie was thus ouerthrowne, Palmerin whom he loued ſo well, and the Prince Olorico loſt in the ſtorme on the ſea: vexed with greefe and rage, hee called his Lorde Ambaſſadour Mauce to to him, ſaying.

Haſte thee good Maucerto to my Brother the Soldane of Perſia, and deſire him to leuey me a ſtrong Armie againſt the Moneth of March next enſuing, to encounter with the Emperour of Greece: promiſing him the ſpoyle whatſoeuer it bee, reſeruing for my ſelfe nothing but the fame of reuenge.

Maucetto departed presentlie on his iourney, and by the way mette sixe Moores, leading two Christians to the Soldans Court to sell, which were Ptolome and Colmelio, of whome hee demaunded why they were so bounde in chaines?

My Lord, quoth one of the Moores, they be Christian slaues, who not long since were taken at the Sea by Olimaell Admirall to the great Turke. And how came you by them? said Maucetto. The Admirall, quoth the Moore, gaue them to one of his Cozins, who now is deade, and his wife beeing loth to keepe them anie longer, sendes them to the Court to be solde for money. Maucetto bought Colmelio of them, refusing Ptolome because he was somewhat sicklie, and so passed on his Embassade. The Moores comming to the Court with poore Ptolome, and placing him among other slaues that stode to bee solde, there came a deformed Moore, farre worsse mishapen then was Thersites the Greek, and he would needes buy Ptolome of the Marchaunt: but Ptolome disdaining to be subiect to so vile a creature, gaue him such a stroke on the stomacke with his fiste, as made him tumble ouer backward, saying. Thou monstrous Villaine, let me rather die, then come into thy subiection. At this instant passed by the Princesse Alchidiana, smiling to see the Moore lie along: but when shee beheld the good personage of Ptolome, shee remembred her louer Palmerin, and was therewith moued thus to speake. Howe durst thou take such hardinesse vpon thee, beeing a bondslaue and a captiue, thus to strike a Moore, free of this Countrey? Ptolome perceiuing by the Ladies attending on her, that shee was the Soldanes Daughter, falling on his knee, thus answered.

Assuredlie Madame, rather desire I death, then to liue at such an ill fauoured villaines controll, my selfe beeing a knight at Armes. Are you then a knight? said the Princesse I am good Madame, quoth he, although my seruitude hath very much altered mee. Alchidiana without any further

questions

questions, deliuered the Merchant two hundred Seraphes, and by two of her Squires caused him to bee conducted to her Chamber, where he was presentlie disroabed of his vnseemelie garments, and cloathed in such as well became a knight to weare: afterwarde, she commaunded her attendants to depart the chamber, and comming to Ptolome, she thus began.

Nowe Syr Knight, I intreate you by the holy faith you owe to your best beloued, that you will truelie tell mee, by what misfortune you happened first into thraldome. Madame, quoth he, seeing of your owne grace and bountie, you haue deliuered mee from these villaines that made sale of my life, I will not fable with you in any one point, but tell you a Historie repleat with wonderfull sorowe. Hauing reuealed the manner of his taking, and all the mishaps hee endured euer since, the teares trickling downe his cheekes, he said. And yet sweete Ladie, all these passed miseries, and still abiding your slaue, greeues me not so much, as the losse of my dearest Freende, the best knight in the worlde, who went to see his Falcon flie, when the Pirates came and vnhappilie take vs. Tell me good freende, quoth the Princesse, what may the knight bee called, of whom you make such estimation? Quoth Ptolome, he nameth himselfe Palmerin d'Oliua.

O soueraigne Gods, said Alchidiana, haue you béne companion to the noble Palmerin? That haue I in truth Madame, quoth he, and knowe more of his affayres then anie other man doth. Vnhappie that I am, said the Princesse, nowe see I well that I am deceiued in all my hope. Saye good knight, naie more, I coniure thee by thy faith to the soueraigne Creator of all things, to tell mee, if he bee of our Laive, and hath béene dumbe of long, or no? By God Madame, answered Ptolome, your adiuration is such, as rather will I make a sacrifice of my selfe, then bee found vntrue to you in any thing. Hée is a Christian, borne in Greece, and neuer had defect in his speech: if discréet consideration

ration of following euents, eyther to escape captiuitie or death, did not inforce him to feigne such a deceite, for hee is most expert among all other, in dissembling anye matter may turne him aduauntage. Then such hath beene my fortune, quoth Alchidiana, as his vertue, bountie & wise foresight, vsed for the space of a yeere and more in my Fathers Court, made me so religiously vowed to him in loue, as neuer intend I to make other choise: and I sweare by all our Gods, that if I heare not the better tydings of him by thee, my spirit will forsake this wretched bodye, and except better fortune among the soules in Elisium. Ah imperious loue, how wonderfull is thy strooke? My freende is contrarie to me in lawe and profession, a Knight errant, vnknowne, absent from mee, and loues me not: for these occasions, were I the onelie Daughter to the great Emperor of Turkie, I neither can or will change my former opinion.

Happe then what shall, and let my Father make an oblation of my blood to his secret Idoll, I will not desist from louing him. And thou my Frend (quoth she) to Ptolome, because thou hast not hid the truth from mee, bee thou at this instant free, and vse thy libertie as thou pleasest: for rather let me abide the death, then the companion to my noble Lorde suffer shame by mee. Ptolome falling on his knee, humblie kissed her hande, and began to reueale the knightly chiualrie, that Palmerin and Treneus sometime did in England: likewise howe they brought the Kings Daughter from thence, who remained captiue among the Turks, and her Husband giuen as slaue to the Admiralles Cozin. It is enough said the Princesse, talke to me no more hereof, for by the great God, the verie remembraunce of him is greater greefe to me, then the mercilesse seruitude a poore slaue endureth. The loue he bare to you, to the other knight, and the yong English Princesse, whose misfortune I cannot sufficiently bewayle: calleth mee hence to trauaile in search of him, and may I find him with them, right

gladsome

gladsome will the iourney bee to mee, because hee is the onelie darling and fauorite of Fortune. And now shall I tell you howe I meane to couller mine intent. My Father not knowing your captiuitie, to him shall I saye how you are the onelie companion to Palmerin, and hither are you come to seeke him, as hauing heard before that hee remained in your seruice: of this I dare assure you, his Maiestie so deerelie loueth Palmerin, that hee will deliuer you all things necessarie for his search, be it by land or sea. And if your God shall fauour you so much, as in your trauaile you happen to finde him, or else to send mee certaine tidings of him, you shall doo me the greatest honor, that euer Knight did to distressed Ladie. So forwarde was the Princesse in her amorous desire, and loth to waste time with tedious delaye: as that daie shee acquainted her Father therewith, and so cunningly shee plaid the Oratrix, as the soldane gaue Ptolome Armour, Horses, Seruants, and fortie Knights to attend on him. Beside, he furnished him with two great Ships, that he might enquire at all the Ports on the Sea for Palmerin.

The daye beeing come of his departure, hee toke his leaue of the Soldane, the Princesse Alchidiana accompanying him to the Porte, where for her adieu shee gaue him a sweet kisse, saying. Sir Knight, if your fortune bee such as to bring mee the man, who onelie hath power to mittigate my torments: beside the continuall fauours of a Princesse, I will make you one of the greatest Lordes in the Orient. Madame (quoth hee) I will doo my diligence, and till I returne let good hope perswade yee. So hoising saile they set to Sea, where we will leaue him till hee meete with Palmerin.

Chap.

The famous Hiſtorie

Chap. XLVII.

How *P*almerin and the princeſſe Zephira, departed from Elain towards Romata, to ſeeke Muzabelino, and what happened by the way in their iourney.

After that Maulerino was crowned king of Nabor, the rebellious ſubiects brought to obedience, and the bodie of the ſlaine king Tireno enterred, ỹ yong Princeſſe Zephira & Palmerin thought long to ſet forwarde on their iourney, wherefore the king allowing them a very honourable trayne, bequeathing them to their deſired ſeytume. Hauing paſſed many regions, and ſundrie dangers incident in trauaile, chiefely of a Baſiliſque, whome Palmerin with the helpe of the dog Tryneus valiantly ouercame. At length they entred ỹ realme of Romata, where by commandement of the king Abimar, their entertainment was according to their eſtates, the occaſion thereof being thus. This king Abimar holding the greateſt poſſeſſions in that region, would neuer yéeld himſelf as ſubiect to the ſignorie of *P*erſia: wherat the ſoldan now growing offended, ſent an Ambaſſadour to commaund him, preſently to determine on his obedience, or elſe he would ouer-run his Countrey with a mighty Armie, and put both olde and yong to the Sworde. Abimar abaſhed at this threatning Embaſſade, demaunded counſell of the wiſe Muzabelino, what anſwer hee ſhould make the Ambaſſadour, whereto the Magitian thus anuſwered. Feare not my Lord the threatning menaces of the Soldane,

for

for in that you haue two noble Sonnes, to witte the Princes Tomano and Drumino, knights of high and speciall account: yet come there two others, (one whereof maye not be knowne) with the Princesse Zephira, Daughter to the King of Nabor, who shall deliuer you from his tirannie, and make him your Friende, therefore dismaie not to sende him a hardie answer, as well beseemeth a Prince free, and not to be commaunded. And though one of his knights that commeth with the Princesse shall a while bee vnknowne to you, by the bountie of his companion, with whom no other may well compare: yet ere long you shall knowe him, to your no little ioye and contentation. Abimar giuing credit to Muzabelinos speeches, gaue charge in all the Cittics where through the Princesse should passe, that shee shoulde be entertained with honorable tryumphes, as if himselfe had beene in companie. And though the Prince Tomano greeued heereat, who loued the yongest Daughter to the Soldane of Persia, yet the King answered the Ambassador, that hee woulde maintaine his right by the Sworde, and if the Soldane came to assayle him, he would defend his Countrey so well as he could.

The Ambassadour dispatched with this answer, Tomano came to Muzabelino, saying. Ah my deere Freende Muzabelino, what wrong haue you done mee, in perswading my Father to holde warre with the Soldane: whose Daughter you know I loue in such sort, as if I obtaine her not in mariage, hardly can my life long endure. Content your selfe my Lord, answered Muzabelino: for if the two knights that come, bring fortune for your father, you must expect the like for your selfe. But, said the Prince, maye I not knowe their names? Let it suffise (quoth Muzabelino) what I haue saide, yet heereof I dare assure you, that they are Christians, and extract of the greatest linage on the earth, in bountie and valour incomparable: whereof if you list to make experience, and thereby to credit what I haue said beside, I shall shewe you a meane anayable for

the

the purpoſe. You ſhall cauſe two Tents to be erected by the Cedar Fountaine, which is halfe a mile diſtant from this Cittie, in the one of them let be your Brother Drumino, and your ſelfe, with tenne of the beſt knightes in your Fathers Court, and in the other let be your Sister: accompanied with tenne of her cheefeſt Ladies, and about a bowe ſhot from thence towards the high way ſide, you ſhall ſette vp a Marble Pillar, wherevpon let theſe lines be engrauen.

Sir Knight, in theſe pauillions doth remaine,
A Lady fayre, kept by a Princes ſonne:
Foyle him by Iouſt, and winne her hence againe,
Thou maiſt not paſſe before the deede be doone.

If it happen that they paſſe by and ſée not the Pillar, ſend one of the Ladies to them, to let them vnderſtande that they may not paſſe, before one of them haue Iouſted with the Prince and his knights. If they be vnhorſſed by him, the Ladie muſt be deliuered to him: yet with this condition, that he refuſe not to graunt her one demaunde. By Mahomet, ſayd Drumino husband to the Lady, I will not meddle in this matter, he may be ſuch a one, as if he hap to winne my Wife, he will be loth to reſtore her backe againe. Feare not that (quoth the Magitian) hee is ſo courteous, and hath ſo faire a Freend himſelfe, as he neyther may or will with-holde her. By heauen ſaid Tomano, I will cope with him, and to morrowe let the Piller and Pauillions bée erected, there will I with my companions ſtay his coming. Sée heere the cauſe why the King Abimar, commaunded the Princeſſe Zephira and her knights to be ſo honourablie entertained. By this time is the Princeſſe come within a daies iourney of Romata and Tomano with his Brother, Sister, Ladies and knightes, betake themſelues to the pauillions, hearing that Zephira was come ſo neere: and be-

ing

ing themselues Armed, their sister decked likewise in most sumptuous ornaments, they vowed to breake many launces for her sake.

Chap. XLVIII.

How Palmerin Iousted against Tomano, Drumino and their knights, whome he all dismounted, and what entertainment the king Abimar, and the wise Nigromancer Muzabelino made them.

By this time is the princesse with Palmerin, and her companie, come to the place where the pauillions were erected, and not seeing the Piller, they passed on; wherefore Tomano sent a Damosell to declare the conditions of the passage. Palmerin feigning himselfe somewhat wearie, made this answer. Damosell, you may saye to the Prince and his knights, that the Princesse Zephira is not in our guarde, as the Lady he fights for abideth with him. Nor comes she hither to be fought for, rather doth she intreat him to spare vs the Iouste, in that it will be small honor to him to conquer knights ouerlaboured in trauaile, and whose horses are not able for that exercise.

The Damosell certifying the Prince of this answer, he grew into anger, swearing they should not passe before they tryed their fortune: wherefore hee sent the Damosell againe, who thus spake to Palmerin. Sir knight, your excuses may not serue you, you must eyther Iouste or leaue the Princesse behind you. Trust me Damosell, answered Palmerin,

merin, ſorrie woulde I be to accompanie her ſo far, and leaue her in the cuſtody of one I know not, did your Prince ſhewe more courteſie, it woulde agree much better with his order: but becauſe he ſhall not think, that we refuſe the Ieuſte through feare or cowardiſe, ſay hee ſhall haue his deſire, both he and all his ſhall try their fortune ere wee paſſe further.

This anſwer returned to the Prince, Drumino firſt ſhewed himſelfe in the Fielde, and by importunate intreatie, certaine of the Princeſſes Knights would firſt try their valour: but ſuch was their ill fortune, as Drumino vnhorſed them one after another. Zephira ſomewhat offended hereat, intreated Palmerin eyther to win them paſſage, or elſe with his ſucceſſe ſhe was content to ſtaye Priſoner. I goe Madame (quoth Palmerin) and Fortune ſpæde mee, as I regard the ſafetie of your honor. Muzabelino, hauing acquainted the King with this paſtime, they came in habits diſguiſed to beholde it, at what time the Prince Drumino encountred Palmerin. But not to hold you with tedious diſcourſe conſidering which way the victorie is intended, the two Princes and all their knights were manfullye foyled by Palmerin.

The Ieuſt beeing ended, and the King returned again to the Cittie, Muzabelino came to Palmerin, and hauing ſaluted him with great reuerence, thus ſpake. Worthie Lord, who onelie deſerueſt the name of chiualrie, let mee intreate you to excuſe the kings Son, who to make proofe of your valour, by my meanes attempted this noble aduenture, from which you haue eſcaped with great honour, and to their ſhame that made the challenge. What are you Syr, ſaid Palmerin, that know me ſo well, and the cauſe why I came into this Countrey? Your Freend Muzabelino (quoth he) whome you haue taken ſuch paines to finde, and who knowing you to be a Chriſtian, will keepe you from all dangers among theſe Mahumetiſtes. Palmerin diſdainde alighting from his horſſe, came and embraced him, ſaying,

Noble

Noble Frend, suffer mé to kisse your hand, as a witnesse of my reuerence to your honourable age. Not so my Lord, answered Muzabelino, rather suffer me to do my dutie, to that incomparable person, by whose meanes ere fiue Monethes be past, the greatest nobilitie in the world shall receyue incredible honour.

While these courteous ceremonies endured, the conquered Princesse with her Ladies came from the Pauillion, and saluting Palmerin with great courtesie, sayde. Sée héere, Sir Knight, the Lady, who trusting in your honourable benignitie, commeth to submit her selfe at your disposition, béeing woonne with more choyse chiualrie, then euer any other Ladie was. Notwithstanding, I hope that you will not refuse to graunt me one demaund, according to the conditions agréed in the Ioust. Palmerin séeing her so discréet and modest, so sumptuous in apparell, and accompanied with so manie Ladies, iudged that she was the Kings Daughter, and Wife to the Prince Drumino, wherefore entertaining her verie graciously, hée thus replyed. Vnfitting it is, faire Ladie, that a Princesse of so high and speciall qualitie, shoulde hée subiect to a poore and vnknowne Knight: and though the agrément of the Ioust bee such, yet do I humblie thanke you for this honour, bequeathing you to your former libertie, and restoring you to him that hath best right to you.

A thousand thankes worthie Lorde, said the Princesse, now I sée the words of Muzabelino to my father are true, that the Knight who conducted Madame Zephira, as in chiualrie hée surpasseth all other: so in franke minde and liberalitie, hée hath not his seconde, which was the cheefest cause why I aduentured my selfe in this hazarde of Fortune. Madame, quoth Palmerin, if the wise Muzabelino hath vsed any speach of mé in mine absence, and to my honor, it proceeded not by my vertue, but his good will in so doing, which if I liue, I will one day acknowledge. Right welcome are you, saide the Princesse, and faire Zephira, the

rather for your ſake: and ſuch be the houre of your arriuall here, as you may obtaine the ende of your deſires. Zephira humblie thanked the Princeſſe, Tomano, Drumino, and all the reſt embracing Palmerin, thinking it no diſhonour to be conquered by him: they mounted all on horſebacke, and comming to the Cittie, founde the King there, readie with an honorable traine to receiue them, who ſaluting the princeſſe Zephira, verie kindly, ſaid. No maruell Madame, if you durſt vndertake ſo long a iourney, hauing ỹ only knight of Fortune in your companie, as my Sonnes haue good occaſion to witneſſe: and ſhe that ommits her ſelfe to his charge, may be well aſſured of ſpe'all defence. Zephira with humble thanks requiting the K.ng, *P*almerin and all the reſt graciouſly welcommed, they rode all to the Pallace, where being intertained in choyſeſt ſort, Muzabelino ſtill accompanied *P*almerin, who forgot not his wonted kindnes to his louing Dogge.

Chap. XLIX.

The talke that the princeſſe Zephira and Palmerin had with the wife Muzabelino: and how Palmerin departed from Romato to the Caſtell of the ten Rocks.

THe Princeſſe Zephira, who had not yet talked with Muzabelino, in the morning ſent for him and Palmerin, ſhe cauſing them to ſit downe by her, began in this manner. My Lord, if your great iudgement haue acquainted you with the cauſe of my comming, and that you will doe anie thing for the loue

loue of Sir Palmerin, let pittie perſwade you, for in you onely conſiſteth my remedie. Madame, quoth Muzabelino, vſe not ſuch ſpeaches, for what my ſtudie and practiſe hath taught me, you muſt make no account of, but referre your ſelfe to the ſupreame Creator, who by the meanes of noble Palmerin, will reſtore your health, and him will I acquaint with the manner how it muſt be compaſſed.

Your diſeaſe happened by ſmelling to a flower, and by the ſmell of another it muſt be recouered. The flower appoynted to giue you health, groweth in an Arbour in the Caſtell of the tenne Rocks, and kept by the enchauntment of a Ladie, more ſkilfull in all artes, then euer was the ſkilfull Medea. This Ladie deceaſſing an hundred yeares ſince, and more. Shee ſeeing before her death the vertue of this flower, and of a Bird which is kept there by the ſelfe ſame meanes, hauing inchaunted them in a Garden, the moſt ſumptuous in the world, rayſed ten Rocks of Marble without the Caſtell, each one aſcending higher then an other, and by theſe Rocks was the Caſtle named. Such enchauntment did the Ladie exerciſe on them, as when anie one thinketh to paſſe them, preſently ſtarteth out of each Rocke an armed Knight, who returneth the aduenturer ſo forcible, as to to this day they haue not beene paſſed by any. Couragious therefore muſt he be that paſſeth theſe Rocks, which if Palmerin by his bountie and prowelle do not accompliſh, no man liuing can ende the aduenture: for by force, not cunning muſt the enchauntment be ended. When the Princeſſe heard, that by the daungerous trauaile of noble Palmerin her health muſt be reſtored, ſhe thus ſore owfully complained.

Ah Gods, ſuffiſeth it not that heeretofore this good Knight aduentured his life, in the daungerous battell when my Brother was ſlaine: but nowe he muſt abide the diuelliſh conjurations, where death is dayly and hourelie expected: ſhall I conſent to offer him ſuch wrong, and bee

guiltie of his blood, who ſurpaſſeth all other in chiualrie? rather let my death be a warrant for his ſaftie, then noble Palmerin ſhoulde endure ſuch perrill for me. Lament not Madame, quoth Muzabelino, before you haue cauſe, bée that ſlewe Malfada, and her Seruaunts, is ſo ſpecially fauoured of the heauenlie powers, as no enchauntment whatſoeuer hath power to hurt him. Why Madame, ſaid Palmerin, thinke you my good will is leſſe to doo you ſeruice, then when I was firſt brought to your Court? Forbeare theſe teares, I pray you, and offend not your ſelfe: for ſuch is my hope in God, that what is done by man, ſhall bée deſtroyed by man: beſides, it will bée great reproach to mée, if comming into ſtraunge Countries to ſéeke aduentures, I ſhall depart without triall of my fortune. Muzabelino hearing him ſpeake ſo couragiouſlie, tooke him aſide, saying. Noble and hardie Knight, whom feare of death cannot diſmay, happie ſhall I account my ſelfe to doo thée anie ſeruice.

And to the ende thou mayſt with better affection followe this enterprize, aſſure thy ſelfe to paſſe the Rockes, and enter the Caſtell with happie victorie, where ending all the aduentures therein contained, thou ſhalt finde a part of remedie for recouering thy companions, but not all, for the reſt is in the Tower of Malfada, where as yet thou canſt not enter, but at thy returne ſhalt eaſily open, and in the ende ioyfully finde all thy Companions and Frændes. For the reſt, feare not my diſcouerie of thy ſecrete loue and parentage, which is the moſt noble in all Chriſtendome, for rather will I bée torne in a thouſand péeces, then ſo good a Knight ſhall bée iniuried by mée. Séeing you know ſo much quoth Palmerin, I commit all to God and you, let me therefore right ſoone craue leaue of the King for my departure, becauſe I long that the Princeſſe were eaſed. Right ſorie was the King to part with him ſo ſoone, yet the hope of his ſhort returne ſomewhat pacified him. And when the newes were ſpreade abroade that Palmerin ſhould trauaile to the

Caſtell

Castell of the tenne Rockes: Tomano, Drumino, and the Princesse Zephira woulde needes beare him companie, which hee being not able to gaine-say, because they were importunate on him, gaue his consent. So departing from Romata, they made such haste in their iourney, as within fewe dayes after they arriued at the Castell: and comming to the first Rocke, they beheld a goodly Sworde, enclosed therein vp to the crosse. The two yong Princes marualling thereat, allighted from their Horses, and assailed by strength to pull it out. Which they were not able to doe; wherefore Tomano entreated Palmerin to trie his fortune, who after many courteous refusals offered to pull it forth, but a fearefull flame of fire suddenly issued forth of the Rocke, which compelled them to retyre back, wherfore Palmerin said to the Princes: This Sword I see must be none of ours, therefore it is in vaine to striue any further.

Chap. L.

Howe Palmerin passed the tenne Rockes, vanquished the tenne enchaunted Knightes, and entered the Castell, where hee finished all the enchauntments: Trineus returning to his former shape, and what happened to them afterward.

PAlmerin when hee had failed in drawing the Sworde out of the Rocke, hee prepared himselfe to the Combat with the enchaunted knights, whome as yet hee coulde not anie way discerne: but first he began his orisons in this manner. O soueraigne Creator, who euermore hath succoured me in all my aduersities

aduerſities and fortunes, this day giue mée ſtrength to confound theſe diuelries and enchauntments, and let thy name haue the honour of a glorious victorie.

Then giuing his horſe the ſpurres, galloped onward, ſaying. Sweete Miſtreſſe Polynarda, if euer your remembraunce gaue mée ayde and fauour, now let your diuine regard comfort your ſeruaunt. Béeing then betweene the two foremoſt Rocks, a mightie Knight mounted on a luſtie Courſer, with a huge Launce in his hande, called to him, ſaying.

Turne Sir Knight, you may paſſe no further, then furiouſlie enconntering one another, they met ſo roughlie together with their bodyes, as they were both caſt forth of their ſaddles. The Dog that ſtill followed Palmerin, ſéeing his Frends horſe offered to ſtray, caught the bridle by the raignes with his téeth, and would not let him paſſe anie further. In the meane while, Palmerin hauing fought with the Knight, and after a long and cruell combat, ſmote his head from his ſhoulders. In déede, he was ſo fauoured of Fortune, as hauing banquiſhed all the tenne Knights, he paſſed the tenne Rocks: and no ſooner was he mounted on the foremoſt, but a darke Clowde compaſſed him about, ſo that the two Princes, Zephira and their Knights, to their great amazement loſt the ſight of him, yet his former victorie, exempted all feare from them of bad ſucceſſe. There ſtayed they Palmerins returne till Sunne ſetting; when the two Princes demaunded of Zephira, if ſhée would departe thence, or ſtay there all night? Depart? quoth ſhée, no by my life, héere will I abide the good knights returne from the Caſtell: whereupon her ſeruants hauing erected their pauillions, they there toke vp their lodging for that night. By this time Palmerin was come to the Caſtell Gate, where looking on his Armour which was hacked in péeces, his fleſh cut and mangled in manie places, breathing forth a bitter ſigh, ſayd. If yet this trauaile may auaile the Princeſſe, and my noble companions that are enchaunted, let

happe

happe to mée what pleaſe the Heauens, for theyr libertie is more déere to mée then life. Then loking on his Dog, who all this while held the Horſes bridle in his mouth, hée remembred, that he had not demaunded of Muzabelino anie thing concerning him, wherefore he ſaid. Ah gentle dog, yet no Dog (I thinke) but rather ſome Knight thus tranſformed, howe forgetfull haue I béene of thy ſeruice in my neceſſitie? why did I not demaund the trueth of Muzabelino, what thou art? But mayſt thou proue to be my good Frend Trineus, when all the enchauntments of this Caſtell ſhall bée ended, thy former ſhape (I hope) ſhall bee reſtored.

So ſtriking at the Caſtell Gate, to ſée if anie way hée could get it open, at length hée loked vppe to the battlements, and beheld an auncient Knight, with a long beard ſo white as ſnowe, who furiouſly thus ſpake to him. Proude Knight, who made thée ſo bolde thus to beate on the Gate? enter, vnto thy further ill I hope: with theſe wordes the Gates opened of themſelues, when preſently Palmerin with his Dog entred, and the olde man, who ſæmed ouerſpent with yéeres and weakneſſe, métting him in the Gate, taking him by the arme, threw him violently againſt the ground, ſaying. Thou that haſt ouercome the ten Knights, yong and armed, what canſt thou do to an olde man without defence? Wretched villaine, anſwered Palmerin, wherefore haſt thou ſtroken me? by the liuing God, did not thine age excuſe thée, ſome ſhould I lay the breathleſſe at my foote.

Soft and faire, ſaid the olde man, thou ſhalt haue worke enough to defend thy ſelfe. So catching Palmerin about the middle, he wrong him ſo cruelly, as one might heare his bones cracke. O my God cried Palmerin, defend me againſt this curſed diuell. At length hee forced the olde man to let goe his holde: when began ſuch a furious fight betwéene them, as neuer was Palmerin in ſuch danger, in that eueris blowe was giuen him, hée thought did breake all his

bones in peeces. The dog ſeeing his Maiſter in ſuch extremitie, caught the olde man by the throate, and neuer left tugging till he got him downe, when ſuddenly he vaniſhed away, and was no more ſeene afterward. For this victorie Palmerin thanked God, and hauing cheriſhed his Dog, entred further into the Caſtell. Where he beheld moſt ſtately Galleries, erected on great colombes of Porpherie and Alabaſter, as neuer did hee beholde a more ſumptuous ſpectacle.

In the middeſt of the Court was a goodly Tombe, enclоſed with barres of beaten Golde, and ouer it ſtoode a goodly Table of Chriſtal, vpheld by foure Satyrs of Agatha: and on the Table was pictured the perſonages of a Ladie, drawne by ſuch curious arte and workmanſhip, as hardly could it bee equalled through the world. Palmerin approched to behold the counterfeit, which held in the one hande a Bolle full fruite, and in the other a Key of Golde, poynting with the Key towarde the Gate of the Pallace: whereupon he imagined, that this was the Tombe of the Ladie Enchauntreſſe, whereof Muzabelino had told him before, and putting his hand betweene the golden Barres, the Image preſently offered him the Key. Hereat being ſomewhat abaſhed, he iudged that this happened not without great cauſe, wherefore taking the Key, he went and opened the Pallace Gate, and entering the great Hall, he founde it ſo richlie paued, and garniſhed rounde about with ſuch coſtly Tapiſtrie, as the greateſt Monarch in the world had not the like.

Loking behinde him for his Dog, he beheld him ſuddainlie chaunged to his former ſhape, and running to embrace Palmerin, ſaid. Happie be the houre of thy comming deere Freend, to whom I remaine for euer bounde, in acknowledging the ſpeciall graces and fauours receiued. But Palmerin deceiued with ſo manie illuſions before, would hardlie giue credite to what he now beheld, reputing him rather ſome hellish furie to diſguiſed, onely to entrap him

with

with further danger, which Trineus perceiuing, spake a-gaine. Ah my noble Frtend Palmerin, for Gods sake doubt no more, I am thy Brother Tryneus, who since thy comming from Elain, followed thée in the enchaunted forme of a Dogge: reioyce then with me, for since thy long desired hope hath now so good an ende, doubt not but the residue of thine affaires will prooue as fortunate. Palmerin béeing nowe thoroughly resolued, I leaue to your iudgements the kinde gratulations betwéene them, who well can conceiue the wonderfull ioy of long absent Friendes, especally of such as liue and die for each other. Ah my Lord quoth Palmerin, why did I not sooner acknowledge thée? the great succour thou gauest me by the way, might well haue perswaded me, yet though I still imagined thée my friend transformed, hardly could I resolue thereon till further experience.

Ah fortune, if héeretofore thou hast béene enuious towardes mée, yet now hast thou recompenced me in such sort, as now I haue no cause to exclaime on thée. So sitting downe together, Trineus reuealed the manner of his taking, and all that befell him till his transformation. Which Palmerin to requite, discoursed the knowledge of his Parents, how he was betrothed to his Lady Polynarda, and howe he recouered the Princesse Agriola, who afterwards was likewise enchaunted in the Isle of Malfada. Trineus at these newes, was readie to die with greefe, but Palmerin perswaded him of the wise Muzabelinos promise, that shortly hee should returne againe to the Isle, and there finish all the enchauntments whatsoeuer. While they thus conferred together, they sawe sodainely sette before them a Table furnished with all kinde of meates, and a hand holding two great Golden Candlesticks, wherein burned two faire waxe Tapers; beside, they heard a trambling of their féete that brought the meate to the Table, but they could not discerne any liuing creature. Trust mee, quoth Palmerin, I thinke some bodie knowes I haue an hungrie

appetite,

appetite, ſitte downe with me good friend, for theſe two moneths had I not a better ſtomacke. After they had well refreſhed themſelues, the table was preſently taken away againe, and they entring a goodly wardrobe, were vnder a Canapie of cloth of Golde, they founde two maruailous coſtly greene Armours, ſo beſet with faire Emeraldes and great Oriental Pearles, as neuer proude Pagon wore the like in heatheneſſe. By them ſtood two goodly Shields of proofe, in the one beeing figured the Armes of Conſtantinople, and in the other the Creaſt of Allemaigne, whereat Palmerin not a little maruailing, ſaide to Trineus. I think my Lord, that theſe Armours were prouided for vs, let vs trie if they bee fitte for our bodies, ſo helping to arme each other, they founde them ſo fitte as they had beene purpoſely made for them. There founde they likewiſe a Siluer Caſket, wherein were two ſumptuous Kingly Crownes of Golde, and betweene them ſtood a rich Golden Cup, hauing in it a Ring, with the moſt beautifull ſtone in it that euer was ſeene.

Wondering at theſe euents, and doubtfull to take thence thoſe rare preſents, immediately a Damoſell came before them, and humbly on her knee thus ſpake. Moſt mightie and magnanimious Princes, the Iewels you haue founde in the Caſket are yours, and them muſt you carrie to the Ladies of your affections, becauſe they were purpoſely made for them, as theſe worthie Armours were for you. As for her that deuiſed them, in this ſhee accounteth her ſelfe right happie, that this day they are fallen into your power, and by you ſhall all the aduentures here be finiſhed.

You my Lord, quoth ſhee to Trineus, muſt take the Ring that is in the Cup, and leaue it not whereſoeuer you come, leaſt you be changed into the ſhape of a dogge againe. And you my Lord Palmerin muſt take the Cup, to put the flowers therein, which you muſt beare to the Princeſſe Zophira, aſſuring you that no one muſt drinke therein, but

ſhe

she to whom you must carrie it. Faire Damosell, saide Palmerin, tell me howe I shall finde the Garden, where those flowers growe of such soueraigne vertue, and howe I may come to the Arbour where the strange Birde remaineth pearched: likewise if any other then your selfe is in this Castle?

My Lord, quoth shee, the Ladie of this Castle at her decease, left all the persons in this Castle a sléepe by enchauntment, except my selfe that am her Néece, and such conivrations hath she charmed them withall, as they shall not stirre till you haue taken the Birde you aske for: at whose fearefull crie they shall all awake, in all this long time no whit consumed. And héere haue I euer since remained forepointed by her to doo you seruice, in shewing you the manner howe to gather the flowers, and to take the fatall Birde pearched in the Arbour, whether I will bring you at an appointed houre. In meane while rest your selues on this rich bedde, which hath béene [illegible] onely for you, and here repose your selues till my returne. By my sword Damosell, quoth Palmerin, you tell vs matters full of wonder, notwithstanding, séeing we finde some parte of them true, we giue credit to the rest. So bidding her good night, there slept they till the next morning, when the Damosell came to call them, conducting them into the Garden, the most braue and stately that euer they beheld, and after she had shewed them the Arbour, departed. Palmerin loking round about him, maruailed at the ingenious foundation of the Castle, the surpalling faire Galleries, and the beautifull Fountaines in the Garden, where hée heard an exceéding pleasant harmonie of Birds. Then calling Tryneus to him, entred the Arbour, where taking the fatall Birde by the wings, shée gaue three great cryes so loude and fearefull, as made both the Princes greatly amazed.

At this instant were all the enchauntments there ended, and the Seruants restored to their former libertie, when

Palmerin

Palmerin hauing tied the Bird to his fiſt with a threed the damoſell gaue him, and filling his Cup with the ſouereigne flowers, they came foorth of the Garden, and in the great Hall mette them the Lord and Ladie of the Caſtle, ſo olde withered, and decrepite, as it ſeemed hardly they could ſuſtaine themſelues, caſting themſelues at *Palmerins* feete, they ſaide.

Ah noble Prince, flower of all chiualrie, the higheſt God hath bleſſed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end ſhall make thee the happieſt in the worlde, for the eſpeciall good thou haſt this day owne, reſtoring all them to life that here ſlumbred, except the aged Ladie my Wiues Siſter, who for theſe hundred yeeres paſt hath ſlept in her Tombe. After many courteous ſpeeches paſſed betweene them, Palmerin and Trineus departed the Caſtle, and as they went downe the Rocks, Tomano and the Princeſſe Zephira came to meete them, ſhe courteouſly embracing him, ſaide. How fares my noble Lord? greatly did I deſpaire of your health, for this morning I heard ſuch a fearefull crie from the Caſtle, as wee were out of all hope to ſee you againe. By the ayd of God, Madame, anſwered Palmerin, and this Knight my deere Friende, whom in the ſhape of a Dogge you brought from Malfada, I finde my ſelfe in perfect content, and heere haue I brought you the ſouereigne remedie for your ſo long and vnfortunate diſeaſe. But may it bee, quoth the Princeſſe, that ſo faire a knight ſhoulde bee ſo tranſformed? No leſſe do I reioyce for his good fortune then mine owne. So entred they the Princeſſe pauillion, diſcourſing all the maruailes they had ſeene.

Chap.

Chap. LI.

How the Princesse Zephira was cured of her disease, and Trineus ended the aduenture of the enchaunted sword in the Rocke

AFter that the Princesse Zephira had felt the swéete odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the enuenomed wormes which so long time had tormented her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker beganne to cease. Yet all the scars on her face were not throughly healed: but the sodaine ease that she found by the flowers, gaue hir hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romata, conferred with *Palmerin* about the strange Birde, and also of the costly Armours they brought with them from the Castle, which béeing past ouer with no little admiration, they remembred the Sword enchaunted in the Rocke, whereuppon the Prince Tomano entreated Trineus, to trie if that aduenture were reserued for him.

Nay quoth Trineus, if you haue alreadie failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune, yet can I but lose my labour as you haue doone, and shame were it for me to passe hence without triall. So taking the Sword by the handle, with very great ease he puld it out of the Rocke, being the goodliest Sword in workmanshippe that euer was deuised. Trust me, quoth Trineus, he that made this weapon doubtlesse hath tride the vertue thereof. That may bée, answered

Palmerin,

Palmerin, but had hee likewiſe knowne the valour of the Knight, who nowe is worthily become maiſter thereof, of greater count would behaue eſtéemed his labour, and to thy perpetuall honour déere friende maiſt thou imploy it. But now worthy Lords: ſéeing the Princeſſe Zephira hath found ſo good caſe, and my louing Brother Trineus hath wonne this Sword, I thinke it beſt that wee ſet forwards to Romata, which (after they had ſéene the ſumptuous buildings in the Caſtle, the rich Tombe, the beautifull Garden, and all other mounments worthie view) they did.

Béeing come to Romata, and there receiued with ſpeciall ſignes of honor, the wiſe Muzabelino cauſed the fatall Bird to féede of the flowers, which Palmerin hadde brought from the Caſtle of the tenne Rocks. No ſooner had the Bird taſted the flowers, but preſently ſhee deliuered ſuch melodious notes, as ſwéeter harmonie was neuer heard before, and during the time of her ſinging, fell ſo many droppes of precious water from her beake, as before Dinner time the Cuppe was well néere filled. Which when the wiſe Nigromancer perceiued, hee brought a verie faire Lute to Palmerin, ſaying. I beſéech you my Lorde play ſome exquiſite péece of Muſique, that the Bird liſtening to your melodie, may ceaſe her owne recordes, elſe ſhal we looſe the ſoueraigne vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, plaide thereon ſo artificially, that the Princeſſe of Romata whom he wonne in the Iouſt, was enforced to vſe theſe ſpéeches. How can wee ſufficiently maruaile at the perfections of Palmerin: for if in prowéeſſe he ſurpaſſe Hercules of Libia, who ouercame Tyrants and Monſters at his pleaſure: well may wee name him another Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their melodie tamed the Fiſhes, Beaſts, and Birds. Trineus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princeſſe Zephira, who dipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith; the precious vertue whereof was ſuch, as all the

enuenomed

ennenomed ſcarres the wormes had made, were preſently waſhed away, and her face ſo delicate as euer it was before: whereupon the Princeſſe falling at *Palmerins* feete, ioyfully thus ſpake. Doubtleſſe my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Trineus, who ſaued my life when the Traytour would haue ſlaine mee in my bedde: but I muſt confeſſe my ſelfe much more indebted to your worthineſſe, by whoſe paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguiſhed, whereby I endured torments farre exceeding death.

Madame, anſwered Palmerin, your happie recouerie muſt not be imputed to me, but to the ſouereigne Lorde that ſo prouided for you, and ſeeing your health is ſo worthily reſtored, I thinke beſt that wee ſette forward to morrow on our iourney, that we may finiſh the Magicall coniurations of Malfada, as wee haue alreadie doone thoſe at the tenne Rocks. The Princeſſe of Romata hearing theſe words, preuented the anſwere of Zophira, and comming to Palmerin, ſaid. I beſeech you Sir Knight, in honour of that God which you reuerence, that you will not refuſe me one demaund, according to your promiſe made me, when you ouercame my Brother and his Knights in the Ioniſt. Aske Lady (ſaide Palmerin) what you will, and you ſhall not bee denied, ſo that the matter conſiſt in my power to performe. Well may you performe it (quoth ſhe) and to your endleſſe honour I hope. The ſumme of my requeſt is, that you will not forſake the King my Father, till his warre againſt the Soldane of Perſia be finiſhed. And that you would entreate your Friende to accompanie you therein. Denie mée not good Sir, for no greater ſhame is to a Knight then breach of promiſe: nor will I ſtirre from your feete, vntill you haue graunted what I requeſt. In ſooth Madame, anſwered Palmerin, although my Friendes and I haue great affaires in our Countrey, yet (in reſpect of my promiſe) we will aſſiſt your Father, let vs in meane while intreate you, to pardon our returne with the Princeſſe Zephira, who by

thinks

thinks the time long before ſhee come to Nabor. Doubtleſſe my Lorde, quoth Zephira, rather then you and my Lorde Trineus ſhall breake your promiſe to the Princeſſe, in giuing ſuccour to the King Arbimar her Father: I can content my ſelfe to ſtay heere more willingly then to returne to the King my Brother. Madame, ſaide Muzabelino, aſſure your ſelfe that Palmerin is the onely meane whereby you haue attained your preſent felicitie, and by him ſhall you with honour ſée your Countrey againe. In ſoth my Lord, ſaide the Princeſſe, full well I know his owne gracious nature induced him, firſt to aduenture his life for the ſafetie of my Countrey: then to paſſe ſtrange Countreyes with daunger, onely to finde you, and laſtly his rare fortune at the Caſtle of the tenne Rocks, from whence hee brought thoſe precious flowers, and the fatall Byrd, wherby my long infirmitie hath beene cured. To offer him fauour or all my poſſeſſions in way of recompence of ſo great paines, they are not comparable: for though I made him Lorde of my ſelfe, and all thoſe territories my father left me, yet doth my conſcience tell mée they are too baſe. In bréefe, I know his deſerts ſo exceeding my reach, as well may I ſitte downe to imagine, but neuer bee able to contriue a ſufficient reward. Beleeue me Madame, aunſwered Muzabelino, you haue ſpoken truth, and his noble magnanimitie muſt onely helpe my Lorde, and this I aſſure you, that were it not the daunger of his kingly honour, and hazard of the whole Monarchie of Aſia, hardly might the knight be ſtayed héere, of ſuch waight and importance are his other affaires. Then calling Palmerin to him, whoſe inward thoughts were buſied with the remembrance of his Lady, he ſaid.

Let not your ſtay héere my Lorde offende you, though well I knowe the waight of your gréefe, for that God who hath called you to this preſent eſtate, hath forepoynted things that you cannot ſhunne, in recompence whereof, before your departure from this countrey, great & victorious

honours

honours are appoynted you. Beside, for a perfect resolution in your further doubts, take you no care for nourishing your Birde: for when your Musique made her cease singing, at that instant I threw such a charme on her, as hence forth shée shall liue without taking any foode. And when you returne to your Citie of Constantinople, let her bée pearched in some conuenient place, in the great hall of your Pallace, and there shall she remaine as a certaine Oracle vntill the day of your death, to deliuer tydings of good or bad. If any Knight or Ladie shall enter your Court, either with intent of treason, or bringing ill newes, the Birde shall giue such fearefull shrikes, as she did at the time when you toke her in the Arbour: but if the newes be of ioy, and for your good, then shall she sing more sweetly, then when the souereigne water fell from her beake, wherewith the Princesse Zephira was cured.

In brefe my Lorde, at the time when you must leaue this life, for the glorious habitation among the blessed, shée shall foretel such strange occasions, as shall dismay the most resolute courage. By this meane shall you be guarded from all inconueniences, and your good fortune continued in such sort, as you shall bee the most peaceable Emperour that euer liued in Greece. Certes my Lord, answered Palmerin, not by any desert in me, am I thus honoured with so high a present, which I will kéepe so charie as mine owne person: but that the name of Muzabelino may for euer be imprinted in my heart, giue mée some one of your name or kindred, who euermore may bée neerest to my person. My Lord quoth Muzabelino, to you will I giue one of my Sonnes, begotten by me on a Christian Ladie, agréeing with you in faith, and opinion: whereof I am not sorie, yet feare I that the King should knowe so much, least his religion might cause his death.

Déere frend, said Palmerin, for Gods sake giue him me presently, and him will I loue as bee were my brother. Your request (quoth he) can I not yet satisfie, till wée goe

to my Caſtle where he is kept, which becauſe I will no longer deferre, to morrow will I perſwade the King to iourney to his great Cittie of Griſca, there to take view of his Armie, when I ſhal compaſſe the meane to giue him you, vpon this concluſion they departed to their cambers.

Chap. LII.

How Muzabelino gaue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, entertaining the King and all his companie royally at his Caſtle, and how the two Armies of the King Abimar and the Soldane of Perſia encountred, with the ſucceſſe therof.

MVzabelino perceiuing by his art, that the Soldane of Perſia with his power was nére at hand, thinking to ruinate the great Cittie of Griſca, aduertiſed the King thereof, willing him with all ſpéede to muſter his Armie, and preuent the ſoldanes determination. The King not miſliking his aduiſe, ſet forward preſently to Griſca, and by the way, at the earneſt intreatie of Muzabelino, the King with all his courtly companie lay at his Caſtle, where many rare deuiſes were ſhowen them by enchauntment, which I paſſe ouer as matter altogether impertinent. There did the Magitian giue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, one of his Daughters likewiſe to the Quéene, and another to the Princeſſe Zephira.

After ward they iourneyed to the Cittie of Griſca, where all his armie was ranged in readines, being numbred an

hundred

hundred thousand fighting men: the auantguarde he committed to the two Princes, Palmerin and Trineus, consisting of twentie thousand horsemen, his two battailes of 30000. Archers on horsebacke, the two Princes Tomano and Drumino had in charge, and the rereward was gouerned by the two Kinges of Seuata and Garara. The Soldanes power beeing ordained in battaile wise, within few dayes after the fight beganne, which continued with such danger on either side, as the victorie hung very long in suspence. In the ende, after a mightie massacre made of the Persians, among whom was Donadel Prince of Siconia slaine, with many other great Califes and Lords, the Soldane himselfe was taken prisoner by Palmerin, & sent bound with fetters of Gold to the Princesse Zephira. The Messenger comming to the Princesse Chamber, declared how Palmerin had sent her that prisoner, to entreate him as her selfe liked best. In sooth my Lord quoth the Princesse to the Soldane, you are right welcome for his sake that sent you: heere shall your entertainement be as fittes your calling, and mislike not your mishap, in that the knight who sent you, is wont to conquere where himselfe pleaseth. The Soldane angrie at his hard fortune, yet seeing hee was prisoner to a Lady so beautifull, was immediately so surprised with loue, as hee was not able to answere the Princesse one word. But she perceiuing he was very sore wounded, caused him to bee conducted to a goodly Chamber, commaunding her Chirurgions to attend him billigently.

On the morrow shee came to see how hee fared, when Loue ouermastering all his senses, made him forgette his hatred to the King Abimar, resoluing to become his friend by marriage of the Princesse, and vnable longer to suppresse his waighting passions. which more troubled him then his dangerous wounds, hee thus beganne. Fairest among the daughters of men, tell me I desire you, if you bee the Childe of the King Abimar, or els of whence you are, to

the ende I may one day acknowledge this fauour, which your milde nature affoordes your priſoner. Hereunto the Princeſſe anſwered, howe ſhee was Daughter to the King Onodius of Nabor, coupling therewith all her paſſed fortunes: concluding in the ende, that in all actions agreeing with honour, ſhee remained his humble Seruant. Fortune, quoth he, neuer conſtant but in vnconſtancie, once yeſterday was I the greateſt Prince in the worlde, and now none in my Kingdome ſo miſerable as my ſelfe, being brought in ſubiection to my inferiour, and ſnared in loue with my vaſſalles Daughter. Wiſely ſayd the Poet, That badlie doo loue and Maieſtie agree togither: for though the height of mine eſtate forbids my deſire, yet loue and mine owne lyking are two ſuch ſeuere enemies, as I muſt not nowe ſtand to diſpute the cauſe. Happie is the Knight in whoſe power remaines a Ladie ſo excellent: but much more happie is the Ladie that can commaunde ſo great a perſon, by whom ſuch honours are this day affoorded you fayre Princeſſe, as wel may you vaunt to bee the greateſt in Perſia.

If by a Knight ſurpaſſing in proweſſe I was conquered in battaile, by one in beautie and curteſie incomparable am I againe ouermaiſtred: ſo that I am enforced to preſent you my heart, and all the ſignories I poſſeſſe, to vſe at your pleaſure, vowing (for your ſake) perpetuall peace with Abimar mine enemie. The Princeſſe abaſhed at this vnexpected offer, a ſweete bluſh colourer her daintie cheekes, and fearing to be imputed too indiſcréete, ſhaped her anſwere to the laſt point of the Soldanes ſpeeches, as thus. In ſoth my Lord, well could I like, that peace were concluded betweene the King and you, though not by any meane in mée, but by the omnipotent power of the Goddes: who letting you know the weakneſſe of your owne ſtrength, would not haue any warre betweene you and the King Abimar. And if it like you ſo much to abaſe your ſelfe, as to like the ſimple Daughter of a King, who while ſhe liued, was your

bigbneſſe

highneſſe Subiect: well may I with modeſtie giue conſent: for if my Father all his life time obeyed you as his Lorde, vnſéemely were diſobedience in his Daughter. By the holie Alcaron of Mahomet, aunſwered the Soldane, your benigne humilitie hath more conquered me, then the proudeſt enemie in the worlde coulde do: do you therefore appoynt the Articles of our peace, and I as vnpartiall will agrée thereto.

Thus began the peace and the promiſe of mariage betwéene the Soldane and the Princes Zephira, which béeing thoroughlie agréed vppon, the King Abimar, Palmerin, Tryneus, and all the ſtates ſubſcribing thereto, the Camps on either ſide were diſcharged, and the Soldane with his great Seneſhall openly in the Citie of Griſca, proteſted peace in this manner. That the Soldane ſhoulde eſpouſe Zephira, and Tomano the Princeſſe Belſina the Soldanes Daughter. Beſide, hee renounced all pretended rights to the Realmes of Griſca and Romata, nor would he demaund anie tribute of them afterward, or enter his confines with anie violence, but aſſiſt the King continually againſt all his enemies.

Moreouer, within two Moneths, hée would deliuer tenne thouſand talents of Golde, and two millions of Seraphes, in recompence of his wrong done to the King Abimar. All this my Lord, quoth the Soldane, will I faythfullie performe, and all the Kinges my Subiects ſhall ſubſcribe thereto: on this condition, that you accompanie the Princeſſe to the Citie of Harano, there to honor with your preſence our eſpouſall, where your ſonne Tomano ſhall likewiſe match with our Daughter. To this the King willingly conſented, whereupon the Soldane ſent his Seneſhall, to cauſe his Armie march homewardes into Perſia, except fiue thouſand men at Armes, to guard the Soldanes perſon: then openly in the field was the peace proclaimed, and the Captaines on either ſide frendly embracing each other. Afterward the ſoldane comming to the king Abimar

and in the preſence of Palmerin and Trineus, thus ſpake. Needleſſe were it now (my Lord) to remember our paſſed diſpleaſures, but generally to conferre of warre and peace: yet hereof I can aſſure you, that the Princeſſe Zephira, and theſe two ſtrange Knights, prevailed more againſt me then all the reſt of your Armie. But leaſt your people ſhould thinke, that our concluded peace is not thoroughlie grounded, to morrowe will I bee openlie affianced to the Princeſſe Zephira, and afterward ſet forward to Harano, that my Siſters may bee preſent at out nuptials, in the meane while, our Seneſhall and fiue other noble Lordes, ſhall remaine with you as our hoſtages. Theſe determinations fulfilled, the Soldane paſſed to Harano, where hee heard of the death of the Prince Donadel, and the Kinges ſonne of Roſillia, with diuerſe other Princes of his kindred ſlaine in the battell: but the heate of his newe loue cauſed him to make ſmall account therof, preparing all things readie for the ſolemnitie of his marriage.

Chap.

Chap. LIII.

The conference that the Soldane of Persia had with his Sisters, thinking by theyr meanes to stay Palmerin, and Tryneus in his Court, and the honourable entertainement hee made them at the arriuall of the Princesse Zephira. And how by good fortune Palmerin recouered his Squire Colmelio, from the Ambassadour Maucetto.

NO sooner was the soldane come to Harano, but hée presently dispatched Messengers to his sisters, that they might bée present at his honourable marriage: and calling for his Daughter the yong Princesse Belsina, he thus began. Faire Daughter, I thinke you are not ignorant, for report flieth quickly far, that I haue promised you in mariage to the Prince Tomano: therefore I account it verie requisite, that your solemnitie bee done on the same day, when I shall espouse the Princesse Zephira.

My gracious Lorde and Father, quoth shée, I remaine altogither at your highnesse direction: and if for conclusion of peace you match with so faire a Princesse as is Zephira, it were agaynst reason I should refuse the worthie Prince Tomano of Romata. When hée perceyued the readie good will of his Daughter, and his two sisters by this time were come to the Court. After hée had welcommed them in most gracious manner, hée entred into these speeches. I thought it verie expedient (fayre sisters) since you vnder-

ſtand the peace concluded betwéene the King of Griſca and my ſelfe, to acquaint you with other matters greatly concerning you.

There commeth hither in the companie of the Princeſſe Zephira, two ſtrange knights of very rare perfections, to whom I would willingly haue you vſe ſuch eſpeciall behauiour, as wée might purchaſe the meanes to enioy them continually in our Court, for no other intent I promiſe you, but onely that they may match with you in marriage. You ſiſter Lyzanda, (quoth hée to the eldeſt) I commit to the chéefeſt Knight, the verie ſame man that moſt valiantlie toke mée priſoner in the battaile: and you Arecinda, (for ſo was the yongeſt named) I bequeath to the other, who is one of the goodlieſt perſonages that euer Nature framed.

Hereunto they were right ſone entreated, eſpeciallie Aurecinda, who though her elder ſiſter were graue and well aduiſed, yet was ſhée pleaſant, quaint and ſo ſubtile, as eaſily could ſhee practiſe the meane to deceiue the wiſeſt man, whereof ſhée made ſome experience, as you ſhal hereafter perceiue in the Chapters following. The Soldane hauing ſent for all the Kings, Princes and Lordes his ſubiects, to bée preſent on the day of this great ſolemnitie: the Prince Tomano, earneſtlie deſiring to ſée his beſt beloued, deſired Palmerin, Trineus, and the Princeſſe Zephira, that they might ſet forwardes to Harano. But Muzabelino, who knew what troubles would ſuccéede the marriage, aduiſed the King Abimar not to goe, and counſailed the two Princes, Trineus and Palmerin, to kéepe themſelues continuallie Armed, becauſe the Soldane was a man continually ſubiect to incertaine chaunces. Hogiuing of each of them a Cote of Armes of Crimſon Veluet, moſt curiouſlie embroidered with Pearles, hee departed from them, returning backe againe to the Citie of Griſca. Howeride theſe Princes ioyfully to Harano, where they were receiued by the Soldane with wonderfull pompe and

honour,

honor, each one admiring the rare beautie of the Princesse Zephira, who was conducted with such a royall traine, as neuer was the like seene before in Harano. At the Tittie Gate the Soldane mette them, and in a sumptuous Cothe accompanied them to the Pallace, where after many solenne curtesies on each side deliuered, and such magnificat royaltie beseeming the time and place, the Soldane came to his Sisters, who had not yet talked with the two strange Knights, and thus spake.

Sisters, to the ende that hereafter you shall not be beguiled, the Knights that accompanie my Ladie the Princesse, and whome I haue so much commended to you, are Christians, notwithstanding they bee such, as they twaine deserue greater honor then I am any way able to expresse. As for their comely stature, after that your eye hath conferred with your heart, I referre my opinion to your iudgement, regarde them that they bee loued and esteemed as their perfections doe worthily deserue. Aurecinda the youngest and most voluntarie Sister, hauing her eye continually fixed on the Prince Trineus, thus conferred with herselfe.

My Brother verie lightly commaundeth vs to loue these strange Knights, I knowe not what my Sisters opinion is, as for mine owne, the beginning alreadie of my loue is such, that if I do not quickly obtaine my desire, I feare that my affection is rated at the price of my life. The time is passed ouer with many delights, and daily pastimes after the Persian manner, but all this while Lizanda and Aurecinda are tormented with loue, so that all patience was vtterly denied them, yet bearing this waightie burden so well as they could, at length the two Sisters came to the Princesse Zephiraes Chamber, where they founde Palmerin and Trineus conferring together, feigning the cause of their comming to bid the Princesse good morrow. Palmerin perceiuing that Lizanda sodainely chaunged her colour, imagined the cause of her secret disease, and héeing

loth

with to bee tempted with anie ſuch occaſion, diſſembling that he ſawe her not, toke Zephira by the hande, and leading her to the windowe, founde ſome cauſe of conference, which Lizanda perceiuing, in anger ſhee ſtong forth of the Chamber, yet Aurecinda would not follow her, for ſhe being thoroughly conquered with loue, neither regarding feare, ſhame, or other ſuch like behauiour ſeemely in Maidens, toke Trineus by the hand, and cauſing him to ſitte downe by her, thus beganne. I doe not a little marualle Sir knight, that when Ladies come to ſee you, their entertainment is no better. It is not the manner of Gentlemen to be ſo ſolitarie, without hauing ſome friend or ſeruant, which you ſhall ſone finde in this Court, of higher calling then you imagine, if Ladies may diſcerne ſome ſigne of your fauourable liking. In good faith Madame, anſwered Trineus, if to you and your ſiſter I haue not done ſuch duety as beſeemed me, it proceeded by forgetfulneſſe, or my minde carried away with other occaſions, for nature made me obedient to Ladies. If theſe words Sir knight (quoth ſhe) proceede from your heart, I can aſſure you to be called of ſuch a one, who is not vnworthie the like good will, and of ſuch account is ſhee with the Soldane, as he ſhall create you one of the greateſt Lords in Perſia, ſo pleaſe you to ſtay in his highneſſe Court. That may not be (quoth Trineus) for ſo ſone as the Soldane and the prince Tomano ſhall be eſpouſed, I muſt needs depart with my companion, about affaires of very great importance. Palmerin who with one eare liſtened to the Princeſſe Zephira, and with the other to the words of Aurecinda, after ſhe was departed to her Chamber, thus ſpake to Trineus.

Good Friende, beware of this Ladie, that ſhee cauſe you not to offende God, and violate the loyaltie you owe to Madame Agriola. Such experience haue I had in theſe actions, as when Ladies haue enterpriſed their amarous furies, if they cannot compaſſe it by the meanes of men, they will aduenture it with helliſh familiars, that can deceiue

the

the very wisest, especially in this wicked Countrey, where is no knowledge of God or his Lawes. Beside you know, that such impudent loue cannot bee carried about without such apt messengers, and from whence proceedeth many inconueniences. Brother, answered Trineus, feare not my constancie, for my Ladyes loue hath taken such fare foundation as death cannot make me false to her, yet proued his words contrarie in the end, and for which hee repented afterwarde.

While these delights continued, Maucerco Ambassadour to the soldane of Babilon, arriued at the Courte, where the Monarch of Persia receiued him verie honourably, willing him to conceale the newes till the marriages were past, which on the morrow was performed with marueilous royaltie. As the Princes and Lordes accompanied the soldane to the Temple, it happened that Aurecinda was conducted by the Prince Trineus, whereof she being not a little glad, by the way entred into these speeches. Ah my true Friend and Lord Trineus, when will the day come that I may be thus led, to espouse the man whom I loue more deere then my life? Madame, quoth Trineus, I cannot marueile sufficiently to see you thus changed, considering the greatest Lord in the Orient may be thought too simple for such a Wife: yet did you chose one that perhaps would not espouse you, my Lorde the soldane being your Brother, may constraine him thereto. Here-hence (quoth shee) proceedeth my sorrow, for hee whome I loue is not the soldanes subiect, nor doth agree with mee in faith and opinion, he will giue no care to mine intreaties, much lesse to such a one, as can make him one of the greatest Lords in Persia.

But thinke you my Lorde that I can conceale what you may plainely discerne in mine eyes? You are the onely man my heart hath chosen, and whome the soldane loueth more then his Brother. Alas Madame, quoth the Prince, vnfitting is it that a Knight errant, should espouse the sister

ſiſters of ſo great a Lord as is the Soldane of Perſia. And would his Maieſtie ſo much honour me, yet the contrarie of our faith is ſuch an impeach, as flatly it may not be, for rather will I be torne in peeces then match with a Pagan, or renounce my faith for her loue. No, no, my Lord, ſaide the Princeſſe, I will renounce mine for your loue, and worſhip Ieſus Chriſt the ſonne of the bleſſed Virgin. Well worthie then were I of reproch, quoth Trineus, if I ſhould not requite you with loue againe, conſidering what you aduenture for my ſake.

As they would haue proceeded further in talke, Colmelio Palmerins Squire whome Maucetto hadde bought, ſtanding to ſee the traine of Perſian Lords and Ladies paſſe by, eſpied his maiſter and the Prince Trineus, wherefore preaſing through the guarde of Archers, hee came to the Prince, and taking him by the Mantle, ſaide. Moſt happie be this houre my noble Lorde, to finde you and my Maiſter Palmerin. What fortune hath brought thee hither Colmelio, ſaide Trineus, haſt thou yet ſpoken to thy Maiſter? No my Lord, anſwered Colmelio, he conducteth the Princeſſe with the Calife of Siconia, wherefore I durſt not preſume to trouble him.

Beleeue mee, ſaide the Prince, but thou ſhalt ſpeake with him, and while the Arch Flamin was performing the ceremonies in the Temple, Trineus preſented him to his Maiſter Palmerin, who was thereof ſo ioyfull, as if he had gotten the beſt Cittie in Perſia. Hee demaunded by what meanes hee eſcaped the Pirates handes, the true diſcourſe whereof Colmelio rehearſed, and howe Maucetto the Ambaſſadour bought him, as Ptolome and he were brought to the Soldane of Babilon his Court to be ſold, and there doth Ptolome finde great fauour as I haue heard, of the fayre Princeſſe Alchidiana the Soldanes Daughter, onely for your ſake. Thou telleſt me wonders, ſaid Palmerin, depart not from me till after Dinner, when I will goe to thy Maiſter Maucetto to demaunde thee, which I hope hee will

not

not denie, because when I was Knight to Alchidiana, hee was one of my most specially good Friendes. After the solemnitie of the marriage was ended, and Dinner eated at the Pallace for preparation of pastime: Palmerin calling Colmelio, went with him to the Ambassadour Maucetto, who not a little abashed to see him, that was generally reputed dead in the soldanes Court, came and embraced him with these speeches. My Lorde Palmerin, what great God hath rayled you againe? The soldane was credible enformed, that you and Olorico were drowned in the sea: for which both hee and Madame Alchidiana more lamented, then for the losse of his whole Armie before the Cittie of Constantinople.

Palmerin dissembling as though he knew not thereof, seemed to maruaile thereat very much, and the better to shadow his conceit, saide, that after the tempest was ceased, which cast him verie farre from the Soldanes Armie, thinking to returne to Constantinople, hee was by violent windes brought to the Isle of Maltada, where the Prince Olorico, quoth hee, and all the rest of my companions remaine enchaunted, whom I hope to recouer againe after I can get hence. Little thought I my Lord, annswered Maucetto, to finde you in this Countrey, but dis Madame Alchidiana know so much, her sorrow would sone be conuerted into ioy.

But what newes with you my Lorde? saide Palmerin. What may bee the cause of your Ambassage? I will not conceale the truth thereof from you, quoth Maucetto, I come to demaund ayde of the Soldane of *Persia*, for a fresh inuasion against Constantinople. I maruaile quoth *Palmerin*, that he will enterprise the voyage againe, which hath cost him so much, and returned so little profit: rather would I counsaile him to forbeare, and so will I write to his maiestie before your departure, as also to Madame Alchidiana his Daughter. But I would request one curtesie of you Sir Maucetto, that you would giue mée your saue

Colmelio,

Colmelio, who in time paſt hath bene my Squire. Him ſhall you haue with all my heart, quoth Maucetto, and not onely him but whatſoeuer els is mine beſide, ſo pleaſe you to accept thereof.

I thanke you good Sir, aunſwered Palmerin, and I doubt not in time to requite your gentleneſſe. While they thus talked together, the Soldane came to Palmerin, ſaying. Will not you make one my Lord in this daunce? the Ladies ſay they cannot haue your companie. In ſoth my gracious Lorde, anſwered Palmerin, little do I delight in any ſuch exerciſes, very earneſt affaires haue I with the Ambaſſadour Maucetto, which craue ſuddaine and ſpedie diſpatch. Beſide, faine would I know ſome tydings of him from my Ladie Alchidiana, from whoſe ſeruice I haue now diſcontinued a yere and more. The Soldane abaſhed at theſe wordes, ſaide. I pray you tell mee the truth, are not you hee that ſlewe the Prince Amarano of Nigrea in Combat, and afterwarde two other of his Brethren, of which exploits remaine ſuch fame through all Turkie? In ſoth my Lord aunſwered Palmerin, being vowed to my Ladies ſeruice, I neuer could ſuffer her honour to be any way diſtained, and in that dutie I will continue, for the manifolde curteſies I haue receiued by her. By the liuing God, ſayd the Soldane, now think I my ſelfe the happieſt prince in the world, hauing the man in my Court, whoſe verie name maketh the ſtouteſt to tremble. But ſeeing wee are thus farre entred, tell mee, is the Princeſſe Alchidiana ſo beatifull as Fame reports her, That is ſhe my Lord, quoth ſhee, and much more then fame is able to vtter, beſide, ſhee is one of the moſt gracious and affable Princeſſes that euer I beheld in any Kings Court.

Nowe is night come, and after the Courtly paſtimes were ended, the Bridegroome went to receiue the honour of his Bride, commaunding Palmerin to bee intreated as his owne perſon, which not a little contented the Princeſſe Lyzanda, thinking hereby (alas to lauiſhly) to obtaine

him

him for her husband, but herein she was deceiued, so that her rash loue procured her miserable death. Arecinda likewise continually courted Trineus, as though shée had alwaies béene trained vp in his company, wherefore one day, after hee had béene warned foure or fiue times by Palmerin, he thus spake to her. Madame, if your honesty and vertue hath imprinted in noble mindes, an especiall conceite of your continencie and chastity, I maruaile nowe what many will thinke, in that you should not shewe any such signes of loue to me, for it séemes yée yelde the Cittie before any assault be giuen. All these spéeches could not qualifie her humour, for loue had so emboldened her with such vnshamefastnesse, as shee made no conscience of following the cause, giuing credit to one of her Ladies perswasions, that by good pursuit all things enioy a happy ende.

Chap. LIIII.

How Maucetto the Ambassadour to the Monarch Misos of Balylon, declared his message before the Soldane and all the princes of Persia. And of the Combate betweene Trineus, and the King Orzadine of Galappa.

After the mariage feast was fully ended, the Soldane sent for the Ambassadour Maucetto, who in the presence of al the Persian Lordes, thus began to deliuer his embassage. Mighty illuous Monarch of Persia the soldane of Babilon my lord and maister, hauing euermore cõtinued in faithfull alliance to

to your maiestie, lets you knowe by mee his great and damageable losse, which he sustained before the Citie of Constantinople. For recouerie whereof, hee humbly intreateth your highnesse most fauourable assistannce, which well you cannot denie him, in respect of the great sway you hold in Turkie, as also for the establishment of our faith and generall destruction of the Grecian Empire. Ambassador, quoth the Soldane, I will better consider hereon, and aunswere you accordingly. So calling all the Princes presently to counsell, diuers confused iudgements were amongst them: whereupon hee sent for Palmerin, and before them all demaunded his opinion, whereto hee shaped this aunswere. Might it stand with your highnesse liking, and the good conceit of all these noble Princes, gladly would I bee excused in this matter, wherein I may not speake without suspition, because the entent is against mine owne native country, and those whome I agree withall in fayth and opinion.

But sering your Maiestie will needes knowe my iudgement, pardon in speaking boldly what I would be loth to dissemble. I thinke no one of you my gracious Lords, but well remembers the late warres against the King of Grisca, since which time the souldiers are hardly recouered, and extreamitie were it to endanger the liues of wounded men. Moreouer, the Soldane of Babilon who nowe demaundeth succour, sending his Armie into Greece, where raignes a Prince so mightie and puissant, as well coulde repulse them with shamefull confusion. Perswade your selues as yet there is no other, but he that tryumpht in conquest before, I feare can do the like againe, and thus my Lords is mine opinion.

Well haue you aunswered, quoth the Soldane, and this peaceable conclusion liketh me best, so arysing from counsell, they went into the great Hall, where before their comming, as the Princesse Zephira was dauncing with many Lords and Ladies, entred an armed knight, accompanied with

with fiue other in Armour, and twelue Squires, who seeing the Soldane not in his chayre of estate, demaunded of the Queene where he was. Knight, quoth she, he is in counsell with the Princes and Lordes of his Realme, and long it will not be before he come: in meane while you may passe the time in conference with the Ladies. By God, said Trineus to the Queene, I thinke he scant knoweth howe to conferre with Ladies, for his indiscreete behauiour sheweth him to be the worst nurtured Knight ẏ euer I sawe: saw you not (quoth hee to the Princesse Zephira) how vnmannerly he sat downe without vsing any reuerence to your Maiestie?

The Knight sitting strouting in a Chayre, and hauing vnclasped his Helmet, said to the Queene. I pray you tell me Madame, are those two strange Knights in this Court, that were against your Husbande in the battaile and tooke him? They be Sir Knight, quoth she, well and in good disposition thanks to the soueraigne Creator. I aske not of their health, quoth he, how are they called? The one said the Queene, is named Palmerin, the other Trineus. And I quoth he, am Orzadine King of Galappa, to whome fortune hath beene more fauourable in loue, then in riches: making me Frende to the faire Oronia, Daughter to the Calife of Siconia, and Sister to the Prince Donadell, who was slaine in the battaile against the King Abimar: shee in my iodgement, not hauing her second in beautie, at whose request I haue trauailed the greatest part of *Asia*, to spread her name and honorable reputation, which I haue done to her perpetuall fame: and returning to her when my labours were finished, in sted of ioy and pleasure, I found her sad and pensiue for the death of her Brother. These newes were worse to me then death, and to comfort her, I promised to reuenge her Brothers misfortune: and this is the onelie cause of my comming, for hauing Combatted with him that slew the Prince, her loue to mee will be the greater, and thine honour shall be spread with more aduantage.

I beleeue well, quoth the Quéene, if you escape with life from the Combat: but tell me Sir Knight, why beare you such ill will to him that slew the Prince? considering that it was don in plaine battaile, and he his enemie who would haue done as much to him if he could. Not for this cause alone will I enter the Combat, said Orzodine, but for I am desirous to let him knowe that I am more fauoured in loue then hee: and as I am one of the most happie Louers, so am I the best Knight in the world, which I will maintaine against anie that dare gain-say it. Happy louer, Dieu Vous gard, said Tryneus. If the Poets had hetherto spared the discription of Cupid, Sonne to the Goddesse of loue, now might they iustly haue sette him downe for blind: yet is hée worthilie to be condemned, that hee would vouchsafe anye fauour to the most foolish among men, hee hauing dedicated me to the seruice of a Ladie, to whom your gentle Ironia, Oronia, I should saye, doth not deserue the name of her seruant.

For the rest, where you vaunt your selfe to bée the best Knight in the world, your follie is too apparaunt, for there are manie Knightes errant in the worlde, who can giue you a braue cauazado at the Launce: and after they haue foyled you in the Ioust, bestowe a little paines to take your gréene head from your grosse shoulders. My selfe that slew the Brother to your Goddesse of beautie, will do you so much pleasure, as to heale the incurable disease wherewith you are day and night tormented. O diuine spirites cryed the Pagan, fauour me so much, that this Knight may but dare to enter the Fielde with mee. Yes I dare, sayde Tryneus, and before we part, I doubt not but to make thée quiet enough.

Ozodine presentlie threwe his Gauntlet as his gage, and Tryneus a Golden bracelet, which Aurecinda had giuen him, entreating Zephira to keepe them, which she refused to do, fearing the daunger of the Prince Tryneus. Hereupon the Soldane entred the Hall, leading Palmerin

by the hand, but when they sawe the Armed knight thus contend with Trineus, they merualled greatly what might be the occasion thereof. When Orzadine sawe the Soldane was sette, he entred into these speeches. Soldane, I am hither come to accuse thée, of a villainous act which thou hast committed, harbouring in thy Court, the man that slewe the valiant Donadell: whose murther thou canst not so cunningly couer, but thy treacherie shall be openly discouered.

What art thou, said the Soldane, that darest speake thus presumptuously in our presence? Orzodine king of Galappa quoth he, of whom thou hast heard heretofore, and now haue I presented my gage against this knight, which I will maintaine in despight of the proudest. The Soldane abashed at this euent, sought to dissuade them from the Combatte, because hée had heard great speeches of the kings prowesse, but all was in vaine, for Orzodine was so obstinate, and Tryneus so earnest to reuenge the Turks proud blasphemie against his Ladie, as they would not be pacified till the Fielde was graunted them. Let vs haue Iudges presently, quoth Orzodine, and the Fielde assured for our Combat, that I may discipline this glorious straunger.

Make not such haste, sayd Tryneus, for I feare thou wilt thinke thy comming too soone. Immediately were the the two Combattants Armed, the Iudges placed in their Tent, when the Soldane and Palmerin with manie Princes, went to beholde this exploit. But such a mightie man was the king of Galappa, as Palmerin feared his frends successe. The Trompets sounding, the knights brake their Launces brauelie, and mette togither so furiously with their bodies, as they were both throwne out of their Saddles: but they quickly recouering themselues, drewe their swoordes, and marched against eache other with lyke courage, as did Achilles against noble Hector. Long continued the fight with danger on either side, but the king of Galappa

stroke such peasant strokes, being a man of equall stature with a Giant, as hee wounded Trineus in manie places: and such was his ill fortune, after long trauersing about, hee sette his foote vnwarilye on the Trunchion of a Launce, whereby he fell downe backward to the ground. Orzodine taking aduauntage of this fall, sette his foote on the Princes breast, striuing to pull his Helmet from his head: but God knowes in what agonie Palmerin was nowe, when he breathed forth these speeches to himselfe. Ah Heauens quoth he, haue I taken such paine and trauaile to finde my Freend, and must he now die among his enemies, Aureinda likewise readie to yeeld vp her ghost with greefe, seeing Palmerin readie to swoune as he stood. Alas, quoth she, is it not enough that my Freend must die, but his noble companion will beare him companie? While this doubtfull feare was among the Courtiers, Tryneus had so well scuffled with Orzodine, as he laye along by him likewise, when drawing a pocket dagger, he stabbed it through his Helmet, into one of his eyes, so that he nailed his head to the ground. Orzodine feeling himselfe wounded to the death, gaue a very loude cry: when Tryneus hauing gotten his Helmet off, presentlie smote his heade from his shoulders. If the Knights of Galappa were now dismaide, and the soldane, Palmerin, Zephira, Tomano, and all the rest ioyfull, I leaue to your iudgements: especially Palmerin, who reioycing that Trineus had thus conquered his enemie, entred the Lystes and embraced him, and bringing him forth of the Fielde, he was welcommed to the Pallace with wonderfull honor.

The bodie of the dead King was giuen to them that came with him, with meruellous reprehension of theyr Maisters audacious challenge, and so with great beauinesse they returned home againe. Nor would the Soldane longer stay in his Court the Assirian Ambassadour. But excused himselfe to the Babylonian Myso, that he could not giue him anie assistaunce, couering this answer vnder his vnfortu-

vnfortunate battaile against the King Abimar. Maucetto seing that to staye longer would not auaile him, toke his leaue of the Soldane, saying. Albeit my Lorde, you cannot giue my Maister anie assistance, yet let Palmerin returne to him at his departure from your Court. What I can do herein, answered the Soldane, your Lord shall be assured to finde, although I thinke his minde bee otherwise addicted: but you were best to knowe his minde your selfe, because I heard him saye he would write to Madame Alchidiana.

Maucetto departing to Palmerins lodging, the Soldane went to see his Sisters, of whome hee demaunded, if they had as yet practised anie thing with the Knights. My Lord, answered Aurecinda, who in all things was more prompt then her eldest Sister, I haue fired my loue on the knight Trineus, with full resolution neuer to loue anie other: yet doth not he intend to staye heere in your Courte, much lesse (I feare) to make me his wife. As for my Sister, shee cannot compasse the meane, howe to impart her loue to Sir Palmerin. Right strange is it, quoth the Soldanen, that the promises you haue made them, and so apparant signes of ardent affection, cannot dissuade them to make choyse of you: Doubtlesse they bee some great Princes, who to see the fashions of the worlde haue thus disguised themselues. Continue your loue as you haue begunne, and if by other meanes you cannot stay them, aduenture your honors as a meane to entrappe them. And now doth occasion well serue you Sister Aurecinda, for by courteous intreating Tryneus now he is wounded, you maye more profit in one houre, then you haue done during this tedious pursuit.

Needlesse was it for the Soldane thus to perswade her, in that she laboured for no other matter, keeping Trineus company both day and night: but Palmerin offended thereat, secretlye thus rebuked the Prince. What meane you my Lord? If you mend not this order I must be angry

with you. You ſée this Princeſſe exceedes in her deſire, and you giue her occaſion to continue it: I know not what will happen hereon, but my mind perſwades mee that you will hardlie depart hence with honour. Be aduiſed I deſire you and take this of me: that if the wiſeſt man will lende his eares to loſe perſons, and followe theyr affections: hée ſhall become more vnreaſonable then a bruite Beaſte, regarding nothing but what is obiect to his eyes, and what the fleſh, (the onelie mortall enemie to the ſpirit) ſhall ſoneſt perſwade him.

Chap. LV.

How Aurecinda Siſter to the Soldane of Perſia, purſued the Prince Tryneus ſo neere, as in the end, ſhe had her deſire, and what followed thereon.

PAlmerin hauing thus ſchooled ỳ prince Trineus, that he ſhould giue no eare to the enticements of Aurecinda: Lyzanda came to his chamber, and feigning vrgent buſineſſe with him, toke him aſide, deliuering her affections in this maner. Right happie wold I think my ſelfe Sir Palmerin, ſo you would deigne to continue in the Soldans Court, who doubtleſſe would aduance you to the higheſt ſtep of honor, and giue me to you in mariage that am his Siſter, and a Lady worthie ſome reckoning.

Palmerin offred to depart the Chamber, but Lyzanda ſtayed him, proceeding thus. Alas my Lord will you neuer vouchſafe to ſpeake to mee? nolue ſée I well that you

are

are the most disloyall Knight in the worlde. Madame answered Palmerin, rather will I die then one iote of disloyaltie shall be found in me: nor can I graunt your importunate requests, without committing notorious treason to my Ladie, and offending my God, whom foolish loue shall neuer make me to displease. So without any further speeches he went to the Prince Tomano, leauing the poore Ladie well-neere dead with this vnkinde refusall, who going to her owne cabbanet, thus began to breath forth her sorrowes.

Ah Loue, the most cruell passion that euer entred the hart of anie Ladie, how great and meruailous is thy power: Some thou enforcest to desire and intreat, without being heard or regarded: others thou causest to be happily fauoured, esteemed of their Frends, Seruaunts and louers. Vnhappie that I am, but much more vnhappie Brother, accursed be the houre when thou diddest commaund mee, to loue the most cruell and vnkinde among men. Can there be anie Ladie in the worlde more disgraced then I am: had I not reuealed my loue to him, some comfort I might thereby enioy among my sorrowes: but the frozen minde knowing my loue, doth holde mee in the greater contempt. My Sister tolde me, that by too long concealement of loue, many haue lost them they most esteemed: but I (alas) do finde it cleane contrary. Now was Aurecinda (by chaunce) in the Chamber next her Sisters Cabinette) and hearing her thus sorrowfully complaine, shee came to her, and thus spake.

God Sister discomfort not your selfe by your friendes refusall: I would not thinke my selfe woorthie the name of a woman, if I could not winne you the man that thus torments you. As for me, I haue founde the meane to compasse mine owne desire. Yet could not all these speeches appease her, wherefore shee left her, and vnderstanding by one of her Ladies, that Tryneus should this night suppe in the Soldans Chamber, whereuppon shee went to the Ladies hote

houſe, and there prepared his bed, and ſuch ſweete delicate bathes, as might moue the ſpirits of a verie ſtaied Gentleman. This done, ſhe came to one of the Pages of honor, Brother to the Ladie whome ſhee moſt of all truſted, ſaying.

I praye thée good Page, goe to the Prince Trineus his Chamber, and there attende till he come forth: then feigning that ſome one hath done thée iniurie, thou ſhalt intreat him to helpe thée againſt him that abuſed thée. If hée condiſcende, as doubtleſſe he will, bring him to the bathe, where I will ſtay his comming with thy Siſter, and ſo ſoone as he is entred, make faſt the doore on him, and gette thée gone, but in anie caſe be ſecret héerein, and I will recompence thée to thine owne content. The wagge was ſo well inſtructed in his arte, as he failed not in any one point of his charge. But as the Prince Tryneus came alone from his Chamber, he fell on his knées before him ſaying. My Lord, if euer you pittie a Gentleman abuſed, let mee intreate you to reuenge my cauſe, on a villaine that hath too much wronged me.

Tryneus, who had often ſéene the Page in his Chamber with Aurecinda, anſwered. Beléeue me Page, it were pittie to denie thy requeſt, conſidering thou doſt demaunde it ſo courteouſly: ſhall I néede to bee better prouided then I am? No my Lord, quoth he, your ſword is ſufficient. So was he conducted by the Page along the Gallery, and béeing come to the appointed place, he opened the doore, thus ſpeaking to the Prince. My Lord, the partie you muſt deale withall is in this Chamber, accompanied but with one Ladie, wherefore you may enter ſecure from daunger. Hee was no ſoner in, but the Page clapt to the doore and departed. Now was Tryneus not a litle amazed, when he ſaw no bodie but the Princeſſe with her Ladie, ſhée being come thither to bathe her ſelfe, and layd in her bed: but in ſuch ſurpaſſing brauerye, as Iupiter with his lightning, Neptune with his thrée forked Mace, and Pluto with his Cerberus,

berus, would ſtand and wonder thereat. So finelie had ſhe treſſed the golden wyres of her hayre, and her heade attyre embelliſhed with ſuch goodlie Orientall Pearles, as made her ſeeme a beautifull Angell, being couered with a gorgious Canapie, reſemblinging the Sunne vnder a faire cloud. Betweene her daintie Breaſtes hung a precious Carbuncle which ſupplied the office of Venus her firebrand: when ſhe ſawe Tryneus ſtand ſo agaſt, ſhe ſaid. Why? my Lord, are you more afraide of a naked Ladie, then of the moſt puiſſaunt Knight in Perſia, armed cap a pe? I can iudge no leſſe, ſeeing you dare approch no neerer. In ſoth my Lord, quoth the Pages Siſter, you may thinke your ſelfe happy to be deſired of ſuch a ladie, whome mightie kings and princes haue earneſtly ſought, and would gladly haue had the leaſt fauour ſhee beſtowes on you. So taking him by the hand, ſhee cauſed him to ſit down in a Chayre by the beds ſide, and giuing her Priſtreſſe her Harpe, ſhe departed, leauing them together. Ah page, quoth Trineus, howe haſt thou deceiued mee? What? ſaide the princeſſe, you forgette where you are, you muſt at this time ſomewhat pittie my ſorrowes, and heare a dittie which I haue made for your ſake. Then taking her Harpe, ſhee thus beganne to ſing as followeth.

The Dittie ſung by Aurecinda to the Prince Trineus.

THe God of warre, fierce, ſtearne, and rigorous,
when he beheld faire Venus heauenly beautie:
Made ſmall account of her diſloyalay,
But ſuddainlie became full amorous.

Beautie

Beautie had then her power vigorous,
Chaunging rough lookes to ſweeteſt ſecrecie.
But he I loue, incenſt with crueltie,
Doth not regard my torments languorous.
VVhy ſhould I then purſue that ſtubborne minde,
That with excuſes kils my hope out-right?
Yet if he helpe not, death muſt me acquite
Ah mightie loue in nature moſt vnkinde
Thou dooſt conſtraine me to affect the man:
That neither fauour, loue nor kindnes can.

VVhat haue I ſayd? the Knight of my deſire,
Is meere diuine, and furtheſt from compare:
VVhoſe Eagles eyes can well diſcerne my care,
Vnd with ſweete pitties droppes alay this fire.
The little God hath made him gracious,
His Mother, mild, to rue the Ladies ſmart:
That ſhrines his liuely Image in her hart,
Then to deſpaire beſeemes no vertuous.
Regard ſweet freend the paſsions of thy Freend,
VVhom God and nature hath appointed thine:
Giue loue his due, and then thou muſt be mine,
So ſhall long ſorrow haue a happie ende.
The Perſian mayd, ſay boldly thou haſt wonne:
That Monarches, Kings and Princes neere could
(donne.

With excellent cunning did ſhée handle her inſtrument, but with farre better grace and affection deliuered her dittie, gracing it with ſuch ſadde countenaunce, mournfull lookes, and renting ſighes, as forced the Prince Tryneus to become exceeding amorous. And burning in this newe fierie

impreſſi-

impression, beheld the singuler beautie of Auredinda, which ranished his sences in such sort, as (trembling like the Aspen leafe) hee satte downe by her on the beddes side. The Princesse laying her Harpe from her, embraced him very louinglie with these speeches. Alas my Lord, will you still continue in this rigour and cruell inhumanitie? your heart is more harde then Adamant, that will not bee mollified with so manie intreaties: I sweare to you by the Sunne that lightneth the worlde, vnlesse you graunt me one request, before your face will I presentlye sleye my selfe. Full well doo I perceiue, quoth Tryneus, that hardlie can I escape mis-fortune: the Seruaunt hath deceiued mee; and now the Mistresse seekes my death. Ah Madam, quoth he, how can I graunt your request, considering mine offence to God, and he that loueth me loyallie? Eyther bee as good as thy worde, quoth she, else stand to the danger that may befall thee.

Why? Syr Knight, is my beautie of so slender account, as I am not worthie to bee holde betweene thine armes? wilt thou suffer me to consume in this violent flame, which thou maist with such ease and honor extinguish? hadst thou rather see a Ladie split her heart before thee, then thou wilt vouchsafe to preserue her life? Come, come sweet Frende, see how loue and his Mother hath made waye for thee, refuse not opportunitie so fauourablie offered. What blemish is on this bodie, that shoulde deserue disdaine? If the King of Gods would thinke himselfe honored with this conquest: much more estimation shouldest thou make hereof. In breefe, she was so perfect in her subtiltie, and knewe so well how to inueigle the Prince with queint speeches and sweete embracings: that she made him forget God, his Ladie, loyaltie, and himselfe, so that of a Maiden, he made her the fayrest woman in Persia. When the time came that hee should depart, the Princesse saide to him. Yet haue I a further request, my Lord, you must promise to meete mee in this place at times conuenient, and endeuour with your com-

companion that he may likewiſe loue my Siſter. Trineus made promiſe hee would, but rather hee deſired to ſtab himſelfe with his weapon: then that *Palmerin* ſhoulde knowe this great abuſe, ſo heinous did his offence ſeeme to himſelfe.

Aurecinda perſwaded her Siſter, ſtill to purſue Palmerin with her loue, and what had paſſed betweene her and the Prince Trineus, ſhe declared: whereupon her deſire grewe the greater, yet all was in vaine, for Palmerin would giue no eare to her complaints, which was the cauſe of this miſhap following. Lyzanda aduertiſed by her Siſter, that *Tryneus* ſtill thus vſed her compante in the Bath: enuious of her Siſters benefit, and deſpightfull at *Palmerins* obſtinate refuſall, ſhe went to the Soldane, and with manie teares thus deliuered her greefe. Ah my Lorde, how much better had it beene, that wee had neuer knowne theſe cruell Chriſtian Knightes: whoſe ingratitude will bee the cauſe of my death: for the yonger of them is meruailouſlie beloued of my Siſter, who forgetting her faith, honor, and her obedience to your Maieſtie, hath diſhonored both her ſelfe and you, onelie to make proofe of the other knights Cruelties to me. The Soldane admiring his Siſters report, anſwered.

I did not will my Siſter to abuſe her ſelfe, without promiſe of marriage: but ſeeing it hath ſo fallen out, by my Fathers ſoule they ſhall both repent it. Durſt the Traytour abuſe me ſo much in mine owne Courte? Why? my Lord, quoth Lyzanda, you are the onelie cauſe thereof, and therefore you muſt bee angrie with no bodie but your ſelfe. Let me not liue an houre ſayde the Soldane, if I be not ſufficiently reuenged on him: Siſter, be you but ſecrete, and referre the reſt to my direction. Then calling for the Captaine of his Guard, willing him to take fiftie knights, and when his Maieſtie was at Supper, they ſhoulde goe take his Siſter and the Knight with her in the Bathe, and afterwarde carrie them to ſtreng priſon. But ſee it done ſecretlie,

credite, quoth he, for if his companion know thereof, it may arise to further inconuenience. And because Palmerin should not misdoubt this treason, all Supper-time the Soldane held him in familiar talke: he hoping by this fetch, to staie them still in his Courte, but it fell out afterward to bee the cause, that manie of his best and cheefest Knightes were slaine.

Not long had the ambushed Knightes waited where they were appointed, but the Princesse Aurecinda opened the doore, and came forth with her Frendes as she was accustomed: where they were suddainlie taken, Tryneus not hauing the leysure to draive his sworde, so was hee caried prisoner to one of the strongest Towers in the Pallace, and Aurecinda at the same time to another. Tryneus seeing himselfe thus betraide, fell into these lamentable discourses. Unfortunate wretch that I am, haue I so lately escaped by my frende, the cruell enchauntments of the hellish Malfada, wherein I endured so manie paines and torments, and am now come to the place where they shall be redoubled?

Ah Palmerin my good Brother and companion, what wilt thou say when thou hearest of my taking, but most of all when thou understandest the cause thereof? Miserable wretch, how often did my Frend warne mee of this inconuenience, yet had not I the grace to credite his Counsaile: doubtlesse, my very concent of shame, when thou shalt bee acquainted with my foule offence, will bee more greuous to me then death. What dishonour, paine, torment and punishment, shall bee sufficient for my misdeede? Forlorne and despised Catife, could not the feare of God, which hath hitherto so graciously protected thee, nor the loyaltie of Agriola, who forsooke Parents, Frendes, and all for thee, haue kept thee from this monstrous acte? O eternall God, the man that forsaketh thee is vile and abhominable. When I had thy feare before mine eyes, I was at rest and quiet in conscience, esteemed and beloued of all men: but when

thou

thou gauest mée raynes of libertie, I became dissolute and forgetfull of thee, as also of them that honoured me so much. Ah miserable occasion, and those deceits, entisements, and subtill persuasions, howe mightie are they in operation: neither men nor diuels could bring mée into such daunger, as you haue plunged mée in vp to the eares. Ah villainous Page that first brought mée thither, and thou the falsest Ladie in the world art cause of my euill. Nor are they to be accused, but my wretched selfe, who seeking mine owne hurt, found it, and hauing found it, continued in it. Thus sorowfully wayled Tryneus, where on the contrarie side Aurecinda reioyced: for when shee considered the estate of her Freende, shee perswaded her selfe by this meane, that the Soldane her Brother woulde enforce him to marrie her, which hope made her as ioyfull, Tryneus was sadde and pensiue.

When the Captaine had imprisoned Tryneus and Aurecinda he came to the Soldan sitting at the Table, saying. Will your Maiestie commaund me any further seruice? I haue enclosed the knight Tryneus in one Tower, and your sister Aurecinda in another. Why? quoth the Soldane, did you find them togither? I did my Lord, quoth the Captaine, your sister leading him by the hande out of the Ladies bote-house. By Mahomet, quoth the Soldane, but that you speake it, hardly coulde I beleeue it, what shamefull villainie is this committed in our Pallace? by the greatest God, the facte shall be so worthily punished, as it shall remaine for a perpetuall memorie. At these speeches Palmerin was not a little amazed, and dissembling his anger so well as he could, said to the Soldane. I cannot be perswaded my Lord, that Tryneus would commit so vile an acte, without entisement thereto by your sisters treason: shee being (vnder your Maiesties correction) the most shamelesse Girle that euer I salue, for twentie and twentie times haue I seene her followe him, with gestures farre vnfitting one of her calling. Then starting from the Table, quoth he. Con-

sider

sider what he is, and what thou intendest against him, for neuer was imprisonment so dearely bought as this will be, and before thou puttest him to death, it shall cost me my life, and the liues of an hundreth thousand knightes beside, in reuenge of his wrong. Being thus inflamed with ire, her could not so giue ouer, but thus begannè againe. By God Soldane, thy treason is so manifest as thou canst not hide it, full well doo I vnderstand thy flatteries, whereby thou hopest to keepe vs in thy seruice, but farre art thou from thy reckoning, for rather will I be torne in a thousande peces, then endure the reproach of such a mans seruice, who vnder colour of friendship imprisoneth his knightes, and afterward threatneth them with death. Tomano, Drumino, Corax, and many other knights belonging to the king Abimar, seeing Palmerin in such a rage, as it seemed the fire did sparkle from his eyes, endeuoured to perswade him, and Tomano thus spake to the Soldane. My Lorde, vnder my safe conduct and your faith promised, are these two knights come with vs to your Court, and you haue now imprisoned one of them, aduise your selfe of speedie iustice: for this shame done him is against all right, and for euer shall you be noted with breache of faith: besides, I repute his iniurie as done to my selfe. The Soldane seeing the Princes thus moued, although himselfe procured those fiftie Armed knights to take Tryneus, yet with smoth countenance he thus answered. Content your selues my friends, Tryneus in right shall be defended: and if I finde my Sister culpable, shee shall be punished as shee were a straunger. More I demaunded not, said Palmerin, for I am assured that by her flatteries Tryneus hath bene seduced. So departing to his Chamber, he met his two Squires, Bellechino, and Colmelio, of whom he demaunded, if they at any time perceiued the loue betweene Tryneus and the Princesse Adrecinda.

They answered that they did perceiue it, and diuers nightes they saw him goe to the Princesse Chamber. And

why

why did you not reueale it to me: quoth he, worthilye haue you deſerued death, in concealing the ſhame of your Maiſters Frende, wherein my ſelfe cannot eſcape vntouched. Hereupon he Armed himſelfe, and ſending for the Prince Tomano, ſaid to him.

I thinke it beſt my Lord, that you keepe your ordinarie guarde about your perſon, till we knowe how the ſoldane will deale with Trineus. As for my ſelfe, I intende (if your Brother Drumino and the Prince Corax will ioyne with mee) to keepe the Fielde with the thouſand Knightes that came hither with vs, that none may enter into the Cittie without our licence. In meane while, you may ſende a Courtier to the King your Father, that he preſentlye ſende vs what helpe he may. Sir Palmerin anſwered Tomano, not onelie my Knightes ſhall enter the Fielde for you, but my ſelfe likewiſe, ſo pleaſe you to commaund mee, and what you thinke beſt for the deliueraunce of your Frende Tryneus, I will bee willing to accompliſhe to my vttermoſt. Preſentlye will I ſend a Horſeman to Griſca, and conferre with my Brother Drumino, that his Knights and Gentlemen may be Armed that came from Sauata, as alſo they that came with my Nephewe Corax from Garara, which will be in number a thouſand more: your ſelfe in meane time may get forth your neceſſaries.

Who then had ſeene the Knights Arming, the horſes prouiding, the bag and baggage carrying, would haue ſaid that Palmerin was as much feared and beloued in a ſtrange Countrey, as in his owne. Such was the diligence of the Nobles and Souldiours of Griſca, Sauata and Garara, as they were right ſone before the Pallace attending for Palmerin; who commaunded Tryneus his Horſe and rich Armour ſhoulde be brought forth by his Squires, leauing in his Chamber all the riches and treaſure, that the ſoldane and the Princeſſe Zephira had giuen him: and mounting on his owne Courſer, he came and embraced the prince Corax, ſaying. Let vs depart (my Lord) from theſe ingrate

full

full power that power hath to entertaine strangers: well may the soldans thanke the Princesse Zephira his wife, else should I cut him by the head from his shoulders. Then were the Ensignes displaid, the Drummes and Trumpets sounding cheerefully, as the noise was heard throughout the Cittie.

And in this manner went Palmerin to the field, which raised forth a tumult among the people, and sorth sedition among the Gentiles of Persia, as they beheld the soldane, that in a manner he had imprisoned the Straunge Knight and the Princesse his sister, and set at nought their mightie power. The soldane perceiued his follie well enough, but as a man delighting in his owne will, without altering his humour, regarded not their speeches: commanding that they should all stay themselues, and charging each one expressely not to speake to Trineus without leaue. Why? quoth he, the sole that is gone, he hath abused me in my Pallace: by my Crowne, I will punish both his pride and his companions, maugre all them that dare say the contrarie. And so he flong from them into his Chamber.

Chap. LVI.

How the Soldan seeing hee could not perswade Trineus to marrie his sister, condemned him to death, and what followed afterward.

THe Romano, who by the aduise of Palmerin remained in the Cittie, with two hundred Knights for defence of his person, sought all the meanes he could for the deliuerance of the Prince Trineus, and comming to the Queene Zephira, thus spake. Madame, seeing men

men can no way perſwade the Soldane; trie what the pleaſing ſpeeches of Ladies can do? who (in my iudgement) cannot returne from him without obtaining their requeſt.

The Soldane hauing forgotten the ſpeciall fauour, which heretofore hee receyued by Sir Parmerin, for whole ſakeke he gaue Darynath and Polinarde, at the ſimple report of Grandoyne Lady Laſcia, hauing this night put commaund Sir Trineus priſoner into ſtrange Tower, ſaying he was ſtraitly to be kept. Sir, ſaid Grandoyne, this is earneſtly done, yet perchance you doe not, notwithſtanding the intreate of all the Princeſſes and Ladies, pardon him from diſcharge him, but hath ſworne vengeance againſt vs all, he ſhall be puniſhed, quoth the Soldane, by my Lords faith, if he will ſeeke his harme who hath done him ſuch iniurie? Beleeue me Grandoyne, anſwered the Queene, I haue told ye the cauſe, therefore when you ſhall walke in yee Chamber, which is the place where all demaundes are graunted to Ladies, you may put him in remembrance of the paines and ſome good words for him, that ſo willingly aduentured his life for you. Ah my Lord, ſayd Zephira, I feare the Soldane will hardly heare mee: for when ſuch mightie perſons are in anger, little account make they of loue or vertue, yet will I willingly do what lies in me.

So bidding the Prince good night, ſhee went weeping to the Soldanes Chamber: whilſt his Queene perceiuing, came and embraced her, demaunding who had ought way offended her. Euen you my Lorde, quoth ſhee, and in ſuch ſort, as if preſently you doe not helpe it, I doubt the danger will be verie great. I vnderſtand you haue ſent Trineus to priſon, and hee hath ſworne that hee ſhall die; if you take ſuch an vnlawfull deede, thinke not but my life will ſpeedily follow him. Gramine, anſwered the Soldane, what I haue done is to no other ende, but to ſtay him, and his companion in my Court, becauſe their renowne is

ſo

ſo famous the Turke. With this cruell he ſo qualified the matter, that ſhee durſt not moue anie further queſtions. The next day hir ſent for the Prince Tomano, and with manie other great Lords went to ſee his ſiſter Aurelia, ſtanding pitifully ouer her in this maner. Siſter, you haue ſtained your ſelfe of good gouernment, and great diſcretion made you of honeſt and vertue, in daring to think ſo foule a thought as you haue committed in act. Didſt thou not conſider thy place of honour in my Court, what ſhame hath thy deede done to the houſe of Perſia, which hitherto neuer ſuſtained blemiſh, and now is ſpoyled by thy inordinate dealing with a ſtranger? So much doth thy heynous fault offende mée, that if hée make thée not his Wife, thou ſhalt die the death as the Lawe hath ordained. Soldane, anſwered the Princeſſe ſiſterly, in vaine ſeeke to recall the act committed. Doeſt thou thinke my fault ſo offenſiue, which firſt was perpetrated by thy perſuaſions? Moſt louing Gentleman, faire, well ſpoken, comly, ſweet, gracious and bewtifull, and who is of higheſt eſteem among all others: is it a matter of ſtrong death? Chaſtiſe a Princeſſe, whoſe youth may well excuſe her treſpaſſe: If it be lawfull the ſame of a ſtone, it is more to thée then mée; for thou didſt firſt intreate, perſuade and commaunde mée to loue him, yea thou didſt inuent the meane how to winne him: and [illegible] thy wife did I firſt make offer of that, which is the moſte ſweete ſolace in loue. If thou therefore, wilt put me to death, my care is the leſſe, ſeeing that with the moſt perfect aſſurance I haue obtained my deſires. And for the fault ſhall not be laid on the beſt Knight in the world, my ſiſter induced him thereto. I called him, I accuſed him of cowardize, more by force then loue. I conſtrained him to yeelde, to ouerthrow thoſe paſſions that hourely tormented mée. Well ſaw the Soldane behinde the impudencie of his ſiſter, yet thus replied. Mooſt true it is, that I commaunded thée to be cheriſhing, but not in this ſort, wherof I can require no

better proue then thine owne shamelesse speeches, which I will seuerely correct before it be night. So departing from her, he went to Trineus with these words. Sir knight, I did neuer thinke that a man of so much valour, as thou hast beene esteemed, hauing seene and frequented many Princes Courts, could imagine matter so foule and vnreasonable, in his Pallace that vsed so highly honoures thee. It behoueth thee therefore to take thy choyse of two things, either to amende thy fault by espousing my sister, whom I frankelie giue thee, and there withall to renounce thy Baptisme, or suffer cruell death for the hatefulnesse of thine offence. Soldane, misbeleeuing Prince, thou abusest thy selfe in thinking to beguile me!

My God, will graue mee with patience to the death, rather then for riches and honours vnfortunate, I should forsake my faith to my Sauiour, by whom I hope to enioy euerlasting happinesse. As for the fact thou twittest me with all, well may it be excused, for I haue neither rauished nor violated, but by force of some euill, with her that threatened her double death before my face, I yeelded vnto her damnable desire: yet in respect of mine honour, much better hap it beene to haue suffered perrill: but to shunne the reproch of so foule and filthie a matter, I yeelded to her amorous petitions. Notwithstanding, if thou therefore wilt put mee to death, thou canst not doo mee so much shame as thou imaginest, but rather cause me to persist in the faith we all owe to nature, and for which we readily offer vp this bodie.

We conclude, my Masters, that no menaces can make me thinke, much lesse doe that which is falsely obiected. By the Starres, quoth the Soldane, the audacious impudencie of these knights deserues new torments, she that hath villainously iniuried me in the presence of my Barons, and the other (for nothing I can say) will change his opinion, wherby her shall come and giue me reporte. Commanding the Queene to be safe locked vp in the great Tower,

and there before all his knights, said. You haue heard my Lordes, the confession of them both, and withall haue seene their great obstinacie: therefore by sentence irrevocable I condemne them to death, and this day shall they be burned in the place accustomed, none of you all moue me to the contrarie, for I will not be otherwise perswaded. By heauen, saie the Prince Tomano, vnhappie should I be to stay with you any longer, wherfore at this instant I forsake your alliaunce, and henceforth will shew my selfe your mortall enemie. Alas my Lord, quoth the yong Princelle Bel-sina, will ye so soone abandon my companie? Follow me then answered Tomano, where I go, for no more will I be seene in this tyrannous Court, where nothing but dishonour and crueltie is vsed.

Presently the Princesse and hée mounted on horseback, and with their traine came to Palmerins Tampe; who hauing heard the Soldanes sentence, was readie to haue slaine himselfe, but that hée hoped to saue the life of Tyneus at the fatall houre. Alas my Frendes, quoth hée, to his companie, this day must you assist mée, to deliuer the most gentle knight that euer bare Armes. Set forwarde courageouslie against the Tyrant, whom with the ayde of my God, wee shall easily vanquish. Zephira hearing that Tomano and Belsina were gone, and how the Soldane had iudged Tryneus and Aurecinda to death, entred into marueilous regrets and acclamations, whereat the Soldane was so enraged, as hée commaunded that Tryneus and his Sister, shoulde presently bee led to the place of execution, and vnder the charge of fiue thousand soldiours, they were brought on horsebacke forth of the Citie: but when Aurecinda saiwe herselfe so hardly vsed, wringing her hands, and renting her comely locks of haire, shée brake forth into these pittifull speeches.

Alas Gentlemen, why are you the instruments to execute a Tyrants will? what recompence can you expect at his handes, that for greedie desire of my patrimonie, send

beth mee to death? So piercing were theſe wordes in the eares of the Souldiours, as they verie much lamented her caſe: but Tryneus neuer chaunged colour, ryding on with reſolute conſtancie, not once liſtning to the mones of the Princeſſe.

When they were come within ſight of Palmerins power, they raunged themſelues in battell array, committing Tryneus and Aurecinda to fiftie Knights, who ſhould conuey them to the Furnace where their death was appoynted, which was a good quarter of a league from the Cittie. Trineus nowe ſeeing death before his eyes, and no ſuccour nere to reſkewe him, prepared himſelfe to the lateſt extremitie, and with many ſorrowfull farewels to Agriola and Palmerin, was fully perſwaded to endure the torment. Palmerin knowing which way his Freend ſhould be led to death, with a ſufficient traine lay ſecretlie ambuſhed, and eſpying opportunitie, gaue ſummons to his men, whereuppon they all iſſued forth verie courageouſlie. But as they ruſhed out from their ſecrete ambuſhment, the ayre was ſuddenly obſcured, and ſuch thunder, haile and raine fell, as neuer was the lyke heard or ſeene before, the Soldanes ſquadron ſeemed to bee all in a flaming fire. The poore Perſians thinking the end of the world was come vppon them, fledde towards the Cittie: but notwithſtanding all their haſte, the greateſt part of them remained dead in the field. If the natural fire (prepared for Tryneus) made him fearful, doubtleſſe this fire raiſed by conſuration made him much more affrighted, but ſuddainly came to him an Armed Knight with his Sworde drawne, and mounted on a horſe of mightie bigneſſe, who toke the horſe of Tryneus by the bridle, ſaying.

Come Sir Tryneus, in deſpight of the Tyrant thou ſhalt not die. At theſe wordes arriued Palmerin, who embracing Tryneus, ſaid. Ah my deere Freend and Brother, what villanous minds beare they that would doo you this outrage? alight and put on your armour with my Squire

hath brought hither, that we may with honour reuenge this shame. As they thought to goe set on the enemie, the Armed Knight, who was Muzabelino, thus spake. My Lorde, let vs not tarrie trifling time here, but summon your people togither, and seeke forwarde to Grisca, where you shall finde better succour then in this place. The disolate Tryneus, what with his former feare, and present ioy to beholde his Frende, was not able to speake one worde, but Palmerin hauing well noted the Armed knight, at length knewe him to be Muzabelino, whereby embracing him, sayd.

My my Lorde, for euer be the King of Kings praysed, in graunting me to haue knowledge of you, let me be worthilie condemned of ingratitude, if I do not acknowledge this great fauour to my Frend, which I account as deere as done to my selfe. After many courteous salutations passed on all sides, they set forwarde to Grisca with theyr men and prouision: where we will leaue them, to shewe what afterward befell to the Soldane and his people. After a long and verie dangerous tempest, with whirle-windes, lightnings, and straunge apparitions, to the great discomfort of all the Persians: one of the Princes, came to the Soldane, saying.

My Lord, the lightning hath fallen so terriblie in the Court, as all the Ladies of honour are slaine therewith. Another brought newes, that three partes of the soldiours, which conducted Tryneus and Autecinda forth of the Citie, lay all slaine in the rough tempest. While these strange mishappes were discoursing, Aurecinda entred the Chamber, saying. Now soldane maist thou beholde thy sinne. Seest thou not that the celestiall spirits, haue reuenged our wrong with the death of thy people? and for my escape I render thanks to the highest, not to thee that gaue my life to the fire, yet much better would my death haue contented me, then to liue without him whose absence is my torment: and did not the hope of his life giue mee some comfort, thou

ſhouldeſt perceiue how little I eſtéeme of my life. Then entred the Quéene Zephira, and ſhe falling at the Soldanes féete, thus began. Ah my Lord, the diſhonour you haue this day done mée is vnſpeakeable. Haue my deſerts béene ſo ſimple in your eyes, that I might not intreate the libertie of one Knight, who this day (I feare) hath periſhed by your ingratitude? Neuer ſhall I ſée thoſe noble Knights againe, whoſe liues haue béene endaungered for my welfare. Ah my Lorde, if you looke into the weight of your offence, you ſhall perceiue my teares are not ſhedde without great reaſon.

Madame, quoth the Soldane, and you faire Siſter, at this time excuſe my fault committed, and patiently beare what hath happened: for I vowe to you by the fayth of a Prince, that I will make ſufficient amendes for my treſpaſſe. When ſhée now thought to bée no further troubled, his Siſter Lyzanda entred mad and raging, and ſnatching his Fauchion from his ſide, ſaid. Hée villaine, ſée what happeneth by thy commaundement, one of thy Siſters is for euer defamed, and the other will preſently end her life before thée. Herewith ſhée ſtabd the weapon to her heart, and fell downe dead at the Soldans féete, to the no little ſorrow of his Maieſtie, and all that were preſent: but Zephira, cauſing the bodie to bée taken away, the Soldane commanded ſhe ſhould be honourably buried, and erecting a goodlie Tombe of Marble ouer her graue, cauſed the maner of her death to bethereon deſcribed. Afterward, by the counſell of the Lords of *Perſia*, hee ſent the Prince Tomano, and the ſtraunge Knights, all the riches and treaſure they had left behinde them: the Princeſſe Aurecinda remaining in continuall bearing ſe, and within ſhort time ſhée felt her ſelfe to be conceiued with Childe. Herein ſhée ſomewhat comforted her ſelfe, though Fortune would not ſuffer her to enioy the companie of her friend, yet one day ſhée hoped to ſée his lively image: which at the time appoynted by Nature ſhée did, béeing deliuered of the goodlyeſt male Childe

that

that euer was seene in Persia, naming him Ryfarano, who carried the beautifull complexion of his Mother, as hee did the hardinesse and magnanimitie of his Father.

Chap. LVII.

Howe Palmerin and Trineus hauing soiourned a while at Grisca with the king Abimar, departed to the Isle of Malfada, where by the meanes of Dulacco and Palmerin, all the enchauntments were finished.

BY the way as the Princes rode towards Grisca, Palmerin vsed these speeches to Trineus. Howe happie is the Prince that giues credit to good counsell, and will not be led by flatteries, or subiect himselfe to his own passions: and howe vnfortunate are they that fall into the the contrarie? Can ye haue a better example hereof then the trayterous Soldane? who first (causelesse) disquieted the good king Abimar, and afterwards at his sisters motion, imprisoned his Friend: for your good successe herein my Lord, you must thanke Muzabelino, and the Prince Tomano, whose power was so readie to defende you. Tryneus remembring his follies past, was still so ashamed thereof, as hee could make no answere, wherefore Palmerin thus spake againe.

Why? my Lorde, hath the imprisonment for saye Aurecinda stroke you dumbe? leaue this bashfulnesse to Women, and remember your former courage. Stoute Hercules, whose honors are yet so rife in memorie, did not hee for the loue of Iole, weare feminine garments, and spin

among

among women? Did not Achilles the like, when he was with his faire friend in the Court of King Lycomedes, Marke Anthonie the Romaine Emperor, did not he follow Cleopatra before Octauius, although his armie on the Sea was twofolde the number of his enemies? And you, for a little familiar loue to a yong Princeſſe, who conquered you onely by importunate ſute, remaine thus confounded. Do you imagine your ſelfe to excell in ſtrength, prowesſe, and knowledge, Hercules, Achilles, and the Emperour Anthonie?

Alas deere Brother, anſwered Tryneus, well may you boaſt of your eſpeciall graces, being able to tryumph ouer concupiſcence, but ſo pyteſome is my offence in mine owne conceit, as I thinke my ſelfe vnworthie to be ſeene among men of vertue. What ſhall I ſay to my Agriola, when ſhe ſhall vnderſtand my haynous offence: howe ſhall I dare to preſent my ſelfe before her? For that, ſaide Palmerin, we ſhall doo well enough, but I would it were ſo wel come to paſſe, that we were with her to abide her cenſure. Continuing theſe ſpeeches, they arriued at Griſca, where the king hæing aduertiſed of their comming, came to meete them, vſing theſe words at their gracious entertainment. Right welcome are ye my noble Friendes, no marualle though the Soldane ſought to wrong you, remembring howe for my ſake you vſed him in the battaile. In ſooth my Lord, anſwered Palmerin, well doth your nobilitie deſerue our ſeruice, and his iniurious dealing ſharpe reuenge, which happily hereafter he may feele to his coſt, vſing ſtrangers ſo vnhonorably: but here we preſent your Daughter Belſina to your Maieſtie, after whoſe marriage al theſe troubles began.

Welcome faire Daughter, ſaide the King, much better then my ſonne hath beene to your Fathers Court. When my Father, quoth the Princeſſe, hath conſidered his furie, doubtleſſe he will be heartily ſorrie therefore, and make ſatisfaction for any thing miſdone, till then I beſeech your

highnesse to conceiue the best. And according as the Princesse had spoken it came to passe, for within three dayes after, the Soldane sent Ambassadours to the King Abimar, to excuse the imprisonment of Trineus, and the sentence of death hee gaue against him, sending to him and Palmerin all their treasure and sumptuous presents, in signe of satisfaction, and to his Daughter Belsina and the Prince Tomano, he sent fiue Camelles laden with gold, as the dowry of their marriage.

Nowe are Palmerin and Trineus wearie of their so long stay from their friendes, wherefore they desired leaue of the king to depart, who seeing hee could not well intreate their longer aboade, right thankfully yeelded to their request, giuing them all things needfull for their iourney, as Horses, Armour, men, money, and diuers other gifts of inestimable value. For which kindnesse they humbly thanked his maiestie, refusing to trouble themselues with such riches in their trauaile, nor would they take that the Soldane sent them, or what they brought from the ten Rocks, except the Birde and the two Crowtes, giuing all the rest to Muzabelino, desiring him to continue them in remembrance. My Lordes, quoth he, no seruice can bee lost that is done to such liberall Princes, as nowe you giue mee good occasion to confesse, and though both I and mine should spend all our following dates in your seruice, yet can wee not recompence the verie least of your courtesies; recommending my sonne Bellechino once more to you my Lorde, in hope he will proue a loyall and faithfull Seruant, otherwise I could part his head from his shoulders in your presence.

And because the way you brought Madame Zephira, is verie long, troublesome, and dangerous: I haue prepared a Shippe for you, which without any perrill shall speedily carrie you to Malfada, and a yong Knight my brother haue I appointed Pilot therein, who shall direct you howe to finish all the enchauntments in the Isle, moreouer

ward

warre I deſire you to order the matter with the King Maulerino, that my Brother may haue the gouernment thereof after your departure. Beleeue me noble Friende, anſwered Palmerin, your Sonne will I intreate as well beſeemes him, and your Brother ſhall not onely haue the charge of the Iſle, which I will freely giue him, but I will ſo worke with the Brother to Zephira, that he ſhall endow him with greater poſſeſſions. So taking theyr leaue of all the Courtiers, Mnzabelino brought him to the Shippe, wherein they were no ſonner entred, but it preſently cut through the waters with ſuch violence, as they were verie quickly come to Malſada. They going on ſhore, Dulacco Brother to Mnzabelino, demaunded of the Prince Trineus, if he had the King he ſonde in the Cuppe at the Caſtle of the tenne Rocks. I haue it on my finger ſir, aunſwered Tryneus. Let vs then enter the Iſle, ſaide Dulacco, as for you Bellechino and Colmelio, ſtay you in the ſhippe till you heare the ſounde of a Cornet, and then may you ſafely venture on the land.

Dyardo ſtanding in one of the Turrets in the Caſtle, ſawe when the ſhippe came and caſt Anker, wherefore hee expected if any durſt come foorth thereof on the ſhore, and ſo amazed hee was that the three knights were not tranſformed, as till Palmerin ſpake to him, hee knewe not what to imagine, but afterward he made haſt downe, and letting downe the Bridge, came and embraced him, ſaying. Welcome is my noble Lorde to Malſada, haue you learned or brought any remedy with you, whereby to recouer your Friendes here enchaunted? in happie houre did you beſtow your labour, if ſo it came to paſſe, but what may theſe two knights bee that come in your companie? The one is the Prince Trineus, quoth Palmerin, whom I ſo long time ſought for, and the other is the man that muſt giue vs aſſiſtance.

After many friendly embracings, Palmerin demaunded what was become of the two Damoſelles he left there.

My Lord saide Dyardo, they remaine prisoners to your pleasaunce for the hard speeches they gaue you. So went they all to the prison, where Palmerin demanded which of them had the Key of the enchaunted Tower: but they continuing in their former obstinacie and malice, would not answere one word. False harlots, quoth Palmerin, why speake ye not? if you giue me not the Key quickly, all your sorceries shall not saue your liues. Then being fearefull of death, presently fell on their knées, and one of them taking the Key forth of her pocket, opened the doore of the Tower, saying.

Enter knight, I hope thou wilt repent thy hastinesse. Palmerin and his three companions went in, where they beheld a thing like vnto a Dwarfe of Copper, holding a Bowe with an arrow readie vpon to shoote, by him hung a goodly Cornet of Iuorie, and on the other side a faire Booke. My Lord, said Dulcaco, we must haue both the Cornet and the booke: and if you faile in getting them, no one aliue can ende the enchauntments, my God will strengthen me, sayd Palmerin, so drawing his sword, and couering himselfe with his shield, he boldly stept to the Image. And in despight of the deuils that fiercely stroke at him, he pulde the Bowe violently from him; when suddainely such a fearefull crie was heard through the Castle, as made them all to shake and tremble. The booke and Cornet they easily reached, and giuing them to Dulcaco, willed him to sounde the first. That will I, quoth he, but you must be readie to assiste me if it proue so strong as you shall see marueiles: when I gan reading the first leafe of the Booke, bid you sounde the Cornet so loude as you can possible. Palmerin did as he was commaunded, and by the hearing of Dulcaco, and the sounde of the Cornet, all the aduentures in the Island came running thither, being so many, as Palmerin was amazed thereat.

Dulcaco, hauing ended his Lecture, they all returned to their former shapes, the first was the courageous Fryoll, and the

the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, the Prince of Megena, the Princes Olorico, Lauana, and Agriola, whome Trineus ranne and embraced, seeing her so perfect in beautie as ever she was.

Now the remembrance of his offence with Arecinda, stopped the passage of his speech, and her fauours shewne to the great Turke made her like wise ashamed, yet kisses and embracings with teares and sighs, deliuered they[r] inward ioy for this happie meeting. Here must we imagine the comfort of the other fiue Princes and Lauana, then which doubtlesse could be no greater, seeing they[r] noble Friend that had deliuered them, and beholding each other in good disposition. Now are all those which were enchaunted, brought to their former shape, as well Turks as Christians, and they[r] shipped by Dalmedo restored them againe: chiefely they that belonged to the Marchant Efebon and his sonnes, to whome Palmerin gaue such abundance of treasure, as after ward they had no cause of want, discharging each one to their owne countrey, who departed thence to their no little contentation. Agriola, Lauana, and the other Prince, being altogether conferring of their good fortune, Palmerin comforteth them carefully among them, and demaunded what had happened since the seperation, whereto he reuealed all that you haue heard already, which to repeate again he would be but troublesome: it sufficeth you to vnderstand, that all the friendes being met together, are so well acquainted with each others misshappe, as now they enioyed pleasure in this happie successe. The next morning, Palmerin called Betlechino his Squire, saying to him.

Thou must presently goe to Elayne to the King Maulerino, and hauing saluted him on my behalfe, deliuer him these letters, wherein his maiestie shall see, acquainted with all that hath happened, but make all possible speede thou canst, because at thy returne wee will sette to sea presently. The Squire being gone, Palmerin gaue in charge to Dalcaro to see his shippes victualled and prouided, and

that

that without which Muzabelino had giuen him.

Afterward hee went to bid Agriola and Laurana good morrow, and then comming to Frysoll, the king of Sparta, and Olorico, who were all pleasantly discoursing together in their Chamber, hee saide to them. Assuredly my good friendes, if fortune had beene so aduerse to me, that I could not haue found Trineus, or the meane to deliuer you from the enchauntment, I had giuen my fare well to Armes, riches, and honor, and would haue haunted those paths where neuer man trode. For with what face could I approch the presence of my sister and Aunt, hauing lost them whome they liue onely to loue. And you noble Prince Olorico, haue iust occasion to complaine on me, that haue caused you to endure such paine and trauaile: but in recompence of this ouer great wrong, I will cause you to enioy her whom you haue so long faithfully loued, and so soone as I am arriued at Constantinople, I will send Ambassadours to my Lord the Soldane, that he may accept you as his sonne in my sterde.

By Lorde, answered Olorico, the honour you haue done me in accepting my rampante, I account to exceede all other curtesies, and though for a time I haue béene vnfortunate, I take it patiently, assuring you by the word of a Prince, that I imagine the man not woorthie to taste the sweete, that cannot abide to feele the sower. By this time are Palmerins Letters come to the King Maulerino, who hauing vnderstood their contents, ioyfull of Palmerins returne, and of his good fortune in finishing the enchauntments, hee came presently with his traine to Malfada, where to discourse the pleasure on each side conceiued, the honourable and gracious curtesies bestowed, with all the especiall fauours beséeming a king and so woorthie personages, is farre beyonde my capacitie, and therefore I referre it to your gentle consideration. But at Palmerins intreatie, Dulacco was made Lorde and chéefe Gouernour of Malfada, and diuers other territories néere adioyning,

which

which moued Palmerin thus to thanke the King. Seeing your maieſtie for my ſake, hath beſtowed this Iſlande on my worthie good friende, to the ende that the name of the wicked Malfada may be vtterly raced forth, let me intreate that it may hencefoorth be called the Iſle of the two Louers, becauſe therein was enchaunted two the moſt loyall ſeruants that euer Loue had, hauing endured wonderfull and variable fortunes, and yet there met in the ende to their no little comfort.

Let it be, quoth the King, as you haue appointed, and whoſoeuer henceforth calleth it other wiſe, ſhall be held among vs as an open blaſphemer. Afterwarde the King accompanied Palmerin and his friendes to their Shippes, and there committed them to their proſperous voyage: ſo Palmerin, his ſeauen companions, the two Princeſſes, with his Squires Bellechino and Colmelio, entred the ſhippe that Muzabelino gaue him, and an hundred Knights which the King Maulerino had giuen him, were embarqued in another ſhippe well appointed, ſo hoyſing ſaile, with a merrie gale of winde they launced into the ſea, and the King with his traine returned to his Court, leauing Dulacco quietly poſſeſſed of the Iſle of the two Louers.

Chap.

Chap. LVIII.

How Palmerin and his companions saying on the Sea, met with Ptolome: and of the honourable entertainment the Emperour Florendos, and the Ladies made them, when they arriued at Constantinople.

THree dayes sayled our Knights without anie aduenture, and on the fourth, as Phœbus gan enter his Chariot, to display his golden beames on his Uncle Neptunes regions, Palmerin standing aloft on the decke, espied a great Carricke, which with full saile made haste towards them, and by the Banners he discerned that it was of Turkie, wherefore he cried to his companions to arme themselues. Suddenly were they all come aloft armed, and the hundred knights in the other ship were likewise in readinesse, when the Carricke being come nére them, they might behold the Turks strongly pounded, and Ptolome their Captaine bravely encouraging them. At length they burkled togither, and a daungerous fight began betwéene them, so that seuen of the King Maulerinos knights were slaine, the King of Sparta sore wounded by Ptolome, and Dyardo in great perill of his life. When Palmerin saw the King of Sparta fall, and that the Moores had daungerouslie hurt diuerse of his Frends, fearing the King was slaine, he came to Ptolome, and after manie sharpe strokes on either side, at last got him downe, when pulling his Helmet furiouslie from him, thinking to haue smitten off his head, Ptolome cried: Kill me not sir Knight,

for I yéelde my ſelfe to thée. Palmerin knowing his frénd, ſayd to his companions and the reſt. Giue ouer my frénds and fight no longer, for falſe fortune hath to much deluded vs.

Ah, woe this Ptolome, why haue I dealt ſo hardly with thée? is it poſſible that any man may bee likened to mée in miſhap? no ſoner am I out of one, but preſently I fall into another: by heauen (déere Frénde) if I had ſlaine thée, right ſone would I haue béene reuenged on my ſelfe. Sée then, ſweet Ptolome, how Palmerin grœues for his offence, more then if he had loſt the beſt limme on his bodie. When Ptolome beheld his Friend Palmerin, and by him the noble Prince Tryneus, embracing them, he ſaid. O Sauiour of the world, howe highly haſt thou this day fauoured mée, permitting mée to finde my déereſt Frénndes: then they brought him to the Princeſſe Agriola, in her Cabin, who was not a little glad to beholde the man, that endured with her ſome part of miſerie, and Colmelio was ioyfull to behold Sir Ptolome, in that their hap was to bée parted when they were ledde to be ſolde as ſlaues: but Agriola would néedes heare all his fortunes, ſince the firſt time of their ſeparation, which hée and Colmelio trulie recounted. Beléeue me Ptolome, ſaid Palmerin, I ſée wée all haue had our ſhares in aduerſitie, and hardlie can we iudge whoſe wrong hath béene greateſt: but howe came you thus to bée Captaine among the Turkes? My Lord, quoth he, the Princeſſe Alchidiana bought me, and charged mée to ſeeke you, both by Sea and Lande: and for my defence gaue mee fortie knights, of whom there nowe remaines but ten aliue. That Ladie am I highlie beholding to, ſayde Palmerin, and for the wrong I haue done her by the death of her knights, I will excuſe my ſelfe by an honourable Ambaſſade, when I ſhall ſend the Prince Olorico to her againe. And that thou Ptolome maiſt knowe ſome of my good happe, vnderſtande that I haue founde my Father and Mother, who are Florendos, the King of Macedon, and Griana the Daughter

and

and heyre to the Emperour of Greece. I did euer perſwade my ſelfe, quoth Polome, that your diſcent was of royall lineage: but I intreate you for my ſake, that theſe knights which your men haue taken, may be gentlie vſed, and enioy their libertie. Palmerin calling them to him, ſaid. For Polomes his ſake that was your Captaine, and her loue that commaunded you to trauaile with him, I wiſh to you as to my ſelfe: yet ſhall you all go with mée to Conſtantinople, that you may helpe to conduct the Prince Olorico backe againe, whom I meane to ſend with you to your Miſtreſſe.

We abide my Lord (quoth they) at your direction, and willingly obey your will, in that wee haue knowne howe déerelie the Soldane loued you, and better fortune coulde not befall vs, then ſo luckilie to méete with you, and the Prince Olorico: as for our Companions that are ſlaine, there is no remedie, for ſuch miſhaps are common where Fortune frowneth. So ſailed they on frendlie togither, and on the Sea we will leaue them, to tell you of the return of the Ambaſſadour Maucetto to the Soldane of Babylon, who hearing that the Perſian had refuſed to aſſiſt him, was ſomewhat offended thereat, but when he ſaw that Palmerin had written, he pacified himſelfe, ſaying. Ah gentle Palmerin, hadſt thou béene in the battell at Conſtantinople, I had not néeded to demaunde helpe of him whom I iudged my Frend: but ſeeing Fortune hath ſhowne her ſelfe ſo contrarie, I will not attempt anie thing from which thou diſſwadeſt me.

Maucetto declared, that Palmerin had likewiſe ſent a Letter to the Princeſſe Alchidiana, which hee commaunded him preſentlie to carrie her: no ſooner had ſhe read the Letter, and thereby vnderſtode his knightly déedes of Chiualrie, but embracing the Ambaſſadour, thus ſpake. Maucetto, neuer couldeſt thou haue brought mee better newes, then of the man whoſe name flouriſheth in all places. The ſweete Letter, written by the hand of the moſt per-

fect knight liuing, full charie and choiſly will I kéepe thé. Ah Ptolome, whom my noble Frénd loues ſo déerely, thée haue I ſent in daungerous hazarde of thy life: but may I once ſée thée againe, thou ſhalt perceiue my loue for Palmerins ſake.

Happie art thou Princeſſe Zephira, hauing with thée the myrror of mankinde. My Lord, quoth thée, (as though Palmerin had béene preſent) wilt thou wrong thy ſelfe ſo much as to tarrie with her? Dare the Soldans Siſters vaunt that they loue thée? They be faire, as I vnderſtand, but not ſo faire that thou ſhouldeſt refuſe me for thē. What haue I ſaid? doubtleſſe matter to mine owne reproach, for if thou wouldeſt, the kingly offers of my Father, and my importunate intreaties could no way moue thée: hardlie may the Perſians preuaile with thée, eſpeciallie in ſuch a weightie cauſe as loue is. Maucetto, what ſayeſt thou? is Lord Palmerin like to ſtay long in Perſia with the Soldans Siſters? No Madame, quoth he, I heard him ſay verie often that he ſhoulde depart thence before a Moneth was expired.

In theſe and ſuch like ſpéeches they continued, wherin wee purpoſe to leaue them, for by this time is Palmerin and his Frénndes arriued in the hauen of Conſtantinople, and Colmelio is ſent before to the Pallace, to aduertiſe the Emperour of theſe ioyfull tydings. As Colmelio entered the great Hall, the firſt man he mette was his Father Gerrard, who was newly made Lord Chamberlaine to the King Florendos: wherefore falling on his knée before him, he ſaid. Father, little did I thinke to finde you exalted to ſuch honour, happie was the day when you ſaued Prince Palmerin, and much more happineſſe is this day, in that I bring the moſt ioyfull newes that euer man rode this Court. Olde Gerrard exceeding glad to behold his ſonne, catching him in his armes, ſaid. Welcome Colmelio, to thy aged Father, hath thou heard any tydings of thy Lord and Maiſter? Comfort me Father, quoth he Colmelio, and

you

you shall heare matters of marualle. At that instant came the Emperour with the King Florendos into the Hall, and all the Ladies going to heare diuine seruice, wherefore Gerard thus spake to his highnesse. My Lord, see here my Sonne Colmelio, who long time hath trauailed in search of Prince Palmerin, he hath some message of importance to deliuer to your Maiestie. Right welcome is he, quoth the Emperour, say what thou wilt, my friend, thou hast free libertie.

Mightie Emperour, sayd Colmelio, your Sonne Prince Palmerin is arriued in the Hauen, and with him the young Prince Trineus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, the good Knight Sir Prolome, the fiue Princes which went with him from Macedon, the two Princesses of England and Durace, with diuerse other vnknowne to me: and saluting your Maiestie with his humble dutie, intreateth that Horses may be sent for them and the Ladies, that hee and they may come to kisse your highnesse hande. The Emperour, Florendos and the Ladies, were readie to swoune with ioy at these tydings, and hauing embraced the Messenger, commaunded a royall traine to goe thether in hast, and goodly Palfreis to bring them to the Pallace: some ranne on foote to the Port, other on horsebacke, so that before the Emperours traine came, such store of Gentlemen and Marchants were there to receiue them, as hardly they could thrust one by another. After they were all mounted on horsebacke, with great ioy and triumph they rode towards the Pallace, where Trineus falling on his knee before the Emperour, sayd.

Long liue your Maiestie in health and happinesse, here may you beholde the man, for whom my Lorde Palmerin your Sonne, hath endured such paine and trauaile. The Emperour perceiuing by his speeches that hee was Trineus the Prince of Allemaigne, thus answered. I hope my Lorde, that you will beare with mine age and weakenesse, which hinders me from entertaining you as fain I would,

but I beſeech you to aryſe, for it till beſéemes ſo great a Prince, ſo humble himſelfe in ſuch ſort. Florendos and Griana (in this time) welcommed their ſonne, Ariſmena the King of Sparta, Armida her Fryſoll, and the olde Emperour and Empreſſe graciouſly entertained Agriola and Laurana, each abſent frend ſo embraced and welcommed, as all the day was ſpent onelie in thoſe ceremonies. The next morning Palmerin diſpatched his Dwarfe Vrbanillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, that he and Polynarda might underſtand theſe long expected newes: and afterward comming to Sir Fryſoll, he ſayd to him. Brother, our Mother hath enriched vs with a Siſter ſince our departure, and my Siſter Armida me with two Nephewes, I pray you let vs go ſée them.

Hereupon the Nurſes brought the yong Princes, the eldeſt of them being named Dyerius, and the yongeſt Belcar, the yong Princeſſe, Daughter to Florendos and Griana, was called Deniſa, ſo faire and comely were the infants, as if Nature had ſtudied to make them moſt exquiſite. Beleeue me ſaid Fryſoll, quoth Palmerin, if my ſiſter continue as ſhe begins, the Realme of Hungaria ſhall hardly want heires: what? two at a blow, Sir Ladie it is a ſigne of good fertilitie. And when you are entred the eſtate of wedlocke, anſwered Fryſoll, if your linage increaſe according to the greatneſſe of deſire, Madam Polynarda ſhall be as well ſped as her neighbors. Thus reſted the Princes togither, attending newes of the courrier, that went with Vrbanillo to the Emperor of Allemaigne, who at that time was at Vienna.

Chap.

Chap. LIX.

How the Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Redona, conducted the prince Olorico into Assiria, where hee was espoused to the princesse Alchidiana.

FOr the space of a Moneth and more Palmerin, Trineus and Agriola, sojourned at Constantinople, till all things were prepared for them to trauaile towardes Allemaigne: during which time, Palmerin shewed such signes of loue to the Prince Olorico as he wold seldoune be forth of his companie. And seeing that more and more his amourous passions encreased, hee sayde. Deere friend Olorico, although I am no lesse carefull of your long continued kindnesse, then I am desirous to requite the paine and trauaile you haue suffered in my companie, yet haue I determined (so you like thereof) to send you to Assyria, and with you the Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Redona, as Ambassadours to my Lord the Soldane, with such an honourable traine before, as Mysor shall haue no occasion to complaine.

Nor do I this (sweete Prince) as enuious of your companie, or that I stand in feare of the Soldane, but onelie to keepe my promise, which was, that I would ayde you to my vttermost, to accomplish the marriage betweene you and Madame Alchidiana, for whom I see your minde is incessantly troubled. My Lorde, answered Olorico, if euer perfect loue might be discerned in a Princes heart, doubtlesse it is most amplie deciphered in yours. Where you can finde

finde in anie Hiſtorie, ſemblable affection? or that a Chriſtian would ſo fauour his enemie, that is contrarie to him in lawe and profeſſion? Marke the humanitie, that ſo great a Prince would ſo much abaſe himſelfe, to accept as his companion in Armes, the poore Sonne of the King of Arabia, practiſing for his good, not the ſuretie alone of the Chriſtians, but the alliance of the greateſt Lord in Aſia. Wherefore my noble Lorde, ſince of your accuſtomed good nature you haue made me this offer, of ſimple iudgement ſhould I ſhewe my ſelfe to refuſe it. I accept your gracious kindneſſe, and aſſure your ſelfe of his readie ſeruice, whom your princely vertues haue bounde to you, as for euer I will name my ſelfe the ſeruaunt to the Prince of Greece. Hereupon Palmerin wrote to the Soldane of Babylon in ſubſtance following.

The Letter of Prince Palmerin, to the great Soldane of Babylon.

RIght puiſſant Lord of Aſſyria, whoſe obedience we owe [illegible] and Countrey, are cauſes ſufficient to call [illegible] knight errant, lord reſtaurer of all wrauging [illegible] ſhips and alliances, I hope your highneſſe will not miſlike of my returne from Perſia to Conſtantinople. And becauſe there were ſome of your highneſſe Ambaſſadours at Meaco, ſince you haue reſolued to bee no longer open hoſtilitie, I will nowe reueale vnto you, that by the grace and fauour of the highe God, ſince my departure from your Court, I haue obtained knowledge of my parents, who are ſuch, as if you take the wrong of Conſtantinople, you gaine more to be their friend, then Palmerin, whome heretofore you haue ſo cruelly hated, and is nowe become the onelie heyre to that Empyre. Wherefore my Lord, if for my ſake you will graunt ſo much, as to forgeet reuenge for your deceaſſed brother Garnezo, both we and all ours

shall continually aduenture selues, your friendes and allistaunts against all your enemies. Contrariwise, if you will follow your former opinion, wee must defende our selues so well as we may. And for I can no more (withoute forsake my Countrey, Parents and friendes) to returne againe to your seruice: I sende you the Prince Olorico, a knight both valiant and hardie as anie in all Turkie, without exception of your Court, the great Turke, or the Soldane of Persia, and he to serue you in my steede. Desiring your highnes by that affection wherby you did beare me whe the Prince Arnalno was slaine in your presence, that you accept him as your Sonne, and giue him in marriage your Daughter Alchidiana, as the man that hath best deserued her, if euer Prince might merit a Ladies loue by bountie and choyse chiualrie. So shall you performe an action of michie honour, and binde me continually to acknowledge this kindnesse.

Your Palmerin d'Oliua.

Another Letter he wrote to the Princesse Alchidiana, the tenure whereof was thus.

The Letter of Prince Palmerin, to the Princesse of Affrica.

TO you Madam Alchidiana, daughter to the great Soldane of Babilon, Palmerin d'Oliua your knight, sendeth health condigne to your magnificence. Madame, sending to your father the Duke of Mensa, and the Count of Redona our Embassadours, to intreate of perpetuall peace and alliance betweene his Realme and ours, whereto may it please you to giue fauourable assistance: I thought good by them likewise to write to your excellencie, with earnest intreate to receiue me as yours, the Prince Olorico, here

to the Crowne of Arabia. You know faire Madame, that neuer had he come to your Fathers Court, had not the perillous battaile against the proude Brother of Amarano prouoked him, nor would he haue aduentured the dangers of the Sea, but in hope (at length) to purchase your gracious loue. For these considerations, good Madame, entertaine him into your sober thoughts, who hath no more feared to spend his blood for your sake, and thrust his life into infinite dangers, then I haue done to sette my hande and penne to this paper. I know that your grace, beautie, and great bewtie, commandeth the choicest Prince on the earth for your Husband, and (to shelde my selfe from blame) I know that I promised you my seruice, when I should returne from Constantinople: but how hath it fallen out: your Palmerin is knowne by them that haue like authoritie ouer him, as your loue hath of the Prince Olorico. I am a Christian, a stranger, Sonne to the simple king of Macedon, and the Daughter to the Emperour of Greece, beside, of verie little or no desert at all. Hee is of your Lawe, your Neighbour, sonne to the rich king of Arabia, and a Prince of as high vertue as euer was in my company: witnesse whereof he made on the *P*hrigians, and in an hundred places since in my presence. Wherefore Madame, if noblenesse of hart, and loyall loue deserue so great an alliance, I know no Prince this day liuing more worthie then he. Assuring you withall, that more gladly would I die the death, then sollicite the cause of him, whome I would not imagine vnworthie my person.

Your Knight, Palmerin d'Oliua.

When he had sealed these Letters, hee gaue them to the Ambassadours, who accompanied with fiftie Grecian Knights, went to the Hauen where their shippes was prepared, after them followed the King Maulerinos hundred Knights, the number being supplied with other, in-

head of them that were slaine, and after them went the Knights that came with Ptolome, then came the Prince Olorico and Palmerin, deuising by the way on manie matters.

My Lord, quoth Palmerin, I imagine you nowe remember our taking by the Admirall Olimaell, and feare that the like mishappe may againe befall you: Therefore (as your guarde) giue you the hundred Knights I had of the king Maulerino, and fiftie Knights naturally borne in Greece, as able in Armes as any other whatsoeuer, intreating you to holde me excused, if I giue you not such estate as beseemes your nobilitie. Worthie Palmerin, answered the Prince, the greatest Lord that is, might well content himselfe with the honourable companie you haue giuen mee. And did not extreame passions ouer-rule me, and call mée hence to her seruice whom I haue onely chosen, I would renounce Arabia and the Lawe of Mahomet, onely to liue in your companie. But in what place my fortune guides me hereafter, neither Parents or Friendes shall hinder mee to saie that I am your vowed and affectionate seruaunt. The like doo you conceiue of me, sayde Palmerin. So with teares they left eathother, Olorico and all his companie being abrode, such fauourable winde and weather they had, as without any danger they safely arriued where the Soldane lay: and first the tenne knights went on shore, they that were left of the companie which the Princesse Alchidiana gaue to Ptolome, and comming before the Princesse, saide.

Madame, your Knight Sir Ptolome humbly saluteth you by vs, sending your excellencie this Letter. Beside, there is nowe arriued at the porte, the Prince Olorico, and certaine Ambassadours from the valiant Palmerin, Prince of Greece and Macedon, who come on his behalfe to kisse your hand. The Princesse hauing heard these newes, and read the Letter which Ptolome sent, containing the great good fortunes of Palmerin, was inwardly so rauished with

delight, as a long ſpace ſhe remained ſilent, but at length brake forth into theſe ſpeeches. Ah Fortune, how well thou knoweſt to change matters which way thou pleaſeſt, not according to the will and deſire of paſſionate minds, but on the behalfe of the higheſt imperfections. Ah Palmerin, the man whom my heart ſhall euer loue, how may faire Polinarda iuſtly tearme her ſelfe happie, hauing thee for her Lord and loue, conſidering that the beautie and graces of ſo manie Ladies conquered with thy deſerts nor the ſumptuous riches continually offered thee, could once diuert thee from thy firſt affection. Ah Alchidiana, that which hath made ſo many Ladyes and Knights fortunate, in compaſſing the onely iſſue of their deſires, doth now remaine for thy torment alone, making thee the moſt vnhappie creature vnder the Sunne. Agriola, Griana, Ariſmena, Armida, and Zeplyra, are they (ſweete knight) by thy meanes in aſſurance of their louers. Trineus, Fryſoll, the King of Sparta, Maulerino, Abimar, Tomano, and diuers other, are their Realmes quieted, and their Ladyes triumphing in their ioyes, onely by the price of thy blood and daunger of thy life? And muſt I alone remaine vnpraiſed, for euer confounded, hauing loſt the knight I loued as my ſoule? While the princeſſe continued theſe complaints, the prince Olorico and the Ambaſſadours were come before the ſoldane, and being entertained by him with verie gracious countenance, they preſented the Letters from Palmerin, which being read in preſence of all his Lords, the ſoldane thus anſwered.

My Friends, I will impart theſe newes to my Counſell and my Daughter, and afterwarde make you anſwere as I may. Hereuppon the Duke of Menſa, the Counte of Redona, and the Prince Olorico withdrew themſelues, and ſoone after the ſoldane ſent for his daughter, thus ſpeaking to her. Daughter, our Princes thinke good, and haue counſelled mee to make peace with Palmerin, who at this preſent is heyre of Greece, and requireth in mariage

of

of our truce, that I should giue you in marriage to the renowned Prince Olorico. Aduise your selfe hereon, for Palmerin hath earnestly intreated it by writing, and here I haue a letter for you, I think to the same effect. The Princesse hauing read the Letter, returned this answere. It is verie true my Lord, his request to mee is for the selfe same cause: seeing therefore it liketh you, and the Princes of our Realme think it conuenient, in respect of the common profit and good may ensue thereby, it is not for me to make denial.

Right glad was the Soldane of this answere, wherefore he saide, go then faire Daughter and decke your selfe accordingly, for after Dinner in the presence of the Ambassadours, you shall be affianced to the Prince. Olorico since his arriuall had talked but little with his Ladie, wherefore hee nowe determined to go see her, and meeting her as she returned from the Soldane, he saluted her with great reuerence, but the Princesse feigning that she knew nothing yet of their marriage, thus spake to him. I vnderstand my Lorde, that your companion Palmerin hath altogether forsaken vs. Madame, quoth the Prince, if hee haue abandoned your companie, it is onely by the fauour of Fortune, who hath beene a greater friend to him then any man beside: yet cannot the great honours and possessions he now enioyeth, make him forgette you, in that at my departure he said, for euer he would loue and die your knight. God keepe him, said the Princesse, where euer he is, for still is my heart vowed to his remembrance, and gladly can I do as much for him as for my Brother, though his present aduancement hinder him from my seruice. Such is his fruit Madame, quoth he, in your fauour, that you will not refuse any honest request he makes to your excellencie, in which respect hee hath sent mee to intreate you, that you will be assistant to the peace he offereth with your father, and that you would vouchsafe me so much honour, as to his loue to entertaine me into your seruice: which to begin, I

preſent you my heart, that never ſince the day of our departure from Conſtantinople, hath enioyed any reſt, bëing abſent from the onely meane of my comfort. If then I haue liued all this while in ſome hope, by remembraunce of your excëding graces and courteſies, beyonde all other ſhould I account my ſelfe in happineſſe, if now at length you receiue me as your ſeruant. I receiue you, ſaide the Princeſſe, for Palmerins ſake, and for your owne deſerts which haue bëene ſo worthie, requiting you with equall affection, ſo that you denie mée not one requeſt. Nothing ſhall you bë denied (ſwëete Princeſſe) quoth hë, if by my life it may be compaſſed.

Nor will I demaunde any thing of ſo great value, ſaid ſhe, this is the fauour you ſhall graunt me, hëereafter when time ſhal ſerue, that you wil conduct me to Conſtantinople, there to behold the faire princeſſe Polynarda, and the magnificent Court of noble Palmerin, in recompence whereof, I giue my ſelfe to be your wife, and accept you as my Lord and Husband. If Olorico was now well pleaſed, I referre to your iudgements, wherefore confirming their promiſes, by kiſſes and embracings, with ſolemne proteſtations and irrenocable vowes, they departed thence to their Chambers.

After Dinner, the Princeſſe attired in moſt ſumptuous garments, came into the Hall with her waiting Ladies, when the Soldane ſent for the Ambaſſadours, and thus ſpake to them. My Friendes, I now perceiue the man to bee ouer foliſh that truſteth in himſelfe, I thought by my power to deſtroy Greece, where on the contrarie my people are deſtroyed. I thought to continue vnquenchable hatred toward your Maiſter, and now I am conſtrained to graunt him peace, yet not conſtrained, but by the worke of the greateſt God I am moued ſo to do, which in the preſence of all my Lordes I proteſt, and with as good will as hë doth demaunde it. Sëe then the power of that Maieſtie, which can ſubdue and conquere where he liſt, and I ſweare

to

to you by my Crowne, that the good fortune of Palmerin contenteth me as well, as if he were mine owne sonne. Mightie Soldane, answered the Duke of Mensa, if you resolue to loue the worthie Prince Palmerin, both hée and his will performe the like to you, and on his behalfe we promise faithfully, that against all your enemies (Christendome excepted) you shall be assured of his succour and assistance.

I request no better assurance, quoth the Soldane, then this that he hath sent, and that you may witnesse I am his faithfull Friendes: at this instant shall the peace be ratified by all the Lordes and Princes here present, and to seale the same, as he requested, I giue my daughter to the Prince Olorico. Great ioy was generally made for this good agrément, and the two louers were espoused together within few dayes after: and the time being come for the Ambassadours returne to Constantinople, Alchidiana sent diuers rich gifts to Palmerin and Polinarda, the like did the Soldane and the Prince Olorico.

Chap. LX.

How Palmerin, Trineus, and Agriola, accompanied with many great Lords and princes, went to the Emperor of Allemaigne at Vienna, where great triumphs were made at the celebrating of the marriage between Trineus and the princesse Agriola.

Done after the Prince Olorico, and the Ambassadours of Greeece were gone towardes Assiria, Palmerin (although the aged Emperour very much dissuaded him) made prouision for his speedy voyage to Allemaigne, and hauing conducted the King of Sparta and

and his Aunt Ariſmena ſome parte of their way home-ward, at their returne to the Citie of Conſtantinople, hee came to the Duke of Pontus, ſaying. I remember the time when you did cutte off the great Turks head, an acte deſerning good and eſpeciall recompence, and that you thereby deliuered vs, and perfoꝛmed it at the motion of the Pꝛinceſſe Laurana, her haue you loued euer ſince both on lande and Sea, and her Countrey is not farre hence: will ye now make her your Ladie and Wife? I pꝛomiſe ye my aſſiſtance ſo farre as I can.

My Loꝛd, aunſwered the Duke, fearing to offend you, I ſtill deferred to mooue you in this cauſe, but ſeeing wee are nowe ſo happily fallen into theſe tearmes, I will not conceale the truth from you. In ſoth my Loꝛde, when firſt I ſawe her, I loued her, and haue euer ſince continued in this hope, that time at length would fauour my intent. It ſufficeth, ſaide Palmerin, and pꝛeſently hee acquainted the Emperour therewith, who thinking the match very meete and conuenient, they were the next day married by the Archbiſhop of Conſtantinople, and in ſhoꝛt time after went to take poſſeſſion of their Duchie of Durace, where they were receiued very honourably, and the whole ſtate yeelded vp into the Dukes hande.

When Palmerin ſawe that the moſt parte of his companions were departed, at the earneſt intreatamnce of the Pꝛince Trineus and Agriola, he ſet foꝛward to Allemaigne, accompanied with Fryſoll and Armida, whome hee conducted into the Realme of Hungaria, where Fryſoll was crowned King by reaſon of his Fathers deceaſe: there went with him likewiſe Diardo of Bohemia, the Pꝛince Euſtace, Ptolome, and other Loꝛds of great account. Such good ſpeed they made in theyꝛ iourney, as in ſhoꝛt time they arrived at Vienna, where the Emperour being aduertiſed of their comming by the Dwarfe, came with his courtly traine to meete them, and taking his Sonne Tryneus in his armes, ſaid. I ſee it is the will of God my Sonne, that hereafter

I shall haue as great ioy by thée, as in thy long absence I haue had griefe and sorrow, all which I patiently put vp, for the loue of thy brother, the noble Prince Palmerin, and faire Agriola of England, that well deserues it. But in good sooth my Children, had you not come in so happie time, I should haue beene driuen to meruailous feares. For the King of Fraunce perceiuing, that I would not giue my daughter in marriage to his eldest sonne, demaunded the King Recinde of Spaine his daughter, who graunted his request: so that they twaine, with the aide of the King of England, haue leuyed such an Armie on the Sea, as neuer was the like seene to passe the Rheine. But seeing you returned in so good disposition, the lesse account I make of their angrie menaces: yet are they the three principall Kings of Christendome.

My Lord answered Palmerin, be not you dismaide at their enterprise, for ere manie dayes bee expired, I hope to see all matters quietly pacified, and that without anie effusion of blood. The lesse is my doubt, quoth the Emperour, in that with such good fortune you haue finished your intentions, for nothing you begin but comes to luckie ende. Witnesse hereof appeareth in the search of my Sonne Tryneus, whom the best Knights in Christendome haue laboured to finde: but all their trauaile I see hath beene spent in vaine. By this time they were come to the Pallace, where they were graciously receiued by the Ladies. Alas my Freendes, said the Empresse, which of you shall I first embrace? Ah my Sonne Tryneus, howe sorrowfull hast thou made me since thy departure from England? iust cause hast thou to thanke the Heauens, who protected thée still in so manie daungers, and forget not thy Brother Palmerin, who hath endured such trouble for thy sake. Faire Daughter, quoth she to the Princesse Agriola, welcome are you indeed. God send you better fortune hereafter, then you haue had alreadie, which yet hath beene a Touch-stone of your loyaltie. But while these speeches continued, howe the other two

Louers with piercing regard beheld eache other, and how many gracious signes passed as secrete Ambassadours betweene them. Polynarda was clad in such costly accoustrements for the pleasure she conceiued since the Dwarffes arriuall at the Court, as shee seemed another Iuno, when shee stood to abide the arbitrement of Paris, or like Voluptas following her Mother Venus.

But fearing least this amiable encounter, should decipher some part of her former courtesies to her friend, which as yet was vnknowne to any but Bryonella, she locked vp all secrets with so sweet a kisse, as would haue contented the rudest of the Gods, had it bene Vulcan or Neptune themselues. And comming to salute the Princesse Agriola, sayd. No meruaile (faire sister) if your loue wrought wonders in my brothers minde, for vnfainedly I speake it, your exquisite graces deserue the greatest seruice in the world. Alas Madame, answered Agriola, if nature, or they that had the charge of me in my youth, could haue painted me with such beautie as I see in you, or enriched me with wisedome, able to deuise with my Lord when he came to see mee: then could I haue said somewhat of the paines he hath taken for mee, but I know my selfe so full of imperfections, as the loue he beares me proceedeth of his owne good nature, not by any merit he can behold me. Then Palmerin kneeling before the Emperour, said. I beseech you my Lord graunt me one request, which shall be no way preiudiciall to your Maiestie. Arise sir Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, aske what thou wilt, and thou shalt haue it.

My Lord Tryneus, and the Princesse Agriola, saide Palmerin, are religiously married betweene themselues, let me intreate your highnesse to confirme it with open solemnization, before the Duke of Mecæna heere present: whom I meane to send into England, that he may resolue the King howe himselfe was an eye witnesse of their marriage. The Emperour liked so well of Palmerins motion, as some after the wedding was solemnized, and he comming to Bryonel-

la, courteously taking her by the hand, said. My good friend Brionella, I am now to be discharged of the promise I made at my last being here: in witnesse whereof, I haue brought your knight sir Ptolome, and him I commend to your further fauour. So highly am I beholding vnto you my Lord, quoth shee, as neuer shall I bee able to returne sufficient recompence: but were we equall in ioy with the Prince Tryneus and faire Agriola, then would I think no storme could wrong vs.

Palmerin at these words presently left her, and perswaded the Emperour so well, as Ptolome and Brionella were likewise espoused togither, when Palmerin conferring with the Princesse Agriola, thus spake to her. Now may you iudge Madame whether I deceiued ye or no, and if the estate of my Lord Tryneus be any lesse then I told ye. Had I not giuen faithfull credit to your speeches, answered Agriola, I would not haue forsaken my Parents and friendes so rashly: but I hope they will pardon me, in that I haue done nothing but to their honour. On the morrow, with exceeding ioy and rare tryumphs, were Palmerin and Polinarda married togither, and thus was long and faithfull loue worthily requited. Ptolome was now created Duke of Saxon, and Dyardo toke his leaue to goe see his wife Cordonya, whom he had not heard of since the time he was taken by the Pirates.

The famous Hiſtorie

Chap. LXI.

Howe Palmerin ſent Ptolome Duke of Saxon (as his Ambaſſador) to the King of France, and the Duke Euſtace of Mecæna, to the King of England, to treate of the peace betweene them.

Certaine dayes before the departure of Dyardo toward Bohemia, Palmerin in the preſence of the Emperour and all the Princes, gaue the charge of his Embaſſade to the Duke Ptolome: which he ſhould deliuer not onely to the moſt Chriſtian King of France himſelf, but alſo to his yongeſt ſonne, who now had eſpouſed the Ducheſſe of Buroundie. So departed Ptolome from Vienna, accompanied with many Lordes and knights, and at length arriued at Digeon, where the Prince Lewes being acquainted with the cauſe of his comming, thus anſwered the Ambaſſadour.

My Lorde, ſometime I had acquaintance in Fraunce, with the moſt renowned Palmerin, and becauſe hee is the onely man of the worlde, to whom I owe all friendly affection, I will perſwade my Father to ioyne in peace with him. Nowe was Ptolome in good hope that his trauaile woulde ſorte to ſucceſſiue ende: wherefore they preſently iourneyed to the King, who as then was with his eſtates at Paris, and hauing hearde Palmerins requeſt, who nowe was wedded to the Princeſſe Polynarda, and therefore his intended warre with the Emperour, would extende to the hurt of the man he loued, thus anſwered. Duke of Saxon, I

am

am sufficiently acquainted with the bountie of thy Maister, and verie well I doo remember, that at his beeing in Fraunce he combatted for his Ladie Polinarda: yet was I ignoraunt till nowe of that hath happened. But leaste hee should conceiue, that I seeke to make a commotion in Christendome, let him enioy his Ladie and Wife in peace, although shee was sometime promised to mine eldest Sonne, reseruing the conditions of our amitie, that our first Nephewes and Neeces may match togither in marriage, therby to continue the honour of their predecessours. As for the kings of Spaine and England, who moued me to giue them assistaunce, on there behalfe I can make you no certaine answere, vntill my Messengers be returned home againe.

Gracious Lord, quoth Ptolome, I dare assure you in the name of my Maister, that hee hath euermore esteemed your fauour among the best Christian Princes, and will not refuse the marriage betweene your Children hereafter. And this continuation of your amitie, will cause that neither the kings of Spaine or England will seeke to molest him: but with your highnesse ioyne in loue and friendship. With this answer Ptolome returned to Vienna, where the Emperour and Palmerin welcommed him with exceeding honour: and by this time had the Duke Eustace taken landing in England, where deliuering the summe of his charge to the king, his highnesse returned him this answere. Although my Lord Ambassadour, both your Maister and the Prince Tryneus did me manifest dishonor, yet not to withstand peace, which still ought to bee preferred before warre, I graunt his request, and will presently call heme my Garrisons, shaking hands with him in honourable concord. As for the wrong done to my Daughter, I am content to excuse it, beleeuing that shee was not conueyed hence but with her will: thanking the Prince for the honour he hath done her, seeing she would leaue her Parents and friendes so lightly. I thinke my gracious Lord, answered the Duke, that when you consider what your Daughter hath done,

you will not touch her with want of witte or iudgement: for in reſpect of the long enmitie betweene the Emperour and you, ſhee deſired that her marriage might ſort to this happie ende. Nor would ſhe haue departed hence with the Prince Tryneus, without a faithfull and reſolued promiſe of marriage: which is performed, with as great honour as euer was done to the daughter of a King. Thinke you, quoth the King, that had not the great friendſhip of Tryneus, (when againſt his Fathers will, he came with Palmerin to aſſiſt me) qualified the weight of mine anger againſt him, but I woulde haue purſued the iniurie he did to me: yet did I referre his ſeruice, to the iudgements of my Lords of England, who perſwaded me to reuenge, which you well perceiue as yet I haue not done.

Prince Palmerin, quoth the Duke, is ſo vertuous, as rather woulde hee haue runne on a thouſande deathes, then your daughters honour ſhoulde anie way haue beene impeached: but beeing aſſured of this fortunate iſſue, both hee and Tryneus aduentured as they did. And ſorrie am not I, ſaid the King, that all things are come ſo well to paſſe, but ſeeing we are entred thus farre in ſpeeche, tell mee (I pray you) how Palmerin came to the knowledge of his Parents, and howe hee finiſhed the aduentures at the Caſtle of the tenne Rockes, and the daungerous Iſle of Malfada, which neuer any Knight could compaſſe before? Then the Duke rehearſed euerie accident, how amourous the great Turke was on the Princeſſe Agriola, and each ſeuerall occaſion as they fell out: at which report, the Queene with her Ladies were preſent, who hearing the diſcourſe of ſo ſtraunge and variable fortunes, ſaid.

I thought my Daughter had learned more modeſtie, then leauing her Fathers Court, to followe a Knight vnknowne to her in ſtraunge Countries: but ſeeing the ende hath fallen out ſo well, henceforth I ſhall remaine in better contentment, ſeeing a Prince of ſo great renowne hath now eſpouſed her.

While

While this conference endured, the Duke earnestly beheld the Princesse Sabinda, Daughter to the Prince of Sansuega, and Neece to the Queene: and of such excellent grace and beautie he esteemed her, as forgetting the death of his Father, who deceased since his departure from Allemaigne, hee became so amourous of her, that he demaunded of the Queene if shee were her Daughter. Shee is not my Daughter, quoth the Queene, but the Daughter of my Brother, the Prince of Sansuega.

Right glad was the Duke thereof, and resolued to request her of the King in marriage, who knowing the honourable place he held among the Princes of Greece, and what account Palmerin made of him, consented thereto, so that within fewe dayes after they were espoused togither. Hereupon, to accompany the Princesse, and to confirm the peace, the King sent the Duke of Gaule, and another great Lorde with them into Allemaigne, the Queen likewise sent twelue English Ladies to attend on her Daughter.

Thus returned the Duke of Mecæna to Vienna, where he was worthily welcommed by the Emperour, Palmerin and Tryneus, especially the yong Duchesse, and the Ambassadours of England, by whom the peace was faithfully ratified and confirmed.

Chap. LXII.

How Palmerin and Polinarda, departed from Vienna toward Conſtantinople, where after the deceaſe of the aged Emperour Remicius, Palmerin was crowned Emperour of Greece, and what ioy was made at the byrth of Polinarda her firſt ſonne.

After the Ambaſſadours of England were returned home, Palmerin perceiuing the Empire of Allemaigne was in quiet, toke his leaue of the Emperor, minding to conduct his Polinarda to Conſtantinople, not without manie ſorrowfull lamentations, of the mother to forgo her daughter, and faire Agriola her new acquainted ſiſter, yet the Emperour pacified them well inough, by ſhewing what benefit this contract would be to Chriſtendome, and ſo proceeded to his daughter in this maner.

Thou goeſt Polinarda to the ſeate of a great Empire, but more pleaſeth mee the peereleſſe name of Palmerin d'Oliua thy huſbands, then the regiment of ſuch a mightie Monarche. Farewell faire Daughter, continue in faithfull loue and obedience, remembring the reuerende honour a Wife oweth to her Huſband. Polinarda hearing with what earneſt affection her Father ſpake, was ſo ouercome with modeſt duetie of a Childe to her Father, as ſhee was not able to aunſwere one word: which Palmerin beholding, kiſſed the Emperours hande, embraced Tryneus, and toke a courteous farewell of all the Ladies, commaun-

ding

ding the Pages presently to bring away the Princesse Litter, saying to her. Madame, the longer you staie heere, the greater will be your conceit of sorrow, by absence the griefe will be forgotten: let vs then merely iourney to the Citie of Constantinople, where they that neuer sawe you wil reioyce more at your comming, then all the Allemaignes can sorrow for your departure. With like comfortable speeches Palmerin frequented his Ladie by the way, till at length they entred the Realme of Hungaria, where Fryſoll with his cheefest Lords attended their comming, to whom Palmerin in ielting, said.

Brother, I haue aduentured to bring your Sister Polinarda into your Kingdome, take heede if you laie claime to her now as sometime yee did, for I am readie to defende her against whosoeuer dare. I perceiue my Lorde, (quoth Fryſoll) that you will haue my follie generally knowne, I pray you let no such youthfull pranckes be nowe remembred: for as you are the cheefest in chiualrie, so haue the destenies giuen you a Ladie, whome no one in the whole world may paragon. Well may it be said, that God and Nature fore-pointed this match: nothing inferiour to louelie Paris and faire Helena, or puissaunt Hector and wise Andromacha.

Fryſoll accompanied them so farre as Alba, where courteously parting from each other, Fryſoll returned to his Kingdome, and Palmerin sone after came to Constantinople, where no litle ioy was made for his safe arriual, especially for the Princesse Polinarda, who was a right welcome Ladie into Greece, the olde Emperour prouiding such deuises and tryumphes, as the Chronicles to this daye recorde the memorie thereof. About teme or twelue Monethes after, Polynarda was deliuered of a goodly Sonne, who was named Primaleon, whereat the good olde Emperour so inwardly reioyced, as his spirit onely comforted in the good fortune of his Sonnes, and fearing afterwarde to see anie sinister chaunce fall to them, departed this fraile

and

and tranſitorie life, whoſe death was ſignified three dayes before, by the enchaunted Bird. His Funerall was performed as beſeemed ſo great an eſtate, and faine woulde Palmerin haue had his Father the King Florendos crowned Emperour, earneſtly labouring the Princes in the cauſe. But he deſiring them to holde him excuſed, returned them this anſwere.

Great offence were it to God my Friendes, that the honour due to him, who gaue me libertie, defended my renowne, and ſaued my life, ſhoulde bee taken from him and giuen mée: for if vertue, authoritie, and good fortune, are the properties whereby to make choyſe of an Emperour, Palmerin is verie many degrées before me. As for his generoſitie, it is ſo well knowne to you, that it were but loſt labour to make report thereof. For his authoritie, the barbarous nations among whome hee hath liued and conqueringly controlled, deliuer ſufficient teſtimonie. And for his high good fortune in all his enterprizes, where is the man that may bee equalled with him? or what hath hee at anie time attempted, but he hath finiſhed the ſame with wonderfull honour? I could name Kings and Princes that raign onely by his meanes. To ſpeake of the victories he hath obtained, either in battell or ſingle Combate, your eyes haue beheld, and the whole worlde apparantly witneſſeth. This dare I boldly ſay, and ſome of you doe know it better then I, that his onely name will be more feared in Greece, then all your fore-paſſed Emperours haue bene by their greateſt puiſſance.

So well did the people like what the King Florendos had ſayd, as immediately was the Prince Palmerin proclaimed Emperour of Conſtantinople, and the ſame day he was crowned according to the accuſtomed rites and ceremonies. Not long afterward did the King Florendos ſtay with his Sonne, but returned with his Queene to Macedon, where hee gouerned in loue and iuſtice among his Subiects: daily ſending Meſſengers to Conſtantinople, as well

well to vnderstand the health of the Emperour and Empresse, as also of yong Prymaleon, who daily increased in strength and beautie.

Chap. LXIII.

How the Prince Olorico and Alchidiana, thinking to trauaile to Constantinople to see the Emperour Palmerin and the Empresse Polinarda, strayed on the Sea. And what sorrowful mone she made, and how she was found by Palmerin.

IN one of the Chapters before you haue heard, how Olorico promised the Princesse Alchidiana, that he would bring her to the Emperor Palmerins Court, which she imprinted so deepe in her fancie, as but for the common malladie incident to yong Ladies, which is to become great with child after they are espoused, she would haue betaken her selfe to trauaile, within three Moneths after her mariage. Notwithstanding, within short time after that trouble was past, she came to begge a boone of the Soldane, which he would not denie her, thinking shee would demaund no matter of weight. Father, (quoth shee) you must needs giue leaue to the Prince Olorico, that hee may accompanie me to Constantinople, for I desire to see the Emperour Palmerin.

Daughter, saide the Soldane, the trauaile on the Sea is verie perillous, and oftentimes great estates perish by shipwracke: but seeing you are so desirous, and I vnaduisedly haue past my promise, you shall not in ought be hin-

dered

dered by mee. Hereuppon was preſently prepared tenne Shippes and Galleyes, the greater part whereof was laden with Horſes, riche Tapiſtry, and other things of great value, which ſhould be giuen to Palmerin and his Polinarda. In the reſt were embarqued choſen Knightes for her defence, with Ladies and Gentlewomen to attende on her, and all needefull neceſſaries: thinking to ſhewe her ſumptuous magnificence in the Emperous Courte, which in concluſion fell out otherwiſe. For Fortune who is euer variable and neuer permanent, at the inſtant when Olorico and Alchidiana builded moſt on her fauour, and were come within tenne dayes ſayling of Conſtantinople: ſhe altered their opinions in moſt doubtfull manner, as they expected nothing but the ende of their liues. The winde now ariſeth contrary to them, a ſuddaine and terrible tempeſt ouertaketh them, and with ſuch rough billowes their Shippes were beaten, as in their ſight fiue of their Galleyes were drowned, the reſidue were verie farre ſcattered from them, and the great Carricke wherein themſelues were, againſt a Rocke was ſpilt in the middeſt. Nowe are they left to the mercie of the waters, and Alchidiana wafting on a plancke for ſafegarde of her life: and had not one of the Pylots by ſwimming recouered a little Squiffe, wherewith he preſently made to her and got her in, otherwiſe there had the Princeſſe vnhappily periſhed. This Pylot was ſo expert & cunning, as cutting through the vnmercifull waues, hee gained landing at a Porte diſtant from Conſtantinople about thirtie miles. The Inhabitants where they came on ſhoare, wondred to ſee her ſo gorgiouſly attired, and had not the Pylot friendly perſwaded them, that ſhee was a Princeſſe trauailing to the Emperours Court, and by miſhap had loſt all her companie on the Sea, they would haue dealt with her verie hardly. But when they vnderſtoode the cauſe of her comming, they entertained her with fauour and ciuilitie, cauſing her to be lodged at a very welthy Merchaunts houſe, where ſhe wanted nothing ſhee could deſire.

Alchi-

Alchidiana seeing shée had escaped the daunger of the Sea, and was nowe in better assuraunce then before, comforted her selfe with this good fortune: but when shée remembred her losse, into what want & pouertie shée was now brought, and that through her foolish desire, her Husband was drowned, (as shée thought) shée was so ouercome with griefe, that neither her owne noble minde, nor the daily presence of the Greekes that came to see her, could dissuade her from ceaselesse lamentations.

Ah wretch that I am, quoth she, how well haue I deserued this wreaksfull aduenture? Ah ill aduised Alchidiana, what moued thée to crosse the Seas? if not an inordinate desire to see him, of whome thou maist expect no remedie for thy sorrow: or else to see her that is Mistresse of his heart, and so make thine owne conceites more languishing? My Lord and Husband Olorico, I am the vnhappie cause of thy death, thy loue hath euer beene to mée sounde and perfect: why could it not then make thée forgette the man, who alwayes disdained my passions, and neuer loued mée but with dissimulation? If thou escape death as I haue done, iust cause hast thou to hate mée continually. Coulde not I remember, howe thy people spent their blood for me, ouely to witnesse thy neuer daunted affection? and I haue requited thy loue with monstrous ingratitude. Why then did not our Gods make me alone to suffer the desert of my folly, but take reuenge on them that neuer offended? Ah noble Ladies, howe heard is your recompence in my seruice, that your tender and delicate bodies should be foode for the Fishes? And you worthie Knights and Gentlemen, in stéed of purchasing honour and renowne with your Maister, you are lost for euer, to my no little greefe and vexation. The Merchaunt in whose house shée was lodged, hearing her heauie and lamentable complaintes, thus comforted her. Be of good cheare Madame, your Husband (by the grace of God) will well enough escape this daunger. As for your treasure, it is a matter soone gotten and soone lost: and to

mourne

mourne for your Ladies and Gentlemen, it is to no purpoſe, becauſe it can no way benefit them. When wee poore men loſe our goods, wiues and Children, wee muſt with patience pleaſe our ſelues: you then hauing knowledge of vertue, and that we are all ſubiect to the tranſitorie chaunges of the worlde, to deſpaire is farre vnſeemelye your eſtate.

My Lord the Emperour is bountifull and liberall, and the moſt vertuous Prince that euer raigned in Greece: hee will ſo well recompence your loſſe, as you ſhall not complaine of your comming. With theſe perſwaſions ſhee was ſomewhat pacified, and hauing ſtayed there nine or tenne daies to ſee if anie other of the Galleyes would arriue there, ſeeing none came, ſhee ſold diuers of her precious Iewells that was about her, for halfe the value they were worthe, and prouided her ſelfe of fiue Horſes, for her ſelfe, her Hoſteſſe and her two Daughters, the Pilot that had ſaued her from drowning, and one of the Merchants ſeruants, with which companie ſhee rode toward Conſtantinople, hauing chaunged her rich attire into mourning weedes. As they were in a great Forreſt ſixe miles from the Cittie, the Princeſſe calling to remembrounce, howe poore and ſimple ſhe ſhould come before the Emperour, hauing beene one of the welthieſt Ladies in the world: was ſo ouercome with this conceit, as hardly could her hoſteſſe keepe her frō ſwouning, wherefore ſeeing they were neere a goodlie Fountaine, there they alighted to reſt her a little. And after ſhee hadde walked in the cole ſhaddowe of the Trees, ſhee founde her ſelfe in better diſpoſition, preparing to mount on horſebacke againe: but it came ſo to paſſe, that the Emperour Palmerio hauing beene hunting in that Forreſt, and by earneſt purſuit of the game loſt all his companie, ſo that at length he came to the Fountaine where Alchidiana walked. His arriuall greatly amazed the women, and before hee would demaund what they were, hee alighted and dranke of the Fountaine water. Alchidiana earneſtly beholding him,

and

and feeling inwardlie a strange alteration, presentlye swouned againe in her Hostesse Armes. Alas, said the Emperour, haue I so offended the Ladie, that the sight of mee should endaunger her life? tell me my Frende quoth hee to the Pilot, dost thou know of whence she is? Mary Lord, answered the Pilot, but I vnderstand she is a noble Princesse, who comming to see the Emperour, hath lost her people and goods in the Sea. Me thinks I haue seene her heertofore, saide Palmerin, but I cannot remember the place where. Then beholding her more aduisedly, he said. Is not this the Princesse Alchidiana? that cannot bee: my Ambassadours tolde me that shee was married to the Prince Olorico.

By this time was she a litle recouered, and seing he w he held her in his armes, thus spake. Ah Syr Palmerin, why do you hinder the departure of miserable Alchidiana? thinke you shee can ende her life in better time and place, then in this Countrey, and betweene his armes whome she loued as her life, yet neuer receiued courtesie by him till this instant. Ah my Lorde, heere maist thou behold the foolish and indiscrete Alchidiana, who for thee hath lost her Husband Olorico that loued her deerelye: Knightes, Ladies and inestimable treasure hath shee likewise lost, all which she maketh no account off, but of her beloued whom she shall neuer recouer. But may it be Madame quoth the Emperour, that you are indeed the Princesse Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon, the flower of all the Ladies in Turkie? The same am I, saide shee, who loued thee so vnmeasurably, as the loyaltie of mariage, feare of daungers of the Sea, nor thy rigorous refusall, both in my presence and by thy Messengers, coulde not withdrawe me from this shame, onelie to see thy Court and the beautie of Polynarda. And that at length I might purchase my desire, I brought my Husbande with mee, who I feare the cruell waters haue swalowed, and as braue Ladies as euer were seene, with riches that well might decorate an Em-

pire. By Heauen, Madame quoth Palmerin, if the Prince haue loſt his life in this aduenture, neuer will my heart be merrie againe. Nowe ſee I the vnſpeakable loue you beare me, which I haue in ſome part requited toward your Olorico: yet diſmay not (ſweete Ladie) nor feare his death before further tryall, for by mine honour I ſweare, no ſooner ſhall I come to Conſtantinople, but I will cauſe his ſearch preſently to be followed, not doubting but he may be found againe.

And nowe faire Princeſſe, tell what vertue or deſert you ſawe in me, that might value the leaſt paine you haue endured: committing your gracious perſonne to ſo manie doubtfull hazards, of feares, affrightes, perturbations, heate and colde, which your choyſe nature could hardly brooke in trauell: vnworthie were I the name of a man, if nowe I ſhoulde not pittie you. And I ſweare to you by the liuing God, that if your miſhap ſort to an euill ende, neuer will I, weare my Diademe longer. Alas Madame, if heeretofore I haue deluded you, conſider it was a Loners deceit: that had bequeathed his heart to ſuch a Ladie, as loues you as if you were her ſiſter. But haue you, quoth ſhee, among your amorous delights, acquainted her with my vnſeemely boldneſſe? what may ſhe theen conceiue of me, but as of a Girle giuen to loſe and lauiſh appetite? The loue of wedlocke ſaire Princeſſe, ſaid Palmerin, cannot make me diſcloſe her preiudice that honoured me ſo much: let it ſuffiſe you, that for the fauour I obtained when you found me in lyke place, ſhe remaineth to recompence you with all poſſible kindneſſe. Let vs then depart hence toward Conſtantinople, that you may be vſed as beſeemeth your high calling. Heere deſpiſed that I am, quoth the Princeſſe, had I entred into conceit of your former illuſions, neuer had I fallen into ſo great daunger: but as for matters paſt, either of your rygour or diſdaine, your preſent affabilitie compelles mee to forget, ſet on then when you pleaſe, and I will beare ye companie.

The

The Pilot, the Marchants Wife and her Daughters, on their knées, desired the Emperour to excuse them, in that they had not reuerenced his Maiestie as they ought. Worldly honour I expect not, sayde the Emperour, come with me, that I may recompence your paines taken for this worthie Princesse. So rode they on, and as they issued forth of the Forrest, their staied the knights and Hunters, attending the Emperours comming, they all marualling at the great courtesie hee vsed to the Ladie: then his Maiestie calling the Duke Eustace to him, sayd. Thou must presently with thy Companions goe Armé ye, and trauaile to finde the Prince Olorico, whom the tempestuous seas hath separated from his Ladie. Who brought these beaute tydings to your highnesse, sayd the Duke. This Ladie who is his Wife, quoth hee, hauing miraculously escaped shipwracke by the meanes of this Mariner. When they were come to the Pallace, the Duke of Saxon came to holde the Emperours Horse while he alighted. Ptolome, sayde Palmerin, know you no better your Mistresse Alchidiana? you must now remember her passed fauours, when shee redeemed you from base seruitude. And that shall not I forget my Lorde, quoth the Duke, while I haue a day to liue: but I cannot thinke that this Ladie is she. It is euen shee without further question, sayd the Emperour, do you and the Duke of Mercæna helpe her from her Horse, and conduct her vp into the Pallace, while I in meane time goe to aduertise the Empresse.

Madame, quoth Ptolome, yet can I not be thoroughlie resolued. In sooth Ptolome, said shee, I am Alchidiana, who to accomplish what thou and thy companions coulde not, am come hither in this poinertie: discouering my want of knowledge by my vnrecouerable losse, except you my Lords take the greater pittie on me. Thinke you Madame, quoth Ptolome, that my Lord Olorico is lost? neuer feare it I beseech ye, but thinke you shall finde as great fauour in this Court, as if you were with the Soldane your Father.

Palmerin comming to the Empreſſe, ſaid, Madame, as I was hunting this day, I found in our Forreſt the Princeſſe Alchidiana, of whom I haue ſo often tolde yée, ſhée béeing wife to the Prince Olorico, that named himſelfe my Dwarffes Brother when I was with you laſt at Gaunt, I deſire ye to intreate her as her calling deſerueth, becauſe I am not a little beholding to her. So taking her by the hand, they came and met the Princeſſe, and Palmerin taking her courteouſlie in his armes, deliuered her to the Empreſſe ſaying.

Faire Princeſſe, you ſhall remaine with my Ladie, till our knights haue found your Lord and Huſband. God will requite your kindneſſe to a diſtreſſed Ladie, ſaid Alchidiana, although I feare for my offences his fortune will be much the worſe. Madame, quoth the Empreſſe, ſo noble and debonaire is your Lord and Huſband, as no danger can any way preiudice his life, but thinke him as ſafe as if he were héere preſent with you, which doubtleſſe will be right ſone, and in good time: therefore let mee intreate you to bée of good chéere, as if you were now in Aſſyria. And although we cannot compare with the Court of Babylon, yet héere ſhall you be vſed as beſéemes ſo great a Princeſſe.

I doubt not thereof good Madame, ſaid Alchidiana, the more am I indebted to the Emperour and you: yet can I not forget the abſence of my Lord, béeing ſeparated from him in a place ſo vncouth. Ye thatus the defender of the iuſt, quoth the Empreſſe, will ſend ye to méete againe in place more comfortable, & in that hope I pray ye to perſwade your ſelfe, laying aſide theſe mourning garments, the very ſight therof cannot but offend yée. Theſe gracious ſpéeches ſomewhat contented her, and expelled all priuate conceit of ſorrow: yet would ſhe not chaunge her habite, till ſhe heard either good or bad newes of the Prince Olorico.

Chap. LXIIII.

Howe the Prince Olorico was reskewed from the Moores, by the yong Knights that the Emperour Palmerin sent in his search: and what ioy was made at Constantinople at his arriuall.

VPon the Emperours resolution for the search of Olorico, the Dukes of Mecæna and Saxon, with each of them fiftie Knights, were prepared to sea with two Gallies: and Colmelio, Bellechino, Sergillo sonne to Cardino, and the Marchant Estebons two sonnes, whom the Emperor had newly knighted, with thirtie harde Souldiours reported in an other. Eight other vessels were sent on the Coast of Propontida, and the Bosphor, to seeke the Prince.

It so came to passe, that the same day Alchidiana was preserued from drowning, Alibarbanco, a Pirat, was sayling towardes Narolia, and passed verie neere where the Princes Carricke was split, and him did he espie floting on a Chest, which was filled within with Martin skinnes, being then moued to beholde him in such daunger, hee caused his men to take him into the shippe, who readie to yelde vp his ghost hee was so benummed with colde. When Alibarbanco sawe him so richly apparelled, and the Chest stuffed with thinges of such value, hee imagined him presently to bee some great Lorde, for whom he shoulde haue some large raunsome, wherefore he vsed him verie courteously. Olorico seeing he was so happily escaped, lifting his

eyes to Heauen, ſayd. Great is thy mercie O God, that hast ſo fauourablie vouchſafed to regard thy poore creature, nor were loſſe worthie reckoning, ſo my Ladie Alchidiana were ſafe in Aſſyria. What angrie planet raigned when we betooke our ſelues to Sea? what anſwere ſhall I make to the Soldane your Father, that gaue me ſuch charge of your perſon at my departure? hardly may I dare to come before him any more.

Abbarbanco hearing theſe complaints, reioiced thereat. By Mahomet, quoth hee to himſelfe, nor ſhalt thou ſee him anie more if I can hinder it, for I will preſent thee to the great Turke his mortall enemie, and for thy raunſome I ſhall receiue a bountifull recompence. So thinking to ſtrike toward Natolia, he happened among the Emperours yong Knights ere hee was beware: wherefore hee thought to take their ſhips likewiſe, yet therein hee found him ſelfe greatly deceyued. For Bellechino knowing them to bee Turkes by their Banners, ſaid to his companions. We are now I feare in the daunger of Turkiſh Pirats, let vs therfore with courage winne our deliueraunce. Hereuppon they fiercelie aſſayled Abbarbanco, and buckled ſo cloſelie that in the ende they boorded him, making ſuch a ſlaughter among his men, and throwing him likewiſe ſlaine into the Sea, as none were left to reſiſt their further entraunce, where they found the Prince Olorico, and being not a little glad of their good ſucceſſe, they each one embraced him with gracious courteſie. Alas my Freends, quoth the Prince, how knew you my being here? who gaue you in charge to ſeeke me forth? who hath beene the Meſſenger of my miſfortune? My Lord the Emperour Palmerin, anſwered Colmelio, vnderſtoode thereof by your Ladie Alchidiana, whom hee founde by good happe as hee rode on hunting.

But may I giue credite to your woordes? ſaid the Prince, is my Ladie with his Maieſtie at the Court? She is in trueth my Lorde, ſayde Bellechino, and the Mariner

likewiſe

likewise that saued her life, whome the Emperour hath highlie recompenced for his faithfull seruice. I beseech you quoth Olorico, let vs home saile presentlie towarde Constantinople, for my heart cannot bee perswaded till I haue seene her, so great is my doubt, considering our vnfortunate separation.

Neuer may I beare Armes in Knight-hoode, sail Bellechino, or lift my Sworde in honourable Chiualrie, if Alchidiana be not at Constantinople, where I both sawe her, and spake to her, before our departure. So taking the vessell that belonged to the Pirate Alibarbanco with them, in short time after they arryued at Constantinople, where their chearefull sounding of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions at their landing, deliuered testimonie of their good successe. If the Emperour was glad for the recouerie of his Freend, the Princesse Alchidiana of her Husband, and euerie one generallie for the man lost by such mishappe, I leaue to your iudgements, that can censure the rare ioyes of loue and freendship. What Triumphes, Tournamentes, Bonfires, Maskes, Momeries, and other delightfull exercises were performed, for ioy of the Prince Oloricos safetie, whome the Emperour made account of, as you haue heard before, it would demaunde a larger volume to set downe: you must therefore heere imagine, that you behold his Maiestie highly contented, Alchidiana thoroughlie satisfied, and the whole Court well pleased by this happie event, giuing themselues to expresse the same in open & manifest signes, beseeming so great estates to prosecute, and therefore of as great honour as may be deuised.

The yong Knights are especially welcommed for their worthie seruice, the Dukes of Saxon and Mecæna likewise, though they failed of bringing the Prince, yet they brought two Foystes belonging to the Pirate Alibarbanco, richlie laden with manie wealthie spoyles, which were giuen among the yong Knights, in recompence of their paines. During the time of these surpassing pleasures

and delights, there entred the hauen of Conſtantinople three ſhippes, laden with meruailous ſumptuous gifts and preſents, from the Queene Zephira, and her Brother the King Maulerino, being ſent to the Emperour Palmerin, and his Empreſſe Polynarda, by two great Lords Ambaſſadours from Perſia, to requeſt familiar loue and alliaunce with the Emperour, the Soldane confeſſing his iniurie to Trineus, while he was in his Court. When the Perſians came before the Emperour, who was honourably accompanied with Kings, Dukes, Princes, Counties, and many braue Ladies, they were greatly abaſhed, yet thinking on the argument of their Ambaſſade, one of them began in this manner.

It is no maruell (redoubted Emperour and Monarch of Greece) if thy ſubiects both loue thee, and viſite thee, when thy behauiour hath conquered the mindes of forraine Potentates, who to enter amitie and peace with thee, ſome haue left their Countreys to ſende their Ambaſſadours hither, other dare not ſtirre, or aſſemble their men in warlike manner, ſo is the name of Palmerin feared throwe all Aſia. Hereof beare witneſſe the great Turke, the Califfe of Siconia, and the heyres to the Prince Amarano of Nigrea: not much inferiour in this condition, is the Soldane of Babylon, whoſe daughter with her Huſband I here beholde. The victorious Abimar, King of Romata and Griſca, the worthie Maulerino, and the puiſſaunt Soldane of Perſia my Maiſter, Huſbande to the vertuous Queene Zephira, who with their Brother haue ſent your highneſſe three Shippes laden with the moſt wealthie riches their Countreys can yeeld. My Lord and they humbly kiſſe your Maieſties hande, deſiring you to forget his diſcourteſie to the gentle Knight Trineus, when hee became enamoured on the Princeſſe Aurecinda. But if their loue then ſorted to a philoſophicall trope or figure, it hath ſithence proued effectuall in procreation, to the no little ioy of my Lorde and Maiſter.

The

The Princesse was deliuered of a goodly Son, growing in such exquisite forme and feature, as it is expected hee will one day resemble his Father in chiualrie, as he doth already his Mother in amiable perfection.

Ambassadour, quoth the Emperour, for the great vertue and nobilitie I haue founde, as well in the Princesse Zephira, as also her noble Brother, I graunt the frendly alliance thou demaundest. Yet herein am I sorie, that the Son to the Prince Tryneus, should be nourished and spend his youth among Mahumetists, without knowledge of his God and Redeemer: for in such sort should hee be instructed, after he is come to the yeeres of vnderstanding, that all the Alchoran is tales and fables, and doubtlesse God will so deale with him in time, as hee shall imitate the steppes of his noble Father. As for the presents sent vs by the King Maulerino, the Soldane, and his Queen Zephira, we accept them as from our Frends, and will returne them some remembraunce of our thankfulnesse. His Maiestie commaunded the Persians to bee lodged in his Pallace, and continued still their former ioyes and tryumphs: but to alter those Courtly pastimes and delights, this misfortune happened which hereafter followeth.

The famous Hiſtorie

Chap. LXV.

Howe the great Turke refuſed to aſſiſt Lycado, Nephewe to the Admiral Olimaell, againſt the Emperor Palmerin: and what trouble happened to Conſtantinople by the Traitor Nardides, Nephew to the King Tariſius, Lycado, Meuadeno, and their father.

Uch was the humanitie and pittie of Palmerin, when hee finiſhed the enchantments at the Iſle of Malfada, as he gaue libertie to all the Turks and Chriſtians, which were before tranſformed, as you haue heard: among whom was Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimaell, hée that at the taking of Agriola, had the Prince Tryneus for his priſoner. This Lycado, ſéeing himſelfe in his owne Countrey, and out of daunger, where he heard howe the great Turke was ſlaine, and his Uncle likewiſe, hée came before the Sultane that then raigned, ſaying. Worthy lord, as men are naturallie inclined to bemone their loſſes, ſo are Subiects bound to aduertiſe their Soueraignes, of any ſhame or iniurie done to their Maieſties. This ſpeake I my Lord, becauſe you haue not as yet reuenged the death of your deceaſſed Brother, now ſléeping in the Armes of Mahomet, albeit trayterouſlie ſlaine by Palmerin and his Companions: at which time my noble Uncle was likewiſe murthered, with many Knights of chiefe and eſpeciall account. And leaſt you ſhould be ignorant in the truth of the déede, and who alſo carryed hence the Princeſſe Agriola, I haue credibly

credibly vnderstood, that Palmerin is Nephew to the Emperour of Greece, one of his companions is the Empereurs Sonne of Allemaigne, and all the rest were Princes and Lords of Greece, onely sent as spyes into Turkie. Wherefore, seeing you now holde the state in such peace and quietnes, it were necessarie you should leaue a mightie Armie: and please you to commit the charge thereof to mee, I will lose my life, or make an absolute destruction of all Greece. I remember, said the great Turke, that your Vnckle made like entraunce into my deceased Brothers Courte, as you by your speeches now labour to do, but I will so warilie looke to such intrusians, as no Traytors shall rest heere if I can hinder thē. Your Vnckle vsed the Christians, what followed thereon? the death of his maister, and a daungerous confusion. By you likewise may ensue as bad fortune, departe you therefore from the Court, and but that we are loth to bee noted with tyrannie, thou shouldest presently be drawne in peeces with Horses. False Traytour, thou that commest to counsaile vs in a matter wherein we cannot meddle but with great dishonour, it behoues thee first to regard the end of thy intent, and what he is that gouerns in Greece. Go villaine go, and on perill of thy life neuer presume before our presence againe.

Lycado was greatly astonied at this sharpe answere, and seeing he could haue no better successe, hee went to his Father the Brother to Olimaell, being one of the cheefest Magitians in all Turkie, to him he made his complaints, saying, he would die in that resolution, but he would cause the Turke to knowe that hee was no Traytour, and this (quoth he) shall be the meane whereby I will compasse it. I meane to disguise my selfe, and trauaile to the Cittie of Constantinople, where priuily I will murder the Emperor Palmerin, so shall my Lord the great Turke touch mee with no further suspition, but will reward me with greater benefits then euer my Vnckle had. My Sonne, answered his Father, thinkest thou that thy deuise will sort to effect

thy

thy Brother Menadeno would helpe thée herein, but hée is too yong: yet when time ſerueth for thy departure, I will not onely tell thée, but conduct thée my ſelfe. I beſeech you good father, ſaide Lycado, further me in what you may, for neuer will my hart be at reſt, till I haue paid *Palmerin* with the ſelfe ſame coyne the great Turke was. In meane while do you ſtudie, and ſearch all our Bookes of Aſtrologie, Diuination, Magique, and Nigromancie, as Zabulus, Orpheus, Hermes, Zoroaſtres, Circes, Medea, Alphonſus, Bacon, Aponius, and all the reſt that write of the blacke ſpeculatiue: reade them againe and againe, deuiſe ſuch ſpelles, exorciſmes, and conjurations, as the very ſpirits may ſpeake of the feaſt I will make at the Cittie of Conſtantinole.

Hereupon the olde man made his Sonne Menadeno Knight, and with Lycado betooke themſelues to Sea, ſaying. My Sonnes I will bring ye to Conſtantinople, where (by vertue of mine arte) we will arriue before thræ dayes be expired: remember your vnckles death, and behaue your ſelues in ſuch ſort, as you may be Regiſtred for euer. The time doth nowe fauour you with ſufficient reuenge, and therein ſhall you be aſſiſted by a Chriſtian Knight, whome we ſhall finde ready landed there for the ſame cauſe.

Their Ankers being weyed, they launch into the darke, and cut through the waues with ſuch violence, as if the deuill himſelfe were in their ſailes, ſo that they toke landing at the ſelfe ſame houre as Nardides arriued at Conſtantinople. As concerning what this Nardides was, you remember the two Traytors Promptaleon and Oudin, Nephewes to the King Tariſius of Hungaria, whome Palmerin and Fryſoll ſlew at Conſtantinople, hée was their Brother, and Sonne to the Ducheſſe of Ormeda. Shée vnderſtanding the death of her two Sonnes, could not conceale it from the Duke her Huſband, who preſently died with very conceit of greefe: whereuppon, ſhée to reuenge this miſhappe cauſed by her report, as alſo the death of her two

Sonnes,

Sonnes, made promise to Nardides, (then being eighteene yeares olde) that so sone as hee was knighted, hee should go to Constantinople, and there (if it were possible) to murder the Emperour and Frysoll. All this he vowed to performe, and two or three dayes after, hauing married the Kings Daughter of Polonia, hee embarqued himselfe with sorty Knights, determining by a Combat for treason, to compasse his intent.

These wreakfull aymers at reuenge, landed all in one instant at Constantinople, when the old Magitian calling to Nardydes, sayde hee would gladly speake with him in secret, as concerning matters greatly for his auaile. Hereupon they went all closely together into one of the Cabins, and the olde man entred into these speeches. Sir Nardides, nedeles is it for you to hide your affaires from mee, for I knowe that you depart from Poloma with sortie Knights disguised like Merchants, onely with this determination, to destroy the Emperour, in reuenge of certaine iniuryes done to your Brethren. But if you will giue credit to mee, and go to worke in such sort as I shall aduise yee, ye shall happily obtayne the end of your desire. By God, sayd Nardides, you tell mee wonders, there is not one in the shippe that knowes mine intent, yet you haue sayde the truth, whereat I cannot marualle sufficiently. Seeing then you know so much, it were but follie to dissemble, say then your minde and I will heare yee. This night, sayd the old man, the Emperour wil suppe in the great Hall with the Prince Olorico, and the Princesse Alchidiana, the King of Sparta and his Queene, with many other great Princes and Lordes, so that such store of people are in the Pallace, as little regarde will bee had of strangers or houshoide seruants.

You then with my Sonne Menadeno, being Armed, as beseemes a cause so weighbie, shall sodainely enter and kill the Emperour: my Sonne Lycado and I will stay your returne heere, and I that can commaunde the winde

and

and weather, will carrie ye hence without danger of following. And true it is, that there is a Bird pearched in the Hall, which the wiſe Muzabelino hath ſo enchaunted, as neither good or ill tydings can come to the Emperour, but ſhe bewrayes the ſame by her ſong or fearefull crie: yet doubt not you thereof, ſtrike boldly, there will be none Armed, ſo ſhal you departe againe at your owne pleaſure. My Friend, ſaid Nardides, happie be the houre I mette with thée, aſſure thy ſelfe, that if I can kill the Emperour, and thou afterwarde deliuer me ſafely, ſuch recompence will I beſtow on thée, as both thou and thine ſhall for euer remember me.

Other recompence I demaund not, ſayde the olde man, then the death of the Emperour, prepare thy ſelfe therefore to follow thine intent. The night being come, theſe Traytors Armed themſelues, and caſting their mantles about them, entred the Pallace, were among the Pages and ſeruants, without ſuſpition they came into the Hall: leauing Lycado and his Father at the Port, where hée threwe abroade ſuch enchauntments, that all ſuch as came forth of their houſes, preſently fell downe aſléepe in the ſtréetes. No ſooner were the Traytours entred the Hall, but the Bird gaue a horrible and fearefull crie, beating her breaſt againſt her breaſt with ſuch furie, as though ſhée would haue rent forth her heart. My God, ſayd the Emperour, in mercie behold mée, for the crye of this Birde doth foretell great miſfortune. Looke about my friendes, quoth he to his Guard, and ſée if any Stranger or vnknowne body is entred our preſence, Nardides by theſe ſpéeches knew hée was the Emperour, wherefore drawing his Sword, hée thought to haue cleaued his head, yet hée fayled of his intent, for the Emperour ſéeing the blow comming, with a great Golden Cuppe awarded it indifferently, notwithſtanding, the Sword in ſlipping from the Cuppe, gaue him a ſore wound vpon the head. Olorico ſitting on the other ſide the Table, ranne at the Traitour, but the Em-

perour

perour had receiued two strokes more ere he could come at him, so that his maiestie fell from his Chaire as he had bene dead.

As the Prince Olorico held the Traytor Nardides by the armes, Menadeno stroke at him so rigorously, as if Ptolome had not borne off the blowes with a great siluer plate, Olorico there had lost his life. Duke Eustace seeing this shamefull outrage, wrong the sword out of Nardides hande, and gaue him such a sounde stroke therewith on the head, as made him tomble his heles vpwarde, and by the helpe of Bellechino, who founde the meanes to gette off his Helmet, he smote his head from his shoulders. Bellechino who had bene newly baptised, loued the Emperour as he had bene his Father, and comming to Menadeno, whome Duke Ptolome strongly helde in his armes, gaue him so many stabs on his throate, that he likewise fell downe at his feete. The Empresse seeing her Lord so wounded, rent her garments, tore her comely locks of hayre, and smote her faire face with marualous violence. Ah my Lord, quoth she, thou art not wounded alone, for if thou die, as God forbid, right soone will my ghost follow thee. Cease Madam your complaints, saide the Emperour, and comfort your selfe so wel as you may, for this is the houre wherin I must leaue you: I haue lost such abounndance of my bloud, as longer may I not liue with you: O my God forgiue my sins, and receiue my soule. In vttering these words he swouned againe, and the Empresse with him for companie, to the no little amazement of all the Lords and Ladies, who were well neere at their wits ende to beholde this vnexpected alteration. Alchidiana likewise was in wonderfull perplexitie, fearing also that her Lord was wounded to the death, but to comfort this sorrowfull and desolate Court, good fortune sent this helpe ensuing.

Chap.

Chap. LXVI.

How the wiſe Muzabelino knowing by his arte, the cruell treaſon doone to the Emperour, came to ſuccour him, and of that which followed.

MVzabelino the Nigramancer, of whom we haue alreadie ſpoken, by chaunce this day was turning ouer his Booke, and found the dangerous ſtratageme deuiſed by theſe Traitours, and calling his familiars together, demaunded the danger that would enſue by this treaſon: whereto one of them replied, that if hee went not ſpeedily to Conſtantinople, the Emperour, the Prince Olorico, and their Ladies, would hardly eſcape that day with life. Then armed he himſelfe, in the ſelfe ſame maner as he was when he ſuccoured the Prince Tryneus, and calling two ſpirits of the ayre reſembling Giants, their faces ſo vglie and fearefull, as no humane creature durſt beholde them: them hee commanded to carrie him to Conſtantinople, and with a great flaming firebrand in his hand, he cut through the ayre with ſuch horrible thunder, as each one thought the world had beene ended. When he beheld the olde man that defended the Port, hee ſayd to him. False and diſloyall Traitour, dareſt thou meddle with the man whome thou knoweſt to bee in my guarde: take him to yee, (quoth hee to his two ſpirits) and conuay him to your Courte, and there keepe him aline for mee, for I will giue him a paine a thouſande times worſe then death: you know how to vſe my gentle gueſt, let him

be

be dealt withall as his behauiour hath deserued. The miserable olde man astonied hereat, and thinking to helpe himselfe by his Magique, was presently transformed into a Serpent. Now thou shalt perceiue, saide Muzabelino, that I am greater in power then thou art. So taking two great Golden Chaines, he tied the Serpent about the neck therewith, and his Sonne together, setting such a coniuration on them, as he should neuer be chaunged to his former shape.

Then came he to the Pallace, where taking off his Helmet, he entred the Hall, saying to the Knights. Ah my deere friendes, the Traytour that thus hath molested you, is taken, reioyce therefore, and be of good cheere, your Lord is not dead, he liueth, he must liue, and in despight of enuie shal florish more then euer he did. The Princes and knights hearing him speake so friendly, and yet knew not what hee was, notwithstanding his promises they were greatly amazed, but when they sawe Bellechino and Colmelio so reuerently embrace him, they began to conceiue better opinion of him. Alas my Lord and Father, said Bellechino, in a happie houre came you hether, and your presence puts vs out of all further feare, vouchsafe to succour the Empresse Polynarda, for pittie it is to see her thus chaunged. Hereupon Muzabelino embraced the Empresse, whose face was colde, pale, and wan. Why Madame? quoth he, where is your former wisedome and discretion? leaue these desolate countenances to common people, your Lords is in no danger, but within three dayes hee shall be well againe. Conuey her hence, saide he to the Ladies, I am ashamed to see your follie, suffering her to lye in this sort and no one helpe her. Then was shee conducted to her Chamber, and Muzabelino with the ayde of his Sonne and Duke Eustace, carried the Emperour to his bed, where staunching his woundes with a precious Ointment, Muzabelino gaue him some of the water to drink, which before had healed the Princesse Zephira, and which hee had brought with

him

him in a little viall of Christall, when the Emperor being somewhat better recouered, lifting his eies to Heauen, said. Thou great art thou in mercy my soueraign Redéemer, sending Muzabelino from the farthest regions, to helpe me in so great miseries. Ah my noble frende, what haue I done at any time for thée, that might indwce thée to fauour me so much? My Lord, answered Muzabelino, so precious are your deserts in mine eies, as I can do no lesse, except I should be accounted the most ingratefull among men. So bathing his woundes with the iuyce of certaine vertuous hearbs, he willed al that were present to depart the Chamber, and on the morrow they should sée their Lord in better estate. So left they the Emperor to his rest, and al the princes, Knights, and Ladies, came to welcome Muzabelino, who comforted the Princesse Alchidiana, assuring her that the Prince Olorico should do wel enough, for he had likewise bathed his woundes, and left him in his chamber quietly sleeping. On the morrow hee commaunded the bodies of Nardides and Menadeno to be burned, afterwarde he losed Lycado from his father, causing him to be put in prison till the Emperour were amended, and taking the Serpent by the chaine, he brought him by the helpe of his twa spirits into the great court, where by his cunning hée erected a goodly Marble pillier, and on the top thereof a strong Cage of yron, saying to the olde man transformed. Accursed creature, to the ende thy paine may bee the greater during the Emperors life, thou shalt remain in this monstrous shape, and die thou shalt not, till the God of heauen call him hence whose death thou didest contriue. Incontinent the spirits thrust the Serpent into the Cage, and afterward vanished away, leauing the monster casting fearefull flames of fire out at his mouth, and howling with strange and pittifull cries. Then went Muzabelino to the Empresse, who still remained sad and pensiue, and bringing her to the Emperour, said. See Madame, am I not so good as my word, your Lord is well and perfectly recouered, be you then pleasant

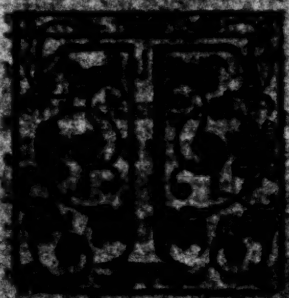
and

and mourne no longer. Not a little ioyfull was the at this sight, embracing his highnesse with such affection, as though she had been absent from him a long time: but when the Emperor saw her face so marbled with lamenting, and her sweete countenance so much altred, Alas Madam, quoth he, what hath vexed you thus? What is the matter? tell me, I pray you, that I may redresse it, if it be possible. Sir, answered she, I am not sicke, albeit I have dyed, yet should not you have cause to feare any such chaunce on your behalfe. If such a vnlookt for chaunce had happened, answered the Emperor, sure I was minded to haue followed my Lord. Truly my heart hath not conceiued such a thing, and that cause I haue, seeing I am sure all the world knoweth, said Mirzabelina, your vnspeakable loue towards me, especially you my Lord, whose countenance is altered, so are you hated likewise of your enemies, so shall they euermore, hereafter stand vpon your guard, hauing before your eyes, that the mirror resembleth, that vnlesse you shall foorthwith come sicke to deface it, Alexander Emperour of Rome, Iulius Cæsar, are examples therefore. Then Mirzabelina made ready her face with the water of this Well, which soone gaue her former beautie, as farre as time of sickenesse had defaced it. Zephira, with him of Thessaly &c. [illegible] to her subiects, [illegible] before vnknowne, to her part so well recouered, that Oliuea [illegible] was perfectly cured, and all things [illegible] happened. When was Lycado be[illegible] for the treason, [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

BV Chap.

Chap. LXVII.

How the Soldane of Babylon ſent for the Prince Olorando and his Daughter Alchidiana, and of the ſorrow the Emperour and Empreſſe made for their departure.



The repaſt of this wedding at Conſtantinople being ended, as the king Florendos and Queene Clarinda hearing ſhortly preſently paſſed to Conſtantinople, where by the good meanes of Muzzabelino, they found [illegible] eſtate of [illegible] highly thanked [illegible] honourable [illegible] quietted, that [illegible] readie to returne [illegible] league of peace, [illegible] taken home with [illegible] certified of all [illegible] danger was [illegible] with his [illegible] likewiſe [illegible] us, to [illegible] from the bands [illegible] remain [illegible] Alchidiana was deli- [illegible] Daughter [illegible] the Emperor Palmerin [illegible] Philocraſt, and not ma- [illegible] wife, na- [illegible] other, cal- [illegible] three [illegible]